



**DELHI UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY**

# DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY ✓

Cl. No. 0:2J73x

J4.5

Date of release for loan

Ac. No. 105237

8 APR 1968

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of one anna will be charged for each day the book is kept overtime.

<p>Oct. 1968</p>			
<p>31.1.64</p>	<p>Handwritten signature</p>	<p>200x</p>	
<p>Release</p>	<p>2110</p>	<p>200x</p>	

**FOR CONSULTATION ONLY.**



BEN  
JONSON





BEN  
J O N S O N

*Edited by* C. H. HERFORD  
*and* PERCY SIMPSON

VOLUME V

*Volpone, or The Fox*  
*Epicoene, or The Silent Woman*  
*The Alchemist*  
*Catiline*

O X F O R D  
At the Clarendon Press

*Oxford University Press, Amen House, London E.C. 4*

GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MELBOURNE WELLINGTON

BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS KARACHI CAPE TOWN IBADAN

*Geoffrey Cumberlege, Publisher to the University*

FIRST EDITION 1937

REPRINTED LITHOGRAPHICALLY IN GREAT BRITAIN

AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS, OXFORD

FROM CORRECTED SHEETS OF THE FIRST EDITION

1954

## P R E F A C E

AS this volume goes to press, it is a pleasant duty to acknowledge the help which has lightened the labour of producing it. Mr. T. J. Wise, generous as ever, deposited for our use in the Bodleian his beautiful first Quartos of *Volpone*, *The Alchemist*, and *Catiline*. The Quarto of *The Alchemist* belonging to Corpus Christi College, Oxford, was also deposited there by the librarian, Dr. J. G. Milne. Mr. H. L. Ford lent his two large-paper copies of the 1616 Folio. The Committee of the Clifton Shakespere Society, through their librarian, Mr. H. W. Crundell, lent their copy of the Quarto of *The Alchemist*. The opportunity thus given for leisurely collation and verification is of the utmost value to an editor. Equally helpful were the rotograph of the Quarto of *Catiline* in the Cambridge University Library, taken by permission of the librarian, Mr. A. F. Scholfield, and the photostat of the Harvard copy of *Epicoene*, taken by permission of the librarian, Mr. A. C. Potter.

For permission to photograph title-pages we have to thank the authorities of the British Museum and the Bodleian, and two Oxford librarians, Sir Charles Oman of All Souls College, and Mr. C. H. Wilkinson of Worcester College.

For the frontispiece of the newly acquired painting of Ben Jonson in the National Portrait Gallery

we are indebted to the Trustees. The comments and elucidation of the Director and Keeper, Mr. Henry M. Hake, furnish the substance of an important note which we print on this painting.

For help on textual points we are specially indebted to Dr. W. W. Greg, who gave valuable help with *Volpone* and the problem of the missing Quarto of *Epicoene*. Mr. C. E. Batey, of the Oxford University Press, advised us on some acute difficulties of typography. By the courtesy of Mr. Philip Robinson we obtained from the American collector, Mr. Frank Capra, a photostat of some special pages of his large-paper copy of the 1616 Folio. Mr. C. K. Edmonds supplied some readings in the Quarto text of *Catiline* not found in the copies which we have collated. Mrs. Simpson has again given valuable help in collating and in checking the proofs.

For the readjustment of the readings in the Quarto of *Cynthia's Revels*, printed in the supplementary notes at the end of the volume, we are indebted to the scholarly help of Mr. A. K. McIlwraith.

With each new volume we are conscious more and more of the debt we owe to the printing staff of the Oxford University Press for the way they have handled proofs which make a severe call on their skill and patience.

The Editor acknowledges with much gratitude the grant of a Leverhulme Research Fellowship

---

made by the late Lord Leverhulme's Trustees for the two years 1935 to 1937, to give him leisure to complete his work on the text of Jonson. It has quickened the last stage of preparation of the text as nothing else has done since he undertook the edition. It has also enabled him to prepare the text of the sixth volume, which is virtually ready for the printer.

P. S.

Oriel College, Oxford,

14 January 1937.



# CONTENTS

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS AND FACSIMILES	xi
THE TEXT: Introductory Notes . . . .	xv
VOLPONE or THE FOX . . . . .	I
EPICOENE or THE SILENT WOMAN . . .	139
THE ALCHEMIST . . . . .	273
CATILINE . . . . .	409





# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS AND FACSIMILES

## VOLUME V

### THE PORTRAIT . . . . . *Frontispiece*

In 1935 the National Portrait Gallery acquired a painting of Ben Jonson, which, by kind permission of the Trustees, is reproduced as a frontispiece to the present volume. It is stated to have been formerly in the collection of the Webb family at Odstock House in Wiltshire, but its earlier history has not been traced. It is fortunate that it has now found a permanent home in the national collection.

The portraits of Jonson which have come down to us all conform to a single type. It is a testimony to the high place which he held in the world of letters that over twenty copies should have been made, if not in his lifetime, at least shortly after his death. A likely date for Jonson to have given a sitting to a painter is not long before the stroke which crippled him in November or December, 1628; by that time, even if his literary powers were failing, his fame was secure. The author of *Volpone* and *The Alchemist*, the 'rare Ben Jonson' acclaimed by a whole-hearted admirer after a performance of *Bartholomew Fair*, the 'arch-poet' who presided over the 'lyric feasts' at the Dog, the Sun, the Three Tuns, and in the Apollo room at the Devil, was one of the best-known figures of contemporary London.

The artist to whom this type of portrait is usually ascribed is Gerard Honthorst. A fine example is the painting in Lord Sackville's collection at Knole, which was reproduced as the frontispiece to our first volume. The attribution to Honthorst appears to have been first made by George Vertue in 1711 when he engraved a bust from a painting in the collection of Lord Somers. The ascription is not without its difficulties. The fine collection of Lord Somers was dispersed after his death, and it is not known what became of the original painting. Further Honthorst was in England only for six months, from June to December, 1628, and he was engaged not only in painting elaborate groups of

royal or noble families, such as that of the first Duke of Buckingham and his family in the National Portrait Gallery, but also in the decoration of Whitehall. King Charles worked him hard, and Jonson broke down while he was still in England.

Since only one type of Jonson's features has been handed down to us in a large number of reproductions, there must have been an archetype taken from the life, but whether this was a painting in oils on canvas or a drawing is not likely to be determined now. It has been claimed for the new acquisition of the National Portrait Gallery that it is this original, but in the absence of any real body of similar oil sketches of the period the question remains open. It is true to say with *The Times* critic<sup>1</sup> that the portrait has traces of hesitation and clumsiness in the painting which would not be expected in a copy; the portrait has also an air of 'aliveness' which copies tend to lose. Out of the twenty odd versions known it is the best which has so far come to light and therefore the nearest we possess to a living likeness of Jonson.

The earliest dated likeness of him is the engraved portrait by Robert Vaughan, which was used as frontispiece for the Benson quarto of the *Execration against Vulcan. With divers Epigrams* in 1640, and later in the year as the frontispiece to the first volume of the 1640 Folio. It was issued earlier as a separate print, and cannot be later than 1627. It was reproduced, with a note on its history, in our third volume. Mr. Henry M. Hake, the Director of the National Portrait Gallery, has made an expert examination of the relation of the painting to the engraving. 'In the painting', he writes, 'the head is turned to the right and in the engraving to the left, but the set of the head inside the linen collar is very similar. The engraving shews two loops of the string which fastens the linen collar; the painting shews something like the beginning of one loop. The engraving has a cloak over the left shoulder. In the painting there is something which may be meant for a cloak over the left shoulder. If the engraving is reversed from a drawing, the cloak on that drawing might be expected on the right shoulder. The painting shews the head turned in the opposite direction and the cloak in the same direction as the engraving. The features are very close, especially the shape of the nose.'

The short black curls of the painting and the thin beard look

<sup>1</sup> In the notice of the year's acquisitions, *The Times*, 28 December 1935.

older in the engraving; Jonson's beard had been satirized by Dekker in 1601: 'thou hast such a terrible mouth that the beard's afraid to peep out.'<sup>1</sup> The engraving has the poet's laurel wreath round the head, a decorative feature which rather obscures the treatment of the hair. 'So far as one can see the hair underneath it', Mr. Hake comments, 'the growth corresponds to the growth which is shown in the painting. The engraving shews a black silk doublet buttoning down the front: if the garment in the painting is intended to be a doublet, the buttons, which are also black, have sunk away. But the doublet of the engraving may be only a conventional embellishment.'

VOLPONE, or THE FOX:

The title-page of the Quarto . . . . .	page	11
The title-page of the 1616 Folio . . . . .	„	13
The title-page of the 1640 Folio . . . . .	„	15
The dedication to the two Universities . . . . .	„	16

EPICOENE, or THE SILENT WOMAN:

The title-page of the 1616 Folio . . . . .	„	153
The title-page of the 1620 Quarto, first issue . . . . .	„	155
The title-page of the 1620 Quarto, second issue . . . . .	„	157
The title-page of the 1640 Folio . . . . .	„	159

THE ALCHEMIST:

The title-page of the 1612 Quarto . . . . .	„	283
The title-page of the 1616 Folio . . . . .	„	285
The title-page of the 1640 Folio . . . . .	„	287

CATILINE:

The title-page of the first Quarto, 1611 . . . . .	„	419
The title-page of the 1616 Folio . . . . .	„	421
The title-page of the second Quarto, 1635 . . . . .	„	423
The title-page of the second Folio, 1640 . . . . .	„	425
The title-page of the third Quarto, 1669 . . . . .	„	427
The title-page of the fourth Quarto, 1674 . . . . .	„	429

<sup>1</sup> *Satiro-mastix*, 1602, quarto, sig. L4 verso.



## THE TEXT: INTRODUCTORY NOTES

IN the present volume we reach the end of a definite stage in the text of Jonson's plays. It includes the masterpieces and the play of *Catiline*, which was the last to be printed in the authoritative Folio of 1616. This is the basis of our text. The folio text of *Epicoene, or The Silent Woman* is the earliest we possess; if that play was printed in quarto in 1612, no copy is now known. The other plays were first printed in quarto, *Volpone* in 1606, *The Alchemist* in 1610, and *Catiline* in 1611. Jonson revised these texts for the Folio, but with a more sparing hand than in his earlier plays. There is nothing that can be called re-writing, no insertion of new scenes, but only occasional retouchings of word or phrase. He was at the height of his powers, and even his keen critical mind found little to reject or alter. One after-effect of this was that his proof-reading was less rigorous. Further, the punctuation of the later plays is much freer than was usual with Jonson, and also less correct.

Seven copies of the Folio of 1616 have been collated for the text of the present edition: two in the British Museum, two in Bodley, and three belonging to the Editor. For the Folio reprint of 1640, two copies belonging to the Editor have been collated, and copies in public libraries have been consulted whenever a reading seemed doubtful. The Quarto texts which have been collated are noticed in detail in the introduction to the separate plays.

The following symbols and abbreviations are used in the critical apparatus:

*F1* = the Folio of 1616.

*F2* = the Folio of 1640.

*Ff* = readings common to the Folios of 1616 and 1640.

*F3* = the Folio of 1692.

*Q* = the first Quarto.

*Q2* = the second Quarto.

*W* = Whalley's edition of 1756.

*G* = Gifford's edition of 1816.

*om.* = an earlier reading omitted from a later text.

*not in Q* = a new reading first found in the 1616 Folio.

*corr. Q* or *corr. F* is a formula used to indicate author's or printer's correction, the earlier reading being indicated by *Q originally* or *F originally*.

*Re* in the critical apparatus of *Epicoene* = readings in the reset quire Yy of the 1616 Folio (Act I, and Act II up to scene ii, line 64) described on pages 148-9.

In stage directions *add Q* indicates a brief direction such as '*Exit.*' printed at the end of a line; a stage direction centred in the text and taking up a line by itself is indicated by '*After . . .*' and the line number of the end of the preceding speech.

Words inserted in the text by the Editor are enclosed in conical brackets; words wrongly inserted or retained in the original text are enclosed in square brackets to show that they should be deleted.

Gifford's scene-numberings and scene-location are quoted in the critical apparatus, and also his stage directions, except where they are identical with the marginal directions in the Folio.

---

VOLPONE *or* THE FOX

---





## THE TEXT

THE comedy of *Volpone, or The Fox*, stated on the Folio title-page to have been 'Acted in the yeere 1605', was published by Thomas Thorpe in 1607. The printer is unknown. Thorpe had published *Sejanus* in 1605, the copyright of which had been transferred to him by Edward Blount on 6 August. On 4 September he had entered *Eastward Hoe* along with William Aspley, though only Aspley's name appeared on the title-page. On 21 April 1608 he entered *The Masques of Blackness and of Beauty*, which he published in that year, and followed these with *Hymenaei*, the signatures of which are continuous with those of the two masques. From 1605 to 1608, therefore, he was Jonson's publisher. The date 1607 on the title-page of the *Volpone* Quarto is probably a calendar date, i.e. beginning the year on 1 January.<sup>1</sup> If so, the play was printed early in the year. But Thorpe did not enter it on the Stationers' Register till he transferred it along with *Sejanus* on 3 October 1610 to Walter Burre, the publisher of *The Alchemist*. The entry is as follows:

3<sup>o</sup> Octobris.

Walter Burre    Entred for his Copyes by assignemente from  
 Thomas Thorpe and with the consente of  
 Th'wardens vnder their handes, 2 bookes thone  
 called, Seianus his fall, thother, Vulpone or the  
 ffox. xij<sup>d</sup>

Arber, *Transcript*, III. 445.

Following the precedent of the *Sejanus* Quarto, Jonson prefaced the play with verse tributes from his friends. Very appropriately Donne, Chapman, Beaumont, and Fletcher<sup>2</sup> were among the eulogists of this great play. There was

<sup>1</sup> See W. W. Greg, 'The Riddle of Jonson's Chronology', in *The Library*, fourth series, vol. vi, pp. 340-7.

<sup>2</sup> So we interpret the initials 'I F' here and in the similar copy contributed to the Quarto of *Catiline*. The suggestion that the writer was John Florio (made in *The Times Literary Supplement* of 17 January 1918, and accepted by Miss Yates in her monograph on Florio) is plausible for *Volpone*, but less likely for *Catiline*. Dyce accepted Fletcher's authorship in his edition of Beaumont and Fletcher.

shrewd critical insight in Edmund Bolton's comment that Jonson had rehandled the ancient drama 'Tanquam explorator' and Donne's tribute—

*Tam nemo veterum est sequutor, ut tu  
Illos quòd sequeris nouator audis.*

They saw that he was no blind copyist of the classics.

The collation—two preliminary leaves, four leaves of ¶, A to N in fours, two leaves of O—is in detail: first preliminary leaf blank, preserved in the British Museum copy with the inscription to Florio and in the Cottrell-Dormer copy sold by T. Thorp in 1925; second preliminary leaf, the title with verso blank; ¶ recto, the Dedication; ¶ verso to ¶ 4 recto, the Epistle; ¶ 4 verso, 'E. B.', i.e. Edmund Bolton, 'AD VTRAMQVE ACADEMIAM'; A recto, 'I. D.', i.e. John Donne, '*Amicissimo, & meritissimo* BEN: IONSON'; A verso, '*To my friend Mr. IONSON. EPIGRAMME*' and '*To the Reader. Vpon the worke.*', the latter signed 'T. R.'; A 2 recto, 'F. B.', i.e. Francis Beaumont, 'To my deare friend, Mr. Benjamin Ionson, vpon his Foxe.'; A 2 verso, 'D. D.', probably Dudley Digges, '*To my good friend. Mr. Ionson.*' and '*I. C.*', '*To the ingenious Poet.*'; A 3 recto, 'G. C.', i.e. George Chapman, 'To his deare Friend, Benjamin Ionson'; A 3 verso, 'E. S.', conjectured by Gifford to be Edward Scory, '*To my worthily-esteemed Mr. Ben: Ionson.*', and 'I. F.', i.e. John Fletcher, '*To the true Mr. in his Art, B. Ionson.*'; A 4 recto, 'THE PERSONS OF THE COMOEDYE', and 'THE ARGVMENT.'; A 4 verso, 'The PROLOGVE'; B to N and one leaf of O, the text of the play; O 2 blank, preserved in the Cottrell-Dormer copy.

This is the normal collation of the Quarto, giving sheet A as finally adjusted by the compositor. He had made an error in perfecting the inner forme of A, putting signature A 2 at the foot of what should be A 4. The result was that he had printed the inner forme the wrong way round in respect to the outer forme. This blunder is preserved in Mr. T. J. Wise's copy, which gives this absurd arrangement:

A verso, Scory's and Fletcher's poems; A 2, 'THE PERSONS OF THE COMOEDYE' and 'THE ARGVMENT'; A 3 verso, T. R.'s lines preceded by the unsigned 'EPIGRAMME'; A 4, Beaumont's verses. One other copy, once Mr. W. A. White's, is recorded with this dislocation. Probably the error was discovered at once when the sheet was folded; the signature was then rectified in the course of printing.

This is not the only variation of sheet A. A set of verses signed 'N. F.' was added to the preliminary tributes after the sheet had been set up. It survives in two copies, Mr. Wise's and the British Museum copy with the autograph dedication to Florio. In the Museum copy it is inserted between the original A 3 verso and A 4, before the last leaf containing the 'The Persons of the Comedy', 'The Argument', and 'The Prologue', which thus becomes A 5: this was the proper place for it. But in the Wise copy it is inserted in the middle of the sheet between A 2 verso and the original A 3 with Chapman's verses.

'N. F.' is Nathan Field. The opening lines of his tribute to his 'worthiest Maister' explain that this poem was an afterthought.

For mee, your *Worke* or you, most worthy Friend,  
(Mongst these vn-æquall'd Men) to dare commend,  
Were damnable presumption; whose weake flame  
Can neither dimme, or light your full grow'n fame:  
How can my common knowledge set you forth,  
When it wants art, and *Art* it selfe wants worth?  
Therefore, how vaine (although by you, made one)  
Am I, to put such saucy boldnesse on  
To send you *Verses*?

The verses were therefore written at Jonson's request. Field had acted in two plays of Jonson before this, *Cynthia's Revels* and *Poetaster*. 'Nid field', Jonson told Drummond, 'was his Schollar & he had read to him the Satyres of Horace & some Epigrammes of Martiall.'<sup>1</sup> Verses by Field are prefixed to *The Faithful Shepherdess*, initial-signed in

<sup>1</sup> Drummond Conversations, ll. 164-5: see vol. 1, p. 137.

the first edition, which appeared in 1609 or 1610, and to Jonson's *Catiline* in the quarto of 1611. The lines before *Volpone* are thus the earliest verses yet traced to him; their modest tone, not unfitting a young writer who appeared in the company of famous contemporaries, has something of the youthful, almost boyish, note which charms us in his writings. It adds a new and kindly glimpse to what we know of his relations with Jonson, that the great dramatist, amid the homage paid to a brilliant and successful play, sought the tribute of the young actor who revered him. In the equally modest verses to his 'loved friend', John Fletcher, on *The Faithful Shepherdess*, Field had a significant allusion, which has passed unnoticed, to Jonson:

Opinion, that great foole, makes fooles of all,  
 And (once) I feard her till I met a minde  
 Whose graue instructions philosophicall,  
 Toss'd it like dust vpon a March strong winde,  
 He shall for euer my example be,  
 And his embraced doctrine grow in me.

Seven copies of the Quarto have been collated for the text of the present edition:

(1) The British Museum copy with press-mark C. 12. e. 17: this was the copy which Jonson gave to John Florio, with an autograph inscription styling him 'his louing Father, & worthy Freind, . . . The ayde of his Muses'.<sup>1</sup> It has the autograph of 'Mary Leigh' at the foot of the title-page and the bookplate of Charles Chauncy, and came from the library of George III (marked A in the following list).

(2) The British Museum copy with press-mark C. 34. d. 2, formerly the Garrick copy (marked B).

(3) The Bodleian copy with press-mark Malone 809 (marked C).

(4) An imperfect copy in Bodley, Malone 225 (4), with the title-page and the last leaf in manuscript (marked D).

(5) The Dyce copy at South Kensington, formerly the Heber copy (marked E).

<sup>1</sup> See the facsimile in volume 1 opposite page 56.

(6) Mr. T. J. Wise's copy (marked F).

(7) An imperfect copy belonging to the Clifton Shakspeare Society, wanting the two first leaves and signature O, the text of which is supplied in an early seventeenth-century hand (marked G).

The following corrections were made by Jonson while the sheets were passing through the press:

Sig. B 2 <sup>r</sup>	i. i. 74	too B	to the rest
	80	returne B	returne, the rest
	81	Ten-fold B	Ten-fold, the rest
Sig. B 4 <sup>r</sup>	i. ii. 122	Harpyeis B	Harpyies the rest
	124	Phthisick B	Phthisick, the rest
	125	Catarrhe B	Catarrhe the rest
Sig. C 2 <sup>r</sup>	i. iv. 52	Scotomy, he D	Scotomy, he, the rest
Sig. D 2 <sup>v</sup>	ii. 1 39	pray G	Pray the rest
	52	worthy G	Worthy the rest
	57	knowne G	knowne the rest
Sig. E 1 <sup>r</sup>	ii. ii. 97	' pray A, B, D, E, F	' Pray C, G
	104	remedy A, B, D, E, F	remedy: C, G
	106	Stoppings A, B, D, E, F	stoppings C, G
Sig. E 3 <sup>r</sup>	247	seats A, B, D, E, F	seat's C, G
Sig. H 2 III VII. 162		a racted A, B, C, E, F, G	attracted D <sup>1</sup>
Sig. H 4 <sup>v</sup> III. ix. 28		tóld A, D, E	I told B, C, F, G
	29	he Imight A, D, E <sup>2</sup>	he might B, C, F, G
Sig. M 1 <sup>r</sup>	v. III. 91	malce B, C, G	malice, A, D, E, F
Sig. M 2 <sup>v</sup>	v. IV. 68	creepes B, C, G	creepes, A, D, E, F
Sig. M 3 <sup>r</sup>	80	where's B, C, G	Where's A, D, E, F
	89	shell, B, C, G	shell. A, D, E, F

Signature F is misprinted E in A, C, and G, and signature K 3 is not marked.

There are no changes of reading, nothing in fact but press-corrections. Some of them, such as 'Catarrhe', 'a racted', or the dropped letter of III. ix. 28, 29, might have been made by the compositor, but a correction in punctuation such as 'returne, Ten-fold, vpon them' in i. i. 80-1, and the correction of the mis-spelt 'Harpyeis' in i. ii. 122, show unmistakably the hand of Jonson.

The printing of the Quarto has one peculiar feature—its

<sup>1</sup> That it is not the accidental dropping out of a letter is shown by the fact that the spacing of the imperfect form admits only of a single *t* while the correction has *tt*.

<sup>2</sup> The 'I' had dropped from the previous line.

use of accents. Where they indicate the pronunciation of Italian words, they undoubtedly come from Jonson, as '*Romagnia*' (I. i. 58), '*Osteria*' (II. vi. 15), '*Soria*' (IV. i. 102); and to these may be added '*Montagnie*' (III. iv. 90). The Folio keeps '*Romagnia*' and '*Soria*', and adds '*procuratia*' (II. ii. 36) to the examples found in the Quarto. But the Quarto also has such preposterous pointing as '*alóne*' (Epistle, 29); '*Before the bést houndes, thou dost, still, but play*' in Chapman's preliminary verses; '*Gentlewóman*' five times;<sup>1</sup> '*wóman-kind*' (v. ii. 11); '*Hé*' (v. iii. 26, xi. 6); '*Bút*' (v. xii. 5). And there are a few others. Why Jonson passed these oddities is a mystery.

The play was next printed by William Stansby in the Folio of 1616 from a carefully corrected copy of the Quarto. Purely textual changes are slight. It is significant that, when Jonson returned to his play after such an interval, he found nothing to recast. He excised, of course, from the dedicatory Epistle the allusion to the preface of his still-unpublished notes on the *Ars Poetica*.<sup>2</sup> But other changes are only verbal—'*filth*' for '*garbage*', in the dedicatory epistle, l. 89; '*goodnesse*' for '*vertue*' in IV. v. 43; '*catholique*' for '*Christian*' (ibid., 130); '*Fitted*' for '*Apted*' in v. iv. 55. On the other hand, he worked minutely over the punctuation, recasting it systematically, especially in the longer speeches; most of his changes are recorded in the critical apparatus. He inserted a number of stage directions, and he used the interjection, parenthesis bracket, and the dash more freely. In one speech, however, he put in his cold, logical punctuation where the Quarto suggests a hurried delivery for the actor: it is Celia's cry of agony when she flings herself at Volpone's feet and implores him to spare her.<sup>3</sup>

If you haue eares, that will be pierc'd—or eyes,  
That can be open'd—a heart, may be touch'd—  
Or any part, that yet sounds *man*, about you—

<sup>1</sup> IV. ii. 34, 39; iii. 15; v. 3; v. xii 3.

<sup>2</sup> II. 123-4.

<sup>3</sup> III. vii. 240-6, and similarly in the later lines.

If you haue touch of holy *Saints*—or *Heauen*—  
Do mee the grace, to let me scape—if not,  
Be bountifull, and kill mee—you do knowe,  
I am a creature, hether ill betrayed, . . .

Except in the mere point of formal presentment Jonson felt he could not improve on his original text.

A few corrections of the Folio text have been made on the authority of the Quarto: the chief are '*osteria*' in II. vi. 15, '*TASSO?*' or '*DANTE?*' in III. iv. 79, and '*I'am past already!*' in III. vii. 81. The accent and the metrical apostrophes were omitted by Stansby's compositor, and Jonson overlooked the omission.<sup>1</sup>

The Folio of 1640, printed by Richard Bishop, is a slightly inferior text. It tends to modernize both spelling and punctuation, using the semicolon more frequently. It was set up from an uncorrected copy of the 1616 Folio. The practice of gathering up the uncorrected sheets and binding them impartially with the corrected, is invaluable for tracing the stages of correction when an author read his proofs, but it had its disadvantages if they were bound up for what we may call the office copy and used for a reprint.

The 1640 text has some careless errors. Examples are '*masc'line* enter-ludes' in the Epistle, l. 87, for '*misc'line*', which puzzled the printer, who had not heard of *ludi miscelli*; '*keep up thy station*' in I. ii. 52, for '*take up*', which seems purely arbitrary; '*dispositions*' for '*depositions*' in II. ii. 139, and '*brought*' for '*bought*' in III. vii. 195. More serious is the omission of lines: in v. viii. 19, 20, the 1616 text

You shall perceiue, sir, I dare beate you. Approch.

V O L P. No haste, sir, I doe know your valure, well:

is shortened to

You shall perceive, sir, I doe know your valure, well.

Similarly in v. x. 8-12:

(C O R V. Will he betray himselfe?) V O L T. Whom,  
equally,

<sup>1</sup> For the metrical apostrophe see vol. iv, pp. 338-40.



I haue abus'd, out of most couetous endes—

(CORV. The man is mad! CORB. What's that?

CORV. He is possest.)

VOLT. For which; now strooke in conscience, here I  
prostrate

My selfe, at your offended feete, for pardon.—

the 1640 text left out the second and third of these lines.

One reading of this Folio, however, is an ingenious emendation—'*Yea fright all aches from your bones?*' in Nano's song (II. ii. 203) for '*Yet fright*' in the earlier texts. Whalley printed '*Yea*', but Gifford restored the original reading.

The Quarto text was reprinted in 1898 with a frontispiece of Volpone adoring his treasures, five initial letters, and a cover design by Aubrey Beardsley, who had planned twenty-four drawings to illustrate the play; Vincent O'Sullivan prefixed a critical essay on Jonson, and Robert Ross wrote a eulogy of the artist.

The Folio text has also been reprinted. In 1906 Horace Hart privately printed the play as a doctorate thesis of Paris by Henry Blackstone Wilkins; the verse-lining and the punctuation are erratic, though there are no serious errors in the text. W. Bang's scholarly reprint of the Folio in his *Materialien zur Kunde des älteren englischen Dramas*, included *Volpone* in his seventh volume, the second part of which was issued in 1908; it was his last complete play: he stopped short at the beginning of the third act of *Epicoene*. Dr. John D. Rea also reprinted the Folio text in *Yale Studies in English*, volume lix, in 1919, from a copy in the Library of Congress, collated with the Yale copies of the Quarto and the Folio and a Folio copy in the University of Pennsylvania; he noted some variant readings of the Folio. He ignored the 1640 Folio, but collated Gifford, with the result that he credited Gifford with being the author of some of the 1640 readings.

BEN: IONSON

his

VOLPONE

Or

THE FOXE.

*- Simul & iucunda, & idonea dicere vita.*

Printed for *Thomas Thorppe.*

1607.

The title-page of the Quarto.



VOLPONE,  
OR  
THE FOXE.

*A Comædie.*

Acted in the yeere 1605. By  
the K. MAIESTIES  
SERVANTS.

The Author B. I.

HORAT.

*Simul & incunda, & idonea dicere vita.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed by WILLIAM STANSBY.

---

M. DC. XVL

The title-page of the 1616 Folio.



# VOLPONE, OR THE FOX.

A Comedy.

First Acted in the yeere 1605. By the  
Kings MAIESTIES Servants.  
With the allowance of the Master  
of REVELLS.

The Author B. J.

HORAT.

*Simul & jucunda, & idonea dicere vita.*

---



---

LONDON,  
Printed by RICHARD BISHOP.

M. DC. XL.

The title-page of the 1640 Folio.

TO  
THE MOST  
NOBLE AND  
MOST EQVALL  
SISTERS  
*THE TWO FAMOVVS*  
UNIVERSITIES  
FOR THEIR LOVE  
AND  
ACCEPTANCE  
*SHEWNTO HIS POEME IN THE*  
PRESENTATION  
BEN. IONSON  
THE GRATEFVLL ACKNOWLEDGER  
DEDICATES  
*BOTH IT AND HIMSELFE.*

DEDICATION. 4 EQVALL] ÆQVALL Q . 5 SISTERS] SISTERS, F2  
7 UNIVERSITIES] UNIVERSITIES, Q: UNIVERSITIES, F2 12 PRE-  
SENTATION] PRESENTATION: Q: *Presentation*, F2 13 BEN.] BEN: Q  
IONSON] IOHNSON F2 16 IT] It, Q *HIMSELFE.*] HIMSELFE.]  
There follows an *Epistle*, if you dare venture on the length. Q

NEuer (most equall SISTERS) had any man a wit so  
 presently excellent, as that it could raise it selfe; but there  
 must come both matter, occasion, commendurs, and fauourers  
 to it: If this be true, and that the fortune of all writers doth  
 daily proue it, it behoues the carefull to provide, well, toward 5  
 these accidents; and, hauing acquir'd them, to preserue that  
 part of reputation most tenderly, wherein the benefit of a friend  
 is also defended. Hence is it, that I now render my selfe grate-  
 full, and am studious to iustifie the bounty of your act: to  
 which, though your mere authority were satisfying, yet, it being 10  
 an age, wherein Poetrie, and the Professors of it heare so ill,  
 on all sides, there will a reason bee look'd for in the subiect.  
 It is certayne, nor can it with any fore-head be oppos'd, that  
 the too-much licence of Poetasters, in this time, hath much  
 deform'd their Mistris; that, euery day, their manifold, and 15  
 manifest ignorance, doth sticke vnnaturall reproches vpon her:  
 But for their petulancy, it were an act of the greatest iniustice,  
 either to let the learned suffer; or so diuine a skill (which indeed  
 should not bee attempted with vncleane hands) to fall, vnder the  
 least contempt. For, if men will impartially, and not à-squint, 20  
 looke toward the offices, and function of a Poet, they will easily  
 conclude to themselues, the impossibility of any mans being the  
 good Poet, without first being a good man. He that is said to  
 be able to informe yong-men to all good disciplines, inflame  
 growne-men to all great vertues, keepe old-men in their best and 25  
 supreme state, or as they decline to child-hood, recouer them to  
 their first strength; that comes forth the interpreter, and arbiter  
 of nature, a teacher of things diuine, no lesse then humane,  
 a master in manners; and can alone (or with a few) effect the  
 businesse of man-kind: this, I take him, is no subiect for pride, 30  
 and ignorance to exercise their rayling rhetorique vpon. But,

THE EPISTLE. *The running title is printed in italic in Q, and the text in roman.*

11 Poetrie] Poetry Q. So 37 1 equal] equal Q 4 it:] it. Q  
 to print (nor in 13 13 oppos'd,] oppos'd Q, which failed  
 14 Poetasters] Poetasters Q 15 Mistris]  
 Mistresse Q 21, 23 Poet] Poet Q. So 35 25 old-men] old  
 men Q 28 then] than Fz (et passim) 29 alone] alone Q  
 30 man-kind: this] Man-kind. This Q



it will here be hastily answer'd, that the writers of these dayes  
 are other things; that, not only their manners, but their natures  
 are inuerted; and nothing remayning with them of the dignitie  
 35 of Poet, but the abused name, which euery Scribe vsurps: that  
 now, especially in dramatick, or (as they terme it) stage-  
 poetrie, nothing but ribaldry, profanation, blasphemy, all  
 licence of offence to god, and man, is practis'd. I dare not  
 denie a great part of this (and am sorry, I dare not) because  
 40 in some mens abortiue features (and would they had neuer  
 boasted the light) it is ouer-true: But, that all are embarqu'd  
 in this bold aduenture for hell, is a most vncharitable thought,  
 and, vtter'd, a more malicious slander. For my particular,  
 I can (and from a most cleare conscience) affirme, that I haue  
 45 euer trembled to thinke toward the least prophanenesse; haue  
 lothed the use of such foule, and vn-wash'd baurd'y, as is now  
 made the foode of the scene. And, howsoever I cannot escape,  
 from some, the imputation of sharpnesse, but that they will say,  
 I haue taken a pride, or lust, to be bitter, and not my yongest  
 50 infant but hath come into the world with all his teeth; I would  
 aske of these supercilious politiques, what nation, societie, or  
 generall order, or state I haue prouok'd? what publique per-  
 son? whether I haue not (in all these) preseru'd their dignitie,  
 as mine owne person, safe? My workes are read, allow'd, (I  
 55 speake of those that are intirely mine) looke into them: What  
 broad reproofes haue I vs'd? Where haue I beene particular?  
 Where personall? except to a mimick, cheater, bawd, or buffon,  
 creatures (for their insolencies) worthy to be tax'd? Yet, to  
 which of these so pointingly, as he might not, either ingenuously  
 60 haue confest, or wisely dissembled his disease? But it is not  
 rumour can make men guiltie, much lesse entitle me, to other  
 mens crimes. I know, that nothing can bee so innocently writ,  
 or carryed, but may be made obnoxious to construction; mary,  
 whil'st I beare mine innocence about mee, I feare it not.  
 65 Application, is now, growne a trade with many; and there are,

38 god . . . man] God . . . Man Q      47 scene. And corr. Fr : scene :  
 And Fr originally : Scene : And Q      49 lust.] lust Q      54 workes]  
 WORKES Q      55 them :] them, Q      56 vs'd ?] vsd : Q      beene] bin Q  
 58 Yet,] or Q      59 ingenuously] ingeniously Q

that professe to haue a key for the decyphering of euery thing: but let wise and noble persons take heed how they be too credulous, or giue leaue to these inuading interpreters, to bee ouer-familiar with their fames, who cunningly, and often, utter their owne virulent malice, vnder other mens simplest meanings. As <sup>70</sup> for those, that will (by faults which charitie hath rak'd vp, or common honestie conceal'd) make themselues a name with the multitude, or (to draw their rude, and beastly claps) care not whose liuing faces they intrench, with their petulant stiles; may they doe it, without a riual, for me: I choose rather to liue <sup>75</sup> grau'd in obscuritie, then share with them, in so preposterous a fame. Nor can I blame the wishes of those seuer, and wiser patriots, who prouiding the hurts these licentious spirits may doe in a state, desire rather to see fooles, and deuils, and those antique reliques of barbarisme retriu'd, with all other ridicu- <sup>80</sup> lous, and exploded follies: then behold the wounds of priuate men, of princes, and nations. For, as HORACE makes TREBATIVS speake, among these

—Sibi quisq; timet, quanquam est intactus, & odit.

And men may iustly impute such rages, if continu'd, to the <sup>85</sup> writer, as his sports. The increase of which lust in liberty, together with the present trade of the stage, in all their misc'line enter-ludes, what learned or liberall soule doth not already abhor? where nothing but the filth of the time is utter'd, and that with such impropriety of phrase, such plenty of solœcismes, <sup>90</sup> such dearth of sense, so bold prolepse's, so rackt metaphor's, with brotheltry, able to violate the eare of a pagan, and blasphemy, to turne the bloud of a christian to water. I cannot but be serious in a cause of this nature, wherein my fame, and the reputations of diuers honest, and learned are the question; when <sup>95</sup> a Name, so ful of authority, antiquity, and all great marke, is (through their insolence) become the lowest scorne of the age:

68 interpreters,]	Interpreters Q	74 intrench,]	intrench Q	75
choose]	chuse Q	77 seuer]	grauē Q	wiser]
				wise F2, F3
deuils]	Diuelles Q	83 among]	in Q	86 sports]
				spots F2, F3
increase]	encrease Q	87 misc'line]	misc'line F2, F3	89 filth]
garbage Q	92 brotheltry,]	brotheltry Q	95 diuers]	diuerse Q
96 Name]	NAME Q			

and those men subiect to the petulancy of euery vernaculous  
 Orator, that were wont to bee the care of Kings, and happiest  
 100 Monarchs. This it is, that hath not only rap't me to present  
 indignation, but made me studious, heretofore; and, by all my  
 actions, to stand off, from them: which may most appeare in  
 this my latest worke (which you, most learned ARBITRESSES,  
 haue seene, iudg'd, and to my crowne, approu'd) wherein I  
 105 haue labour'd, for their instruction, and amendment, to reduce,  
 not only the ancient formes, but manners of the scene, the  
 easinesse, the propriety, the innocence, and last the doctrine,  
 which is the principall end of poesie, to informe men, in the  
 best reason of liuing. And though my catastrophe may, in  
 110 the strict rigour of comick law, meet with censure, as turning  
 back to my promise; I desire the learned, and charitable critick  
 to haue so much faith in me, to thinke it was done off industrie:  
 For, with what ease I could haue varied it, neerer his scale  
 (but that I feare to boast my owne faculty) I could here insert.  
 115 But my speciall ayme being to put the snaffle in their mouths,  
 that crie out, we neuer punish vice in our enterludes, &c.  
 I tooke the more liberty; though not without some lines of  
 example, drawne euen in the ancients themselues, the goings  
 out of whose comœdies are not alwaies ioyfull, but oft-times,  
 120 the bawdes, the seruants, the riuals, yea, and the masters are  
 mulcted: and fitly, it being the office of a comick-Poet, to imi-  
 tate iustice, and instruct to life, as well as puritie of language,  
 or stirre vp gentle affections. To which, I shall take the occa-  
 sion else-where to speake. For the present (most reuerenced  
 125 SISTERS) as I haue car'd to be thankfull for your affec-  
 tions past, and here made the vnderstanding acquainted with  
 some ground of your fauours; let me not despaire their con-  
 tinuance, to the maturing of some worthier fruits: wherein, if

98 men] MEN Q 100 is,] is Q 101 heretofore:] heretofore, Q  
 102 off] of Q them:] them; Q 103 worke] WORKE Q 108  
 poesie.] POESY Q 113 For,] For Q 116 enterludes,] Enter-  
 ludes Q 118 example,] example Q 120 masters] maisters Q  
 121 -Poet.] -POET Q 123-4 I shall take . . . to speake] vpon my  
 next opportunity toward the examining & digesting of my notes, I shall  
 speake more wealthily, and pay the World a debt. Q 124 For the  
 present] In the meane time Q, beginning a new paragraph. 127  
 fauours] fauours Q

my M V S E S be true to me, I shall raise the despis'd head of  
 poetrie againe, and stripping her out of those rotten and base 130  
 rags, wherewith the Times haue adulterated her form, restore  
 her to her primitiue habit, feature, and maiesty, and render her  
 worthy to be imbraced, and kist, of all the great and master-  
 spirits of our world. As for the vile, and slothfull, who neuer  
 affected an act, worthy of celebration, or are so inward with 135  
 their owne vicious natures, as they worthily feare her; and  
 thinke it a high point of policie, to keepe her in contempt with  
 their declamatorie, and windy inuectiues: shee shall out of iust  
 rage incite her seruants (who are genus ir(r)itabile) to spout  
 inke in their faces, that shall eate, farder then their marrow, 140  
 into their fames; and not C I N N A M V S the barber, with his  
 arte, shall be able to take out the brands, but they shall  
 liue, and bee read, till the wretches dye, as things  
 worst deseruing of themselues in chiefe,  
 and then of all man- 145  
 kind.

130 poetrie] POETRY Q      133 master-spirits] Maister Spirits Q  
 145 mankind.] From my house in the Black-Friars this 11. of February.  
 1607. add Q

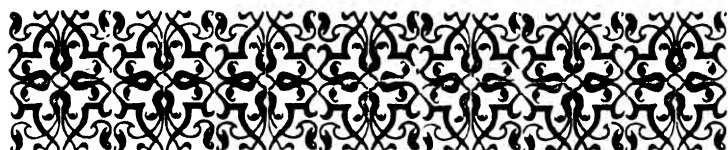
## The Persons of the Play.

VOLPONE, <i>a Magnifico.</i>	POLITIQUE WOVLDBEE, <i>a Knight.</i>	
MOSCA, <i>his Parasite.</i>		
VOLTORE, <i>an Aduocate.</i>	PEREGRINE, <i>a Gent.-travailer.</i>	
CORBACCIO, <i>an old Gentleman.</i>	BONARIO, <i>a yong Gentleman.</i>	
5 CORVINO, <i>a Merchant.</i>	FINE MADAME WOVLDBEE, <i>the Knights wife.</i>	
AVOCATORI, <i>four Magistrates.</i>	CELIA, <i>the Merchants wife.</i>	15
NOTARIO, <i>the Register.</i>	COMMANDADORI, <i>Officers.</i>	
NANO, <i>a Dwarf.</i>	MERCATORI, <i>three Merchants.</i>	
CASTRONE, <i>an Eunuch.</i>	ANDROGYNO, <i>a Hermaphrodite.</i>	
10 GREGE.	SERVITORE, <i>a Seruant.</i>	
	WOMEN.	20

## THE SCENE

## VENICE.

The Persons of the Play.] THE PERSONS OF | THE COMOEDYE. Q 4  
CORBACCIO] CORACCIO F2, F3 19 SERVITORE, *a Seruant*] *Servitori, Servants,*  
*two Waiting-women, &c.* G THE SCENE VENICE. *not in Q* After  
The Scene F2 inserts the names of The principall Comedians given in F1 at the end  
of the Play.



# VOLPONE, OR THE FOXE.

---

## THE ARGUMENT.

VOLPONE, childlesse, rich, faines sicke, despaires,  
Offers his state to hopes of severall heires,  
Lies languishing; His Parasite receaues  
Presents of all, assures, deludes: Then weaues  
Other crosse-plots, which ope' themselues, are told. 5  
New tricks for safety, are sought; they thriue: When, bold,  
Each tempts th'other againe, and all are sold.

## PROLOGVE

NOW, luck yet send vs, and a little wit  
Will serue, to make our play hit;  
(According to the palates of the season)  
Here is ri'me, not emptie of reason:  
This we were bid to credit, from our Poet, 5  
Whose true scope, if you would know it,  
In all his *poemes*, stil, hath been this measure,  
To mixe profit, with your pleasure;  
And not as some (whose throats their enuy fayling)  
Cry hoarsely, all he writes, is rayling: 10  
And, when his playes come forth, thinke they can flout  
them,

THE ARGUMENT *roman in Q* 7 tempts] tempt's Q  
PROLOGVE] The PROLOGVE *Q, which prints it in italic, except l. 8*  
*and the quotations in ll. 10, 12* 1 yet] God Q 2 play] PLAY Q  
5 Poet] Poët Q 7 *poemes*] Poemes Q 11 playes] PLAYES Q

- With saying, he was a yeere about them.  
 To these there needs no lie, but this his creature,  
 Which was, two months since, no feature ;  
 15 And, though he dares giue them fīue liues to mend it,  
   'Tis knowne, fīue weekes fully pen'd it :  
 From his owne hand, without a co-adiutor,  
 Nouice, iourney-man, or tutor.  
 Yet, thus much I can giue you, as a token  
 20 Of his playes worth, no egges are broken ;  
 Nor quaking custards with fierce teeth affrighted,  
   Wherewith your rout are so delighted ;  
 Nor hailes he in a gull, old ends reciting,  
   To stop gaps in his loose writing ;  
 25 With such a deale of monstrous, and forc'd action :  
   As might make *Bet'lem* a faction :  
 Nor made he his play, for iests, stolne from each table,  
   But makes iests, to fit his fable.  
 And, so presents quick *comardie*, refined,  
 30 As best Criticks haue designed,  
 The lawes of time, place, persons he obserueth,  
   From no needfull rule he swerueth.  
 All gall, and coppresse, from his inke, he drayneth,  
   Onely, a little salt remayneth ;  
 35 Wherewith, he'll rub your cheeks, til (red with laughter)  
   They shall looke fresh, a weeke after.

*Act I. Scene I.*

VOLPONE, MOSCA.

Good morning to the day ; and, next, my gold :  
 Open the shrine, that I may see my *saint*.  
 Haile the worlds soule, and mine. More glad then is

Prol. 20 playes . . . no corr. F1 · Playes . . . No F1 originally, F2 :  
 PLAYES . . . No Q 21 fierce] *feirce* Q 26 *Bet'lem*] *Bethlem* Q  
 27 play corr. F1 : Play F1 originally, F2 : PLAY Q 30 designed]  
 designed ; F2 1. 1] ACT. I. SCENE. I. Q (*et passim*) : *A Room in*  
*Volpone's House.* | *Enter Volpone and Mosca.* G After 2 *Mosca withdraws*  
*the curtain and discovers piles of gold, plate, jewels, &c. G*

The teeming earth, to see the long'd-for sunne  
 Peepe through the hornes of the celestiall *ram*, 5  
 Am I, to view thy splendor, darkening his :  
 That, lying here, amongst my other hoords,  
 Shew'st like a flame, by night ; or like the day  
 Strooke out of *chaos*, when all darkenesse fled  
 Vnto the center. O, thou sonne of S O L, 10  
 (But brighter then thy father) let me kisse,  
 With adoration, thee, and euery relique  
 Of sacred treasure, in this blessed roomc.  
 Well did wise Poets, by thy glorious name,  
 Title that age, which they would haue the best ; 15  
 Thou being the best of things : and far transcending  
 All stile of ioy, in children, parents, friends,  
 Or any other waking dreame on earth.  
 Thy lookes, when they to V E N V S did ascribe,  
 They should haue giu'n her twentie thousand C V P I D S ; 20  
 Such are thy beauties, and our loues ! Deare *saint*,  
 Riches, the dumbe god, that giu'st all men tongues :  
 That canst doe nought, and yet mak'st men doe all things ;  
 The price of soules ; euen hell, with thee to boot,  
 Is made worth heauen ! Thou art vertue, fame, 25  
 Honour, and all things else ! Who can get thee,  
 He shall be noble, valiant, honest, wise——

M O S. And what he will, sir. Riches are in fortune  
 A greater good, then wisdom is in nature.

V O L. True, my beloued M O S C A. Yet, I glory 30  
 More in the cunning purchase of my wealth,  
 Then in the glad possession ; since I gaine  
 No common way : I vse no trade, no venter ;  
 I wound no earth with plow-shares ; fat no beasts  
 To feede the shambles ; haue no mills for yron, 35  
 Oyle, corne, or men, to grinde 'hem into poulder ;

1. i. 4 sunne *corr.* F1 : Sunne F1 originally, F2 . Sunne Q 5 celes-  
 tiall] *Celestiall* Q *ram* *corr.* F1 : *Ram* Q, F1 originally, F2 7 That, *corr.*  
 F1 : That Q, F1 originally, F2 9 Strooke] Struck F2 21 loues!]  
 loues. Q 22 dumbe] dumb Q 25 heauen!] heauen. Q 26 Honour]  
 Honor Q else!] else. Q 34 -shares ; fat Q, *corr.* F1 : -shares : I fat F1  
 originally, F2, F3 35 yron] iron Q 36 'hem F3 (*et passim*)



- I blow no subtill glasse ; expose no ships  
 To threatnings of the furrow-faced sea ;  
 I turne no moneys, in the publike banke ;  
 40 Nor vsure priuate—— M o s. No, sir, nor deuoure  
 Soft prodigalls. You shall ha' some will swallow  
 A melting heire, as glibly, as your *Dutch*  
 Will pills of butter, and ne're purge for't ;  
 Teare forth the fathers of poore families  
 45 Out of their beds, and coffin them, aliue,  
 In some kind, clasping prison, where their bones  
 May be forth-comming, when the flesh is rotten :  
 But, your sweet nature doth abhorre these courses ;  
 You lothe, the widdowes, or the orphans teares  
 50 Should wash your pauements ; or their pittious cryes  
 Ring in your roofes ; and beate the aire, for vengeance.—  
 V o L. Right, M o s c A, I doe lothe it. M o s. And be-  
 sides, sir,  
 You are not like the thresher, that doth stand  
 With a huge flaile, watching a heape of corne,  
 55 And, hungrie, dares not taste the smallest graine,  
 But feeds on mallowes, and such bitter herbs ;  
 Nor like the merchant, who hath fill'd his vaults  
 With *Romagnia*, and rich *Candian* wines,  
 Yet drinks the lees of *Lombards* vineger :  
 60 You will not lie in straw, whilst moths, and wormes  
 Feed on your sumptuous hangings, and soft beds.  
 You know the vse of riches, and dare giue, now,  
 From that bright heape, to me, your poore obseruer,  
 Or to your dwarfe, or your *hermaphrodite*,  
 65 Your *eunuch*, or what other houshold-trifle  
 Your pleasure allowes maint'nance.— V o L. Hold thee,  
 M o s c A,

i. i. 40 priuate—*corr. F1* : priuate. *Q, F1 originally, F2* 43 ne're]  
 nère *Q* 48 But, *corr. F1* : But *Q, F1 originally, F2* 51 roofes ;  
*corr. F1* : roofes : *Q, F1 originally, F2* vengeance.— *corr. F1* : ven-  
 geance. *Q, F1 originally, F2* 53 the thresher *corr. F1* : a thresher  
*Q, F1 originally, F2, F3* 57 merchant *Q, corr. F1, F2* : marchant  
*F1 originally* 58 *Romagnia* *Q, corr. F1* : *Romagnia* *F1 originally, F2*  
 66 maint'nance.—] maint'nance. *Q* After 66 Gives him money. G

Take, of my hand ; thou strik'st on truth, in all :  
 And they are enuious, terme thee parasite.  
 Call forth my dwarfe, my eunuch, and my foole,  
 And let 'hem make me sport. What should I doe, 70  
 But cocker vp my *genius*, and liue free  
 To all delights, my fortune calls me to ?  
 I haue no wife, no parent, child, allie,  
 To giue my substance to ; but whom I make,  
 Must be my heire : and this makes men obserue me. 75  
 This drawes new clients, daily, to my house,  
 Women, and men, of euery sexe, and age,  
 That bring me presents, send me plate, coyne, iewels,  
 With hope, that when I die, (which they expect  
 Each greedy minute) it shall then returne, 80  
 Ten-fold, vpon them ; whil'st some, couetous  
 Aboue the rest, seeke to engrosse me, whole,  
 And counter-worke, the one, vnto the other,  
 Contend in gifts, as they would seeme, in loue :  
 All which I suffer, playing with their hopes, 85  
 And am content to coyne 'hem into profit,  
 And looke vpon their kindnesse, and take more,  
 And looke on that ; still bearing them in hand,  
 Letting the cherry knock against their lips,  
 And, draw it, by their mouths, and back againe. How now ! 90

Act I. Scene II.

NANO, ANDROGYNO, CASTRONE,  
 VOLPONE, MOSCA.

NOW, roome, for fresh gamsters, who doe will you to know,  
 They doe bring you neither play, nor Vniuersitie show ;  
 And therefore doe intreat you, that whatsoeuer they rehearse,  
 May not fare a whit the worse, for the false pase of the verse.

1. i. 67 Take,] Take Q 70 sport.] Exit Mos. add G 74 to corr.  
 Q, Fr, F2 : too Q originally 80, 81 returne, Ten-fold, corr. Q, Fr,  
 F2 : returne Tenfold Q originally 82 seeke] see F3 88 still]  
 still, Q 1. ii. Re-enter Mosca with Nano, Androgyno, and Castrone.  
 G, continuing the scene

- 5 If you wonder at this, you will wonder more, ere we passe,  
 For know, here is inclos'd the Soule of PYTHAGORAS,  
 That iuggler diuine, as hereafter shall follow;  
 Which Soule (fast, and loose, sir) came first from APOLLO,  
 And was breath'd into ÆTHALIDES, MERCVRIVS  
 his sonne,
- 10 Where it had the gift to remember all that euer was done.  
 From thence it fled forth, and made quick transmigration  
 To goldy-lockt EVPHORBVS, who was kill'd, in good  
 fashion,  
 At the siege of old Troy, by the Cuckold of Sparta.  
 HERMOTIMVS was next (I find it, in my charta)
- 15 To whom it did passe, where no sooner it was missing,  
 But with one PYRRHVS, of Delos, it learn'd to goe a  
 fishing :  
 And thence, did it enter the Sophist of Greece.  
 From PYTHAGORE, shee went into a beautifull peece,  
 Hight ASPASIA, the meretrix; and the next tosse of her
- 20 Was, againe, of a whore, shee became a Philosopher,  
 CRATES the Cynick : (as it selfe doth relate it)  
 Since, Kings, Knights, and Beggars, Knaues, Lords and  
 Fooles gat it,  
 Besides, oxe, and asse, cammell, mule, goat, and brock,  
 In all which it hath spoke, as in the Coblers cock.
- 25 But I come not here, to discourse of that matter,  
 Or his one, two, or three, or his great oath, by quater,  
 His musicks, his trigon, his golden thigh,  
 Or his telling how elements shift : but I  
 Would aske, how of late, thou hast suffered translation,  
 And shifted thy coat, in these dayes of reformation ?
- 30 AND. Like one of the reformed, a Foole, as you see,  
 Counting all old doctrine heresie.  
 NAN. But not on thine owne forbid meates hast thou venter'd ?  
 AND. On fish, when first, a carthusian I enter'd.

i. ii. 6 PYTHAGORAS] Pithagoras Q : so 59 13 siege] secege Q  
 14 charta] Chartâ Q 16 PYRRHVS] Pirrhus Q 18 PYTHAGORE]  
 Pithagore Q . so 38 23 Besides,] Besides F2 29 suffered]  
 suffer'd F2 33 venter'd] ventur'd F3

N A N. *Why, then thy dogmaticall silence hath left thee ?* 35

A N D. *Of that an obstreperous Lawyer bereft mee.*

N A N. *O wonderfull change ! when Sir Lawyer forsooke thee,  
For P Y T H A G O R E ' S sake, what body then tooke thee ?*

A N D. *A good dull moyle.* N A N. *And how ! by that meanes,  
Thou wert brought to allow of the eating of beanes ?* 40

A N D. *Yes.* N A N. *But, from the moyle, into whom did'st  
thou passe ?*

A N D. *Into a very strange beast, by some writers cal'd an  
asse ;*

*By others, a precise, pure, illuminate brother,  
Of those deuoure flesh, and sometimes one another :  
And will drop you forth a libell, or a sanctified lie,* 45  
*Betwixt euery spoonefull of a natiuitie-pie.*

N A N. *Now quit thee, for heauen, of that profane nation ;  
And gently, report thy next transmigration.*

A N D. *To the same that I am.* N A N. *A creature of delight ?  
And (what is more then a Foole) an hermaphrodite ?* 50

*Now 'pray thee, sweet Soule, in all thy variation,  
Which body would'st thou choose, to take vp thy station ?*

A N D. *Troth, this I am in, euen here would I tarry.*

N A N. *'Cause here, the delight of each sexe thou canst vary ?*

A N D. *Alas, those pleasures be stale, and forsaken ;* 55  
*No, 'tis your Foole, wherewith I am so taken,*

*The onely one creature, that I can call blessed :  
For all other formes I haue prou'd most distressed.*

N A N. *Spoke true, as thou wert in P Y T H A G O R A S still.  
This learned opinion we celebrate will,* 60

*Fellow eunuch (as behooues vs) with all our wit, and art,  
To dignifie that, whereof our selues are so great, and speciall  
a part.*

V O L. *Now very, very pretty : M O S C A, this  
Was thy inuention ? M O S. If it please my patron,  
Not else.* V O L. *It doth, good M O S C A. M O S. Then it* 65  
*was, sir.*

1. ii. 39 *how ?* Q 51 *'pray thee*] *'pry thee* F2 52 *take*  
*keep* F2, F3 61 *behooues*] *behoves* F2

## SONG.

- Fooles, they are the onely nation  
 Worth mens enuy, or admiration ;  
 Free from care, or sorrow-taking,  
 Selues, and others merry-making :  
 70 All they speake, or doe, is sterling.  
 Your Foole, he is your great mans dearling,  
 And your ladies sport, and pleasure ;  
 Tongue, and bable are his treasure.  
 Eene his face begetteth laughter,  
 75 And he speakes truth, free from slaughter ;  
 Hee's the grace of euery feast,  
 And, sometimes, the chiefest guest :  
 Hath his trencher, and his stoole,  
 When wit waites vpon the foole.  
 80 O, who would not bee  
 Hee, hee, hee ?

One  
knocks  
without.

- V O L. Who's that ? away, looke M O S C A. M O S.  
 Foole, be gone,  
 'Tis signior V O L T O R E, the Aduocate,  
 I know him, by his knock. V O L. Fetch me my gowne,  
 85 My fures, and night-caps ; say, my couch is changing :  
 And let him entertayne himselfe, awhile,  
 Without i' th' gallerie. Now, now, my clients  
 Beginne their visitation ! vulture, kite,  
 Rauen, and gor-crow, all my birds of prey,  
 90 That thinke me turning carcasse, now they come :  
 I am not for 'hem yet. How now ? the newes ?  
 M O S. A piece of plate, sir. V O L. Of what bignesse ?  
 M O S. Huge,

1. ii. After 65 SONG.] Nano and Castrone sing. G 69 Selues] Them-  
 selues Q 71 dearling] darling F2 74 Eene his] His very Q  
 79 waites] shall waste Q 82 Stage direction not in Q. After 'away'  
 [Exeunt Nano and Castrone.] G After 'gone' [Exit Androgyno.] G  
 85 couch is] couch's F2, F3 86 entertayne] intertaine Q 87  
 Without] Within Q After 'gallerie.' Exit Mosca. G 88 visitation !]  
 visitation ; Q 89 and om. F2, F3

Massie, and antique, with your name inscrib'd,  
And armes ingrauen. V o L. Good ! and not a foxe  
Stretch'd on the earth, with fine delusiue sleights, 95  
Mocking a gaping crow ? ha, M o s c A ? M o s. Sharpe,  
sir.

V o L. Giue me my furies. Why dost thou laugh so,  
man ?

M o s. I cannot choose, sir, when I apprehend  
What thoughts he has (without) now, as he walkes :  
That this might be the last gift, he should giue ; 100  
That this would fetch you ; if you dyed to day,  
And gaue him all, what he should be to morrow ;  
What large returne would come of all his venters ;  
How he should worship'd be, and reuerenc'd ;  
Ride, with his furies, and foot-clothes ; waited on 105  
By herds of fooles, and clients ; haue cleere way  
Made for his moyle, as letter'd as himselfe ;  
Be cald the great, and learned Aduocate :  
And then concludes, there's nought impossible.

V o L. Yes, to be learned, M o s c A. M o s. O, no : rich 110  
Implies it. Hood an asse, with reuerend purple,  
So you can hide his two ambitious eares,  
And, he shall passe for a cathedrall Doctor.

V o L. My caps, my caps, good M o s c A, fetch him in.

M o s. Stay, sir, your ointment for your eyes. V o L. 115  
That's true ;

Dispatch, dispatch : I long to haue possession  
Of my new present. M o s. That, and thousands more,  
I hope, to see you lord of. V o L. Thankes, kind M o s c A.

M o s. And that, when I am lost in blended dust,  
And hundred such, as I am, in succession—— 120

V o L. Nay, that were too much, M o s c A. M o s. You  
shall liue,  
Still, to delude these *harpyies*. V o L. Louing M o s c A,

1. ii. After 93 *Re-enter Mosca, with the gown, &c.* G 97 After  
'furies' [*Puts on his sick dress.*] G 99 without] within Q 106  
herds] hears Q 110 Mosca.] Mosca ; Q 122 *harpyies*] *Har-*  
*pyies* corr. Q : *Harpyeis* Q originally

'Tis well, my pillow now, and let him enter.  
 Now, my fain'd cough, my phthisick, and my gout,  
 125 My apoplexie, palsie, and catarrhes,  
 Helpe, with your forced functions, this my posture,  
 Wherein, this three yeere, I haue milk'd their hopes.  
 He comes, I heare him (vh, vh, vh, vh) ô.

*Act I. Scene III.*

MOSCA, VOLTORE, VOLPONE.

YOU still are, what you were, sir. Onely you  
 (Of all the rest) are he, commands his loue :  
 And you doe wisely, to preserue it, thus,  
 With early visitation, and kind notes  
 5 Of your good meaning to him, which, I know,  
 Cannot but come most gratefull. Patron, sir.  
 Here's signior VOLTORE is come——VOLP. What say  
 you ?

MOS. Sir, signior VOLTORE is come, this morning,  
 To visit you. VOLP. I thanke him. MOS. And hath  
 brought

10 A piece of antique plate, bought of S. MARKE,  
 With which he here presents you. VOLP. He is welcome.  
 Pray him, to come more often. MOS. Yes. VOLT. What  
 sayes he ?

MOS. He thanks you, and desires you see him often.

VOLP. MOSCA. MOS. My patron? VOLP. Bring  
 him neere, where is he ?

15 I long to feele his hand. MOS. The plate is here, sir.

VOLT. How fare you, sir? VOLP. I thanke you, sig-  
 nior VOLTORE.

Where is the plate? mine eyes are bad. VOLT. I'm sorry,  
 To see you still thus weake. MOS. That he is not weaker.

1. ii. After 123 *Exit Mosca.* G 124 phthisick] *Phthisick* corr. Q :  
*Phthisick* Q originally 125 catarrhes] *Catarrhe* Q originally: *Catarrhe*  
 corr. Q 1. iii. *Re-enter Mosca, introducing Voltore with a piece of*  
*Plate.* G 7 VOLP.] *Volp.* [faintly.] G 17 VOLT.] *Volt.* [putting  
*it into his hands.*] G 18 weaker.] *Aside.* add G

V O L P. You are too munificent. V O L T. No, sir, would  
to heauen,  
I could as well giue health to you, as that plate. 20  
V O L P. You giue, sir, what you can. I thanke you.  
Your loue  
Hath taste in this, and shall not be vn-answer'd.  
I pray you see me often. V O L T. Yes, I shall, sir.  
V O L P. Be not far from me. M O S. Doe you obserue  
that, sir?  
V O L P. Harken vnto me, still : It will concerne you. 25  
M O S. You are a happy man, sir, know your good.  
V O L P. I cannot now last long—— (M O S. You are his  
heire, sir.  
V O L T. Am I?) V O L P. I feele me going, (vh, vh, vh, vh.)  
I am sayling to my port, (vh, vh, vh, vh?)  
And I am glad, I am so neere my hauen. 30  
M O S. Alas, kind gentleman, well, we must all goe——  
V O L T. But, M O S C A—— M O S. Age wil conquer.  
V O L T. 'Pray thee heare me.  
Am I inscrib'd his heire, for certayne? M O S. Are you?  
I doe beseech you, sir, you will vouchsafe  
To write me, i' your family. All my hopes, 35  
Depend vpon your worship. I am lost,  
Except the rising sunne doe shine on me.  
V O L T. It shall both shine, and warme thee, M O S C A.  
M O S. Sir.  
I am a man, that haue not done your loue  
All the worst offices : here I weare your keyes, 40  
See all your coffers, and your caskets lockt,  
Keepe the poore inuentorie of your iewels,  
Your plate, and moneyes, am your steward, sir,  
Husband your goods here. V O L T. But am I sole heire?  
M O S. Without a partner, sir, confirm'd this morning ; 45

i. iii. 25 still:] still Q 27 long—] long. Q (Mos] Mos Q  
28 I?)] I? Q 31 goe—] go Q 32 Mosca—] Mosca Q 'Pray  
thee] 'Pry thee F2 36 worship.] worship; Q 38 warme] warn  
F3 40 offices.] offices, Q 43 moneyes, am] moneyes, I'm  
F2, F3



The waxe is warme yet, and the inke scarce drie  
 Vpon the parchment. V o l t. Happy, happy, me !  
 By what good chance, sweet M o s c a ? M o s. Your de-  
 sert, sir ;

I know no second cause. V o l t. Thy modestie  
 50 Is loth to know it ; well, we shall requite it.

M o s. He euer lik'd your course, sir, that first tooke  
 him.

I, oft, haue heard him say, how he admir'd  
 Men of your large profession, that could speake  
 To euery cause, and things mere contraries,  
 55 Till they were hoarse againe, yet all be law ;  
 That, with most quick agilitie, could turne,  
 And re-turne ; make knots, and vndoe them ;  
 Giue forked counsell ; take prouoking gold  
 On either hand, and put it vp : these men,  
 60 He knew, would thriue, with their humilitie.  
 And (for his part) he thought, he should be blest  
 To haue his heire of such a suffering spirit,  
 So wise, so graue, of so perplex'd a tongue,  
 And loud withall, that would not wag, nor scarce  
 65 Lie still, without a fee ; when euery word  
 Your worship but lets fall, is a *cecchine* !

*Another* Who's that ? one knocks, I would not haue you seene, sir.  
*knocks.*

And yet——pretend you came, and went in haste ;  
 I'll fashion an excuse. And, gentle sir,  
 70 When you doe come to swim, in golden lard,  
 Vp to the armes, in honny, that your chin  
 Is borne vp stiffe, with fatnesse of the flood,  
 Thinke on your vassall ; but remember me :  
 I ha' not beene your worst of clients. V o l t. M o s c a——  
 75 M o s. When will you haue your inuentorie brought, sir ?  
 Or see a copy of the will ? (anon)  
 I'll bring 'hem to you, sir. Away, be gone,

1. iii. 47 happy,] happy Q      50 loth] not G      51 sir,] sir ; F2  
 57 re-turne ; make] re-return ; could make G      64 would] could F2  
 66 *cecchine* ] *Cecchine*. Q      67 Stage direction not in Q      76 (anon)]  
 Anone, Q

Put businesse i' your face. VOLP. Excellent, MOSCA!  
Come hither, let me kisse thee. MOS. Keepe you still, sir.  
Here is CORBACCIO. VOLP. Set the plate away, 80  
The vulture's gone, and the old rauen's come.

Act I. Scene III.

MOSCA, CORBACCIO, VOLPONE.

BETake you, to your silence, and your sleepe :  
Stand there, and multiply. Now, shall wee see  
A wretch, who is (indeed) more impotent,  
Then this can faine to be ; yet hopes to hop  
Ouer his graue. Signior CORBACCIO! 5  
Yo' are very welcome, sir. CORB. How do's your patron?  
MOS. Troth, as he did, sir, no amends. CORB. What?  
mends he?  
MOS. No, sir : he is rather worse. CORB. That's well.  
Where is he?  
MOS. Vpon his couch, sir, newly fall'n asleepe.  
CORB. Do's he sleepe well? MOS. No winke, sir, all 10  
this night,  
Nor yesterday, but slumbers. CORB. Good! He should take  
Some counsell of physicians : I haue brought him  
An *opiate* here, from mine owne Doctor——  
MOS. He will not heare of drugs. CORB. Why? I my  
selfe  
Stood by, while 't was made ; saw all th'ingredients : 15  
And know, it cannot but most gently worke.  
My life for his, 'tis but to make him sleepe.  
VOLP. I, his last sleepe, if he would take it. MOS. Sir,  
He ha's no faith in physick. CORB. 'Say you? 'say you?  
MOS. He ha's no faith in physick : he do's thinke, 20  
Most of your Doctors are the greater danger,

I. III 78 After 'face'] Exit Vollore G VOLP ] Volp [springing up]  
G I IV. G continues the scene, with Enter Corbaccio at l 5 2 After  
'multiply' [Putting the plate to the rest] G 7 sir,] sir, F2 11  
yesterday,] yesterday, F2 Good!] Good Q should] shall F3  
After 18 Aside. G

- And worse disease, t'escape. I often haue  
 Heard him protest, that your physitian  
 Should neuer be his heire. C O R B. Not I his heire ?
- 25 M O S. Not your physitian, sir. C O R B. O, no, no, no,  
 I doe not meane it. M O S. No, sir, nor their fees  
 He cannot brooke : he sayes, they flay a man,  
 Before they kill him. C O R B. Right, I doe conceiue you.  
 M O S. And then, they doe it by experiment ;
- 30 For which the law not onely doth absolue 'hem,  
 But giues them great reward : and, he is loth  
 To hire his death, so. C O R B. It is true, they kill,  
 With as much licence, as a iudge. M O S. Nay, more ;  
 For he but kills, sir, where the law condemnes,
- 35 And these can kill him, too. C O R B. I, or me :  
 Or any man. How do's his apoplexe ?  
 Is that strong on him, still ? M O S. Most violent.  
 His speech is broken, and his eyes are set,  
 His face drawne longer, then 't was wont—— C O R B.  
 How ? how ?
- 40 Stronger, then he was wont ? M O S. No, sir : his face  
 Drawne longer, then 't was wont. C O R B. O, good. M O S.  
 His mouth  
 Is euer gaping, and his eye-lids hang. C O R B. Good.  
 M O S. A freezing numnesse stiffens all his ioynts,  
 And makes the colour of his flesh like lead. C O R B. 'Tis  
 good.
- 45 M O S. His pulse beats slow, and dull. C O R B. Good  
 symptomes, still.  
 M O S. And, from his brain—— C O R B. Ha ? how ? not  
 from his brain ?  
 M O S. Yes, sir, and from his brain—— (C O R B. I con-  
 ceiue you, good.)  
 M O S. Flowes a cold sweat, with a continuall rhewme,  
 Forth the resolu'd corners of his eyes.
- 50 C O R B. Is't possible ? yet I am better, ha !

How do's he, with the swimming of his head?

M o s. O, sir, 'tis past the *scolomy*; he, now,  
Hath lost his feeling, and hath left to snort:  
You hardly can perceiue him, that he breathes.

C o r b. Excellent, excellent, sure I shall out-last him: 55  
This makes me yong againe, a score of yeeeres.

M o s. I was a comming for you, sir. C o r b. Has he  
made his will?

What has he giu'n me? M o s. No, sir. C o r b. Nothing?  
ha?

M o s. He has not made his will, sir. C o r b. Oh, oh, oh.  
What then did V o l t o r e, the Lawyer, here? 60

M o s. He smelt a carcasse, sir, when he but heard  
My master was about his testament;  
(As I did vrge him to it, for your good——)

C o r b. He came vnto him, did he? I thought so.

M o s. Yes, and presented him this piece of plate. 65

C o r b. To be his heire? M o s. I doe not know, sir.

C o r b. True,

I know it too. M o s. By your owne scale, sir. C o r b.  
Well,

I shall preuent him, yet. See, M o s c a, looke,  
Here, I haue brought a bag of bright *cecchines*,  
Will quite weigh downe his plate. M o s. Yea, mary, sir! 70  
This is true physick, this your sacred medicine,  
No talke of *opiates*, to this great *elixir*.

C o r b. 'Tis *aurum palpabile*, if not *potabile*.

M o s. It shall be minister'd to him, in his bowle?

C o r b. I, doe, doe, doe. M o s. Most blessed cordiall! 75  
This will recouer him. C o r b. Yes, doe, doe, doe.

M o s. I thinke, it were not best, sir. C o r b. What?

M o s. To recouer him.

I. iv. 52 past F3: past, Q, Ff *scolomy*, he,] *Scotomy*; he, corr. Q:  
*Scotomy*, he Q originally, F2 60 What then] But what Q 62  
master] maister Q 63 (As . . . good—) corr. F1. As . . . good— Q, F1  
originally, F2 67 After 'sir'] *Aside*. G 70 Mos ] Mos. [*taking*  
*the bag.*] G sir! corr. F1. sir. F1 originally, F2 Sir. Q 71  
medicine,] *medecine*; F2 74 Mos. om F2 75 cordiall! corr.  
F1: cordiall. F1 originally, F2: Cordiall. Q

- C O R B. O, no, no, no ; by no meanes. M O S. Why, sir,  
this  
Will worke some strange effect, if he but feele it.
- 80 C O R B. 'Tis true, therefore forbear, I'll take my venter :  
Giue me 't againe. M O S. At no hand, pardon me ;  
You shall not doe your selfe that wrong, sir. I  
Will so aduise you, you shall haue it all.
- C O R B. How ? M O S. All, sir, 'tis your right, your  
owne ; no man
- 85 Can claime a part : 'tis yours, without a riuall,  
Decree'd by destinie. C O R B. How ? how, good M O S C A ?  
M O S. I'll tell you, sir. This fit he shall recouer——  
C O R B. I doe conceiue you. M O S. And, on first ad-  
uantage  
Of his gayn'd sense, will I re-importune him
- 90 Vnto the making of his testament :  
And shew him this. C O R B. Good, good. M O S. 'Tis  
better yet,  
If you will heare, sir. C O R B. Yes, with all my heart.  
M O S. Now, would I counsell you, make home with  
speed ;  
There, frame a will : whereto you shall inscribe
- 95 My master your sole heire. C O R B. And disinherit  
My sonne ? M O S. O, sir, the better : for that colour  
Shall make it much more taking. C O R B. O, but colour ?  
M O S. This will, sir, you shall send it vnto me.  
Now, when I come to inforce (as I will doe)
- 100 Your cares, your watchings, and your many prayers,  
Your more then many gifts, your this dayes present,  
And, last, produce your will ; where (without thought,  
Or least regard, vnto your proper issue,  
A sonne so braue, and highly meriting)
- 105 The streame of your diuerted loue hath throwne you  
Vpon my master, and made him your heire :

1. iv. 79 effect,] effect Q 80 forbear,] forbear; Q 81 hand,]  
hand ; F2 87 recouer— corr. FI . recouer ; Q, FI originally, F2  
94 will : corr. FI : will, FI originally . Will ; Q, F2 95, 106 master]  
maister Q

He cannot be so stupide, or stone dead,  
But, out of conscience, and mere gratitude——

C O R B. He must pronounce me, his? M O S. 'Tis true.

C O R B. This plot

Did I thinke on before. M O S. I doe belecue it. 110

C O R B. Doe you not belecue it? M O S. Yes, sir.

C O R B. Mine owne proiect.

M O S. Which when he hath done, sir—— C O R B. Publish'd me his heire?

M O S. And you so certayne, to suruiue him—— C O R B. I.

M O S. Being so lusty a man—— C O R B. 'Tis true.

M O S. Yes, sir——

C O R B. I thought on that too. See, how he should be 115  
The very organ, to expresse my thoughts!

M O S. You haue not onely done your selfe a good——

C O R B. But multiplyed it on my sonne? M O S. 'Tis right, sir.

C O R B. Still, my inuention. M O S. 'Lasse sir, heauen knowes,

It hath beene all my studie, all my care, 120  
(I e'ene grow grey withall) how to worke things——

C O R B. I doe conceiue, sweet M O S C A. M O S. You are he,

For whom I labour, here. C O R B. I, doe, doe, doe:

I'le straight about it. M O S. Rooke goe with you, rauens.

C O R B. I know thee honest. M O S. You doe lie, sir—— 125

C O R B. And——

M O S. Your knowledge is no better then your cares, sir.

C O R B. I doe not doubt, to be a father to thee.

M O S. Nor I, to gull my brother of his blessing.

C O R B. I may ha' my youth restor'd to me, why not?

M O S. Your worship is a precious asse—— C O R B. What 130  
say'st thou?

I. iv. 112 sir—] Sir Q 113 him—] him Q 114 man—] man Q  
sir—] Sir Q 117 good—] good, Q 121 I e'ene] I'eene Q, Ff  
124 After 'it'] Going G 125 sir—] Sir Q Aside. add G, who  
does not mark the asides in ll. 124, 126, 128, 130. 128 I,] I F2  
130 asse—] asse. Q

M o s. I doe desire your worship, to make haste, sir.

C o r b. 'Tis done, 'tis done, I goe. V o l p. O, I shall burst ;

Let out my sides, let out my sides—— M o s. Contayne  
Your fluxe of laughter, sir : you know, this hope  
135 Is such a bait, it couers any hooke.

V o l p. O, but thy working, and thy placing it !  
I cannot hold ; good rascall, let me kisse thee :  
I neuer knew thee, in so rare a humour.

M o s. Alas, sir, I but doe, as I am taught ;  
140 Follow your graue instructions ; giue 'hem wordes ;  
Powre oyle into their eares : and send them hence.

V o l p. 'Tis true, 'tis true. What a rare punishment  
Is auarice, to it selfe ? M o s. I, with our helpe, sir.

V o l p. So many cares, so many maladies,  
145 So many feares attending on old age,  
Yea, death so often call'd on, as no wish  
Can be more frequent with 'hem, their limbs faint,  
Their senses dull, their seeing, hearing, going,  
All dead before them ; yea, their very teeth,

150 Their instruments of eating, fayling them :  
Yet this is reckon'd life ! Nay, here was one,  
Is now gone home, that wishes to liue longer !  
Feeles not his gout, nor palsie, faines himselfe  
Yonger, by scores of yeeres, flatters his age,

155 With confident belying it, hopes he may  
With charmes, like Æ s o n, haue his youth restor'd :  
And with these thoughts so battens, as if fate  
Would be as easily cheated on, as he,

*Another  
knocks.* And all turnes aire ! Who's that, there, now ? a third ?

160 M o s. Close, to your couch againe : I heare his voyce.  
It is C o r v i n o, our spruce Merchant. V o l p. Dead.

M o s. Another bout, sir, with your eyes. Who's there ?

I. iv. 132 After ' goe ' [Exit.] G VOLP.] Volp. [leaping from his  
couch.] G 138 humour] humor Q 148 going.] going Q 159  
Stage direction not in Q 161 VOLP.] Volp. [lies down as before.] G  
162 After ' eyes ' [anointing them.] G

Act I. Scene v.

MOSCA, CORVINO, VOLPONE.

Signior CORVINO! come most wisht for! O,  
How happy were you, if you knew it, now!

CORV. Why? what? wherein? MOS. The tardie  
houre is come, sir.

CORV. He is not dead? MOS. Not dead, sir, but as  
good;

He knowes no man. CORV. How shall I doe, then? 5

MOS. Why, sir?

CORV. I haue brought him, here, a pearle. MOS. Per-  
haps, he has

So much remembrance left, as to know you, sir;

He still calls on you, nothing but your name

Is in his mouth: Is your pearle orient, sir?

CORV. *Venice* was neuer owner of the like. 10

VOLP. Signior CORVINO. MOS. Harke. VOLP.  
Signior CORVINO.

MOS. He calls you, step and giue it him. H'is here, sir,  
And he has brought you a rich pearle. CORV. How doe  
you, sir?

Tell him, it doubles the twelfe *caract*. MOS. Sir,  
He cannot vnderstand, his hearing's gone; 15

And yet it comforts him, to see you—— CORV. Say,  
I haue a diamant for him, too. MOS. Best shew 't, sir,  
Put it into his hand; 'tis onely there

He apprehends: he has his feeling, yet.

See, how he grasps it! CORV. 'Lasse, good gentleman! 20

How pittifull the sight is! MOS. Tut, forget, sir.

The weeping of an heire should still be laughter,

Vnder a visor. CORV. Why? am I his heire?

MOS. Sir, I am sworne, I may not shew the will,  
Till he be dead: But, here has beene CORBACCIO, 25

1. v. Enter Corvino. G, continuing the scene 8 you,] you; F2  
11 VOLP.] Volp. [faintly.] G 12 He] 'He Q, F1. Hee F2 17  
diamant] Diamond F3 Best shew 't] Beshrew 't F2 originally



- Here has beene V O L T O R E , here were others too,  
 I cannot number 'hem, they were so many,  
 All gaping here for legacies ; but I,  
 Taking the vantage of his naming you,  
 30 (Signior C O R V I N O , Signior C O R V I N O ) tooke  
 Paper, and pen, and inke, and there I ask'd him,  
 Whom he would haue his heire ? C O R V I N O . Who  
 Should be executor ? C O R V I N O . And,  
 To any question, he was silent too,  
 35 I still interpreted the nods, he made  
 (Through weaknesse) for consent : and sent home th'others,  
 Nothing bequeath'd them, but to crie, and curse.  
*They embrace.* C O R V . O, my deare M o s c A . Do's he not perceiue vs ?  
 M o s . No more then a blind harper. He knowes no man,  
 40 No face of friend, nor name of any seruant,  
 Who 't was that fed him last, or gaue him drinke :  
 Not those, he hath begotten, or brought vp  
 Can he remember. C O R V . Has he children ? M o s . Bas-  
 tards,  
 Some dozen, or more, that he begot on beggers,  
 45 *Gipseys, and Iewes, and black-moores,* when he was drunke.  
 Knew you not that, sir ? 'Tis the common fable,  
 The Dwarfe, the Foole, the Eunuch are all his ;  
 H' is the true father of his family,  
 In all, saue me : but he has giu'n 'hem nothing.  
 50 C O R V . That's well, that's well. Art sure he does not  
 heare vs ?  
 M o s . Sure, sir ? why, looke you, credit your owne sense.  
 The poxe approach, and adde to your diseases,  
 If it would send you hence the sooner, sir.  
 For, your incontinence, it hath deseru'd it  
 55 Thoroughly, and thoroughly, and the plague to boot.  
 (You may come neere, sir) would you would once close  
 Those filthy eyes of yours, that flow with slime,
- I. v. 26 Vo<sup>u</sup>TORE F2 *originally*; so 84 Vo<sup>u</sup>P, 89 Vo<sup>u</sup>PONE 27  
 number] number Q 32, 33 CORVINO ] Coruino: Q 33 executor ?]  
 executor, Q 38 *Stage direction not in Q* 43 Bastards] Bastads  
 F2 46 fable.] fable. Q, Ff After 51 Shouts in Vol.'s ear. G

Like two frog-pits ; and those same hanging cheeks,  
Couer'd with hide, in stead of skin : (nay, helpe, sir)  
That looke like frozen dish-clouts, set on end. 60

C O R V. Or, like an old smok'd wall, on which the raine  
Ran downe in streakes. M O S. Excellent, sir, speake out ;  
You may be lowder yet : a culuering,  
Discharged in his eare, would hardly bore it.

C O R V. His nose is like a common sewre, still running. 65

M O S. 'Tis good ! and, what his mouth ? C O R V. A  
very draught.

M O S. O, stop it vp—— C O R V. By no meanes. M O S.  
'Pray you let me.

Faith, I could stifle him, rarely, with a pillow.  
As well, as any woman, that should keepe him.

C O R V. Doe as you will, but I'll be gone. M O S. Be so ; 70  
It is your presence makes him last so long.

C O R V. I pray you, vse no violence. M O S. No, sir ?  
why ?

Why should you be thus scrupulous ? 'pray you, sir.

C O R V. Nay, at your discretion. M O S. Well, good sir,  
be gone.

C O R V. I will not trouble him now, to take my pearle ? 75

M O S. Puh, nor your diamant. What a needlesse care  
Is this afflicts you ? Is not all, here, yours ?  
Am not I here ? whom you haue made ? your creature ?  
That owe my being to you ? C O R V. Gratefull M O S C A !  
Thou art my friend, my fellow, my companion, 80  
My partner, and shalt share in all my fortunes.

M O S. Excepting one. C O R V. What's that ? M O S.  
Your gallant wife, sir.

Now, is he gone : we had no other meanes,  
To shoot him hence, but this. V O L P. My diuine M O S C A ! 84  
Thou hast to day out-gone thy selfe Who's there ?

Another  
knocks.

I. v. 65 sewre] shewre F2: shewer F3 running] running; Q  
66 good !] good: Q 67 meanes] meanes; Q 68-9 Originally  
in F2 the initial capitals dropped to the line below, and the lt of l. 71  
disappeared 78 made ?] made F3 79 Mosca !] Mosca: Q  
After 82 Exit Corv. G 83 no] on F2 85 Stage direction not  
in Q

- I will be troubled with no more. Prepare  
 Me musicke, dances, banquets, all delights ;  
 The *Turke* is not more sensuall, in his pleasures,  
 Then will VOLPONE. Let mee see, a pearle ?  
 90 A diamant ? plate ? *cecchines* ? good mornings purchase ;  
 Why, this is better then rob churches, yet :  
 Or fat, by eating (once a mon'th) a man.  
 Who is't ? MOS. The beauteous lady WOVLDBEE, sir,  
 Wife, to the *English Knight*, Sir POLITIQUE WOVLDBEE,  
 95 (This is the stile, sir, is directed mee)  
 Hath sent to know, how you haue slept to night,  
 And if you would be visited. VOLP. Not, now.  
 Some three houres, hence—— MOS. I told the Squire, so  
 much.  
 VOLP. When I am high with mirth, and wine : then,  
 then.  
 100 'Fore heauen, I wonder at the desperate valure  
 Of the bold *English*, that they dare let loose  
 Their wiues, to all encounters ! MOS. Sir, this knight  
 Had not his name for nothing, he is politique,  
 And knowes, how ere his wife affect strange aires,  
 105 Shee hath not yet the face, to be dishonest.  
 But, had shee signior CORVINO's wiues face——  
 VOLP. Has shee so rare a face ? MOS. O, sir, the  
 wonder,  
 The blazing starre of *Italie* ! a wench  
 O' the first yeere ! a beautie, ripe, as haruest !  
 110 Whose skin is whiter then a swan, all ouer !  
 Then siluer, snow, or lillies ! a soft lip,  
 Would tempt you to eternitie of kissing !  
 And flesh, that melteth, in the touch, to bloud !  
 Bright as your gold ! and louely, as your gold !

I. v. 89 After 'VOLPONE' [*Exit Mos.*] G 92 mon'th] moneth F2  
 originally, corrected to month After 92 Re-enter Mosca G 93  
 sir, F2 : sir. Fr : Sir. Q 100 valure] valour F2 106 wiues]  
 wives F2 108 *Italie* !] *Italy* ; Q 109 yeere !] yeare, Q 114  
 gold ! and] gold, and Q

V O L P. Why had not I knowne this, before ? M O S. 115  
Alas, sir.

My selfe, but yesterday, discover'd it.

V O L P. How might I see her ? M O S. O, not possible ;  
Shée's kept as warily, as is your gold :  
Neuer do's come abroad, neuer takes ayre,  
But at a windore. All her lookes are sweet, 120  
As the first grapes, or cherries : and are watch'd  
As neere, as they are. V O L P. I must see her—— M O S.  
Sir.

There is a guard, of ten spies thick, vpon her ;  
All his whole houshold : each of which is set  
Vpon his fellow, and haue all their charge, 125  
When he goes out, when he comes in, examin'd.

V O L P. I will goe see her, though but at her windore.

M O S. In some disguise, then. V O L P. That is true.

I must

Maintayne mine owne shape, still, the same : wee'll thinke.

## Act II. Scene I.

P O L I T I Q V E W O V L D - B E E , P E R E G R I N E .

Sir, to a wise man , all the world's his soile.  
It is not *Italie*, nor *France*, nor *Europe*,  
That must bound me, if my fates call me forth.  
Yet, I protest, it is no salt desire  
Of seeing countries, shifting a religion, 5  
Nor any dis-affection to the state  
Where I was bred (and, vnto which I owe  
My dearest plots) hath brought me out ; much lesse,  
That idle, antique, stale, grey-headed proiect  
Of knowing mens minds, and manners, with V L Y S S E S : 10  
But, a peculiar humour of my wiues,  
Laid for this height of *Venice*, to obserue,

I. v. 120, 127 windore] Window F3 128 then ] then ? Q After  
129 Exeunt. G II. I. ACT II SCENE I | St Mark's Place ; a  
retired corner before Corvino's House. | Enter Sir Politick Would-be, and  
Peregrine. G

To quote, to learne the language, and so forth——

I hope you trauell, sir, with licence? P E R. Yes.

15 P O L. I dare the safelier conuerse—— How long, sir,  
Since you left *England*? P E R. Seuen weekes. P O L. So  
lately!

You ha' not beene with my lord Ambassador?

P E R. Not yet, sir. P O L. 'Pray you, what newes, sir,  
vents our climate?

I heard, last night, a most strange thing reported

20 By some of my lords followers, and I long

To heare, how 't will be seconded! P E R. What was't, sir?

P O L. Mary, sir, of a rauens, that should build

In a ship royall of the Kings. P E R. This fellow

Do's he gull me, trow? or is gull'd? your name, sir?

25 P O L. My name is P O L I T I Q V E W O V L D - B E E.

P E R. O, that speaks him.

A Knight, sir? P O L. A poore knight, sir. P E R. Your  
lady

Lies here, in *Venice*, for intelligence

Of tyres, and fashions, and behauour,

Among the curtizans? the fine lady W O V L D - B E E?

30 P O L. Yes, sir, the spider, and the bee, oft-times,

Suck from one flowre. P E R. Good sir P O L I T I Q V E!

I cry you mercie; I haue heard much of you:

'Tis true, sir, of your rauens. P O L. On your knowledge?

P E R. Yes, and your Lyons whelping, in the *Tower*.

35 P O L. Another whelp! P E R. Another, sir. P O L.  
Now, heauen!

What prodigies be these? The fires at *Berwike*!

And the new starre! these things concurring, strange!

And full of omen! Saw you those meteors?

P E R. I did, sir. P O L. Fearefull! Pray you sir, con-  
firme me,

40 Were there three porcpiscs seene, aboue the bridge,

11. i. 24 After 'gull'd' [*Aside*] G After 25 *Aside*. G 31 flowre]  
flower Q 33 sir.] sir F1 35 whelp!] whelp? Q 39 Pray  
corr. Q. F1, F2: pray Q originally 40 porcpiscs] porcpises F2

As they giue out? P E R. Sixe, and a sturgeon, sir.

P O L. I am astonish'd! P E R. Nay, sir, be not so;  
He tell you a greater prodigie, then these——

P O L. What should these things portend! P E R. The  
verie day

(Let me be sure) that I put forth from *London*. 45

There was a whale discouer'd, in the riuer,

As high as *Woolwich*, that had waited there

(Few know how manie mon'ths) for the subuersion

Of the *Stode-Fleet*. P O L. Is't possible? Belceue it,

'Twas either sent from *Spaine*, or the *Arch-dukes*! 50

S P I N O L A's whale, vpon my life, my credit!

Will they not leaue these proiects? Worthie sir,

Some other newes. P E R. Faith, S T O N E, the foole, is  
dead;

And they doe lacke a tauerne-foole, extremely.

P O L. Is M A S S' S T O N E dead! P E R. H'is dead, sir, 55  
why? I hope

You thought him not immortall? O, this Knight

(Were he well knowne) would be a precious thing

To fit our *English* stage: He that should write

But such a fellow, should be thought to faine

Extremely, if not maliciously. P O L. S T O N E dead! 60

P E R. Dead. Lord! how deeply, sir, you apprehend it?

He was no kinsman to you? P O L. That I know of.

Well! that same fellow was an vnknownc foole.

P E R. And yet you knew him, it seemes? P O L. I did  
so. Sir,

I knew him one of the most dangerous heads 65

Liuing within the state, and so I held him.

P E R. Indeed, sir? P O L. While he liu'd, in action.

He has receiu'd weekly intelligence,

Vpon my knowledge, out of the *low Countries*,

II. i. 41 and] and and Fr 42 astonish'd'] astonish'd. Q 48  
mon'ths] moneths Q 50 Arch-dukes'] Arch-duke, Q 51 credit!]  
credit; Q 52 Worthie] Worthy corr. Q: worthy Q originally  
55, 60 dead!] dead? Q 57 knowne corr. Q, Fr: known Q origin-  
ally 60 After 'maliciously' [Aside.] G 64 knew] know Q

- 70 (For all parts of the world) in cabages ;  
 And those dispens'd, againe, to' Ambassadors,  
 In oranges, musk-melons, apricotes,  
 Limons, pome-citrons, and such like : sometimes,  
 In *Colchester*-oysters, and your *Selsey*-cockles.
- 75 P E T. You make me wonder ! P O L. Sir, vpon my  
 knowledge.  
 Nay, I haue obseru'd him, at your publique ordinarie,  
 Take his aduertisement, from a traoueller  
 (A conceal'd states-man) in a trencher of meat :  
 And, instantly, before the meale was done,
- 80 Conuey an answere in a tooth-pick. P E R. Strange !  
 How could this be, sir ? P O L. Why, the meat was cut  
 So like his character, and so laid, as he  
 Must easily reade the cypher. P E R. I haue heard,  
 He could not reade, sir. P O L. So, 'twas giuen out,
- 85 (In politie) by those, that did imploy him :  
 But he could read, and had your languages,  
 And to't, as sound a noddle—— P E R. I haue heard, sir,  
 That your *Bab'ouns* were spics ; and that they were  
 A kind of subtile nation, neere to *China*.
- 90 P O L. I, I, your *Mamuluchi*. Faith, they had  
 Their hand in a *French* plot, or two ; but they  
 Were so extremely giuen to women, as  
 They made discouery of all : yet I  
 Had my aduises here (on wensday last)
- 95 From one of their owne coat, they were return'd,  
 Made their relations (as the fashion is)  
 And now stand faire, for fresh imployment. P E R. 'Hart !  
 This, sir P O L L. will be ignorant of nothing.  
 It seemes, sir, you know all ? P O L. Not all, sir. But,
- 100 I haue some generall notions ; I doe loue  
 To note, and to obserue : though I liue out,

11. i. 71 to' Ambassadors] to *Ambassadors* Q 72 apricotes] apri-  
 cocks Q 78 meat : corr. FI : meat ; FI originally, F2 : meate ; Q  
 88 Bab'ouns corr. FI : *Bab'ouns* Q, FI originally, F2 94 aduise  
 corr. FI : *aduises* Q : *aduices* FI originally 98 This,] This Q, F2 POLL.  
 corr. FI : POLL : FI originally : POLL : Q : POL. F2 After 98 *Aside*. G

Free from the actiue torrent, yet I'd marke  
 The currents, and the passages of things,  
 For mine owne priuate vse ; and know the ebbes,  
 And flowes of state. P E R. Beleeue it, sir, I hold 105  
 My selfe, in no small tie, vnto my fortunes,  
 For casting me thus luckily, vpon you ;  
 Whose knowledge (if your bountie equall it)  
 May doe me great assistance, in instruction  
 For my behaiour, and my bearing, which 110  
 Is yet so rude, and raw—— P O L. Why ? came you forth  
 Emptie of rules, for trauaile ? P E R. Faith, I had  
 Some common ones, from out that vulgar *grammar*,  
 Which he, that cry'd *Italian* to me, taught me.

P O L. Why, this it is, that spoiles all our braue blouds ; 115  
 Trusting our hopefull gentrie vnto pedants :  
 Fellowes of out-side, and mere barke. You seeme  
 To be a gentleman, of ingenuous race——  
 I not professe it, but my fate hath beene  
 To be, where I haue beene consulted with, 120  
 In this high kind, touching some great mens sonnes,  
 Persons of bloud, and honour—— P E R. Who be these,  
 sir ?

Act II. Scene II.

MOSCA, POLITIQUE, PEREGRINE,  
 VOLPONE, NANO,  
 GREGE.

VNDER that windore, there 't must be. The same.

P O L. Fellowes, to mount a banke ! Did your in-  
 structer  
 In the deare tongues, neuer discourse to you  
 Of the *Italian* mountebankes ? P E R. Yes, sir. P O L.  
 Why,

11. i. 115 blouds ; corr. F1 : blouds, Q, F1 originally, Fa 116  
 pedants : corr. F1 : Pedants, Q : pedants, F1 originally, Fa 11. ii. Enter  
*Mosca and Nano disguised, followed by persons with materials for erecting*  
*a Stage. G, continuing the scene* i same.] same : Q



5 Here shall you see one. P E R. They are quack-saluers,  
Fellowes, that liue by venting oyles, and drugs ?

P O L. Was that the character he gaue you of them ?

P E R. As I remember. P O L. Pitie his ignorance.

They are the onely-knowing men of *Europe* !

10 Great generall schollers, excellent phisicians,  
Most admir'd states-men, profest fauourites,  
And cabinet-counsellors, to the greatest princes !  
The onely languag'd-men, of all the world !

P E R. And, I haue heard, they are most lewd impostors ;

15 Made all of termes, and shreds ; no lesse belyers  
Of great-mens fauours, then their owne vile med'cines ;  
Which they will vtter, vpon monstrous othes :  
Selling that drug, for two pence, ere they part,  
Which they haue valu'd at twelue crownes, before.

20 P O L. Sir, calumnies are answer'd best with silence :  
Your selfe shall iudge. Who is it mounts, my friends ?

M O S. S C O T O of *Mantua*, sir. P O L. Is't he ? nay,  
then

I'le proudly promise, sir, you shall behold  
Another man, then has beene phant'sied to you.

25 I wonder, yet, that he should mount his banke  
Here, in this nooke, that has beene wont t'appare  
In face of the *piazza* ! Here, he comes.

V O L P. Mount, *Zany*. G R E. Follow, follow, follow,  
follow, follow.

P O L. See how the people follow him ! h'is a man

30 May write 10000 crownes, in banke, here. Note,  
Marke but his gesture : I doe vse to obserue  
The state he keeps, in getting vp ! P E R. 'Tis worth it, sir.

V O L P. *Most noble gent: and my worthy patrons, it may  
seeme strange, that I, your S C O T O M A N T V A N O, who*

II. II. 5 They are Q, corr. F1, F2: They are F1 originally 9 *Europe* !]  
*Europe*, Q 10 Great] Great, Q 11 fauourites] *Fauorites* Q  
12 princes ] *Princes*: Q 16 fauours] fauors Q 20 silence:]  
silence; Q After 27 Enter *Volpone* disguised as a mouniebank  
*Doctor, and followed by a crowd of people.* G 28 *Zany.*] *Zany*, Q After  
'*Zany*' [To *Nano*.] G 29 h'is] hee's Q, F2 After 30 *Volpone* mounts  
the *Stage*. G 31 gesture:] gesture; Q

*was euer wont to fixe my banke in face of the publike piazza, 35  
neere the shelter of the portico, to the procuratia, should, now  
(after eight months absence, from this illustrious city of Venice)  
humbly retire my selfe, into an obscure nooke of the piazza.*

P O L. Did not I, now, object the same? P E R. Peace, sir.

V O L P. *Let me tell you : I am not (as your Lombard prouerb 40  
saith) cold on my feet ; or content to part with my commodities  
at a cheaper rate, then I accustomed : looke not for it. Nor,  
that the calumnious reports of that impudent detractor, and  
shame to our profession, (ALESSANDRO BUTTONE,  
I meane) who gaue out, in publike, I was condemn'd a 'Sfor- 45  
zato to the galleys, for poysoning the Cardinall BEMBO's—  
Cooke, hath at all attached, much lesse delected me. No, no,  
worthy gent. (to tell you true) I cannot indure, to see the rabble  
of these ground Ciarlitani, that spread their clokes on the paue-  
ment, as if they meant to do feates of actiuitie, and then come 50  
in, lamely, with their mouldy tales out of BOCCACCIO, like  
stale TABARINE, the Fabulist : some of them discoursing  
their trauelles, and of their tedious captiuitie in the Turkes  
galleyes, when indeed (were the truth knowne) they were the  
Christians galleyes, where very temperately, they eate bread, 55  
and drunke water, as a wholesome penance (enioyn'd them by  
their Confessors) for base pilferies.*

P O L. Note but his bearing, and contempt of these.

V O L P. *These turdy-facy-nasty-paty-lousy-farticall rogues,  
with one poore groats-worth of vn-prepar'd antimony, finely 60  
wrapt vp in seuerall 'scartoccios, are able, very well, to kill  
their twentie a weeke, and play ; yet, these meagre staru'd  
spirits, who haue halfe stopt the organs of their mindes with  
earthy appilations, want not their fauourers among your  
shriuel'd, sallad-eating artizans : who are ouer-ioy'd, that they 65  
may haue their halfe-pe'rth of physick, though it purge 'hem  
into another world, 't makes no matter.*

II. ii. 36 procuratia] Procuratia Q 38 piazza] Piazza; Q 41  
feet:] feete, Q 42 accustomed:] accustomed; Q 45 a 'Sforzato Q: a'  
Sforzato Ff 46 BEMBO's] Bamboo's Q 61 seuerall 'scartoccios]  
seuerall' Scartoccios Q: seuerall' Scartoccios F1: seuerall scartoccios F2  
62 staru'd] steru'd Q 64 fauourers] fauorers Q 66 halfe-pe'rth]  
halfeperth Q 67 't makes] makes Q

P O L. Excellent ! ha' you heard better language, sir ?

V O L P. Well, let 'hem goe. And gentlemen, honorable gentle-  
70 men, know, that for this time, our banke, being thus remou'd  
from the clamours of the canaglia, shall be the scene of pleasure,  
and delight : For, I haue nothing to sell, little, or nothing to  
sell.

P O L. I told you, sir, his end. P E R. You did so, sir.

75 V O L P. I protest, I, and my sixe seruants, are not able to  
make of this precious liquor, so fast, as it is fetch'd away from  
my lodging, by gentlemen of your city ; strangers of the terra-  
ferma ; worshipfull merchants ; I, and senators too : who, euer  
since my arriuall, haue detayned me to their vses, by their  
80 splendidous liberalities. And worthily. For, what auailles your  
rich man to haue his magazines stufte with moscadelli, or  
of the purest grape, when his physitians prescribe him (on  
paine of death) to drinke nothing but water, cocted with anise-  
seeds ? O, health ! health ! the blessing of the rich ! the riches  
85 of the poore ! who can buy thee at too deare a rate, since there  
is no enioying this world, without thee ? Be not then so sparing  
of your purses, honorable gentlemen, as to abridge the naturall  
course of life——

P E R. You see his end ? P O L. I, is't not good ?

90 V O L P. For, when a humide fluxe, or catarrhe, by the muta-  
bility of aire, falls from your head, into an arme, or shoulder,  
or any other part ; take you a duckat, or your cecchine of  
gold, and apply to the place affected : see, what good effect it  
can worke. No, no, 'tis this blessed vnguento, this rare extrac-  
95 tion, that hath only power to disperse all malignant humours,  
that proceed, either of hot, cold, moist, or windy causes——

P E R. I would he had put in drie to. P O L. 'Pray you,  
obserue.

V O L P. To fortifie the most indigest, and crude stomach, I,  
100 were it of one, that (through extreme weaknesse) vomited bloud,

II. ii. 69 honorable] honourable Q 70 banke] Banque Q 73  
sell.] sell: Q 74 you, sir,] you, Sir ; Q 77 terra-] Terra- Q  
80 For.] For Q 82 of not in Q 84 rich /] rich, Q 85 too] to Q  
91 arme,] arme Q 95 humours] humors Q 97 'Pray corr. Q,  
Ff: 'pray Q originally

applying only a warme napkin to the place, after the vunction, and fricace ; for the vertigine, in the head, putting but a drop into your nostrills, likewise, behind the eares ; a most soueraine, and approued remedie : the mal-caduco, crampes, conuulsions, paralysies, epilepsies, tremor-cordia, retyred-nerues, 105 ill vapours of the spleene, stoppings of the liuer, the stone, the strangury, hernia ventosa, iliaca passio ; stops a disenteria, immediately ; easeth the torsion of the small guts ; and cures melancolia hypocondriaca, being taken and applyed, accord- 109 ing to my printed receipt. For, this is the physitian, this the medicine ; this counsell, this cures ; this giues the direction, <sup>Pointing to his bill and his</sup> this workes the effect : and (in summe) both together may bee glasse. term'd an abstract of the theorick, and practick in the Æsculapian arte. 'Twill cost you eight crownes. And, ZANFRITADA, 'pray thee sing a verse, extempore, in honour of it. 115

POL. How doe you like him, sir ? PER. Most strangely, I !

POL. Is not his language rare ? PER. But *Alchimy*, I neuer heard the like : or BROUGHTONS bookes.

## SONG.

120

**H**Ad old HIPPOCRATES, or GALEN,  
(That to their bookes put med'cines all in)  
But knowne this secret, they had neuer  
(Of which they will be guiltie euer)  
Beene murderers of so much paper, 125  
Or wasted many a hurtlesse taper :  
No Indian drug had ere beene famed,  
Tabacco, sassafras not named ;  
Ne yet, of guacum one small stick, sir,  
Nor RAYMVNDLVLLIES great elixir. 130  
Ne, had been knowne the Danish GONSWART,  
Or PARACELSVS, with his long-sword.

II. ii. 104 remedie : F1 : remedy : corr. Q, F2 : remedy. Q originally  
106 stoppings corr. Q, Ff : Stoppings Q originally 110 Stage direction  
not in Q 115 'pray thee] pr'y thee F2 118 Alchimy, Q, F2 :  
Alchimy F1 Before 121 SONG.] Nano sings. G 131 GONSWART,]  
GONSWART. Q, Ff

P E R. All this, yet, will not doe, eight crownes is high.

V O L P. No more. Gentlemen, if I had but time to discourse  
 135 to you the miraculous effects of this my oile, surnamed oglio  
 del S C O T O ; with the count-lesse catalogue of those I haue  
 cured of th'aforesaid, and many more diseases ; the pattents  
 and priuiledges of all the Princes, and common-wealths of  
 Christendome ; or but the depositions of those that appear'd  
 140 on my part, before the signiory of the Sanità, and most learned  
 collidge of physitians ; where I was authorized, vpon notice  
 taken of the admirable vertues of my medicaments, and mine  
 owne excellency, in matter of rare, and vnknowne secrets, not  
 onely to disperse them publiquely in this famous citie, but in  
 145 all the territories, that happily ioy vnder the gouvernement of  
 the most pious and magnificent states of Italy. But may some  
 other gallant fellow say, O, there be diuers, that make profes-  
 sion to haue as good, and as experimented receipts, as yours :  
 Indeed, very many haue assay'd, like apes in imitation of that,  
 150 which is really and essentially in mee, to make of this oyle ;  
 bestow'd great cost in furnaces, stilles, alembeks, continuall  
 fires, and preparation of the ingredients, (as indeede there goes  
 to it sixe hundred seuerall simples, besides some quantity of  
 humane fat, for the conglutination, which we buy of the anato-  
 155 mistes) but, when these practitioners come to the last decoction,  
 blow, blow, puff, puff, and all flies in fumo : ha, ha, ha.  
 Poore wretches ! I rather pittie their folly, and indiscretion,  
 then their losse of time, and money ; for those may be recouered  
 by industrie : but to bee a foole borne, is a disease incurable.  
 160 For my selfe, I alwaies from my youth haue indeuour'd to get  
 the rarest secrets, and booke them ; either in exchange, or for  
 money : I spared nor cost, nor labour, where any thing was  
 worthy to bee learned. And gentlemen, honourable gentlemen,  
 I will vndertake (by vertue of chymicall art) out of the honour-

11. ii. 133 doe,] doe ; F2 134 more.] more ; Q 136 Scoto ;]  
 Scoto, Q 137 diseases ;] diseases, Q 139 Christendome ;] Christen-  
 dome, Q depositions] dispositions F2 140 signiory] Signiry Q 149  
 apes] Apes, Q 156 really] really, Q 152 (as] as Q 153 besides]  
 besides, Ff: beside Q 154 anatomistes)] Anatomistes ; Q 158  
 recouered] recouer'd Q 159 borne,] borne Q 162 money :]  
 money ; Q

able hat, that couers your head, to extract the foure elements ; 165  
that is to say, the fire, ayre, water, and earth, and returne you  
your felt without burne, or staine. For, whil'st others haue  
beene at the balloo, I haue beene at my booke : and am now  
past the craggie pathes of studie, and come to the flowrie plaines  
of honour, and reputation. 170

P O L. I doe assure you, sir, that is his ayme.

V O L P. But, to our price. P E R. And that withall, sir

P O L.

V O L P. You all know (honourable gentlemen) I neuer  
valu'd this ampulla, or viall, at lesse then eight crownes, but  
for this time, I am content, to be depriu'd of it for sixe ; sixe 175  
crownes is the price ; and lesse in courtesie, I know you cannot  
offer me : take it, or leaue it, howsoeuer, both it, and I, am at  
your seruice. I aske you not, as the value of the thing, for then  
I should demand of you a thousand crownes, so the Cardinals  
M O N T A L T O, F E R N E S E, the great duke of Tuscany, my 180  
gossip, with diuers other princes haue giuen me ; but I despise  
money : onely to shew my affection to you, honourable gentle-  
men, and your illustrious state here, I haue neglected the mes-  
sages of these princes, mine owne offices, fram'd my iourney  
hither, onely to present you with the fruits of my trauels. Tune 185  
your voices once more to the touch of your instruments, and  
giue the honourable assembly some delightfull recreation.

P E R. What monstrous, and most painefull circumstance  
Is here, to get some three, or foure gazets !

Some three-pence, i'th' whole, for that 'twill come to. 190

S O N G.

**Y**OU that would last long, list to my song,  
Make no more coyle, but buy of this oyle.  
Would you be euer faire ? and yong ?  
Stout of teeth ? and strong of tongue ? 195

II. ii. 174 viall] violi Q crownes,] crownes ; F2 177 me :]  
mee ; Q I,] I Q 181 me ;] me ; Q 182, 187 honour-  
able] honorable Q 183 illustrious] illustrious F2 185 fruits]  
fruits Q 186 more] more, Q 189 gazets ] Gazets ? Q 190 i'th']  
i'th Fr Before 191 SONG.] Nano sings. G

*Tart of palat? quick of eare?  
 Sharpe of sight? of nostrill cleare?  
 Moist of hand? and light of foot?  
 (Or I will come neerer to't)  
 200 Would you liue free from all diseases?  
 Doe the act, your mistris pleases;  
 Yet fright all aches from your bones?  
 Here's a med'cine, for the nones.*

V O L P. Well, I am in a humour (at this time) to make  
 205 a present of the small quantitie my coffer contains: to the  
 rich, in courtesie, and to the poore, for Gods sake. Wherefore,  
 now marke; I ask'd you sixe crownes; and sixe crownes, at  
 other times, you haue paid me; you shall not giue me sixe  
 crownes, nor fīue, nor foure, nor three, nor two, nor one; nor  
 210 halfe a duckat; no, nor a muccinigo: sixe—pence it will  
 cost you, or sixe hundred pound—expect nō lower price, for by  
 the banner of my front, I will not bate a bagatine, that I will  
 haue, only, a pledge of your loues, to carry something from  
 amongst you, to shew, I am not contemn'd by you. Therefore,  
 215 now, tosse your handkerchiefes, chearefully, chearefully; and  
 be aduertised, that the first heroique spirit, that deignes to grace  
 me, with a handkerchiefe, I will giue it a little remembrance  
 of something, beside, shall please it better, then if I had pre-  
 sented it with a double pistolet.

CELIA  
*at the  
 window  
 throws  
 downe her  
 handker-  
 chiefe.*

P E R. Will you be that heroique sparke, sir P O L?

O, see! the windore has preuented you.

V O L P. Lady, I kisse your bountie: and, for this timely  
 grace, you haue done your poore S C O T O of Mantua, I will  
 returne you, ouer and aboue my oile, a secret, of that high, and  
 225 inestimable nature, shall make you for euer enamour'd on that  
 minute, wherein your eye first descended on so meane, (yet not  
 altogether to be despis'd) an obiect. Here is a poulder, con-  
 ceal'd in this paper, of which, if I should speake to the worth,

11. ii. 202 Yef] Yea F2, F3    204 humour] humor Q    207 crownes;  
 and] Crownes, and Q    210 sixe—pence] six pence Q    220 Stage  
 direction not in Q    window] window F2    226 (yef] yet Q    227  
 despis'd)] despis'd Q

nine thousand volumes were but as one page, that page as a line, that line as a word : so short is this pilgrimage of man <sup>230</sup> (which some call life) to the expressing of it. Would I reflect on the price ? why, the whole world were but as an empire, that empire as a prouince, that prouince as a banke, that banke as a priuate purse, to the purchase of it. I will, onely, tell you ; It is the poulder, that made VENVS a goddessse (giuen <sup>235</sup> her by APOLLO) that kept her perpetually yong, clear'd her wringles, firm'd her gummies, fill'd her skin, colour'd her haire ; from her, deriu'd to HELEN, and at the sack of Troy (vnfortunately) lost : till now, in this our age, it was as happily recouer'd, by a studious Antiquarie, out of some ruines <sup>240</sup> of Asia, who sent a moyetie of it, to the court of France (but much sophisticated) wherewith the ladies there, now, colour their haire. The rest (at this present) remaines with me ; extracted, to a quintessence : so that, where euer it but touches, in youth it perpetually preserues, in age restores the complexion ; seat's your teeth, did they dance like virginall iacks, firme as a wall ; makes them white, as iuory, that were black, as—

## Act II. Scene III.

CORVINO, POLITIQUE,  
PEREGRINE.

Spight o' the deuill, and my shame ! come downe, here ; *He beates*  
Come downe : no house but mine to make your scene ? *away the*  
Signior FLAMINIO, will you downe, sir ? downe ? *monte-*  
What is my wife your FRANCISCINA ? sir ? *banke, &c*  
No windores on the whole piazza, here, 5  
To make your properties, but mine ? but mine ?  
Hart ! ere to morrow, I shall be new christen'd,

II. ii. 230 word :] word ; Q 231 it. Would] it: would Q 246  
seat's corr. Q, Ff : seats Q originally II. iii. Enter Corvino. G, continuing the scene  
1 Stage direction a correction in F1 : not in Q or in F1 originally or in F2 Spight] Bloud Q 5 piazza corr. F1 : Piazza Q, F1 originally, F2 After 6 Beats away Volpone, Nano, &c. G



And cald the PANTALONE *di bisogniosi*,

About the towne. PER. What should this meane, sir POL?

10 POL. Some trick of state, beleuee it. I will home.

PER. It may be some designe, on you. POL. I know not.

I'll stand vpon my guard. PER. It is your best, sir.

POL. This three weekes, all my aduises, all my letters,  
They haue beene intercepted. PER. Indeed, sir?

15 Best haue a care. POL. Nay, so I will. PER. This  
knight,

I may not lose him, for my mirth, till night.

### *Act II. Scene III.*

VOLPONE, MOSCA.

O, I am wounded. MOS. Where, sir? VOLP. Not  
without;

Those blowes were nothing: I could beare them euer.

But angry CVPID, bolting from her eyes,

Hath shot himselfe into me, like a flame;

5 Where, now, he flings about his burning heat,

As in a fornace, an ambitious fire,

Whose vent is stopt. The fight is all within me.

I cannot liue, except thou helpe me, MOSCA;

My liuer melts, and I, without the hope

10 Of some soft aire, from her refreshing breath,

Am but a heape of cinders. MOS. 'Lasse, good sir!

Would you had neuer seene her. VOLP. Nay, would thou

Had'st neuer told me of her. MOS. Sir, 'tis true;

I doe confesse, I was vnfortunate,

15 And you vnhappy: but I'am bound in conscience,

No lesse then duty, to effect my best

To your release of torment, and I will, sir.

II. iii. 8 *di bisogniosi* corr. F1: DI BESOGNIOSI F1 originally, F2: *di  
Besogniosi* Q 11 *designe,*] *designe* Q you.] you: Q 12 It is  
corr. F1: 'Tis Q, F1 originally, F2 13 letters,] letters Q 16  
lose] loose Q Exeunt. add G II. iv. SCENE II. | *A Room in  
Volpone's House.* | Enter Volpone and Mosca. G 3 bolting] *boulting* Q  
6 *fornace*] *furnace* Q an corr. F1: some Q, F1 originally, F2 11 sir!  
corr. F1: sir, F1 originally, F2: Sir, Q

V O L P. Deare M O S C A, shall I hope? M O S. Sir, more  
 then deare,  
 I will not bid you to despaire of ought,  
 Within a humane compasse. V O L P. O, there spoke 20  
 My better Angell. M O S C A, take my keyes,  
 Gold, plate, and iewells, all's at thy deuotion;  
 Employ them, how thou wilt; nay, coyne me, too:  
 So thou, in this, but crowne my longings. M O S C A?  
 M O S. Vse but your patience. V O L P. So I haue. 25  
 M O S. I doubt not  
 To bring successe to your desires. V O L P. Nay, then,  
 I not repent me of my late disguise.  
 M O S. If you can horne him, sir, you need not. V O L P.  
 True:  
 Besides, I neuer meant him for my heire.  
 Is not the colour o' my beard, and eye-browes, 30  
 To make me knowne? M O S. No iot. V O L P. I did it well.  
 M O S. So well, would I could follow you in mine,  
 With halfe the happinesse; and, yet, I would  
 Escape your *epilogue*. V O L P. But, were they gull'd  
 With a beliefe, that I was S C O T O? M O S. Sir, 35  
 S C O T O himselfe could hardly haue distinguish'd!  
 I haue not time to flatter you, now, wee'll part:  
 And, as I prosper, so applaud my art.

Act II. Scene v.

CORVINO, CELIA, SERVITORE.

D Eath of mine honour, with the cities foole?  
 A iuggling, tooth-drawing, prating mountebanke?  
 And, at a publike windore? where whil'st he,  
 With his strain'd action, and his dole of faces,

II. iv. 26 To] But Q 30 o' corr. FI: of Q. of o' FI originally,  
*preserved in the Yale copy: other copies have a white space before and after*  
*the of, which was picked out without adjusting the spacing.* 32, 33 and,  
 . . . *epilogue.*] —and . . . *epilogue.* [*Aside.* G 36 distinguish'd!]  
 distinguish'd; Q 37 now, not in Q II v SCENE III. | A  
*Room in Corvino's House. | Enter Corvino, with his sword in his hand,*  
*dragging in Celia. G*

- 5 To his drug-lecture drawes your itching eares,  
 A crue of old, vn-marri'd, noted lechers,  
 Stood leering vp, like *Satyres* : and you smile,  
 Most graciously ! and fan your fauours forth,  
 To giue your hot spectators satisfaction !
- 10 What, was your mountebanke their call ? their whistle ?  
 Or were you'enamour'd on his copper rings ?  
 His saffron iewell, with the toade-stone in't ?  
 Or his imbroidred sute, with the cope-stitch,  
 Made of a herse-cloth ? or his old tilt-feather ?
- 15 Or his starch'd beard ? well ! you shall haue him, yes.  
 He shall come home, and minister vnto you  
 The fricace, for the moother. Or, let me see,  
 I thinke, you'had rather mount ? would you not mount ?  
 Why, if you'll mount, you may ; yes truely, you may :
- 20 And so, you may be seene, downe to th' foot.  
 Get you a citterne, lady *vanitie*,  
 And be a dealer, with the vertuous man ;  
 Make one : I'le but protest my selfe a cuckold,  
 And saue your dowrie. I am a *Dutchman*, I !
- 25 For, if you thought me an *Italian*,  
 You would be damn'd, ere you did this, you whore :  
 Thou'ldst tremble, to imagine, that the murder  
 Of father, mother, brother, all thy race,  
 Should follow, as the subiect of my iustice !
- 30 C E L. Good sir, haue patience ! C o r v. What could'st  
 thou propose  
 Lesse to thy selfe, then, in this heat of wrath,  
 And stung with my dishonour, I should strike  
 This steele into thee, with as many stabs,  
 As thou wert gaz'd vpon with goatish eyes ?
- 35 C E L. Alasse sir, be appeas'd ! I could not thinke  
 My being at the windore should more, now,

II. v. 7 *Satyres*:] *Satyres*: Q 8 graciously !] graciously ? Q 9  
 satisfaction !] satisfaction ? Q 10 What,] What ; Q 15 well !]  
 well, Q 17 moother] *Mother* Q 20 to th'] to' th' *Fr* 24 I !] I ; Q  
 29 iustice !] iustice. Q 30 patience !] pacience. Q could'st]  
 coul'dst *Fr* 33 into *F2*, *F3*: vnto Q, *Fr* 35 appeas'd !] appeas'd ; Q  
 I could] I could *Fr*

Moue your impatience, then at other times.

C O R V. No? not to seeke, and entertaine a parlee,  
With a knowne knaue? before a multitude?  
You were an actor, with your handkerchiefe! 40  
Which he, most sweetly, kist in the receipt,  
And might (no doubt) returne it, with a letter,  
And point the place, where you might meet: your sisters,  
Your mothers, or your aunts might serue the turne.

C E L. Why, deare sir, when doe I make these excuses? 45  
Or euer stirre, abroad, but to the church?  
And that, so seldome—— C O R V. Well, it shall be lesse;  
And thy restraint, before, was libertie,  
To what I now decree: and therefore, marke me.  
First, I will haue this bawdy light dam'd vp; 50  
And, til 't be done, some two, or three yards off,  
I'll chalke a line: o're which, if thou but chance  
To set thy desp'rate foot; more hell, more horror,  
More wilde, remorcelesse rage shall seize on thee,  
Then on a coniurer, that, had heedlesse left 55  
His circles safetie, ere his deuill was laid.  
Then, here's a locke, which I will hang vpon thee;  
And, now I thinke on't, I will keepe thee backe-wards;  
Thy lodging shall be backe-wards; thy walkes back-wards;  
Thy prospect—all be backe-wards; and no pleasure, 60  
That thou shalt know, but backe-wards: Nay, since you  
force

My honest nature, know, it is your owne  
Being too open, makes me vse you thus.  
Since you will not containe your subtile nostrils  
In a sweet roome, but, they must snuffe the ayre 65  
Of ranke, and sweatie passengers—— One knockes.  
Away, and be not seene, paine of thy life;  
Not looke toward the windore: if thou dost——  
(Nay stay, heare this) let me not prosper, whore,

65  
Knocks  
within.

II. v. 37 times.] times: Q 38 parlee.] parlee; Q 40 handker-  
chiefe!] handkercheife; Q 51 off] of Q 52-3 chance To] (chance  
To) Q 60 prospect—all] prospect-all Q, Ff 61 know, Q: know Ff  
63 too] to Q 65 but, Q: but Ff 66 Stage direction not in Q

- 70 But I will make thee an anatomic,  
 Dissect thee mine owne selfe, and read a lecture  
 Vpon thee, to the citie, and in publike.  
 Away. Who's there? S E R. 'Tis signior M O S C A, sir.

*Act II. Scene VI.*

C O R V I N O, M O S C A.

LEt him come in, his master's dead: There's yet  
 Some good, to helpe the bad. My M O S C A, welcome,  
 I ghesse your newes. M O S. I feare you cannot, sir.

C O R V. Is't not his death? M O S. Rather the con-  
 trarie.

- 5 C O R V. Not his recouerie? M O S. Yes, sir. C O R V. I  
 am curst,

I am bewitch'd, my crosses meet to vex me.

How? how? how? how? M O S. Why, sir, with  
 S C O T O's oyle!

C O R B A C C I O, and V O L T O R E brought of it,  
 Whil'st I was busie in an inner roome——

- 10 C O R V. Death! that damn'd mountebanke! but, for  
 the law,

Now, I could kill the raskall: 't cannot be,  
 His oyle should haue that vertue. Ha' not I  
 Knowne him a common rogue, come fidling in  
 To th'*osteria*, with a tumbling whore,

- 15 And, when he ha's done all his forc'd trickes, beene glad  
 Of a poore spoonefull of dead wine, with flies in't?  
 It cannot be. All his ingredients

Are a sheepes gall, a rosted bitches marrow,  
 Some few sod earewigs, pounded caterpillers,

- 20 A little capons grease, and fasting spittle:

II. v. 73 After 'Away' Exit *Celia*. | Enter *Servant*. G II. vi. G  
 continues the scene, marking the *Servant's* exit at l. 2 ('Let him come in')  
 and *Mosca's* entry at l. 3 after 'help the bad'. 3 ghesse] gesse Q  
 5 sir. F2: sir, F1: Sir, Q 7 oyle!] oyle; Q 10 mountebanke!] *Mountebanke*; Q  
 16 Of a] Of a Fr 14 *osteria*] *Osteria* Q: *osteria* F1: *Osteria* F2

I know 'hem, to a dram. M o s. I know not, sir,  
But some on't, there, they powr'd into his eares,  
Some in his nostrils, and recouer'd him ;  
Applying but the fricace. C o r v. Pox o' that fricace.

M o s. And since, to seeme the more officious, 25  
And flatt'ring of his health, there, they haue had  
(At extreme fees) the colledge of physicians  
Consulting on him, how they might restore him ;  
Where, one would haue a cataplasme of spices,  
Another, a flayd ape clapt to his brest, 30

A third would ha' it a dogge, a fourth an oyle  
With wild cats skinnnes : at last, they all resolu'd  
That, to preserue him, was no other meanes,  
But some yong woman must be streight sought out,  
Lustie, and full of iuice, to sleepe by him ; 35

And, to this seruice (most vnhappily,  
And most vnwillingly) am I now imploy'd,  
Which, here, I thought to pre-acquaint you with,  
For your aduice, since it concernes you most,  
Because, I would not doe that thing might crosse 40  
Your ends, on whom I haue my whole dependance, sir :

Yet, if I doe it not, they may delate  
My slacknesse to my patron, worke me out  
Of his opinion ; and there, all your hopes,  
Venters, or whatsoeuer, are all frustrate. 45

I doe but tell you, sir. Besides, they are all  
Now striuing, who shall first present him. Therefore——  
I could intreat you, briefly, conclude some-what :

Preuent 'hem if you can. C o r v. Death to my hopes !  
This is my villanous fortune ! Best to hire 50  
Some common curtezan ? M o s. I, I thought on that, sir.

But they are all so subtle, full of art,  
And age againe doting, and flexible,  
So as——I cannot tell——we may perchance  
Light on a queane, may cheat vs all. C o r v. 'Tis true. 55

M o s. No, no : it must be one, that ha's no trickes, sir,

II. vi. 22 there, *Q* (comma faint) : there *Ff* 30 flayd] flead *Q*  
53 againe] againe, *Q*

Some simple thing, a creature, made vnto it ;  
 Some wench you may command. Ha' you no kinswoman ?  
 Gods so—— Thinke, thinke, thinke, thinke, thinke, thinke,  
 thinke, sir.

60 One o' the Doctors offer'd, there, his daughter.

C O R V. How ! M O S. Yes, signior L V P O, the physi-  
 cian,

C O R V. His daughter ? M O S. And a virgin, sir. Why ?  
 Alasse

He knowes the state of 's bodie, what it is ;  
 That nought can warme his bloud, sir, but a feuer ;

65 Nor any incantation rayse his spirit :

A long forgetfulnesse hath seiz'd that part.

Besides, sir, who shall know it ? some one, or two——

C O R V. I pray thee giue me leaue. If any man  
 But I had had this lucke—— The thing, in't selfe,

70 I know, is nothing—— Wherefore should not I

As well command my bloud, and my affections,

As this dull Doctor ? In the point of honour,

The cases are all one, of wife, and daughter.

M O S. I heare him comming. C O R V. Shee shall doo't :  
 'Tis done.

75 Slight, if this Doctor, who is not engag'd,

Vnlesse 't be for his counsell (which is nothing)

Offer his daughter, what should I, that am

So deeply in ? I will preuent him : wretch !

Couetous wretch ! M O S C A, I haue determin'd.

80 M O S. How, sir ? C O R V. We'll make all sure. The  
 party, you wot of,

Shall be mine owne wife, M O S C A. M O S. Sir. The thing,  
 (But that I would not seeme to counsell you)

I should haue motion'd to you, at the first :

And, make your count, you haue cut all their throtes.

85 Why ! 'tis directly taking a possession !

II. vi. 67 two—] two. Q 68 pray thee] pr'y thee F2 leaue.]  
 leaue : Q : leave. [walks aside.] G 69 thing. Q'(comma faint) : thing  
 Ff 74 After 'comming'] Aside. G 75 who] that Q  
 78 him: corr. Fx: him, Q, Fx originally

And, in his next fit, we may let him goe.  
 'Tis but to pull the pillow, from his head,  
 And he is thratled : 't had beene done, before,  
 But for your scrupulous doubts. C O R V. I, a plague on't,  
 My conscience fooles my wit. Well, I'll be briefe, 90  
 And so be thou, lest they should be before vs ;  
 Goe home, prepare him, tell him, with what zeale,  
 And willingnesse, I doe it : sweare it was,  
 On the first hearing (as thou maist doe, truely)  
 Mine owne free motion. M O S. Sir, I warrant you, 95  
 I'll so possesse him with it, that the rest  
 Of his staru'd clients shall be banisht, all ;  
 And onely you receiu'd. But come not, sir,  
 Vntill I send, for I haue some-thing else  
 To ripen, for your good (you must not know't) 100  
 C O R V. But doe not you forget to send, now. M O S.  
 Feare not.

Act II. Scene VII.

C O R V I N O, C E L I A.

WHere are you, wife? my C E L I A? wife? what,  
 blubbering?  
 Come, drie those teares. I thinke, thou thought'st me in  
 earnest?  
 Ha? by this light, I talk'd so but to trie thee.  
 Me thinkes, the lightnesse of the occasion  
 Should ha' confirm'd thee. Come, I am not ielalous. 5  
 C E L. No? C O R V. Faith, I am not, I, nor neuer was :  
 It is a poore, vnprofitable humour.  
 Doe not I know, if women haue a will,  
 They'll doe 'gainst all the watches, o' the world?  
 And that the fiercest spies, are tam'd with gold? 10

11. vi. 91 And] And, Q vs; corr. F1: vs: Q, F1 originally 93 it :  
 corr. F1: it; Q, F1 originally, F2 97 staru'd] steru'd Q 99 some-  
 thing] something, Q 101 Exit. add G 11. vii. After 'wife?' Re-enter  
 Celia. G, continuing the scene 5 ielalous.] ielalous : Q 6 not, I  
 corr. F1, F2 : not I Q, F1 originally 7 humour] humor Q



Tut, I am confident in thee, thou shalt see't :  
 And see, I'll giue thee cause too, to beleue it.  
 Come, kisse me. Goe, and make thee ready straight,  
 In all thy best attire, thy choicest iewells,  
 15 Put 'hem all on, and, with 'hem, thy best lookes :  
 We are inuited to a solemne feast,  
 At old V O L P O N E'S, where it shall appeare  
 How far I am free, from iealousie, or feare.

*Act III. Scene I.*

M O S C A.

I Feare, I shall begin to grow in loue  
 With my deare selfe, and my most prosp'rous parts,  
 They doe so spring, and burgeon ; I can feele  
 A whimsey i' my bloud : (I know not how)  
 5 Successe hath made me wanton. I could skip  
 Out of my skin, now, like a subtill snake,  
 I am so limber. O ! Your Parasite  
 Is a most precious thing, dropt from aboue,  
 Not bred 'mong'st clods, and clot-poules, here on earth.  
 10 I muse, the mysterie was not made a science,  
 It is so liberally profest ! almost  
 All the wise world is little else, in nature,  
 But Parasites, or Sub-parasites. And, yet,  
 I meane not those, that haue your bare towne-arte,  
 15 To know, who's fit to feede 'hem ; haue no house,  
 No family, no care, and therefore mould  
 Tales for mens eares, to bait that sense ; or get  
 Kitchin-inuention, and some stale receipts  
 To please the belly, and the groine ; nor those,  
 20 With their court-dog-tricks, that can fawne, and fleere,  
 Make their reuennue out of legs, and faces,  
 Eccho my-Lord, and lick away a moath :  
 But your fine, elegant rascall, that can rise,

II. vii. 18 I am] I'am F2      18 *Exeunt.* add G      III. i. ACT III.  
 SCENE I. | *A Street.* | *Enter Mosca.* G      11 almost] Almost, Q  
 21 reuennue] reuennue Q : revenue F2

And stoope (almost together) like an arrow ;  
 Shoot through the aire, as nimbly as a starre ; 25  
 Turne short, as doth a swallow ; and be here,  
 And there, and here, and yonder, all at once ;  
 Present to any humour, all occasion ;  
 And change a visor, swifter, then a thought !  
 This is the creature, had the art borne with him ; 30  
 Toiles not to learne it, but doth practise it  
 Out of most excellent nature : and such sparkes,  
 Are the true Parasites, others but their *Zani's*.

Act III. Scene II.

M O S C A, B O N A R I O.

**W**Ho's this? B O N A R I O? old C O R B A C C I O's  
 sonne ?

The person I was bound to seeke. Faire sir,  
 You are happ'ly met. B O N. That cannot be, by thee.

M o s. Why, sir? B O N. Nay, 'pray thee know thy  
 way, & leauc me :

I would be loth to inter-change discourse, 5  
 With such a mate, as thou art. M o s. Courteous sir,  
 Scorne not my pouertie. B O N. Not I, by heauen :  
 But thou shalt giue me leaue to hate thy basenesse.

M o s. Basenesse? B O N. I, answere me, is not thy  
 sloth

Sufficient argument? thy flatterie? 10  
 Thy meanes of feeding? M o s. Heauen, be good to me.  
 These imputations are too common, sir,  
 And eas'ly stuck on vertuc, when shee's poore ;  
 You are vnequall to me, and how ere  
 Your sentence may be righteous, yet you are not, 15  
 That ere you know me, thus, proceed in censure :

III. i. 29 thought!] thought. Q III. ii. Enter Bonario. G, con-  
 tinuing the scene 4 Nay, F2: Nay Q, Fr 'pray thee] pr'y thee  
 F2 7 heauen:] heauen, Q

St. MARK E beare witnesse 'gainst you, 'tis inhumane.

B O N. What? do's he weepe? the signe is soft, and good!

I doe repent me, that I was so harsh.

20 M O S. 'Tis true, that, sway'd by strong necessitie,

I am enforc'd to eate my carefull bread

With too much obsequie; 'tis true, beside,

That I am faine to spin mine owne poore rayment,

Out of my mere obseruance, being not borne

25 To a free fortune: but that I haue done

Base offices, in rending friends asunder,

Diuiding families, betraying counsell,

Whispering false lyes, or mining men with praises,

Train'd their crēdulitie with periuries,

30 Corrupted chastitie, or am in loue

With mine owne tender ease, but would not rather

Proue the most rugged, and laborious course,

That might redeeme my present estimation;

Let me here perish, in all hope of goodnesse.

35 B O N. This cannot be a personated passion!

I was to blame, so to mistake thy nature;

'Pray thee forgiue me: and speake out thy bus'nesse.

M O S. Sir, it concernes you; and though I may seeme,

At first, to make a maine offence, in manners,

40 And in my gratitude, vnto my master,

Yet, for the pure loue, which I beare all right,

And hatred of the wrong, I must reueale it.

This verie houre, your father is in purpose

To disinherit you—— B O N. How! M O S. And thrust you forth,

45 As a mere stranger to his blood; 'tis true, sir:

The worke no way ingageth me, but, as

I claime an interest in the generall state

Of goodnesse, and true vertue, which I heare

III. ii. 17 *Weeps.* add G 18 good l] good; Q 19 *Aside.* add G  
 20 that, sway'd] that sway'd, Q 22 too] to Q 24 borne] borne, Q  
 26 rending] rendring F<sub>3</sub> 33 redeeme] redeeme, Q 35 pas-  
 sion l] passion. Q *Aside.* add G 36 to] too Q. F<sub>2</sub>

T'abound in you : and, for which mere respect,  
Without a second ayme, sir, I haue done it. 50

B o n. This tale hath lost thee much of the late trust,  
Thou hadst with me ; it is impossible :  
I know not how to lend it any thought,  
My father should be so vnnaturall.

M o s. It is a confidence, that well becomes 55  
Your pietie ; and form'd (no doubt) it is,  
From your owne simple innocence : which makes  
Your wrong more monstrous, and abhor'd. But, sir,  
I now, will tell you more. This verie minute,

It is, or will be doing : And, if you 60

Shall be but pleas'd to goe with me, I'll bring you,  
(I dare not say where you shall see, but) where  
Your eare shall be a witnesse of the deed ;

Heare your selfe written bastard : and profest  
The common issue of the earth. B o n. I'm maz'd ! 65

M o s. Sir, if I doe it not, draw your iust sword,  
And score your vengeance, on my front, and face ;  
Marke me your villaine : You haue too much wrong,  
And I doe suffer for you, sir. My heart  
Weepes bloud, in anguish—— B o n. Lead. I follow thee. 70

### Act III. Scene III.

V O L P O N E, N A N O, A N D R O G Y N O,  
C A S T R O N E.

M O S C A staves long, me thinkes. Bring forth your  
sports

And helpe, to make the wretched time more sweet.

N A N. *Dwarfe, Foole, and Eunuch, well met here we be.*

*A question it were now, whether of vs three,*

III. ii. 65 maz'd !] maz'd. Q 70 Exeunt. add G III. iii.  
SCENE II. | *A Room in Volpone's House* | Enter Volpone. G After  
2 Enter Nano, Androgyno, and Castrone. G

5 *Being, all, the knowne delicates of a rich man,  
In pleasing him, claime the precedencie can ?*

C A S. *I claime for my selfe.* A N D. *And, so doth the foole.*

N A N. *'Tis foolish indeed : let me set you both to schoole.*

*First, for your dwarfe, hee's little, and wittie,*

10 *And euery thing, as it is little, is prittie ;*

*Else, why doe men say to a creature of my shape,*

*So soone as they see him, it's a pritty little ape ?*

*And, why a pritty ape ? but for pleasing imitation*

*Of greater mens action, in a ridiculous fashion.*

15 *Beside, this feat body of mine doth not craue*

*Halfe the meat, drinke, and cloth, one of your bulkes will  
haue.*

*Admit, your fooles face be the mother of laughter,*

*Yet, for his braine, it must alwaies come after :*

*And, though that doe feed him, it's a pittifull case,*

20 *His body is beholding to such a bad face.*

One  
knocks. V O L P. *Who's there ? my couch, away, looke,* N A N O,  
see :

*Giue me my cappes, first—— go, enquire. Now, C V P I D  
Send it be M o s c A, and with faire returne.*

N A N. *It is the beauteous madam——* V O L P.

*W O V L D - B E—is it ?*

25 N A N. *The same.* V O L P. *Now, torment on me ; squire  
her in :*

*For she will enter, or dwell here for euer.*

*Nay, quickly, that my fit were past. I feare*

*A second hell too, that my loathing this*

*Will quite expell my appetite to the other :*

30 *Would shee were taking, now, her tedious leaue.*

*Lord, how it threatens me, what I am to suffer !*

III. iii. 5 *Being, all*, Q: *Being all* Ff *delicates*] *delicates*, Q 11 of  
... *shape*,] (of ... *shape*) Q 14 *action*] *actions* F2: *Actions* F3  
21 *Exe. And* and Cas. add G 22 After 'enquire' [Exit Nano.] G  
23 be] by F2, F3 24, 25 N A N.] *Nan.* [within.] G W O V L D - B E—  
*Would-bee?* Q 27 After 'quickly' [Retires to his couch.] G

Act III. Scene IIII.

LADY, VOLPONE, NANO,  
WOMEN. 2.

I Thanke you, good sir. 'Pray you signifie  
Vnto your patron, I am here. This band  
Shewes not my neck inough (I trouble you, sir,  
Let me request you, bid one of my women  
Come hither to me) in good faith, I, am drest 5  
Most fauourably, to day, it is no matter,  
'Tis well inough. Looke, see, these petulant things !  
How they haue done this ! VOLP. I do feele the feuer  
Entring, in at mine eares ; ô, for a charme,  
To fright it hence. LAD. Come neerer : is this curle 10  
In his right place ? or this ? why is this higher  
Then all the rest ? you ha' not wash'd your eies, yet ?  
Or do they not stand euen i' your head ?  
Where's your fellow ? call her. NAN. Now, S<sup>t</sup>. MARKE  
Deliuier vs : anon, shee'll beate her women, 15  
Because her nose is red. LAD. I pray you, view  
This tire, forsooth : are all things apt, or no ?  
WOM. One haire a little, here, sticks out, forsooth.  
LAD. Do's 't so forsooth ? and where was your deare  
sight  
When it did so, forsooth ? what now ? bird-ey'd ? 20  
And you, too ? 'pray you both approch, and mend it.  
Now (by that light) I muse, yo' are not asham'd !  
I, that haue preach'd these things, so oft, vnto you,  
Read you the principles, argu'd all the grounds,  
Disputed euery fitnessse, euery grace, 25  
Call'd you to counsell of so frequent dressings——  
(NAN. More carefully, then of your fame, or honour)

III. iv. *Re-enter Nano with Lady Politick Would-be.* G, continuing the  
scene 5 hither] hether Q 6 fauourably] fauorably Q, F2 to  
day,] to day ; F2 7 After ' inough.' Enter 1. Waiting-woman. G  
things !] things, Q 10 After ' hence.' [Aside.] G 14 After ' her.'  
Exit 1. Woman. G 16 After ' red.' Re-enter 1. and 2. Woman. G  
17 forsooth :] forsooth ; Q 22 asham'd !] asham'd, Q 27 honour]  
honor Q *Aside.* add G

L A D. Made you acquainted, what an ample dowrie  
 The knowledge of these things would be vnto you,  
 30 Able, alone, to get you noble husbands  
 At your returne : and you, thus, to neglect it ?  
 Besides, you seeing what a curious nation  
 Th' *Italians* are, what will they say of me ?  
 The *English* lady cannot dresse her selfe ;  
 35 Here's a fine imputation, to our countrie !  
 Well, goe your wayes, and stay, i' the next roome.  
 This *fucus* was too course too, it's no matter.  
 Good-sir, you'll giue 'hem entertaynement ?

V O L P. The storme comes toward me. L A D. How do's  
 my V O L P ?

40 V O L P. Troubled with noise, I cannot sleepe ; I dreamt  
 That a strange *furie* entred, now, my house,  
 And, with the dreadfull tempest of her breath,  
 Did cleaue my roofe asunder. L A D. Beleeue me, and I  
 Had the most fearefull dreame, could I remember 't—  
 45 V O L P. Out on my fate ; I ha' giu'n her the occasion  
 How to torment me : shee will tell me hers.

L A D. Me thought, the golden mediocritie  
 Polite, and delicate— V O L P. O, if you doe loue me,  
 No more ; I sweat, and suffer, at the mention  
 50 Of any dreame : feelee, how I tremble yet.

L A D. Alas, good soule ! the passion of the heart.  
 Seed-pearle were good now, boild with syrrope of apples,  
 Tincture of gold, and corral, citron-pills,  
 Your elicampane roote, mirobalanes—

55 V O L P. Ay me, I haue tane a grasse-hopper by the wing.

L A D. Burnt silke, and amber, you haue muscadell  
 Good i' the house— V O L P. You will not drinke, and  
 part ?

L A D. No, feare not that. I doubt, we shall not get  
 Some *english* saffron (halfe a dram would serue)  
 60 Your sixteene cloues, a little muske, dri'd mints,

III. iv. 35 countrie ] Country : Q After 38 *Exeunt Nano and*  
*Waiting-women.* G 46 *Aside.* add G So 55, 62, 64, 82, 85, 87, 113,  
 115 55 tane] tâne Q

Buglosse, and barley-meale—— V O L P. Shee's in againe,  
Before I fayn'd diseases, now I haue one.

L A D. And these appli'd, with a right scarlet-cloth——

V O L P. Another flood of wordes ! a very torrent !

L A D. Shall I, sir, make you a poultise ? V O L P. No, 65  
no, no ;

I' am very well : you need prescribe no more.

L A D. I haue, a little, studied physick ; but, now,  
I'am all for musique : saue, i' the fore-noones,  
An houre, or two, for painting. I would haue  
A lady, indeed, t'haue all, letters, and artes, 70  
Be able to discourse, to write, to paint,  
But principall (as P L A T O holds) your musique  
(And, so do's wise P Y T H A G O R A S, I take it)  
Is your true rapture ; when there is concent  
In face, in voyce, and clothes : and is, indeed, 75  
Our sexes chieftest ornament. V O L P. The Poet,  
As old in time, as P L A T O, and as knowing,  
Say's that your highest female grace is silence.

L A D. Which o' your Poets ? P E T R A R C H ? or  
T A S S O ?' or D A N T E ?

G V E R R I N I ? A R I O S T O ? A R E T I N E ? 80  
C I E C O di Hadria ? I haue read them all.

V O L P. Is euerything a cause, to my destruction ?

L A D. I thinke, I ha' two or three of 'hem, about me.

V O L P. The sunne, the sea will sooner, both, stand still,  
Then her eternall tongue ! nothing can scape it. 85

L A D. Here's P A S T O R F I D O—— V O L P. Professe  
obstinate silence,

That's, now, my safest. L A D. All our *English* writers,  
I meane such, as are happy in th' *Italian*,  
Will deigne to steale out of this author, mainely ;  
Almost as much, as from M O N T A G N I E : 90  
He has so moderne, and facile a veine,

III. iv. 61 againe.] againe ; F2 73 PYTHAGORAS] Pithagoras Q  
78 your] our F2, F3 79 TASSO ?' or] Tasso ?' or Q : TASSO ? or Ff  
85 eternall tongue !] æternall tongue ; Q 90 MONTAGNIE :]  
Montagnié ; Q



Fitting the time, and catching the court-eare.

Your P E T R A R C H is more passionate, yet he,  
In dayes of sonetting, trusted 'hem, with much :

95 D A N T E is hard, and few can vnderstand him.

But, for a desperate wit, there's A R E T I N E !  
Onely, his pictures are a little obscene——

You marke me not ? V O L P. Alas, my mind's perturb'd.

L A D. Why, in such cases, we must cure our selues,  
100 Make vse of our philosophie—— V O L P. O'y me.

L A D. And, as we find our passions doe rebell,  
Encounter 'hem with reason ; or diuert 'hem,

By giuing scope vnto some other humour

Of lesser danger : as, in politike bodies,

105 There's nothing, more, doth ouer-whelme the iudgement,

And clouds the vnderstanding, then too much

Settling, and fixing, and (as't were) subsiding

Vpon one object. For the incorporating

Of these same outward things, into that part,

110 Which we call mentall, leaues some certaine *faeces*,

That stop the organs, and, as P L A T O sayes,

Assassinates our knowledge. V O L P. Now, the spirit

Of patience helpe me. L A D. Come, in faith, I must

Visit you more, a dayes ; and make you well :

115 Laugh, and be lusty. V O L P. My good angell saue me.

L A D. There was but one sole man, in all the world,

With whom I ere could sympathize ; and he

Would lie you often, three, foure houres together,

To heare me speake : and be (sometime) so rap't,

120 As he would answere me, quite from the purpose,

Like you, and you are like him, iust. I'le discourse

(And't be but only, sir, to bring you a-sleepe)

How we did spend our time, and loues, together,

For some sixe yeeres. V O L P. Oh, oh, oh, oh, oh, oh.

125 L A D. For we were *coætanei*, and brought vp——

V O L P. Some power, some fate, some fortune rescue me.

III. iv. 94 trusted] trusting F<sub>2</sub>  
O'y] O'ay Q 105 more,] more. Q

96 ARETINE!] *Areline*; Q 100  
115 angell] angels F<sub>2</sub>: Angels F<sub>3</sub>

Act III. Scene v.

MOSCA, LADY, VOLPONE.

GOD saue you, Madam. LAD. Good sir. VOLP.  
MOSCA? welcom,

Welcome to my redemption. MOS. Why, sir? VOLP. Oh,  
Rid me of this my torture, quickly, there ;

My Madam, with the euerlasting voyce :

The bells, in time of pestilence, ne're made 5

Like noise, or were in that perpetuall motion ;

The cock-pit comes not neere it. All my house,

But now, steam'd like a bath, with her thicke breath.

A lawyer could not haue beene heard ; nor scarce

Another woman, such a hayle of wordes 10

Shee has let fall. For hells sake, rid her hence.

MOS. Has shee presented? VOLP. O, I doe not care,  
I'le take her absence, vpon any price,

With any losse. MOS. Madam—— LAD. I ha' brought  
your patron

A toy, a cap here, of mine owne worke—— MOS. 'Tis well, 15

I had forgot to tell you, I saw your Knight,

Where you'd little thinke it—— LAD. Where? MOS.

Mary,

Where yet, if you make haste, you may apprehend him,

Rowing vpon the water in a *gondole*,

With the most cunning curtizan, of *Venice*. 20

LAD. Is't true? MOS. Pursue 'hem, and beleeeue your  
eyes :

Leaue me, to make your gift. I knew, 't would take.

For lightly, they that vse themselues most licence,

Are still most ieous. VOLP. MOSCA, hearty thanks,

For thy quicke fiction, and deliuey of mee. 25

Now, to my hopes, what saist thou? LAD. But, doe you  
heare, sir?——

III. v. Enter Mosca. G, continuing the scene 5 ne're] nère Q  
18 you may] youmay Fr 22 After 'gift.' [Exit Lady P. hastily.] G  
26 After 'thou?' Re-enter Lady P. Would-be. G 26 But, Q: But Ff

- V O L P. Againe ; I feare a *paroxisme*. L A D. Which way  
 Row'd they together ? M O S. Toward the *rialto*.  
 L A D. I pray you lend me your dwarfe. M O S. I pray you, take him.
- 30 Your hopes, sir, are like happie blossomes, faire,  
 And promise timely fruit, if you will stay  
 But the maturing ; keepe you, at your couch,  
 C O R B A C C I O will arriue straight, with the will :  
 When he is gone, ile tell you more. V O L P. My blood,
- 35 My spirits are return'd ; I am alieu :  
 And like your wanton gam'ster, at *primero*,  
 Whose thought had whisper'd to him, not goe lesse,  
 Methinkes I lie, and draw—for an encounter.

### Act III. Scene VI.

M O S C A, B O N A R I O.

<sup>One</sup> S Ir, here conceald, you may heare all. But 'pray you  
<sup>knockes.</sup> H aue patience, sir ; the same's your father, knocks :  
 I am compeld, to leaue you. B O N. Do so. Yet,  
 Cannot my thought imagine this a truth.

### Act III. Scene VII.

M O S C A, C O R V I N O, C E L I A, B O N A R I O,  
 V O L P O N E.

D Eath on me ! you are come too soone, what meant you ?  
 Did not I say, I would send ? C O R V. Yes, but I feard  
 You might forget it, and then they preuent vs.

III. v. After 29 *Exit Lady P* G 31 fruit] fruit Q 34 After  
 'more.' [Exit.] G After 38 *The scene closes upon Volpone.* G III. vi.]  
 SCENE II. | *The Passage leading to Volpone's Chamber.* | Enter Mosca and  
 Bonario. G 1 After 'conceald,' [shews him a closet.] G 2 Stage direc-  
 tion not in Q 3 After 'you.' [Exit.] G After 4 *Goes into the closet.*  
 G III. vii.] SCENE III. | *Another Part of the Same.* | Enter Mosca  
 and Corvino, Celia following. G Mosca] Mosco Q 1 too] to Q

M o s. Preuent? did ere man haste so, for his hornes?  
A courtier would not ply it so, for a place. 5

Well, now there's no helping it, stay here;  
Ile presently returne. C o r v. Where are you, C E L I A?  
You know not wherefore I haue brought you hither?

C E L. Not well, except you told me. C o r v. Now, I  
will:

Harke hither. M o s. Sir, your father hath sent word, *To*  
It will be halfe an houre, ere he come; *Bonario.*

And therefore, if you please to walke, the while,  
Into that gallery—at the vpper end,  
There are some bookes, to entertaine the time:  
And ile take care, no man shall come vnto you, sir. 15

B o n. Yes, I will stay there, I doe doubt this fellow.

M o s. There, he is farre enough; he can heare nothing:  
And, for his father, I can keepe him off.

C o r v. Nay, now, there is no starting backe; and  
therefore,

Resolute vpon it: I haue so decree'd. 20

It must be done. Nor, would I moue 't afore,  
Because I would auoide all shifts and tricks,  
That might denie me. C E L. Sir, let me beseech you,  
Affect not these strange trials; if you doubt  
My chastitie, why locke me vp, for euer: 25

Make me the heyre of darkenesse. Let me liue,  
Where I may please your feares, if not your trust.

C o r v. Beleeue it, I haue no such humor, I.  
All that I speake, I meane; yet I am not mad:  
Not horne-mad, see you? Go too, shew your selfe 30

Obedient, and a wife. C E L. O heauen! C o r v. I say it,  
Do so. C E L. Was this the traine? C o r v. I' haue told  
you reasons;

III. vii. After 5 *Aside* G 7 After 'returne' [*Exit*] G 10  
hither] hether Q: hither. [*Exeunt* G Mos. Sir.] SCENE IV. | *A Closet*  
*opening into a Gallery. Enter Mosca and Bonario.* G *To Bonario* not  
in Q After 16 *Aside, and Exit.* G 17 Mos.] Mos. [*Looking after*  
*him.*] G After 18 *Exit.* G 19 C o r v.] SCENE V. | *Volpone's Cham-*  
*ber.—Volpone on his couch. Mosca sitting by him. | Enter Corvino forcing*  
*in Celia.* G 21 moue 't] moue 't, Q 22 shifts] shifts, Q

- What the physitions haue set downe ; how much,  
 It may concerne me ; what my engagements are ;  
 35 My meanes ; and the necessitie of those meanes,  
 For my recouery : wherefore, if you bee  
 Loyall, and mine, be wonne, respect my venture.  
 C E L. Before your honour ? C O R V. Honour ? tut, a  
breath ;  
There's no such thing, in nature : a meere terme  
 40 Inuented to awe fooles. What is my gold  
The worse, for touching ? clothes, for being look'd on ?  
 Why, this 's no more. An old, decrepitt wretch,  
 That ha's no sense, no sinew ; takes his meate  
 With others fingers ; onely knowes to gape,  
 45 When you doe scald his gummes ; a voice ; a shadow ;  
 And, what can this man hurt you ? C E L. Lord ! what  
 spirit  
 Is this hath entred him ? C O R V. And for your fame,  
 That's such a ligge ; as if I would goe tell it,  
 Crie it, on the *piazza* ! who shall know it ?  
 50 But hee, that cannot speake it ; and this fellow,  
 Whose lippes are i' my pocket : saue your selfe,  
 If you'll proclaime't, you may. I know no other,  
 Should come to know it. C E L. Are heauen, and saints  
 then nothing ?  
 Will they be blinde, or stupide ? C O R V. How ? C E L.  
 Good Sir,  
 55 Be iealous still, æmulate them ; and thinke  
 What hate they burne with, toward euery sinne.  
 C O R V. I grant you : if I thought it were a sinne,  
 I would not vrge you. Should I offer this  
 To some yong *Frenchman*, or hot *Tuscane* bloud,  
 60 That had read A R E T I N E, conn'd all his printes,  
 Knew euery quirke within lusts laborinth,  
 And were profest critique, in lechery ;  
 And I would looke vpon him, and applaud him,

This were a sinne : but here, 'tis contrary,  
A pious worke, mere charity, for physick,  
And honest politie, to assure mine owne. 65

C E L. O heauen ! canst thou suffer such a change ?

V O L P. Thou art mine honor, M O S C A, and my pride,  
My ioy, my tickling, my delight ! goe, bring 'hem.

M O S. Please you draw neere, sir. C O R V. Come on, 70  
what——

You will not be rebellious ? by that light——

M O S. Sir, signior C O R V I N O, here, is come to see you.

V O L P. Oh. M O S. And hearing of the consultation had,  
So lately, for your health, is come to offer,  
Or rather, sir, to prostitute—— C O R V. Thanks, sweet 75  
M O S C A.

M O S. Freely, vn-ask'd, or vn-intreated—— C O R V.  
Well.

M O S. (As the true, feruent instance of his loue)  
His owne most faire and proper wife ; the beauty,  
Onely of price, in *Venice*—— C O R V. 'Tis well vrg'd.

M O S. To be your comfortresse, and to preserue you. 80

V O L P. Alasse, I'am past already ! 'pray you, thanke  
him,

For his good care, and promptnesse, but for that,  
'Tis a vaine labour, eene to fight, 'gainst heauen ;  
Applying fire to a stone : (vh, vh, vh, vh.)  
Making a dead leafe grow againe. I take 85  
His wishes gently, though ; and, you may tell him,  
What I' haue done for him : mary, my state is hopelesse !  
Will him, to pray for me ; and t'vse his fortune,  
With reuerence, when he comes to't. M O S. Do you heare,  
sir ?

Go to him, with your wife. C O R V. Heart of my father ! 90  
Wilt thou persist thus ? come, I pray thee, come.

III. vii. 67 heauen !] heauen, Q 69 delight !] delight : Q 70  
Mos.] Mos. [advancing.] G 72 you] you, Q 76 om. F3 vn-ask'd]  
vna-sk'd Q 78 faire] faire, Q 81 I'am Q : I am Ff thanke  
him] thanke 'him Q, Ff 82 promptnesse, but] promptnesse. But,  
Q : promptnesse ; but F2 87 hopelesse !] hopelesse. Q 89 to't] to it Q

Thou seest 'tis nothing : C E L I A. By this hand,  
I shall grow violent. Come, do't, I say.

- C E L. Sir, kill me, rather : I will take downe poyson,  
95 Eate burning coales, doe any thing—— C O R V. Be damn'd.  
(Heart) I will drag thee hence, home, by the haire ;  
Cry thee a strumpet, through the streets ; rip vp  
Thy mouth, vnto thine eares ; and slit thy nose,  
Like a raw rotchet—— Do not tempt me, come.  
100 Yeld, I am loth—— (Death) I will buy some slaue,  
Whom I will kill, and binde thee to him, alieu ;  
And at my windore, hang you forth : deuising  
Some monstrous crime, which I, in capitall letters,  
Will eate into thy flesh, with *aqua-fortis*,  
105 And burning cor'siues, on this stubborne brest.  
Now, by the bloud, thou hast incens'd, ile do't.

C E L. Sir, what you please, you may, I am your martyr.

- C O R V. Be not thus obstinate, I ha' not deseru'd it :  
Thinke, who it is, intreats you. 'Pray thee, sweet ;  
110 (Good'faith) thou shalt haue iewells, gownes, attires,  
What thou wilt thinke, and aske. Do, but, go kisse him.  
Or touch him, but. For my sake. At my sute.  
This once. No? not? I shall remember this.  
Will you disgrace me, thus? do'you thirst my'vndoing?

- 115 M O S. Nay, gentle lady, be aduis'd. C O R V. No, no.  
She has watch'd her time. God's precious, this is skiruy ;  
'Tis very skiruié : and you are—— M O S. Nay, good sir.

- C O R V. An errant locust, by heauen, a locust. Whore,  
Crocodile, that hast thy teares prepar'd,  
120 Expecting, how thou'lt bid 'hem flow. M O S. Nay, 'pray  
you, sir,

Shee will consider. C E L. Would my life would serue  
To satisfie. C O R V. (S'death) if shee would but speake  
to him,

111. vii. 92 nothing:] Q nothing. F1 nothing, F2 102 And] And, Q  
103 capitall] CAPITAL Q 109 'Pray thee] 'Pr'y thee F2 111 thou  
wilt] thou' wilt Q aske.] aske— Q 116 precious,] precious— Q  
117 good] good, Q, F1 119 thy] thy thy F1 120 'pray F2 :  
'Pray Q, F1 122 satisfie.] satisfie— Q

And saue my reputation, 'twere somewhat ;

But, spitefully to affect my vtter ruine.

M o s. I, now you' haue put your fortune, in her hands. 125

Why i' faith, it is her modesty, I must quit her ;

If you were absent, shee would be more comming ;

I know it : and dare vndertake for her.

What woman can, before her husband ? 'pray you,

Let vs depart, and leaue her, here. C o r v. Sweet C E L I A, 130

Thou mayst redeeme all, yet ; I'le say no more :

If not, esteeme your selfe as lost. Nay, stay there.

C E L. O god, and his good angels ! whether, whether

Is shame fled humane breasts ? that with such ease,

Men dare put off your honours, and their owne ?

135

Is that, which euer was a cause of life,

Now plac'd beneath the basest circumstance ?

And modestie an exile made, for money ?

V o l p. I, in C o r v i n o, and such earth-fed mindes,

That neuer tasted the true heau'n of loue.

*He leapes  
off from  
his couch.*

Assure thee, C E L I A, he that would sell thee,

Onely for hope of gaine, and that vncertaine,

He would haue sold his part of paradise

For ready money, had he met a cope-man.

Why art thou maz'd, to see me thus reuiu'd ?

145

Rather applaud thy beauties miracle ;

'Tis thy great worke : that hath, not now alone,

But sundry times, rays'd me, in seuerall shapes,

And, but this morning, like a mountebanke,

To see thee at thy windore. I, before

150

I would haue left my practice, for thy loue,

In varying figures, I would haue contended

With the blue P R o t e v s, or the horned *Floud*.

Now, art thou welcome. C E L. Sir ! V o l p. Nay, flie

me not.

III. vii. 124 ruine.] ruine : Q 132 lost.] lost,— Q After 132  
Shuts the door, and exit with Mosca. G 133-4 whether Is Q :  
whether. Is Ff that] that, Q 135 off] of Q honours] honors Q  
139 St. dir. not in Q 146 Rather] Rather, Q 148 rays'd F2 :  
'rays'd Q, Fr 153 blue] blew Q 154 not.] not ; Q



- 155 Nor, let thy false imagination  
 That I was bedrid, make thee thinke, I am so :  
 Thou shalt not find it. I am, now, as fresh,  
 As hot, as high, and in as iouiall plight,  
 As when (in that so celebrated *scene*,  
 160 At recitation of our *comædie*,  
 For entertainment of the great VALOVS)  
 I acted yong ANTINOVVS; and attracted  
 The eyes, and eares of all the ladies, present,  
 T'admire each gracefull gesture, note, and footing.

165 SONG.

- Come, my CELIA, let vs proue,  
 While we can, the sports of loue ;  
 Time will not be ours, for euer,  
 He, at length, our good will seuer ;  
 170 Spend not then his gifts, in vaine.  
 Sunnes, that set, may rise againe :  
 But if, once, we lose this light,  
 'Tis with vs perpetuall night.  
 Why should wee deferre our ioyes ?  
 175 Fame, and rumor are but toies.  
 Cannot we delude the eyes  
 Of a few poore houshold-spies ?  
 Or his easier eares beguile,  
 Thus remooued, by our wile ?  
 180 'Tis no sinne, lous fruits to steale ;  
 But the sweet thefts to reueale :  
 To be taken, to be seene,  
 These haue crimes accounted beene.

CEL. Some serene blast me, or dire lightning strike  
 185 This my offending face. VOLP. Why droopes my  
 CELIA?

Thou hast in place of a base husband, found

III. vii. 161 entertainment] entertayment Q 162 ANTINOVS]  
 Antinoüs Q attracted corr. Q, Ff: a racted Q originally 170 gifts]  
 guiftes Q 172 lose] loose Q 180 fruits] fruicts Q

A worthy louer : vse thy fortune well,  
 With secrecie, and pleasure. See, behold,  
 What thou art queene of ; not in expectation,  
 As I feed others : but possess'd, and crown'd. 190  
 See, here, a rope of pearle ; and each, more orient  
 Then that the braue *Ægyptian* queene carrous'd :  
 Dissolue, and drinke 'hem. See, a carbuncle,  
 May put out both the eyes of our S<sup>t</sup>. MARKE ;  
 A diamant, would haue bought LOLLIA PAVLINA, 195  
 When she came in, like star-light, hid with iewels,  
 That were the spoiles of prouinces ; take these,  
 And weare, and loose 'hem : yet remains an eare-ring  
 To purchase them againe, and this whole state.  
 A gem, but worth a priuate patrimony, 200  
 Is nothing : we will eate such at a meale.  
 The heads of parrats, tongues of nightingales,  
 The braines of peacocks, and of estriches  
 Shall be our food : and, could we get the phoenix,  
 (Though nature lost her kind) shee were our dish. 205  
 CEL. Good sir, these things might moue a minde affected  
 With such delights ; but I, whose innocence  
 Is all I can thinke wealthy, or worth th'enioying,  
 And which once lost, I haue nought to loose beyond it,  
 Cannot be taken with these sensuall baites : 210  
 If you haue conscience—— VOLP. 'Tis the beggers  
 vertue,  
 If thou hast wisdom, heare me, CELIA.  
 Thy bathes shall be the iuyce of iuly-flowres,  
 Spirit of roses, and of violets,  
 The milke of vnicornes, and panthers breath 215  
 Gather'd in bagges, and mixt with *cretan* wines.  
 Our drinke shall be prepared gold, and amber ;  
 Which we will take, vntill my rooffe whirle round  
 With the *vertigo* : and my dwarfe shall dance,

III. vii. 195 bought] brought F2 LOLLIA] Laullia F3 196 -light.  
 Q (comma faint): -light Ff 198, 209 loose] lose F2 198 yet] Yet, Q  
 202 parrats] parrots Q 209 And] And, Q

- 220 My eunuch sing, my foole make vp the antique.  
 Whil'st, we, in changed shapes, act OVIDS tales,  
 Thou, like EVROPA now, and I like LOVE,  
 Then I like MARS, and thou like ERYCINE,  
 So, of the rest, till we haue quite run through  
 225 And weary'd all the fables of the gods.  
 Then will I haue thee in more moderne formes,  
 Attired like some sprightly dame of *France*,  
 Braue *Tuscan* lady, or proud *Spanish* beauty ;  
 Sometimes, vnto the *Persian Sophies* wife ;  
 230 Or the grand-Signiors mistresse ; and, for change,  
 To one of our most art-full courtizans,  
 Or some quick *Negro*, or cold *Russian* ;  
 And I will meet thee, in as many shapes :  
 Where we may, so, trans-fuse our wandring soules,  
 235 Out at our lippes, and score vp summes of pleasures,

*That the curious shall not know,  
 How to tell them, as they flow ;  
 And the enuious, when they find  
 What their number is, be pind.*

- 240 CEL. If you haue eares that will be pierc'd ; or eyes,  
 That can be open'd ; a heart, may be touch'd ;  
 Or any part, that yet sounds man, about you :  
 If you haue touch of holy saints, or heauen,  
 Do me the grace, to let me scape. If not,  
 245 Be bountifull, and kill me. You doe know,  
 I am a creature, hither ill betrayd,  
 By one, whose shame I would forget it were.  
 If you will daigne me neither of these graces,  
 Yet feed your wrath, sir, rather then your lust ;  
 250 (It is a vice, comes neerer manlinesse)  
 And punish that vnhappy crime of nature,

III. vii. 226 thee] thee, Q 240 pierc'd ;] pierc'd—Q 241  
 open'd ;] open'd—Q touch'd ;] touch'd—Q 242 you :] you—Q  
 243 saints.] Saints—Q heauen,] Heauen—Q 244 scape. If]  
 scape—if Q 245 me. You] mee—you Q 246 hither] hether Q 247  
 were.] were—Q: were, F1: were; F2 249 lust;] lust—Q 250 man-  
 linesse)] manlinesse-) Q

Which you miscale my beauty : flay my face,  
 Or poison it, with oyntments, for seducing  
 Your blood to this rebellion. Rub these hands,  
 With what may cause an eating leprosie, 255  
 E'ene to my bones, and marrow : any thing,  
 That may disfaour me, saue in my honour.  
 And I will kneele to you, pray for you, pay downe  
 A thousand hourelly vowes, sir, for your health,  
 Report, and thinke you vertuous—— V O L P. Thinke me 260  
 cold,

Frosen, and impotent, and so report me ?  
 That I had N E S T O R ' s *hernia*, thou wouldst thinke.  
 I doe degenerate, and abuse my nation,  
 To play with oportunity, thus long :  
 I should haue done the act, and then haue parlee'd. 265  
 Yeeld, or Ile force thee. C E L. O ! iust God. V O L P. In  
 vaine——

B O N. Forbeare, foule rauisher, libidinous swine, *He leapes  
 out from  
 where  
 Mosca  
 had plac'd  
 him.*  
 Free the forc'd lady, or thou dy'st, impostor.  
 But that I am loth to snatch thy punishment  
 Out of the hand of iustice, thou shouldst, yet,  
 Be made the timely sacrifice of vengeance,  
 Before this altar, and this drosse, thy idoll.  
 Lady, let's quit the place, it is the den  
 Of villany ; feare nought, you haue a guard :  
 And he, ere long, shall meet his iust reward. 275

V O L P. Fall on me, rooffe, and bury me in ruine,  
 Become my graue, that wert my shelter. O !  
 I am vn-masqu'd, vn-spirited, vn-done,  
 Betray'd to beggery, to infamy——

III. vii. 252 beauty : flay] beauty—Flea Q 254 rebellion.] rebel-  
 lion—Q 256 marrow:] marrow—Q 257 honour.] honour—  
 Q 258 pray] 'pray Q 259 health.] health—Q 266 After  
 'thee' Seizes her. G O !] O, Q (so 277) Stage direction not in Q  
 After 275 Exeunt Bon. and Cel. G

## Act III. Scene VIII.

MOSCA, VOLPONE.

WHere shall I runne, most wretched shame of men,  
To beate out my vn-luckie braines? VOLP. Here,  
here.

What! dost thou bleed? MOS. O, that his wel-driu'n  
sword

Had beene so courteous to haue cleft me downe,  
5 Vnto the nauill; ere I liu'd to see

My life, my hopes, my spirits, my patron, all  
Thus desperately engaged, by my error.

VOLP. Woe, on thy fortune. MOS. And my follies,  
sir.

VOLP. Th'hast made me miserable. MOS. And my  
selfe, sir.

10 Who would haue thought, he would haue harken'd, so?

VOLP. What shall we do? MOS. I know not, if my  
heart

Could expiate the mischance, I'd pluck it out.

Will you be pleas'd to hang me? or cut my throate?

And i'le requite you, sir. Let's die like *Romanes*,

*They knock without.* Since wee haue liu'd, like *Grecians*. VOLP. Harke, who's  
there?

I heare some footing, officers, the *Saffi*,

Come to apprehend vs! I doe feele the brand

Hissing already, at my fore-head: now,

Mine eares are boring. MOS. To your couch, sir, you

20 Make that place good, how euer. Guilty men

Suspect, what they deserue still. Signior CORBACCIO!

III. viii. *Enter Mosca, wounded and bleeding.* G, continuing the scene. G  
3 What! What? Q 4 courteous] courteous, Q: covetous F2 5 ere]  
ere Q 9 Th'hast] Thou hast Q 11 not,] not; F2 12 I'd]  
I'd Q, Fr 15 St. dir. not in Q 20 After 'euer.' [Volpone lies  
down as before.] G

Act III. Scene IX.

CORBACCIO, MOSCA, VOLTORE,  
VOLPONE.

WHy! how now? MOSCA! MOS. O, vndone,  
amaz'd, sir.

Your sonne (I know not, by what accident)  
Acquainted with your purpose to my patron,  
Touching your will, and making him your heire ;  
Entred our house with violence, his sword drawne, 5  
Sought for you, call'd you wretch, vnnaturall,  
Vow'd he would kill you. CORB. Me? MOS. Yes, and  
my patron.

CORB. This act, shall disinherit him indeed :  
Here is the will. MOS. 'Tis well, sir. CORB. Right and well.  
Be you as carefull now, for me. MOS. My life, sir, 10  
Is not more tender'd, I am onely yours.

CORB. How do's he? will he die shortly, think'st  
thou? MOS. I feare,  
He'll out-last *May*. CORB. To day? MOS. No, last-  
out *May*, sir.

CORB. Couldst thou not gi' him a dram? MOS. O, by  
no meanes, sir.

CORB. Nay, I'll not bid you. VOLT. This is a knaue, 15  
I see.

MOS. How, signior VOLTORE! did he heare me?  
VOLT. Parasite.

MOS. Who's that? O, sir, most timely welcome—  
VOLT. Scarse,

To the discouery of your tricks, I feare.

You are his, onely? and mine, also? are you not?

MOS. Who? I, sir! VOLT. You, sir. What deuce 20  
is this

III. ix. Enter Corbaccio. G, continuing the scene 3 purpose]  
purpose, Q 10 After 'me.' [Enter Voltore behind.] G 12 feare,  
feare. Q, Fr 14 Mos.] Mos, Q 15 VOLT.] Volt. [coming forward]. G  
This is] This's Q 16. Mos.] Mos. [seeing Volt.] G After 'me?' [Aside.]  
G 20 I, sir!] I, Sir? Q

About a will? M o s. A plot for you, sir. V o l t. Come,  
Put not your foist's vpon me, I shall sent 'hem.

M o s. Did you not heare it? V o l t. Yes, I heare,  
C o r b a c c i o

Hath made your patron, there, his heire. M o s. 'Tis true,

25 By my deuce, drawne to it by my plot,

With hope—— V o l t. Your patron should reciprocate?

And, you haue promis'd? M o s. For your good, I did, sir.

Nay more, I told his sonne, brought, hid him here,

Where he might heare his father passe the deed;

30 Being perswaded to it, by this thought, sir,

That the vnnaturalnesse, first, of the act,

And then, his fathers oft disclaiming in him,

(Which I did meane t'helpe on) would sure enrage him

To doe some violence vpon his parent.

35 On which the law should take sufficient hold,

And you be stated in a double hope:

Truth be my comfort, and my conscience,

My onely ayme was, to dig you a fortune

Out of these two, old rotten sepulchers——

40 (V o l t. I cry thee mercy, M o s c a.) M o s. Worth  
your patience,

And your great merit, sir. And, see the change!

V o l t. Why? what successe? M o s. Most haplesse!  
you must helpe, sir.

Whilst we expected th' old rauens, in comes

C o r v i n o's wife, sent hither, by her husband——

45 V o l t. What, with a present? M o s. No, sir, on  
visitation:

(I'll tell you how, anone) and, staying long,

The youth, he growes impatient, rushes forth,

Seizeth the lady, wound's me, makes her sweare

(Or he would murder her, that was his vow)

III. ix. 28 I told *Ff*: I told *corr.* *Q*: told *Q* originally 29 he  
might *corr.* *Q*, *Ff*: he might *Q* originally, the 'I' having dropped from  
the line above 33 (Which . . . on)] Which . . . on *Q* 34 parent.]  
parent, *Q* 40 (V o l t. I . . . Mosca.)] V o l t. I . . . Mosca. *Q*  
44 hither] hether *Q*

T'affirme my patron to haue done her rape : 50  
 Which how vnlike it is, you see ! and, hence,  
 With that pretext, hee's gone, t'accuse his father ;  
 Defame my patron ; defeate you—— V O L T. Where's  
 her husband ?  
 Let him be sent for, streight. M o s. Sir, I'll goe fetch him.  
 V O L T. Bring him, to the *Scrutineo*. M o s. Sir, I will. 55  
 V O L T. This must be stopt. M o s. O, you do nobly,  
 sir.  
 Alasse, 'twas labor'd all, sir, for your good ;  
 Nor, was there want of counsel, in the plot :  
 But fortune can, at any time, orethrow  
 The proiects of a hundred learned *clearkes*, sir. 60  
 C O R B. What's that ? V O L T. Wilt please you sir, to  
 goe along ?  
 M o s. Patron, go in, and pray for our successe.  
 V O L P. Neede makes deuotion : heauen your labor  
 blesse.

Act III. Scene I.

P O L I T I Q V E, P E R E G R I N E.

I Told you, sir, it was a plot : you see  
 What obseruation is. You mention'd mee,  
 For some instructions : I will tell you, sir,  
 (Since we are met, here, in this height of *Venice*)  
 Some few particulars, I haue set downe, 5  
 Onely for this *meridian* ; fit to be knowne  
 Of your crude traoueller, and they are these.  
 I will not touch, sir, at your phrase, or clothes,  
 For they are old. P E R. Sir, I haue better. P O L. Pardon,  
 I meant, as they are *theames*. P E R. O, sir, proceed : 10

III. ix. 50 to] would Q 61 CORB.] Corb. [listening.] G Exit  
 Corbaccio followed by Vollore. add G 63 VOLP.] Volp. [rising from  
 his couch.] G Exeunt. add G IV. i. ACT IV. SCENE I. | A Street.  
 [Enter sir Politick Would-be and Peregrine. G 4 here, Q: here, Fr  
 5 particulars] particulars Q 6 meridian:] meridian, Q 7 traoueller]  
 Traouailer Q 9 Pardon, F2 : Pardon Q, Fr



I'll slander you no more of wit, good sir.

P O L. First, for your garbe, it must be graue, and serious ;

Very reseru'd, and lock't ; not tell a secret,

On any termes, not to your father ; scarce

15 A fable, but with caution ; make sure choise

Both of your company, and discourse ; beware,

You neuer speake a truth—— P E R. How ! P O L. Not to strangers,

For those be they you must conuerse with, most ;

Others I would not know, sir, but, at distance,

20 So as I still might be a sauer, in 'hem :

You shall haue tricks, else, past vpon you, hourelly.

And then, for your religion, professe none ;

But wonder, at the diuersitie of all ;

And, for your part, protest, were there no other

25 But simply the lawes o' th' land, you could content you :

N I C: M A C H I A V E L, and monsieur B O D I N E, both,

Were of this minde. Then, must you learne the vse,

And handling of your siluer forke, at meales ;

The mettall of your glasse : (these are maine matters,

30 With your *Italian*) and to know the houre,

When you must eat your melons, and your figges.

P E R. Is that a point of state, too ? P O L. Here it is.

For your *Venetian*, if he see a man

Preposterous, in the least, he has him straight ;

35 He has : he strippes him. I'll acquaint you, sir,

I now haue liu'd here ('tis some fourteene monthes)

Within the first weeke, of my landing here,

All tooke me for a citizen of *Venice* :

I knew the formes, so well—— P E R. And nothing else.

40 P O L. I had read C O N T A R E N E, tooke me a house,

Dealt with my *lewes*, to furnish it with moueables——

Well, if I could but finde one man, one man,

rv. i. 12 serious ;] serious, Q 15 with] with with Q 17 speake]  
spake Fr How !] How ? Q 18 they] they, Q 25 lawes]  
Lawes, Q 29 glasse : (these] glasse— These Q 30 *Italian*)]  
*Italian*, Q houre] hower Q 39 *Aside*. add G 42 man, one] man-one Q

To mine owne heart, whom I durst trust, I would——

P E R. What? what, sir? P O L. Make him rich; make him a fortune:

He should not thinke, againe. I would command it. 45

P E R. As how? P O L. With certaine proiects, that I haue:

Which, I may not discouer. P E R. If I had  
But one to wager with, I would lay odds, now,  
He tels me, instantly. P O L. One is, (and that  
I care not greatly, who knowes) to serue the state 50  
Of *Venice*, with red herrings, for three yeeres,  
And at a certaine rate, from *Roterдам*,  
Where I haue correspondence. There's a letter,  
Sent me from one o' th' States, and to that purpose;  
He cannot write his name, but that's his marke. 55

P E R. He is a chaundler? P O L. No, a cheesemonger.  
There are some other too, with whom I treat,  
About the same negotiation;  
And, I will vndertake it: For, 'tis thus,  
I'll do't with ease, I haue cast it all. Your hoigh 60  
Carries but three men in her, and a boy;  
And she shall make me three returnes, a yeare:  
So, if there come but one of three, I saue,  
If two, I can defalke. But, this is now,  
If my mayne proiect faile. P E R. Then, you haue others? 65

P O L. I should be loath to draw the subtill ayre  
Of such a place, without my thousand aymes.  
He not dissemble, sir, where ere I come,  
I loue to be consideratiue; and, 'tis true,  
I haue, at my free houres, thought vpon 70  
Some certaine goods, vnto the state of *Venice*,  
Which I doe call my cautions: and, sir, which  
I meane (in hope of pension) to propound  
To the great councill, then vnto the forty,  
So to the ten. My meanes are made already—— 75

iv. i. 43 trust,] trust— Q  
57 other] others F2 too] two Q

49 After 'instantly' [*Aside.*] G  
59 And,] And— Q

- P E R. By whom? P O L. Sir, one, that though his place  
b(e)'obscure,  
Yet, he can sway, and they will heare him. H'is  
A *commandadore*. P E R. What, a common sergeant?
- P O L. Sir, such, as they are, put it in their mouthes,  
80 What they should say, sometimes: as well as greater.  
I thinke I haue my notes, to shew you—— P E R. Good,  
sir,  
P O L. But, you shall sweare vnto me, on your gentry,  
Not to anticipate—— P E R. I, sir? P O L. Nor reueale  
A circumstance—— My paper is not with mee.
- 85 P E R. O, but, you can remember, sir. P O L. My first is,  
Concerning tinder-boxes. You must know,  
No family is, here, without it's boxe.  
Now sir, it being so portable a thing,  
Put case, that you, or I were ill affected  
90 Vnto the state; sir, with it in our pockets,  
Might not I goe into the *arsenale*?  
Or you? come out againe? and none the wiser?  
P E R. Except your selfe, sir. P O L. Goe too, then. I,  
therefore,  
Aduertise to the state, how fit it were,  
95 That none, but such as were knowne patriots,  
Sound louers of their countrey, should be sufferd  
T'enioy them in their houses: and, euen those,  
Seal'd, at some office, and, at such a bignesse,  
As might not lurke in pockets. P E R. Admirable!
- 100 P O L. My next is, how t'enquire, and be resolu'd,  
By present demonstration, whether a ship,  
Newly arriued from *Soria*, or from  
Any suspected part of all the *leuant*,  
Be guilty of the plague: And, where they vse,  
105 To lie out fortie, fifty daies, sometimes,  
About the *Lazaretto*, for their triall;  
Ile saue that charge, and losse vnto the merchant,

And, in an houre, cleare the doubt. P E R. Indeede, sir ?

P o L. Or—— I will loose my labour. P E R. 'My faith, that's much.

P o L. Nay, sir, conceiue me. 'Twill cost me, in onions, 110  
Some thirtie *liu'res*—— P E R. Which is one pound sterling.

P o L. Beside my water-workes : for this I doe, sir.

First, I bring in your ship, 'twixt two brickwalles ;

(But those the state shall venter) on the one

I straine me a faire tarre-paulin ; and, in that, 115

I stick my onions, cut in halfes : the other

Is full of loope-holes, out at which, I thrust

The noses of my bellowes ; and, those bellowes

I keepe, with water-workes, in perpetuall motion, 120  
(Which is the easi'st matter of a hundred)

Now, sir, your onion, which doth naturally

Attract th'infection, and your bellowes, blowing

The ayre vpon him, will shew (instantly)

By his chang'd colour, if there be contagion,

Or else, remaine as faire, as at the first. 125

Now 'tis knowne, 'tis nothing. P E R. You are right, sir.

P o L. I would, I had my note. P E R. 'Faith, so would I :

But, you ha' done well, for once, sir. P o L. Were I false,

Or would be made so, I could shew you reasons,

How I could sell this state, now, to the *Turke* ; 130

Spight of their galleis, or their—— P E R. Pray you, sir

P o L L.

P o L. I haue 'hem not, about me. P E R. That I fear'd.

They're there, sir ? P o L. No, this is my *diary*,

Wherein I note my actions of the day.

P E R. 'Pray you, let's see, sir. What is here ? *notandum*, 135

A rat had gnawne my spurre-lethers ; notwithstanding,

I put on new, and did goe forth : but, first,

I threw three beanes ouer the threshold. *Item*, .

I went, and bought two tooth-pickes, whereof one

I burst, immediatly, in a discourse 140

iv. i. 116 in] iu Q  
Pray] 'Pray F2

131 After 'their' [*Examining his papers.*] G  
135 Reads. add G 137 put] pnt Q

With a *dutch* merchant, 'bout *ragion del stato*.  
 From him I went, and payd a *moccinigo*,  
 For peeing my silke stockings ; by the way,  
 I cheapen'd sprats : and at S<sup>t</sup>. M A R K E S, I vrin'd.  
 145 'Faith, these are politique notes ! P O L. Sir, I do slippe  
 No action of my life, thus, but I quote it.  
 P E R. Beleeue me it is wise ! P O L. Nay, sir, read forth.

### *Act IIII. Scene II.*

L A D Y, N A N O, W O M E N, P O L I T I Q V E,  
 P E R E G R I N E.

W Here should this loose knight be, trow ? sure, h'is  
 hous'd.

N A N. Why, then he's fast. L A D. I, he plaies both,  
 with me :

I pray you, stay. This heate will doe more harme  
 To my complexion, then his heart is worth.

5 (I do not care to hinder, but to take him)

How it comes of ! W o m. My master's, yonder. L A D.  
 Where ?

W o m. With a yong gentleman. L A D. That same's the  
 party !

In mans apparell. 'Pray you, sir, iog my knight :

I will be tender to his reputation,

10 How euer he demerit. P O L. My lady ! P E R. Where ?

P O L. 'Tis shee indeed, sir, you shall know her. She is,  
 Were she not mine, a lady of that merit,

For fashion, and behauour ; and, for beauty

I durst compare—— P E R. It seemes, you are not iealous,

15 That dare commend her. P O L. Nay, and for discourse——

P E R. Being your wife, she cannot misse that. P O L.  
 Madame,

Here is a gentleman, 'pray you, vse him, fairely,

iv. ii. Enter, at a distance, Lady Politick Would-be, Nano, and two  
 Waiting-women. G, continuing the scene 1 h'is] he's F2 6 of]  
 off F2: off! [Rubbing her cheeks. G master's] maister's Q 7 party!]  
 party, Q 10 Pol.] Pol. [seeing her.] G 16 Pol.] Sir P. [introducing Per.] G

He seemes a youth, but he is—— L A D. None? P O L.

Yes, one

Has put his face, as soone, into the world——

L A D. You meane, as earely? but to day? P O L. 20

How's this!

L A D. Why in this habit, sir, you apprehend me.

Well, master W O V L D-B E E, this doth not become you ;

I had thought, the odour, sir, of your good name,

Had beene more precious to you ; that you would not

Haue done this dire massacre, on your honour ; 25

One of your grauity, and ranke, besides !

But, knights, I see, care little for the oath

They make to ladies : chiefly, their owne ladies.

P O L. Now, by myspurres (thesymbole of my knight-hood)

(P E R. Lord ! how his braine is humbled, for an oath) 30

P O L. I reach you not. L A D. Right, sir, your politie

May beare it through, thus. Sir, a word with you.

I would be loth, to contest publikely,

With any gentlewoman ; or to seeme

Froward, or violent (as the courtier sayes) 35

It comes too neere rusticity, in a lady,

Which I would shun, by all meanes : and, how-euer

I may deserue from master W O V L D-B E E, yet,

T'haue one faire gentlewoman, thus, be made

Th'vnkind instrument, to wrong another, 40

And one she knowes not, I, and to perseuer ;

In my poore iudgement, is not warranted

From being a *solæcisme* in our sexe,

If not in manners. P E R. How is this! P O L. Sweet madame,

Come neerer to your ayme. L A D. Mary, and will, sir. 45

Since you prouoke me, with your impudence,

And laughter of your light land-siren, here,

Your S P O R V S, your *hermaphrodite*—— P E R. What's here ?

rv. ii. 20 this!] this? Q 26 besides!] besides: Q 30 *Aside*.  
add G 32 *To Per.* add G 33 contest] contest, Q 34. 39 gentle-  
woman] Gentlewoman Q 36 too] to Q 41 not,] not; Q per-  
seuer;] perseuer: Q 45 and will] and I will *F2* 47 light *om.* *F2, F3*

Poetique fury, and historique stormes !

50 P O L. The gentleman, beleue it, is of worth,  
And of our nation. L A D. I, your *white-Friers* nation ?  
Come, I blush for you, master W O V L D-B E E, I ;  
And am asham'd, you should ha' no more forehead,  
Then, thus, to be the patron, or S<sup>t</sup>. G E O R G E

55 To a lewd harlot, a base fricatrice,  
A female deuill, in a male out-side. P O L. Nay,  
And you be such a one ! I must bid adieu  
To your delights. The case appeares too liquide.

L A D. I, you may carry 't cleare, with your state-face !  
60 But, for your carniuale concupiscence,  
Who here is fled for liberty of conscience,  
From furious persecution of the Marshall,  
Her will I disc'ple. P E R. This is fine, i'faith !  
And do you vse this, often ? is this part

65 Of your wits exercise, 'gainst you haue occasion ?  
Madam—— L A D. Go to, sir. P E R. Do you heare me,  
lady ?

Why, if your knight haue set you to begge shirts,  
Or to inuite me home, you might haue done it  
A neerer way, by farre. L A D. This cannot work you,  
70 Out of my snare. P E R. Why ? am I in it, then ?  
Indeede, your husband told me, you were faire,  
And so you are ; onely your nose enclines  
(That side, that's next the sunne) to the queene-apple.

L A D. This cannot be endur'd, by any patience.

### Act III. Scene III.

M O S C A, L A D Y, P E R E G R I N E.

W Hat's the matter, madame ? L A D. If the *Senate*  
Right not my quest, in this ; I will protest 'hem,  
To all the world, no *aristocracie*.

iv. ii. 57 And . . . one !] An' . . . one, W bid] bid, Q 58 *Exit*.  
add G 61 fled] fled, Q 69 farre.] farre: Q 73 -apple.] -apple: Q  
iv. iii. *Enter Mosca*. G, continuing the scene

M o s. What is the iniurie, lady? L A D. Why, the callet,  
You told me of, here I haue tane disguis'd. 5

M o s. Who? this? what meanes your ladship? the  
creature

I mention'd to you, is apprehended, now,  
Before the *Senate*, you shall see her—— L A D. Where?

M o s. I'll bring you to her. This yong gentleman  
I saw him land, this morning, at the port. 10

L A D. Is't possible! how has my iudgement wander'd!  
Sir, I must, blushing, say to you, I haue err'd:  
And plead your pardon. P E R. What! more changes, yet?

L A D. I hope, yo' ha' not the malice to remember  
A gentlewomans passion. If you stay, 15  
In *Venice*, here, please you to vse me, sir——

M o s. Will you go, madame? L A D. 'Pray you, sir,  
vse mee. In faith,  
The more you see me, the more I shall conceiue,  
You haue forgot our quarrell. P E R. This is rare!  
Sir P O L I T I Q V E W O V L D - B E E ? no, sir P O L I T I Q V E 20  
bawd!

To bring me, thus, acquainted with his wife!  
Well, wise sir P O L : since you haue practis'd, thus,  
Vpon my freshman-ship, I'll trie your salt-head,  
What prooffe it is against a counter-plot.

### Act III. Scene III.

V O L T O R E, C O R B A C C I O, C O R V I N O,  
M O S C A.

W E L L, now you know the carriage of the businesse,  
Your constancy is all, that is requir'd  
Vnto the safety of it. M o s. Is the lie

iv. iii. 5 tane] tane Q 11 wander'd!] wander'd? Q 14 yo']  
you Q 15 gentlewomans] Gentlewomans Q 18 see] vse Q  
19 After 'quarrell.' *Exeunt Lady Would-be, Mosca, Nano, and Waiting-*  
*women.* G 20 bawd!] Baud. Q 24 *Exit.* add G iv. iv.  
SCENE II. | *The Scrutineo, or Senate House* | *Enter Voltore, Corbaccio,*  
*Corvino, and Mosca.* G



Safely conuain'd amongst vs? is that sure?

5 Knowes euery man his burden? C O R V. Yes. M O S.

Then, shrink not.

C O R V. But, knowes the Aduocate the truth? M O S.

O, sir,

By no meanes. I deuise'd a formall tale,

That salu'd your reputation. But, be valiant, sir.

C O R V. I feare no one, but him; that, this his pleading  
10 Should make him stand for a co-heire—— M O S. Co-  
halter.

Hang him: we will but vse his tongue, his noise,

As we doe croakers, here. C O R V. I, what shall he do?

M O S. When we ha' done, you meane? C O R V. Yes.

M O S. Why, we'll thinke,

Sell him for *mummia*, hee's halfe dust already.

To Do not you smile, to see this *buffalo*,

Vollore. How he doth sport it with his head?—— I should

To Cor- If all were well, and past. Sir, onely you

baccio. Are he, that shall enioy the crop of all,

And these not know for whom they toile. C O R B. I, peace.

To Cor- M O S. But you shall eate it. Much! Worshipfull sir,

uino, then M E R C V R Y sit vpon your thundring tongue,

to Vollore Or the *French* H E R C V L E S, and make your language

again. As conquering as his club, to beate along,

(As with a tempest) flat, our aduersaries:

25 But, much more, yours, sir. V O L T. Here they come, ha'  
done.

M O S. I haue another witnesse, if you neede, sir,

I can produce. V O L T. Who is it? M O S. Sir, I haue her.

iv. iv. 15, 17, 20 Stage directions not in Q 16 doth] do's Q I  
should] I should Q, F I 17 After 'past.' [Aside.] G 20 Much!]  
Much. Q: Much! [Aside.] G

Act III. Scene v.

AVOCATORI, 4. BONARIO, CELIA, VOLTORE,  
CORBACCIO, CORVINO, MOSCA,  
NOTARIO, COMMANDADORI.

THE like of this the *Senate* neuer heard of.

AVOC. 2. 'Twil come most strange to them, when we report it.

AVOC. 4. The gentlewoman has beene euer held  
Of vn-reproued name. AVOC. 3. So, the yong man.

AVOC. 4. The more vnnaturall part that of his father.

AVOC. 2. More of the husband. AVOC. 1. I not know  
to giue

His act a name, it is so monstrous !

AVOC. 4. But the impostor, he is a thing created  
T'exceed example ! AVOC. <1.> And all after times !

AVOC. 2. I neuer heard a true voluptuary  
Describ'd, but him. AVOC. 3. Appeare yet those were  
cited ?

NOTA. All, but the old magnifico, VOLPONE.

AVOC. 1. Why is not hee here ? MOS. Please your  
father-hoods,

Here is his Aduocate. Himselfe's, so weake,  
So feeble—— AVOC. 4. What are you ? BON. His  
parasite,

His knaue, his pandar : I beseech the court,  
He may be forc'd to come, that your graue eyes  
May beare strong witsse of his strange impostures.

VOLT. Vpon my faith, and credit, with your vertues,  
He is not able to endure the ayre.

AVOC. 2. Bring him, how euer. AVOC. 3. We will see  
him. AVOC. 4. Fetch him.

IV. v. Enter Avocatori and take their seats, Bonario, Celia, Notario,  
Commandadori, Saffi, and other Officers of justice. G VOLTORE,  
VOLTORE, FR NOTARIO] Notario FR 3 gentlewoman] Gentle-  
woman Q 4 So, . . . man] So has the youth Q 6 More] More, Q  
9 Avoc. 1. F2 11 Describ'd] Describ'd Q 16 pandar:] Pandar—Q

V O L T. Your father-hoods fit pleasures be obey'd,  
 But sure, the sight will rather moouue your pitties,  
 Then indignation ; may it please the court,  
 25 In the meane time, he may be heard in me :  
 I know this place most voide of preiudice,  
 And therefore craue it, since we haue no reason  
 To feare our truth should hurt our cause. A V O C. 3.  
 Speake free.

V O L T. Then know, most honor'd fathers, I must now  
 30 Discouer, to your strangely'abused eares,  
 The most prodigious, and most frontlesse piece  
 Of solid impudence, and trecherie,  
 That euer vicious nature yet brought foorth  
 To shame the state of *Venice*. This lewd woman  
 35 (That wants no artificiall lookes, or teares,  
 To helpe the visor, she has now put on)  
 Hath long beene knowne a close adulteresse,  
 To that lasciuious youth there ; not suspected,  
 I say, but knowne ; and taken, in the act ;  
 40 With him ; and by this man, the easie husband,  
 Pardon'd : whose timelesse bounty makes him, now,  
 Stand here, the most vnhappie, innocent person,  
 That euer mans owne goodnesse made accus'd.  
 For these, not knowing how to owe a gift  
 45 Of that deare grace, but with their shame ; being plac'd  
 So'aboue all powers of their gratitude,  
 Began to hate the benefit : and, in place  
 Of thanks, deuise t'extirpe the memorie  
 Of such an act. Wherein, I pray your father-hoods,  
 50 To obserue the malice, yea, the rage of creatures  
 Discouer'd in their euils ; and what heart  
 Such take, euen, from their crimes. But that, anone,  
 Will more appeare. This gentleman, the father,

IV. v. 22 obey'd.] obey'd; F2 Exeunt Officers. add G 33 foorth]  
 forth Q 38 there:] there, Q 39 act:] act, Q 41 time-  
 lesse] timely F3 43 goodnesse] vertue Q 48 Of] Af Fr  
 originally, as recorded by W. Bang 49 act. Wherein] act : wherein Q  
 50 To obserue] T'observe F2

Hearing of this foule fact, with many others,  
Which dayly strooke at his too-tender eares, 55  
And, grieu'd in nothing more, then that he could not  
Preserue him selfe a parent (his sonnes ill  
Growing to that strange floud) at last decreed  
To dis-inherit him. A v o c. 1. These be strange turnes !

A v o c. 2. The yong mans fame was euer faire, and 60  
honest.

V o L T. So much more full of danger is his vice,  
That can beguile so, vnder shade of vertue.  
But as I said (my honour'd sires) his father  
Hauing this setled purpose, (by what meanes  
To him betray'd, we know not) and this day 65  
Appointed for the deed ; that parricide,  
(I cannot stile him better) by confederacy  
Preparing this his paramour to be there,  
Entred V o L P O N E's house (who was the man  
Your father-hoods must vnderstand, design'd 70  
For the inheritance) there, sought his father :  
But, with what purpose sought he him, my lords ?  
(I tremble to pronounce it, that a sonne  
Vnto a father, and to such a father  
Should haue so foule, felonious intent) 75  
It was, to murder him. When, being preuented  
By his more happy absence, what then did he ?  
Not check his wicked thoughts ; no, now new deeds :  
(Mischiefe doth euer end, where it begins)  
An act of horror, fathers ! he drag'd forth 80  
The aged gentleman, that had there lien, bed-red,  
Three yeeres, and more, out off his innocent couch,  
Naked, vpon the floore, there left him ; wounded  
His seruant in the face ; and, with this strumpet,  
The stale to his forg'd practise, who was glad 85  
To be so actiue, (I shall here desire

iv. v. 55 Which] That Q strooke] struck F2 66 deed ;] deed, Q  
68 paramour] Paramour, Q 72 lords] Sires Q 79 euer] never  
W. conj. 81 bed-red] bed-rid Q, F2 84 strumpet,] Strumpet,  
F3 : strumpet Q, Ff 85 forg'd] for'gd Q

- Your father-hoods to note but my collections,  
 As most remarkable) thought, at once, to stop  
 His fathers ends ; discredit his free choice,  
 90 In the old gentleman ; redeeme themselues,  
 By laying infamy vpon this man,  
 To whom, with blushing, they should owe their liues.  
 A v o c. 1. What proofes haue you of this ? B o n. Most  
 honour'd fathers,  
 I humbly craue, there be no credit giuen  
 95 To this mans mercenary tongue. A v o c. 2. Forbeare.  
 B o n. His soule moues in his fee. A v o c. 3. O, sir.  
 B o n. This fellow,  
 For six *sols* more, would pleade against his maker.  
 A v o c. 1. You do forget your selfe. V o l t. Nay, nay,  
 graue fathers,  
 Let him haue scope : can any man imagine  
 100 That he will spare his accuser, that would not  
 Haue spar'd his parent ? A v o. 1. Well, produce your  
 proofes.  
 C e l. I would I could forget, I were a creature.  
 V o l t. Signior C o r b a c c i o. A v o. 4. What is he ?  
 V o l t. The father.  
 A v o. 2. Has he had an oth ? N o t. Yes. C o r b.  
 What must I do now ?  
 105 N o t. Your testimony's crau'd. C o r b. Speake to the  
 knaue ?  
 I'll ha' my mouth, first, stopt with earth ; my heart  
 Abhors his knowledge : I disclaime in him.  
 A v o. 1. But, for what cause ? C o r b. The meere por-  
 tent of nature.  
 He is an vtter stranger, to my loines.  
 110 B o n. Haue they made you to this ! C o r b. I will not  
 heare thee,  
 Monster of men, swine, goate, wolfe, parricide,  
 Speake not, thou viper. B o n. Sir, I will sit downe,  
 i v. v. 91 infamy] infamy, Q 97 *sols*] *souz* F2 99 scope:]  
 scope; Q 103 After 'CORBACCIO.' [*Corbaccio comes forward.*] G  
 110 this!] this ? Q

And rather wish my innocence should suffer,  
Then I resist the authority of a father.

VOLT. Signior CORVINO. AV O. 2. This is strange! 115

AV O. 1. Who's this?

NOT. The husband. AV O. 4. Is he sworn? NOT.

He is. AV O. 3. Speak then.

CORV. This woman (please your father-hoods) is a  
whore,

Of most hot exercise, more then a partrich,

Vpon record—— AV O. 1. No more. CORV. Neighes,  
like a iennet.

NOT. Preserue the honour of the court. CORV. I shall, 120  
And modestie of your most reuerend eares.

And, yet, I hope that I may say, these eyes

Haue seene her glew'd vnto that peece of cedar;

That fine well-timber'd gallant: and that, here,

The letters may be read, thorough the horne, 125

That make the story perfect. MOS. Excellent! sir.

CORV. There is no shame in this, now, is there? MOS.  
None.

CORV. Or if I said, I hop'd that she were onward  
To her damnation, if there be a hell

Greater then whore, and woman; a good catholique 130

May make the doubt. AV O. 3. His grieve hath made him  
frantique.

AV O. 1. Remoue him, hence. AV O. 2. Looke to the  
woman. CORV. Rare!

Prettily fain'd! againe! AV O. 4. Stand from about her. *She swownes.*

AV O. 1. Giue her the ayre. AV O. 3. What can you  
say? MOS. My wound

(May't please your wisdomes) speakes for me, receiu'd 135

In ayde of my good patron, when he mist

His sought-for father, when that well-taught dame

IV. v. 115 After 'CORVINO.' [*Corvino comes forward.*] G 119  
iennet] gennet Q 126 Excellent!] Excellent, Q 127 shame]  
harne Q After 'there?' [*Aside to Mosca.*] G 130 catholique]  
Christian Q 132 Stage direction not in Q 137 sought-for]  
sought for Q

Had her cue giuen her, to cry out a rape.

B O N. O, most lay'd impudence ! Fathers—— A v o. 3.

Sir, be silent,

140 You had your hearing free, so must they theirs.

A v o. 2. I do begin to doubt th'imposture here.

A v o. 4. This woman, has too many moods. V O L T.

Graue fathers,

She is a creature, of a most profest,

And prostituted lewdnesse. C O R V. Most impetuous !

145 Vnsatisfied, graue fathers ! V O L T. May her fainings

Not take your wisdomes : but, this day, she baited

A stranger, a graue knight, with her loose eyes,

And more lasciuious kisses. This man saw 'hem

Together, on the water, in a *gondola*.

150 M o s. Here is the lady her selfe, that saw 'hem too,

Without ; who, then, had in the open streets

Pursu'd them, but for sauing her knights honour.

A v o. 1. Produce that lady. A v o. 2. Let her come.

A v o. 4. These things,

They strike, with wonder ! A v o. 3. I am turn'd a stone !

### Act III. Scene VI.

M O S C A, L A D Y, A V O C A T O R I, & C.

B Ee resolute, madame. L A D. I, this same is shee.

B Out, thou *chameleon* harlot ; now, thine eies

Vie teares with the *hyæna* : dar'st thou looke

Vpon my wronged face ? I cry your pardons.

5 I feare, I haue (forgettingly) transgrest

Against the dignitie of the court—— A v o. 2. No, madame.

L A D. And beene exorbitant—— A v o. 4. You haue not, lady.

iv. v. 138 cue] Qu: Q 139 Fathers—] Fathers. Q 140 free,] free ; F2 141 imposture] imposture, Q 145 VOLT.] VOLT, Q 152 Pursu'd] Pursu'd Q 153 After 'come,' Exit Mosca. G  
iv. vi. Re-enter Mosca with Lady Would-be. G, continuing the scene.  
1 Pointing to Celia. add G

A v o. 4. These proofes are strong. L A D. Surely, I had  
no purpose :

To scandalize your honours, or my sexes.

A v o. 3. We do beleuee it. L A D. Surely, you may <sup>10</sup>  
beleuee it.

A v o. 2. Madame, we do. L A D. Indeede, you may ;  
my breeding

Is not so course—— A v o. 4. We know it. L A D. To  
offend

With pertinacy—— A v o. 3. Lady. L A D. Such a pre-  
sence :

No, surely. A v o. 1. We well thinke it. L A D. You may  
thinke it.

A v o. 1. Let her o'recome. What witnesses haue you, <sup>15</sup>  
To make good your report ? B o N. Our consciences.

C E L. And heauen, that neuer failes the innocent.

A v o. 4. These are no testimonies. B o N. Not in your  
courts,

Where multitude, and clamour ouercomes.

A v o. 1. Nay, then you do waxe insolent. V o L T. <sup>20</sup>  
Here, here,

The testimonie comes, that will conuince,  
And put to vtter dumbnesse their bold tongues.

See here, graue fathers, here's the rauisher,

The rider on mens wiues, the great impostor,

The grand voluptuary ! do you not think,

These limbes should affect *venery* ? or these eyes

Couet a concubine ? 'pray you, marke these hands.

Are they not fit to stroake a ladies brests ?

Perhaps, he doth dissemble ? B o N. So he do's.

V o L T. Would you ha' him tortur'd ? B o N. I would <sup>30</sup>  
haue him prou'd.

V o L T. Best try him, then, with goades, or burning irons ;

*Volpone*  
*is brought*  
*in, as im-*  
*potent.*

<sup>25</sup>

iv. vi. 8 Avo. 4. Q. Ff: query Avo. 1: F3 substitutes Avo. 2 in l. 7  
purpose:] purpose, Q: purpose F2 13 presence:] presence; Q  
16 consciences.] consciences: Q 18 Not] Not, Q 21 Stage direction  
not in Q 22 dumbnesse] dumbnesse, Q 25 voluptuary!] Volup-  
tuary: Q 29 dissemble?] dissemble. Q 31 irons] Irons Q. Ff



Put him to the strappado : I haue heard,  
The racke hath cur'd the gout, faith, giue it him,  
And helpe him of a maladie, be courteous.

- 35 I'll vndertake, before these honour'd fathers,  
He shall haue, yet, as many left diseases,  
As she has knowne adulterers, or thou strumpets.  
O, my most equall hearers, if these deedes,  
Acts, of this bold, and most exorbitant straine,  
40 May passe with sufferance, what one citizen,  
But owes the forfeit of his life, yea fame,  
To him that dares traduce him ? which of you  
Are safe, my honour'd fathers ? I would aske  
(With leaue of your graue father-hoods) if their plot  
45 Haue any face, or colour like to truth ?  
Or if, vnto the dullest nostrill, here,  
It smell not rancke, and most abhorred slander ?  
I craue your care of this good gentleman,  
Whose life is much indanger'd, by their fable ;  
50 And, as for them, I will conclude with this,  
That vicious persons when they are hot, and flesh'd  
In impious acts, their constancy abounds :  
Damn'd deedes are done with greatest confidence.

A v o c. 1. Take 'hem to custody, and scuer them.

- 55 A v o c. 2. 'Tis pittic, two such prodigies should liue.

A v o c. 1. Let the old gentleman be return'd, with care :  
I'am sorry, our credulitie wrong'd him.

A v o. 4. These are two creatures ! A v o. 3. I haue an  
earthquake in me !

A v o. 2. Their shame (euen in their cradles) fled their  
faces.

- 60 A v o. 4. You'haue done a worthy service to the state, sir,  
In their discouerie. A v o. 1. You shall heare, ere night,  
What punishment the court decrees vpon 'hem.

iv. vi. 33 gout,] *goute* ; Q 34 courteous.] courteous : Q 35 honour'd]  
honor'd Q 40 sufferance,] *suffrance* ; Q 43 honour'd] *honord* Q  
51 they are] they're F2 56 care :] care ; Q *Exeunt Officers with*  
*Volpone.* add G 61 After 'discouerie.' [To Volt.] G After 62  
*Exeunt Avocat. Not. and Officers with Bonario and Celia.* G

V O L T. We thanke your fatherhoods. How like you it ?

M o s. Rare.

I'd ha' your tongue, sir, tipt with gold, for this ;

I'd ha' you be the heire to the whole citie ; 65

The earth I'd haue want men, ere you want liuing :

They'are bound to erect your statue, in S<sup>t</sup> M A R K E S.

Signior C O R V I N O, I would haue you goe,

And shew your selfe, that you haue conquer'd. C O R V.

Yes.

M o s. It was much better, that you should professe 70

Your selfe a cuckold, thus, then that the other

Should haue beene prou'd. C O R V. Nay, I consider'd

that :

Now, it is her fault. M o s. Then, it had beene yours.

C O R V. True, I doe doubt this Aduocate, still. M o s.

I'faith,

You need not, I dare ease you of that care. 75

C O R V. I trust thee, M o s c a. M o s. As your owne

soule, sir. C O R B. M o s c a.

M o s. Now for your businesse, sir. C O R B. How ? ha'

you busines ?

M o s. Yes, yours, sir. C O R B. O, none else ? M o s.

None else, not I.

C O R B. Be carefull then. M o s. Rest you, with both

your eyes, sir.

C O R B. Dispatch it. M o s. Instantly. C O R B. And 80

looke, that all,

What-euer, be put in, iewels, plate, moneyes,

Household-stuffe, bedding, cortines. M o s. Cortine-rings,

sir,

Onely, the Aduocates fee must be deducted.

C O R B. I'll pay him, now : you'll be too prodigall.

M o s. Sir, I must tender it. C O R B. Two *cecchines* is 85

well ?

iv. vi. 67 to erect] t'erect Q 73 fault.] fault : Q 76 After  
'Mosca.' [Exit.] G your] your, Q 79 carefull] carefull, Q 80 it.]  
it, Q 82 cortines . . . Cortine-] curtines . . . Curtine- Q

M o s. No, six, sir. C o r b. 'Tis too much. M o s. He  
 talk'd a great while,  
 You must consider that, sir. C o r b. Well, there's  
 three—  
 M o s. I'll giue it him. C o r b. Doe so, and there's  
 for thee.

M o s. Bountifull bones ! What horride strange offence  
 90 Did he commit 'gainst nature, in his youth,  
 Worthy this age ? you see, sir, how I worke  
 Vnto your ends ; take you no notice. V o l t. No,  
 I'll leaue you. M o s. All, is yours ; the deuill, and all :  
 Good Aduocate. Madame, I'll bring you home.  
 95 L A D. No, I'll goe see your patron. M o s. That you  
 shall not :  
 I'll tell you, why. My purpose is, to vrge  
 My patron to reforme his will ; and, for  
 The zeale you' haue shew'n to day, whereas before  
 You were but third, or fourth, you shall be now  
 100 Put in the first : which would appeare as beg'd,  
 If you were present. Therefore— L A D. You shall  
 sway me.

### *Act v. Scene I.*

V O L P O N E.

WELL, I am here ; and all this brunt is past :  
 I ne're was in dislike with my disguise,  
 Till this fled moment ; here, 'twas good, in priuate,  
 But, in your publike, *Caue*, whil'st I breathe.  
 5 'Fore god, my left legge 'gan to haue the crampe ;  
 And I apprehended, straight, some power had strooke me  
 With a dead palsey : well, I must be 'merry,

iv. vi. 86 while,] while ; F2 88 *Exit.* add Q 91 After 'age?'  
 [Aside.] G 93 After 'you.' *Exit.* G all:] all, Q 99 or Q, F2 : or,  
 F1 101 were] be Q *Exeunt.* add G v. i. ACT V. SCENE I. | A  
 Room in Volpone's House. | Enter Volpone. G 2 ne're] nère Q  
 3 priuate,] private ; F2 4 breathe] breath Q 5 god] God Q  
 6 apprehended] apprènded Q strooke] struck F2

And shake it off. A many of these feares  
 Would put me into some villanous disease,  
 Should they come thick vpon me : I'le preuent 'hem. 10  
 Giue me a boule of lustie wine, to fright  
 This humor from my heart ; (hum, hum, hum) *He*  
 'Tis almost gone, already : I shall conquer. *drin kes.*  
 Any deuce, now, of rare, ingenious knauery,  
 That would possesse me with a violent laughter, 15  
 Would make me vp, againe ! So, so, so, so. *Drin kes*  
 This heate is life ; 'tis bloud, by this time : M O S C A ! *again e.*

Act v. Scene II.

M O S C A, V O L P O N E, N A N O,  
 C A S T R O N E.

**H**OW now, sir ? do's the day looke cleare againe ?  
 Are we recouer'd ? and wrought out of error,  
 Into our way ? to see our path, before vs ?  
 Is our trade free, once more ? V O L P. Exquisite M O S C A !  
 M O S. Was it not carry'd learnedly ? V O L P. And 5  
 stoutly.

Good wits are greatest in extremities.

M O S. It were a folly, beyond thought, to trust  
 Any grand act vnto a cowardly spirit :  
 You are not taken with it, enough, me thinkes ?

V O L P. O, more, then if I had enioy'd the wench : 10  
 The pleasure of all woman-kind's not like it.

M O S. Why, now you speake, sir. We must, here, be fixt ;  
 Here, we must rest ; this is our master-peece :  
 We cannot thinke, to goe beyond this. V O L P. True,  
 Thou'hast playd thy prise, my precious M O S C A. M O S. 15

Nay, sir,  
 To gull the court—— V O L P. And, quite diuert the tor-  
 rent,

v. i. 12, 16 *Stage directions not in Q* 12 *drin kes]* *down kes* F2  
 v. ii. *Enter Mosca. G, continuing the scene* 11 *woman-]* *wóman- Q*  
 12 *here,]* *here Q, Ff* 13 *master-]* *maister- Q*

- Vpon the innocent. M o s. Yes, and to make  
 So rare a musique out of discordes—— V o l p. Right.  
 That, yet, to me's the strangest ! how th'hast borne it !  
 20 That these (being so diuided 'mongst themselues)  
 Should not sent some-what, or in me, or thee,  
 Or doubt their owne side. M o s. True, they will not see't.  
 Too much light blinds 'hem, I thinke. Each of 'hem  
 Is so possest, and stufte with his owne hopes,  
 25 That any thing, vnto the contrary,  
 Neuer so true, or neuer so apparent,  
 Neuer so palpable, they will resist it——  
 V o l p. Like a temptation of the diuell. M o s. Right,  
 sir.

- Merchants may talke of trade, and your great signiors  
 30 Of land, that yeelds well ; but if *Italy*  
 Haue any glebe, more fruitfull, then these fellowes,  
 I am deceiu'd. Did not your Aduocate rare ?  
 V o l p. O (my most honor'd fathers, my graue fathers,  
 Vnder correction of your father-hoods,  
 35 What face of truth, is here ? If these strange deeds  
 May passe, most honour'd fathers——) I had much a doe  
 To forbear laughing. M o s. 'T seem'd to mee, you  
 sweat, sir.

- V o l p. In troth, I did a little. M o s. But confesse, sir,  
 Were you not daunted ? V o l p. In good faith, I was  
 40 A little in a mist ; but not deieted :  
 Neuer, but still my selfe. M o s. I thinke it, sir.  
 Now (so truth helpe me) I must needes say this, sir,  
 And, out of conscience, for your aduocate :  
 He' has taken paines, in faith, sir, and deseru'd,  
 45 (In my poore iudgement, I speake it, vnder fauour,  
 Not to contrary you, sir) very richly——

v. ii. 18 musique] *Musique*, Q 22 True, they] True. They Q  
 see't.] see't; Q 23 thinke. Each] thinke: each Q 28 diuell] Deuill Q  
 31 fruitfull] fruitfull Q 33-6 (my . . . fathers——)] my . . . Fathers—  
 Q, which prints the mock-quotations in italic 35 truth, is] truth is,  
 Q, Ff 38 did] did, Q originally, but the comma, faintly printed,  
 disappeared 41 sir.] sir Ff 42 sir.] Sir, Q: sir. Ff 43 con-  
 science.] conscience ; Q 45-6 (In . . . sir)] In . . . Sir, Q

Well—to be cosen'd. V O L P. 'Troth, and I thinke so too,  
By that I heard him, in the latter end.

M o s. O, but before, sir ; had you heard him, first,  
Draw it to certaine heads, then aggrauate, 50  
Then vse his vehement figures—— I look'd still,  
When he would shift a shirt ; and, doing this  
Out of pure loue, no hope of gaine—— V O L P. 'Tis right.  
I cannot answer him, M o s c a, as I would,  
Not yet ; but for thy sake, at thy intreaty, 55  
I will beginne, eu'n now, to vexe 'hem all :  
This very instant. M o s. Good, sir. V O L P. Call the dwarfe,  
And eunuch, forth. M o s. C A S T R O N E, N A N O. N A N.  
Here.

V O L P. Shal we haue a jig, now? M o s. What you  
please, sir. V O L P. Go,  
Streight, giue out, about the streetes, you two, 60  
That I am dead ; doe it with constancy,  
Sadly, doe you heare? impute it to the grieve  
Of this late slander. M o s. What doe you meane, sir?

V O L P. O,  
I shall haue, instantly, my vulture crow,  
Rauen, come flying hither (on the newes) 65  
To peck for carrion, my shee-wolfe, and all,  
Greedy, and full of expectation——

M o s. And then to haue it rauish'd from their mouthes ?

V O L P. 'Tis true, I will ha' thee put on a gowne,  
And take vpon thee, as thou wert mine heire ; 70  
Shew 'hem a will : open that chest, and reach  
Forth one of those, that has the blankes. I'll straight  
Put in thy name. M o s. It will be rare, sir. V O L P. I,  
When they e'ene gape, and finde themselues deluded——

M o s. Yes. V O L P. And thou vse them skiruiely. Dis- 75  
patch,

v. ii. 48 latter] later Q      56 eu'n] euen Q      58 After 'NANO.'  
Enter *Castrone and Nano.* G      62 Sadly.] Sadly ; F<sub>2</sub>      63 After  
'slander.' [*Exeunt Cast. and Nano.*] G      71 will:] Will ; Q      73  
After 'sir.' [*Gives him a paper.*] G      I.] I Q      74 e'ene] ev'n F<sub>2</sub>  
deluded—] deluded, Q      75 And] And, Q

Get on thy gowne. M o s. But, what, sir, if they aske  
After the body? V o l p. Say, it was corrupted.

M o s. I'll say, it stunke, sir; and was faine t'haue it  
Coffin'd vp instantly, and sent away.

80 V o l p. Any thing, what thou wilt. Hold, here's my  
will.

Get thee a cap, a count-booke, pen and inke,  
Papers afore thee; sit, as thou wert taking  
An inuentory of parcels: I'll get vp,  
Behind the cortine, on a stoole, and harken;

85 Sometime, peepe ouer; see, how they doe looke;  
With what degrees, their blood doth leaue their faces!  
O, 'twill afford me a rare meale of laughter.

M o s. Your Aduocate will turne stark dull, vpon it.

V o l p. It will take off his oratories edge.

90 M o s. But your *Clarissimo*, old round-backe, he  
Will crumpe you, like a hog-louse, with the touch.

V o l p. And what C o r v i n o? M o s. O, sir, looke  
for him,

To morrow morning, with a rope, and a dagger,  
To visite all the streetes; he must runne mad.

95 My Lady too, that came into the court,  
To beare false witness, for your worship—— V o l p. Yes,  
And kist mee 'fore the fathers; when my face  
Flow'd all with oyles. M o s. And sweate, sir. Why, your  
gold

Is such another med'cine, it dries vp

100 All those offensiue sauors! It transformes

The most deformed, and restores 'hem louely,

*Cestus.* As 't were the strange poetically girdle. I o v e

Could not inuent, t'himselfe, a shroud more subtile,

To passe A c r i s i v s guardes. It is the thing

105 Makes all the world her grace, her youth, her beauty.

v. ii. 76 Mos.] Mos. [putting on a gown] G 77 corrupted.] corrupted, Q 84 cortine] cortine Q 86 faces!] faces; Q 88 Mos.] Mos. [putting on a cap, and setting out the table, &c.] G 97 kist] kisse F2 98 sweate,] sweate— Q 102 Marginal note not in Q

V O L P. I thinke, she loues me. M o s. Who ? the lady,  
sir ?  
Shee's iealous of you. V O L P. Do'st thou say so ? M o s.  
Harke,  
There's some already. V O L P. Looke. M o s. It is the  
vulture :  
He has the quickest sent. V O L P. I'll to my place,  
Thou, to thy posture. M o s. I am set. V O L P. But, 110  
M o s c a,  
Play the artificer now, torture 'hem, rarely.

*Act v. Scene III.*

VOLTORE, MOSCA, CORBACCIO, CORVINO,  
LADY, VOLPONE.

How now, my Mosca? Mos. Turkie carpets,  
 nine—

V O L T. Taking an inventory? that is well.

M o s. Two sutes of bedding, tisew—— V o L T. Where's  
the will ?

Let me read that, the while. C O R B. So, set me downe :  
And get you home. V O L T. Is he come, now, to trouble  
vs ?

M o s. Of cloth of gold, two more—— C o r b. Is it done, M o s c A?

M o s. Of seuerall vellets, eight—— V o L T. I like his  
care.

C O R B. Dost thou not heare? C O R V. Ha? is the  
houre come, M O S C A?

V O L P. I, now, they muster. C O R V. What do's the *Volpone*  
aduocate here? *peepes*  
*from*

v. ii. 107 After 'so?' [*Knocking within.*] G 108 some] some, Q *behinde a*  
 110 After 'posture.' [*Goes behind the curtain.*] G v. iii.] Enter Vol- *traverse.*  
 tore. G, continuing the scene 1-78 Q italicizes quotations from the  
 inventory 1 Mos.] Mos. [*writiŋg.*] G 4 After 'while.' Enter  
 Servants with Corbaccio in a chair. G 5 And] And, Q After 'home.'  
 [*Exeunt Servants.*] G 7 vellets] velvets F<sub>2</sub> 8 After 'heare?'  
 [*Enter Corvino.*] G the houre] th'houre Q 9 aduocate] Aduocate, Q  
 St. dir. not in Q



10 Or this CORBACCIO? CORB. What do these here?

LAD. MOSCA?

Is his thred spunne? MOS. Eight chests of linnen——

VOLP. O,

My fine dame WOVLDBEE, too! CORV. MOSCA,  
the will,

That I may shew it these, and rid 'hem hence.

MOS. Six chests of diaper, foure of damaske—— There.

15 CORB. Is that the will? MOS. Down-beds, and boulders—— VOLP. Rare!

Be busie still. Now, they begin to flutter:

They neuer thinke of me. Looke, see, see, see!

How their swift eies runne ouer the long deed,

Vnto the name, and to the legacies,

20 What is bequeath'd them, there—— MOS. Ten sute of hangings——

VOLP. I, i'their garters, MOSCA. Now, their hopes  
Are at the gaspe. VOLT. MOSCA the heire! CORB.  
What's that?

VOLP. My aduocate is dumbe, looke to my merchant,  
Hee has heard of some strange storme, a ship is lost,

25 He faints: my lady will swoone. Old glazen-eyes,  
He hath not reach'd his dispaire, yet. CORB. All these  
Are out of hope, I'am sure the man. CORV. But,  
MOSCA——

MOS. Two cabenets—— CORV. Is this in earnest?

MOS. One

Of ebony.—— CORV. Or, do you but delude me?

30 MOS. The other, mother of pearle—I am very busie.

Good faith, it is a fortune throwne vpon me——

*Item*, one salt of agat——not my seeking.

LAD. Do you heare, sir? MOS. A perfum'd boxe——  
'pray you forebeare,

v. iii. 10 After 'here?' [*Enter Lady Pol. Would-be.*] G After 14  
Gives them the Will carelessly, over his shoulder. G 22 heire!]  
heire? Q 24 lost,] lost: Q 25 faints: my] faintes. My Q  
26 He] Hé Q 27 After 'man.' [*Takes the Will.*] G 28 cabenets]  
Cabinets Q

You see I am troubled——made of an *onyx*—— L A D.  
How!

M o s. To morrow, or next day, I shall be at leasure, 35  
To talke with you all. C o r v. Is this my large hopes  
issue?

L A D. Sir, I must haue a fayrer answer. M o s. Ma-  
dame!

Mary, and shall: 'pray you, fairely quit my house.  
Nay, raise no tempest with your lookes; but, harke you:  
Remember, what your ladiship offred me, 40  
To put you in, an heire; goe to, thinke on't.  
And what you said, eene your best madames did  
For maintenance, and, why not you? inough.  
Goe home, and vse the poore sir P o l, your knight, well;  
For feare I tell some riddles: go, be melancholique. 45

V o l p. O, my fine diuell! C o r v. M o s c a, 'pray  
you a word.

M o s. Lord! will not you take your dispatch hence, yet?  
Me thinkes (of all) you should haue beene th'example.  
Why should you stay, here? with what thought? what  
promise?

Heare you, doe not you know, I know you an asse? 50  
And, that you would, most faine, haue beene a wittoll,  
If fortune would haue let you? that you are  
A declar'd cuckold, on good termes? this pearle,  
You'll say, was yours? right: this diamant?  
I'll not deny't, but thanke you. Much here, else? 55  
It may be so. Why, thinke that these good works  
May helpe to hide your bad: I'll not betray you,  
Although you be but extraordinary,  
And haue it onely in title, it sufficeth.  
Go home, be melancholique too, or mad. 60

v. iii. 37 Madame! ] Madame? Q 40 offred] offerd Q 45  
riddles:] riddles; Q melancholique] melancholy F3: so 60 Exit  
Lady Would-be. add G 46 diuell] Deuill Q 50 you, doe] you;  
do Q 51 would.] would; Q 57 your Q, F2: you Fr 60  
home,] home; Q melancholique too,] melancholique, too: Q Exit  
Corvino. add G

V O L P. Rare, M O S C A ! how his villany becomes him !

V O L T. Certaine, he doth delude all these, for me.

C O R B. M O S C A, the heire ? V O L P. O, his foure eyes  
haue found it !

C O R B. I'am cosen'd, cheated, by a parasite-slaue ;

65 Harlot, t(h)'hast gul'd me. M O S. Yes, sir. Stop your mouth,  
Or I shall draw the onely tooth, is left.

Are not you he, that filthy couetous wretch,  
With the three legges, that here, in hope of prey,  
Haue, any time this three yeere, snuft about,

70 With your most grou'ling nose ; and would haue hir'd  
Me to the pois'ning of my patron ? sir ?

Are not you he, that haue, to day, in court,  
Profess'd the dis-inheriting of your sonne ?

Periur'd your selfe ? Go home, and die, and stinke ;

75 If you but croake a sillable, all comes out :

Away and call your porters, go, go, stinke.—

V O L P. Excellent varlet ! V O L T. Now, my faithfull  
M O S C A,

I finde thy constancie. M O S. Sir ? V O L T. Sincere.

M O S. A table

Of porphiry—I mar'le, you'll be thus troublesome.

80 V O L T. Nay, leaue off now, they are gone. M O S.

Why ? who are you ?

What ? who did send for you ? O 'cry you mercy,

Reuerend sir ! good faith, I am greeu'd for you,

That any chance of mine should thus defeate

Your (I must needs say) most deseruing trauels :

85 But, I protest, sir, it was cast vpon me,

And I could, almost, wish to be without it,

But, that the will o' th' dead, must be obseru'd.

Mary, my ioy is, that you need it not,

You haue a gift, sir, (thanke your education)

90 Will neuer let you want, while there are men,

v. iii. 61 Rare,] Rare Q him !] him. Q 63 Mosca,] Mosca Q  
it !] it. Q 76 After 'porters,' [Exit Corbaccio.] G 78 Mos.]  
Mos. [writing.] G 82 sir !] Sir : Q 84 trauels] trauailes Q  
87 dead,] dead Q

And malice, to breed causes. Would I had  
But halfe the like, for all my fortune, sir.  
If I haue any suites (as I doe hope,  
Things being so easie, and direct, I shall not)  
I wil make bold with your obstreperous aide, 95  
(Conceiue me) for your fee, sir. In meane time,  
You, that haue so much law, I know ha' the conscience,  
Not to be couetous of what is mine.

Good sir, I thanke you for my plate: 'twill helpe  
To set vp a yong man. Good faith, you looke 100  
As you were costieue; best go home, and purge, sir.

V O L P. Bid him, eat lettuce well: my wittie *mischiefe*,  
Let me embrace thee. O, that I could now  
Transforme thee to a V E N U S—— M O S C A, goe,  
Streight, take my habit of *Clarissimo*; 105  
And walke the streets; be seene, torment 'hem more:  
We must pursew, as well as plot. Who would  
Haue lost this feast? M O S. I doubt it will loose them.

V O L P. O, my recouery shall recouer all.  
That I could now but thinke on some disguise, 110  
To meet 'hem in: and aske 'hem questions.  
How I would vexe 'hem still, at euery turne?

M O S. Sir, I can fit you. V O L P. Canst thou? M O S.

Yes, I know

One o' the *Commandadori*, sir, so like you,  
Him will I streight make drunke, and bring you his habit. 115

V O L P. A rare disguise, and answering thy braine!  
O, I will be a sharpe disease vnto 'hem.

M O S. Sir, you must looke for curses—— V O L P. Till  
they burst;

The Foxe fares euer best, when he is curst.

v. iii. 91 malice, corr. Q. Ff: malice Q originally 99 you] you, Q  
101 Exit Vollore. add G 102 VOLP.] Volp. [comes from behind the  
curtain.] G 105 Clarissimo; Clarissimo, Q 107 pursew] pursue F2  
108 doubt] doubt, Q loose] lose F2 109 all.] all, Q 114 Com-  
mandadori Q: Commandatori Ff 119 Exeunt. add G

## Act v. Scene IIII.

PEREGRINE, MERCATORI. 3. WOMAN,  
POLITIQUE.

AM I enough disguis'd? MER. I. I warrant you.

PER. All my ambition is to fright him, onely.

MER. 2. If you could ship him away, 'twere excellent.

MER. 3. To *Zant*, or to *Alepo*? PER. Yes, and ha' his  
5 Adventures put i' th' booke of voyages,  
And his guld story registred, for truth?  
Well, gentlemen, when I am in, a while,  
And that you thinke vs warme in our discourse,  
Know your approaches. MER. I. Trust it to our care.

10 PER. Saue you, faire lady. Is sir POL. within?

WOM. I do not know, sir. PER. 'Pray you, say vnto  
him,

Here is a merchant, vpon earnest businesse,

Desires to speake with him. WOM. I will see, sir. PER.  
'Pray you.

I see, the family is all female, here.

15 WOM. He sai's, sir, he has waighty affaires of state,  
That now require him whole, some other time  
You may possesse him. PER. 'Pray you, say againe,  
If those require him whole, these will exact him,  
Whereof I bring him tidings. What might be

20 His graue affaire of state, now? how, to make  
*Bolognian* sauseges, here, in *Venice*, sparing  
One o' th' ingredients. WOM. Sir, he sai's, he knowes  
By your word, tidings, that you are no states-man,  
And therefore, wills you stay. PER. Sweet, 'pray you  
returne him,

v. iv.] SCENE II. | *A Hall in sir Politick's House.* | *Enter Peregrine disguised, and three Merchants.* G 3 excellent.] excellent, Q 4  
ha' his] haue's Q 7 while,] while; Q 9 it] it, Q *Exeunt*  
*Merchants.* add G After 9 *Enter Waiting-woman.* G 13 After  
'sir.' [Exit.] G After 14 *Re-enter Waiting-woman.* G 16, 18  
whole,] whole; Q 17 you, Q: you Fr 19 After 'tidings.' [Exit  
*Woman.*] G 22 After 'ingredients.' [Re-enter *Waiting-woman.*] G

I haue not read so many proclamations, 25  
And studied them, for words, as he has done,  
But—— Here he deignes to come. P O L. Sir, I must  
craue

Your courteous pardon. There hath chanc'd (to day)  
Vnkinde disaster, 'twixt my lady, and mee :  
And I was penning my apologie 30  
To giue her satisfaction, as you came, now.

P E R. Sir, I am grieu'd, I bring you worse disaster ;  
The gentleman, you met at th' port, to day,  
That told you, he was newly arriu'd—— P O L. I, was  
A fugitiue punke ? P E R. No, sir, a spie, set on you : 35  
And, he has made relation to the Senate,  
That you profest to him, to haue a plot,  
To sell the state of *Venice*, to the *Turke*.

P O L. O me ! P E R. For which, warrants are sign'd by  
this time,  
To apprehend you, and to search your study, 40  
For papers—— P O L. Alasse, sir. I haue none, but notes,  
Drawne out of play-bookes—— P E R. All the better, sir.

P O L. And some essayes. What shall I doe ? P E R. Sir,  
best

Conuay your selfe into a sugar-chest,  
Or, if you could lie round, a fraile were rare : 45  
And I could send you, aboard. P O L. Sir, I but talk'd so,  
For discourse sake, merely. P E R. Harke, they are there. *They*

P O L. I am a wretch, a wretch. P E R. What, will you *knocke*  
doe, sir ? *without.*

Ha' you ne're a curren-but to leape into ?  
They'll put you to the racke, you must be sudden. 50

P O L. Sir, I haue an ingine—— (M E R. 3. Sir P O L I-  
T I Q V E W O V L D - B E ?

v. iv. 27 But— Here] But, here Q After 'come.' Exit Woman. |  
Enter Sir Politick. G Sir,] Sir! Q 28 pardon.] pardon; Q 29  
'twixt] 'twixt Q 35 fugitiue punke] fugitiue-Punke Q you:] you, Q  
39 O me!] O' mee. Q 44 selfe] selfe, Q (comma faint) 45 could] .  
would F2 47 Stage direction not in Q 49 Ha' F2: Ha Q, Fr  
50 sudden] sodaine Q 51-2 (MER. . . he ?)] MER. . . hee ? Q

M E R. 2. Where is he?) P O L. That I haue thought  
vpon, before time.

P E R. What is it? P O L. (I shall ne're indure the torture.)

Mary, it is, sir, of a tortoyse-shell,

55 Fitted, for these extremities : 'pray you sir, helpe me.

Here, I' haue a place, sir, to put backe my leggs,

(Please you to lay it on, sir) with this cap,

And my blacke gloues, I'le lye, sir, like a tortoyse,

Till they are gone. P E R. And, call you this an ingine?

60 P O L. Mine owne deuice—— good sir, bid my wiues  
women

*They* To burne my papers. M E R. 1. Where's he hid? M E R. 3.  
*rush in.* We must,

And will, sure, find him. M E R. 2. Which is his study?

M E R. 1. What

Are you, sir? P E R. I' am a merchant, that came heere

To looke vpon this tortoyse. M E R. 3. How? M E R. 1.

S<sup>t</sup> M A R K E !

65 What beast is this? P E R. It is a fish. M E R. 2. Come  
out, here.

P E R. Nay, you may strike him, sir, and tread vpon him :

Hee'll beare a cart. M E R. 1. What, to runne ouer him?

P E R. Yes.

M E R. 3. Let's iump, vpon him. M E R. 2. Can he not  
go? P E R. He creepes, sir.

M E R. 1. Let's see him creepe. P E R. No, good sir, you  
will hurt him.

70 M E R. 2. (Heart) I'le see him creepe ; or pricke his guts.

M E R. 3. Come out, here. P E R. 'Pray you sir, (creepe  
a little) M E R. 1. Foorth.

v. iv. 53 (I... torture.) I... torture. Q ne're] nêre Q 55 Fitted]  
Apted Q 57 (Please... sir)] Please... Sir, Q After 'sir' [Lies  
down while Per. places the shell upon him.] G 59 gone.] gone, Q  
60 wiues] wives Q 61 After 'papers.' [Exit Per.] G Stage direction  
not in Q 62 After 'study?' [Re-enter Peregrine.] G 67 Yes.]  
Yes. (sir F2, taking the last word of l. 68, printed above the end of the  
line in F1 68 him] him; Q He creepes, sir.] He creepes, Sir. corr.  
Q (creepes Q originally), italicizing as if it were a stage direction  
71 After 'little' [Aside to sir Pol.] G Foorth] Forth Q

M E R. 2. Yet furdur. P E R. Good sir, (creep) M E R. 2.  
We'll see his legs.  
M E R. 3. Gods'so, he has garters! M E R. 1. I, and *They pull*  
gloues! M E R. 2. Is this *of the shell*  
Your fearefull tortoyse? P E R. Now, sir P O L L. we are euen; *and dis-*  
For your next proiect, I shall be prepar'd : *couer*  
I am sorry, for the funerall of your notes, sir. *him.*  
M E R. 1. 'Twere a rare motion, to be seene in *Fleet-street!*  
M E R. 2. I, i'the terme. M E R. 1. Or *Smithfield*, in the  
faire.  
M E R. 3. Me thinkes, tis but a melancholique sight!  
P E R. Farewell, most politique tortoyse. P O L. Where's 80  
my lady?  
Knowes shee of this? W O M. I know not, sir. P O L.  
Enquire.  
O, I shall be the fable of all feasts;  
The freight of the *gazetti*; ship-boyes tale;  
And, which is worst, euen talke for ordinaries.  
W O M. My lady's come most melancholique, home, 85  
And say's, sir, she will straight to sea, for physick.  
P O L. And I, to shunne, this place, and clime for euer;  
Creeping, with house, on backe: and thinke it well,  
To shrinke my poore head, in my politique shell.

Act v. Scene v.

V O L P O N E, M O S C A.

A M I then like him? M O S. O; sir, you are he:  
No man can seuer you. V O L P. Good. M O S. But,  
what am I?  
V O L P. 'Fore heau'n, a braue *Clarissimo*, thou becom'st it!

*The first,*  
*in the*  
*habit of*  
*a Com-*  
*manda-*  
*dore: the*  
*other, of*  
*a Claris-*  
*simo.*

v. iv. 72 furdur] farther F2 73 Stage direction not in Q 74  
PER.] Per. [discovering himself.] G 79, 85 melancholique] melan-  
choly F3 80 After 'tortoyse.' Exeunt Per. and Merchants. | Re-enter  
Waiting-Woman. G 80 Where's corr. Q, Ff: where's Q originally  
89 shell. corr. Q: shell, Q originally Exeunt. add G v. v. Mis-  
numbered Act IV in Q, Ff, F3 Marginal note not in Q SCENE  
III | A Room in Volpone's House. | Enter Mosca in the habit of a claris-  
simo, and Volpone in that of a commandadore. G



Pitty, thou wert not borne one. M O S. If I hold  
 5 My made one, 'twill be well. V O L P. I'le goe, and see  
 What newes, first, at the court. M O S. Doe so. My

F O X E

Is out on his hole, and, ere he shall re-enter,  
 I'le make him languish, in his borrow'd case,  
 Except he come to composition, with me :  
 10 A N D R O G I N O, C A S T R O N E, N A N O. A L L. Here.  
 M O S. Goe recreate your selues, abroad ; goe, sport :  
 So, now I haue the keies, and am possest.  
 Since he will, needes, be dead, afore his time,  
 I'le burie him, or gaine by him. I'am his heire :  
 15 And so will keepe me, till he share at least.  
 To cosen him of all, were but a cheat  
 Well plac'd ; no man would construe it a sinne :  
 Let his sport pay for't, this is call'd the F o x E-trap.

### *Act v. Scene VI.*

C O R B A C C I O, C O R V I N O, V O L P O N E.

T Hey say, the court is set. C O R V. We must maintaine  
 Our first tale good, for both our reputations.

C O R B. Why ? mine's no tale : my sonne would, there,  
 haue kild me.

C O R V. That's true, I had forgot : mine is, I am sure.  
 5 But, for your will, sir. C O R B. I, I'le come vpon him,  
 For that, hereafter, now his Patron's dead.

V O L P. Signior C O R V I N O ! and C O R B A C C I O ! sir,  
 Much ioy vnto you. C O R V. Of what ? V O L P. The  
 sodaine good,

Dropt downe vpon you—— C O R B. Where ? V O L P.  
 (And, none knowes how)

v. v. 5 After 'well.' [*Aside.*] G 6 After 'court.' [*Exit.*] G 10  
 After 'NANO.' [*Enter Androgyno, Castrone, and Nano.*] G 11 Goe] Go,  
 Q *Exeunt.* add G 14 him.] him; Q 18 *Exit.* add G v. vi.] SCENE  
 IV. | *A Street.* | *Enter Corbaccio and Corvino.* G 4 forgot:] forgot; Q  
 After 'sure.' *Aside.* G 6 hereafter,] hereafter; Q After 6 *Enter*  
*Volpone.* G

From old VOLPONE, sir. CORB. Out, errant knave. 10

VOLP. Let not your too much wealth, sir, make you  
furious.

CORB. Away, thou varlet. VOLP. Why sir? CORB.  
Do'st thou mocke me?

VOLP. You mocke the world, sir, did you not change  
wills?

CORB. Out, harlot. VOLP. O! belike you are the  
man,

Signior CORVINO? 'faith, you carry it well; 15

You grow not mad withall: I loue your spirit.

You are not ouer-leauen'd, with your fortune.

You should ha' some would swell, now, like a wine-fat,

With such an *Autumne*—— Did he gi' you all, sir?

CORV. Auoid, you rascall. VOLP. Troth, your wife  
has shew'ne 20

Her selfe a very woman: but, you are well,

You neede not care, you haue a good estate,

To beare it out, sir, better by this chance.

Except CORBACCIO haue a share? CORB. Hence,  
varlet.

VOLP. You will not be a'knowne, sir: why, 'tis wise. 25

Thus doe all gam'sters, at all games, dissemble.

No man will seeme to winne. Here, comes my vulture,

Heauing his beake vp i' the ayre, and snuffing.

## Act v. Scene vii.

VOLTORE, VOLPONE.

OVt-strippt thus, by a parasite? a slaue?

Would run on errands? and make legs, for crummes?

Well, what I'll do—— VOLP. The court staies for your  
worship.

v. vi. 18 now, Q, F2: now F1 23 sir,] Sir: Q 25 why, Q:  
why Ff 26 dissemble.] dissemble; Q 27 winne. Here] winne:  
here Q: win. [Exeunt Corvino and Corbaccio.]—Here G v. vii.]  
Enter Voltore. G, continuing the scene 3 your Q, F2: you F1

I eêne reioyce, sir, at your worships happinesse,

5 And that it fell into so learned hands,

That vnderstand the fingering.— V O L T. What doe you meane ?

V O L P. I meane to be a sutor to your worship,

For the small tenement, out of reparations ;

That, at the end of your long row of houses,

10 By the *piscaria* : it was, in V O L P O N E's time,

Your predecessor, ere he grew diseas'd,

A handsome, pretty, custom'd, bawdy-house,

As any was in *Venice* (none disprais'd)

But fell with him ; his body, and that house

15 Decay'd, together. V O L T. Come, sir, leaue your prating.

V O L P. Why, if your worship giue me but your hand,

That I may ha' the refusall ; I haue done.

'Tis a meere toy, to you, sir ; candle rents :

As your learn'd worship knowes—— V O L T. What doe I know ?

20 V O L P. Mary no end of your wealth, sir, god decrease it.

V O L T. Mistaking knaue ! what, mōck'st thou my misfortune ?

V O L P. His blessing on your heart, sir, would 'twere more.

(Now, to my first, againe ; at the next corner.)

### Act v. Scene VIII.

C O R B A C C I O, C O R V I N O, (M O S C A,  
*passant*) V O L P O N E.

S Ee, in our habite ! see the impudent varlet !

C O R V. That I could shoote mine eies at him, like gun-stones.

V O L P. But, is this true, sir, of the parasite ?

v. vii. 6 fingering.—] fingering. Q 7 VOLP.] VOLP, Q 11 ere]  
ere Q 20 god] God Q 21 Exit. add G 23 (Now . . . corner.)]  
Now . . . corner. Q Exit. add G v. viii.] SCENE V. [Another part  
of the Street. Enter Corbaccio and Corvino ;—Mosca passes over the Stage,  
before them. G After 2 Enter Volpone. G

C O R B. Againe, t'afflict vs? monster! V O L P. In good  
 faith, sir,  
 I'am hartily greu'd, a beard of your graue length 5  
 Should be so ouer-reach'd. I neuer brook'd  
 That parasites haire, me thought his nose should cosen :  
 There still was somewhat, in his looke, did promise  
 The bane of a *Clarissimo*. C O R B. Knaue—— V O L P.  
 Me thinkes,  
 Yet you, that are so traded i' the world, 10  
 A witty merchant, the fine bird, C O R V I N O,  
 That haue such morall *emblemes* on your name,  
 Should not haue sung your shame ; and dropt your cheese :  
 To let the F O X E laugh at your emptinesse.  
 C O R V. Sirrah, you thinke, the priuiledge of the place, 15  
 And your red saucy cap, that seemes (to me)  
 Nayl'd to your iolt-head, with those two *cecchines*,  
 Can warrant your abuses ; come you, hither :  
 You shall perceiue, sir, I dare beate you. Approach.  
 V O L P. No haste, sir, I doe know your valure, well : 20  
 Since you durst publish what you are, sir. C O R V. Tarry,  
 I'd speake, with you. V O L P. Sir, sir, another time——  
 C O R V. Nay, now. V O L P. O god, sir ! I were a wise  
 man,  
 Would stand the fury of a distracted cuckold.  
 C O R B. What ! come againe? V O L P. Vpon 'hem, *Mosca*  
 M O S C A ; saue me. *walkes by*  
 C O R B. The ayre's infected, where he breathes. C O R V. *'hem.*  
 Lets flye him.  
 V O L P. Excellent *Basiliske* ! turne vpon the *vulture*.

v. viii. 7 cosen:] cosen, Q 12 morall] mortall F2 13 your shame  
 Q, F2: you shame Fr 19, 20 I dare beate . . . haste, sir om. F2 23  
 god] God Q After 24 As he is running off, re-enter Mosca. G 25  
 Stage direction not in Q me.] me, Fr 26 Exeunt Corv. and Corb.  
 add G

## Act v. Scene ix.

VOLTORE, MOSCA, VOLPONE.

WELL, flesh-flie, it is sommer with you, now ;  
 Your winter will come on. MOS. Good Aduocate,  
 'Pray thee, not raile, nor threaten out of place, thus ;  
 Thou 'lt make a *solacisme* (as madame sayes.)

5 Get you a bigger, more : your braine breakes loose.

VOLT. Well, sir. VOLP. Would you ha' me beate the  
 insolent slaue ?

Throw dirt, vpon his first good cloathes ? VOLT. This  
 same

Is, doubtlesse, some familiar ! VOLP. Sir, the court

In troth, staves for you. I am mad, a mule,

10 That neuer read I VSTINIAN, should get vp,

And ride an Aduocate. Had you no quirke,

To auoide gullage, sir, by such a creature ?

I hope you doe but iest ; he has not done 't :

This's but confederacy, to blind the rest.

15 You are the heire ? VOLT. A strange, officious,

Trouble-some knaue ! thou dost torment me. VOLP. I  
 know——

It cannot be, sir, that you should be cosen'd ;

'Tis not within the wit of man, to doe it :

You are so wise, so prudent, and, 'tis fit,

20 That wealth, and wisdome still, should goe together.

v. ix.] Enter Voltore. G, continuing the scene 1 sommer]  
 summer F2 3 'Pray thee] Pr'y thee F2 5 Exit. add G 6 ha']  
 haue Q 7 VOLT.] VOLT, F1 13 hope] hope, Q 19 prudent,  
 and] prudent—And Q 20 together.] together—Q Exeunt. add G

Act v. Scene x.

AVOCATORI, 4. NOTARIO, COMMANDADORI,  
BONARIO, CELIA, CORBACCIO, COR-  
VINO, VOLTORE, VOLPONE.

Are all the parties, here? NOT. All, but the Aduocate.  
AVO. 2. And, here he comes. AVO. <I.> Then  
bring 'hem foorth to sentence.

VOLT. O, my most honour'd fathers, let your mercy  
Once winne vpon your iustice, to forgiue—

I am distracted— (VOLF. What will he doe, now?) 5

VOLT. O,

I know not which t'addresse my selfe to, first,

Whether your father-hoods, or these innocents—

(CORV. Will he betray himselfe?) VOLT. Whom,  
equally,

I haue abus'd, out of most couetous endes—

(CORV. The man is mad! CORB. What's that? 10

CORV. He is possest.)

VOLT. For which; now strooke in conscience, here I  
prostrate

My selfe, at your offended feet, for pardon.

AVO. I. 2. Arise. CEL. O heau'n, how iust thou art!

VOLF. I'am caught

I' mine owne noose— CORV. Be constant, sir, nought  
now

Can helpe, but impudence. AVO. I. Speake forward. 15

COM. Silence.

VOLT. It is not passion in me, reuerend fathers,

v. x.] SCENE VI. | *The Scrutineo or Senate House.* | *Enter Avocatori,*  
*Notario, Bonario, Celia, Corbaccio, Corvino, Commandadori, Saffi, &c. G*  
*COMMANDADORI Q: COMMANDADORE Ff 2 After 'comes.' [Enter*  
*Voltore and Volpone.] G AVO. I. F3 foorth] forth Q 5 (VOLF. . .*  
*now ?)] VOLP. . . now ? Q After 'now?' [Aside.] G VOLT.]*  
*VOLF. Q, Ff 6 t'addresse] to addresse Q 8 (CORV. . . himself?)]*  
*CORV. . . himselfe, Q After 'himselfe?' [Aside.] G 9, 10 I haue . . .*  
*possest om. F2: F3 supplied the gap in the sense by inserting I haue abus'd,*  
*by my false Accusation: 10 (CORV. . . possest.)] CORV. . . possest. Q*  
*11 strooke] struck F2 14 After 'noose' [Aside.] G CORV.] Corv.*  
*[to Corbaccio.] G*

But onely conscience, conscience, my good sires,  
That makes me, now, tell truth. That parasite,  
That knaue hath been the instrument of all.

20 A v o. <2.> Where is that knaue? fetch him. V o l p.

I goe. C o r v. Graue fathers,  
This man's distracted; he confest it, now:  
For, hoping to be old V o l p o n e's heire,  
Who now is dead—— A v o c. 3. How? A v o. 2. Is  
V o l p o n e dead?

C o r v. Dead since, graue fathers—— B o n. O, sure  
vengeance! A v o. 1. Stay,

25 Then, he was no deceiuer? V o l t. O no, none:  
The parasite, graue fathers. C o r v. He do's speake,  
Out of meere eriuie, 'cause the seruant's made  
The thing, he gap't for; please your father-hoods,  
This is the truth: though, I'le not iustifie

30 The other, but he may be some-deale faulty.

V o l t. I, to your hopes, as well as mine, C o r v i n o:  
But I'le vse modesty. Pleaseth your wisdomes  
To viewe these certaine notes, and but conferre them;  
As I hope fauour, they shall speake cleare truth.

35 C o r v. The deuill ha's entred him! B o n. Or bides in  
you.

A v o. 4. We haue done ill, by a publike officer,  
To send for him, if he be heire. A v o. 2. For whom?

A v o. 4. Him, that they call the parasite. A v o. 3. 'Tis  
true;

He is a man, of great estate, now left.

40 A v o. 4. Goe you, and learne his name; and say, the  
court

Intreates his presence, here; but, to the clearing  
Of some few doubts. A v o. 2. This same's a labyrinth!

v. x. 17 conscience, my Q: conscience my Ff 19 all.] all—Q  
20 Avo. 2.] 1 Avoc. G After 'goe.' Exit. G 21 distracted;]  
distracted, Q 24 Stay,] Stay,—Q 26 fathers.] Fathers—Q  
30 some-deale] somewhere Q 32 Pleaseth] 'Pleaseth Q 35  
him!] him. Q 37 heire.] heire; Q 41 presence,] presence Q  
42 After 'doubts.' [Exit Notary.] G

A v o. I. Stand you vnto your first report? C o r v. My  
state,  
My life, my fame—— B o n. (Where is't?) C o r v. Are  
at the stake.  
A v o. I. Is yours so too? C o r b. The Aduocate's a 45  
knaue:  
And has a forked tongue—— A v o. 2. (Speake to the  
point.)  
C o r b. So is the parasite, too. A v o. I. This is con-  
fusion.  
V o l t. I doe beseech your father-hoods, read but those;  
C o r v. And credit nothing, the false spirit hath writ:  
It cannot be, but he is possest, graue fathers. 50

Act v. Scene XI.

V O L P O N E, N A N O, A N D R O G I N O,  
C A S T R O N E.

T O make a snare, for mine owne necke! and run  
My head into it, wilfully! with laughter!  
When I had newly scap't, was free, and cleare!  
Out of mere wantonnesse! ô, the dull deuill  
Was in this braine of mine, when I deuiss'd it; 5  
And M o s c a gaue it second: he must now  
Helpe to seare vp this veyne, or we bleed dead.  
How now! who let you loose? 'whither goe you, now?  
What? to buy ginger-bread? or to drowne kitlings?  
N a n. Sir, master M o s c a call'd vs out of doores, 10  
And bid vs all goe play, and tooke the keies. A n d. Yes.  
V o l p. Did master M o s c a take the keyes? why, so!  
I am farder, in. These are my fine conceits!  
I must be merry, with a mischiefe to me!

v. x. 44 (Where is't?)] Where is't? Q 46 (Speake . . . point.)]  
Speake . . . point. Q 48 Giving them papers. add G 50 but  
he is possest, graue fathers] (my Sires) but he is possest. Q The scene  
closes. add G v. xi.] SCENE VII. | A Street. | Enter Volpone. G  
6 he] Hé Q After 7 Enter Nano, Androgyno, and Castrone. G  
8 whither] whether Q, F2 10, 12 master] Maister Q



- 15 What a vile wretch was I, that could not beare  
My fortune soberly? I must ha' my crotchets!  
And my conundrums! well, goe you, and seeke him:  
 His meaning may be truer, then my feare.  
 Bid him, he streight come to me, to the court;  
 20 Thither will I, and, if 't be possible,  
 Vn-screw my aduocate, vpon new hopes:  
 When I prouok'd him, then I lost my selfe.

*Act v. Scene XII.*

A V O C A T O R I, &amp; C.

**T**Hese things can nere be reconcil'd. He, here,  
 Professes, that the gentleman was wrong'd;  
 And that the gentlewoman was brought thither,  
 Forc'd by her husband: and there left. V O L T. Most  
 true.

- 5 C E L. How ready is heau'n to those, that pray! A v o. 1.  
 But, that

V O L P O N E would haue rauish'd her, he holds  
 Vtterly false; knowing his impotence.

C O R V. Graue fathers, he is possest; againe, I say,  
 Possest: nay, if there be possession,

- 10 And obsession, he has both. A v o. 3. Here comes our  
 officer.

V O L P. The parasite will streight be here, graue fathers.

A v o. 4. You might inuent some other name, sir varlet.

A v o. 3. Did not the notarie meet him? V O L P. Not  
 that I know.

A v o. 4. His comming will cleare all. A v o. 2. Yet it  
 is mistie.

v. xi. 16 fortune] fortune, Q 20 Thither] Thether Q 22  
 Exeunt. add G v. xii. Misnumbered Scene 10. in Q SCENE VIII.  
 | *The Scrutineo, or Senate House.* | *Avocatori, Bonario, Celia, Corbaccio,*  
*Corvino, Commandadori, Saffi, &c. as before.* G, who omits Voltore.  
 1 nere] nere Q *Shewing the papers.* add G 3 gentlewoman]  
 Gentlewoman Q thither] thether Q 5 pray ] pray. Q But]  
 But Q After 10 Enter Volpone. G 11 be F2: be, Q, Fr  
 13 Not] Not, Q

VOLT. May't please your father hoods—— VOLP. *Volpone*  
 Sir, the parasite *whispers*  
 Will'd me to tell you, that his master liues ; *the Aduo-*  
 That you are still the man ; your hopes the same ; *cate.*  
 And this was, onely a iest—— VOLT. How? VOLP.  
 Sir, to trie  
 If you were firme, and how you stood affected.  
 VOLT. Art' sure he liues? VOLP. Doe I liue, sir? 20  
 VOLT. O me!  
 I was to violent. VOLP. Sir, you may redeeme it,  
 They said, you were possest ; fall downe, and seeme so :  
 I'll helpe to make it good. God blesse the man ! *Vollore*  
 (Stop your wind hard, and swell) see, see, see, see ! *falls.*  
 He vomits crooked pinnes ! his eyes are set, 25  
 Like a dead hares, hung in a poulters shop !  
 His mouth's running away ! doe you see, signior ?  
 Now, 'tis in his belly. (CORV. I, the deuill !)  
 VOLP. Now, in his throate. (CORV. I, I perceiue it  
 plaine.)  
 VOLP. 'Twill out, 'twill out ; stand cleere. See, where 30  
 it flies !  
 In shape of a blew toad, with a battes wings !  
 Doe not you see it, sir? CORV. What? I thinke I doe.  
 CORV. 'T is too manifest. VOLP. Looke ! he comes  
 t'himselfe !  
 VOLT. Where am I? VOLP. Take good heart, the  
 worst is past, sir.  
 You are dis-possest. AVO. I. What accident is this? 35  
 AVO. 2. Sodaine, and full of wonder ! AVO. 3. If he were  
 Possest, as it appeares, all this is nothing.  
 CORV. He has beene, often, subiect to these fits,  
 AVO. I. Shew him that writing, do you know it, sir ?  
 v. xii. 15 *Stage direction not in Q* 16 master] Maister Q 19  
 were Q, F2 : were, F1 21 to] too Q 23 *Stage direction not*  
 in Q 24 (Stop . . . swell)] Stop . . . swell : Q 28 belly.] belly ! Q  
 (CORV. . . . deuill !)] CORV. . . . Deuill ! Q 29 (CORV. . . . plaine.)]  
 CORV. . . . plaine. Q 30 'twill] t'will F1 31 a battes] batts F2  
 35 AVO.] AVO. F1 36 AVO. 2. Q : AVO. F1 AVO. 3.] AVO. 3 F1  
 were] were. F1 38 subiect] subbiect F1

- 40 V O L P. Deny it, sir, forswear it, know it not.  
 V O L T. Yes, I doe know it well, it is my hand :  
 But all, that it containes, is false. B O N. O practise !  
 A v o. 2. What maze is this ! A v o. 1. Is he not guilty,  
 then,  
 Whom you, there, name the parasite? V O L T. Graue  
 fathers,
- 45 No more then, his good patron, old V O L P O N E.  
 A v o. 4. Why, he is dead? V O L T. O no, my honor'd  
 fathers.  
 He liues—— A v o. 1. How ! liues? V O L T. Liues.  
 A v o. 2. This is subtler, yet !  
 A v o. 3. You said, he was dead? V O L T. Neuer.  
 A v o. 3. You said so? C O R V. I heard so.  
 A v o. 4. Here comes the gentleman, make him way.  
 A v o. 3. A stoole.
- 50 A v o c. 4. A proper man ! and were V O L P O N E dead,  
 A fit match for my daughter. A v o c. 3. Giue him way.  
 V O L P. M O S C A, I was a'most lost, the Aduocate  
 Had betray'd all ; but, now, it is recouer'd :  
 Al's o' the hinge againe——say, I am liuing.
- 55 M O S. What busie knaue is this ! most reuerend fathers,  
 I sooner, had attended your graue pleasures,  
 But that my order, for the funerall  
 Of my deare patron did require me—— V O L P. (M O S C A !)  
 M O S. Whom I intend to bury, like a gentleman.
- 60 V O L P. I, quicke, and cosen me of all. A v o. 2. Still  
 stranger !  
 More intricate ! A v o. 1. And come about againe !  
 A v o. 4. It is a match, my daughter is bestow'd.  
 M O S. (Wil you gi' me halfe? V O L P. First, I'le be  
 hang'd. M O S. I know,

v. xii. 40 V O L P.] *Volp.* [*whispers Volt.*] G 42 B O N. O F2: B O N. 3.  
 O Q, F1: the '3' perhaps a corruption of an ill-written 6 49 gentle-  
 man, F2: gentleman F1: Gentleman, Q After 'way.' [*Enter Mosca.*] G  
 51 After 'daughter.' [*Aside.*] G 52 a'most' almost Q 54 hinge]  
 henge Q *Aside to Mos.* add G 58 *Aside.* add G 59 gentle-  
 man.] Gentleman—Q 60 After 'all.' [*Aside.*] G 61 about]  
 about, Q 62 *Aside.* add G 63 After 'halfe?' [*Aside to Volp.*] G

Your voice is good, cry not so lowd) A v o. 1. Demand  
The Aduocate. Sir, did not you affirme, 65  
VOLPONE was alieue? VOLP. Yes, and he is;  
This gent'man told me so, (thou shalt haue halfe.)

M o s. Whose drunkard is this same? speake some, that  
know him :

I neuer saw his face. (I cannot now  
Affoord it you so cheape. VOLP. No?) A v o. 1. What 70  
say you ?

V o l t. The officer told mee. VOLP. I did, graue  
fathers,

And will maintaine, he liues, with mine owne life.  
And, that this creature told me. (I was borne,  
With all good starres my enemies.) M o s. Most graue  
fathers,

If such an insolence, as this, must passe 75  
Vpon me, I am silent : 'twas not this,

For which you sent, I hope. A v o. 2. Take him away.  
(VOLP. MOSCA.) A v o. 3. Let him be whipt.

(VOLP. Wilt thou betray me ?

Cosen me?) A <v> o c. 3. And taught to beare himselfe  
Toward a person of his ranke. A v o. 4. Away. 80

M o s. I humbly thank your father-hoods. VOLP. Soft,  
soft : whipt ?

And loose all that I haue ? if I confesse,  
It cannot be much more. A v o. 4. Sir, are you married ?

VOLP. They'll be ally'd, anon ; I must be resolute : *He puts*  
The F o x e shall, here, vncase. (M o s. Patron.) VOLP. *off his*  
*disguise.*

Nay, now,

My ruines shall not come alone ; your match  
I'll hinder sure : my substance shall not glew you,  
Nor screw you, into a family. (M o s. Why, patron !)

v. xii. 64 lowd] low'd Q : low'd Fr 67 *Aside to Mos.* add G  
70 After 'cheape.' [*Aside to Volp.*] G 70 Avo.] Avo Fr 73  
After 'creature' [*points to Mosca.*] G 74 After 'enemies'  
[*Aside.*] G 79 Avoc.] Aoc. Fr taught] taught, Q : be taught  
T. Keightley conj. 80 *The Officers seize Volpone.* add G 82  
loose] lose F2 83 After 'more.' [*Aside.*] G 84 *Stage direction*  
*not in Q*

- V O L P. I am V O L P O N E, and this is my knaue ;  
 90 This, his owne knaue ; this, auarices foole ;  
 This, a *Chimæra* of wittall, foole, and knaue ;  
 And, reuerend fathers, since we all can hope  
 Nought, but a sentence, let's not now despaire it.  
 You heare me briefe. C O R V. May it please your father-  
 hoods—— C O M. Silence.
- 95 A V O C. 1. The knot is now vndone, by miracle !  
 A V O C. 2. Nothing can be more cleare. A V O. 3. Or  
 can more proue  
 These innocent. A V O C. 1. Giue 'hem their liberty.  
 B O N. Heauen could not, long, let such grosse crimes be  
 hid.  
 A V O C. 2. If this be held the high way to get riches,  
 100 May I be poore. A V O C. 3. This 's not the gaine, but tor-  
 ment.  
 A V O C. 1. These possesse wealth, as sicke men possesse  
 feuers,  
 Which, trulyer, may be said to possesse them.  
 A V O C. 2. Disroabe that parasite. C O R V. M O S. Most  
 honor'd fathers.  
 A V O C. 1. Can you plead ought to stay the course of  
 iustice ?  
 105 If you can, speake. C O R V. V O L T. We beg fauor, C E L.  
 And mercy.  
 A V O C. 1. You hurt your innocence, suing for the guilty.  
 Stand forth ; and, first, the parasite. You appeare  
 T'haue beene the chiefest minister, if not plotter,  
 In all these lewd impostures ; and now, lastly,  
 110 Haue, with your impudence, abus'd the court,  
 And habit of a gentleman of *Venice*,  
 Being a fellow of no birth, or blood :  
 For which, our sentence is, first thou be whipt ;  
 Then liue perpetuall prisoner in our gallies.

v. xii. 89 *Pointing to Mosca.* add G 90 this,] This, [*to Volt.*] G  
 this,] this, [*to Corb.*] G 91 This,] This, [*to Corv.*] G 93 despaire]  
 despaire Q 94 Silence] silence Fr 96 Or] Or, Q 99 way]  
 way, Q 102 trulyer, Q: trulyer Fr 103 fathers.] *Fathers*—Q

V O L P. I thanke you, for him. M O S. Bane to thy 115  
wooluish nature.

A V O C. I. Deliuier him to the *Saffi*. Thou, V O L P O N E,  
By bloud, and ranke a gentleman, canst not fall  
Vnder like censure ; but our iudgement on thee  
Is, that thy substance all be straight confiscate  
To the hospitall, of the *Incurabili* : 120

And, since the most was gotten by imposture,  
By faining lame, gout, palsey, and such diseases,  
Thou art to lie in prison, cramp't with irons,  
Till thou bee'st sicke, and lame indeed. Remoue him.

V O L P. This is call'd mortifying of a F O X E. 125

A V O C. I. Thou V O L T O R E, to take away the scandale  
Thou hast giu'n all worthy men, of thy profession,  
Art banish'd from their fellowship, and our state.  
C O R B A C C I O, bring him neere. We here possesse  
Thy sonne, of all thy state ; and confine thee 130  
To the monasterie of *San' Spirito* :  
Where, since thou knew'st not how to liue well here,  
Thou shalt be learn'd to die well. C O R B. Ha ! what said  
he ?

C O M. You shall know anone, sir. A V O C. <I.> Thou

C O R V I N O, shalt  
Be straight imbarqu'd from thine owne house, and row'd 135  
Round about *Venice*, through the *grand canale*,  
Wearing a cap, with faire, long asses eares,  
In stead of hornes : and, so to mount (a paper  
Pin'd on thy brest) to the *berlino*—— C O R V. Yes,  
And, haue mine eies beat out with stinking fish, 140  
Bruis'd fruit, and rotten egges——'Tis well. I'am glad,  
I shall not see my shame, yet. A V O C. I. And to expiate  
Thy wrongs done to thy wife, thou art to send her  
Home, to her father, with her dowrie trebled :

v. xii. 115 VOLP. G: VOLT. Q, Ff (a retort to l. 81) wooluish]  
woluish Q 116 After 'Saffi.' Mosca is carried out. G 119 be  
straight] be, straight, Q 120 To the . . . of the] To th' . . . of th' W  
After 124 He is taken from the Bar. G 130 thy state] thy 'estate Q  
134 AVO. I. F2: AVO. FI: AVOC. Q 139 berlino] Berlina W

145 And these are all your iudgements. (A L L. Honour'd fathers.)

A v o c. I. Which may not be reuok'd. Now, you begin,  
When crimes are done, and past, and to be punish'd,  
To thinke what your crimes are : away with them.

Let all, that see these vices thus rewarded,

150 Take heart, and loue to study 'hem. Mischiefes feed  
Like beasts, till they be fat, and then they bleed.

#### V O L P O N E.

**T**He seasoning of a play is the applause.

Now, though the F o x be punish'd by the lawes,  
He, yet, doth hope there is no suffring due,  
For any fact, which he hath done 'gainst you ;

5 If there be, censure him : here he, doubtfull, stands.  
If not, fare iouially, and clap your hands.

#### THE END

v. xii. 145 iudgements.] Iudgements— Q	146 begin.] begin Q
148 are:] are; Q	151 <i>Exeunt.</i> add G
comes forward. G	1 applause.] applause, Q
sensure <i>Fr</i>	5 censure]
6 <i>Exit.</i> add G	

EPILOGUE. *Volpone*

This Comoedie was first  
acted, in the yeere  
1605.

*By the Kings Maiesties*  
SERVANTS.

The principall Comœdians were,

RIC. BURBADGE.	}	IOH. HEMINGS.
HEN. CONDEL.		IOH. LOWIN.
WILL. SLY.		ALEX. COOKE.

*With the allowance of the Master of* REVELLS.

*This page was added in F1. In F2 the statements about the date, the Company, and the Master of the Revels were omitted, and the list of 'The principall Comœdians' was transferred to the back of the half-title, where it followed 'The Persons of the Play' and 'The Scene'.*





---

EPICOENE *or*  
THE SILENT WOMAN

---



## THE TEXT

The printing and publishing of *Epicoene, or The Silent Woman* have some perplexing points. The play was entered on the Stationers' Register for John Browne and John Busby junior on 20 September 1610.

20<sup>mo</sup> Septembris

John Browne John Busby junior	Entred for their Cotype vnder thandes of Sir George Bucke and master Waterson for master warden Leake, A booke called, Epicoene or the silent woman by Ben: Johnson. <span style="float: right;">vj<sup>d</sup></span>
-------------------------------------	--

Arber, *Transcript*, III. 444.

Browne transferred his rights to Walter Burre on 28 September 1612.

.28. Septembris

Walter Burre /	Entred for his copie by assignment from John Browne and consent of the Wardens in full Court holden this Day /. A booke called the Commoditye of the silent Woman <span style="float: right;">vj<sup>d</sup></span>
----------------	---

Ibid. 498.

The next entry is irregular, and it is cancelled.<sup>1</sup> On 17 February 1623 Mistress Browne, whose husband died on 10 October 1622, assigned the copyright of eleven books to John Marriott, the ninth being 'Epicoene or the silent woman', which is crossed out, with a side-note 'vide 28<sup>o</sup> Septembris 1612'. She evidently did not know that her husband had assigned the copyright to Burre.

The next entry is also irregular.<sup>2</sup> Mistress Burre, whose husband died in 1622, assigned to John Spencer on 3 July 1630 her rights in *Cynthia's Revels*, *The Alchemist*, and *Epicoene*, and in six other books. For these nine books she should have paid four shillings and sixpence; she actually paid four shillings. It looks as if the registering clerk found out that she had no rights in *Epicoene*, and did not charge her the fee for it, but omitted to delete the entry.

<sup>1</sup> Arber, *Transcript*, IV. 92.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. 238.

During Walter Burre's lifetime Stansby had published *Epicoene* in folio in 1616 and reissued it in quarto in 1620. He must have had some understanding with Burre, though there is no record of it at either of these dates. He could not have ignored Burre's interest in seven plays which he printed in the Folio—*Every Man in his Humour*, *Cynthia's Revels*, *Sejanus*, *Volpone*, *The Silent Woman*, *The Alchemist*, and *Catiline*. But it is not till 4 July 1635 that a belated entry in the Register finally establishes his rights :

Master Stansby    Entred for his Copies by vertue of a noate  
under the hand of Walter Burre and master  
Mathew Lowndes warden bearing date the  
10<sup>th</sup> of June 1621 as therby appeareth these  
Copies following (*viz<sup>t</sup>.*) by order of a Court  
iii<sup>s</sup> vj<sup>d</sup>

Arber, *Transcript*, iv. 342.

The copies are those of the seven plays. Apparently, after Stansby had published them, he judged it desirable to safeguard his rights by a formal agreement with Burre, which was submitted to the then Warden of the Stationers' Company but, for some unexplained reason, was not entered on the Register.

When was the play first published? This is a far more serious question which has been fully investigated in an important article by Dr. W. W. Greg, 'Was there a 1612 Quarto of *Epicoene*?' contributed to *The Library* in December 1934 (vol. xv, pp. 306-15). Gifford stated in 1816: 'The *Silent Woman* was printed in quarto with this motto :

*Ut sis tu similis Cæli, Byrrhique latronum,  
Non ego sim Capri, neque Sulci. Cur metuas me?*

and went through several editions. I have one dated 1620. The *Companion to the Playhouse* mentions another, printed in 1609 (as does Whalley, in the margin of his copy),<sup>1</sup> which I have not been able to discover; the earliest which has

<sup>1</sup> Gifford had access to a copy of Whalley's edition of 1756 which Whalley had annotated, no doubt with a view to a second edition.

fallen in my way, bearing the date 1612. All these are exclusive of the folio, 1616.'

For this alleged quarto of 1609, D. E. Baker's *Companion to the Play-House*, 1764, says 'EPICÆNE, or the silent Woman. Com. by Ben Jonson, 4<sup>to</sup>. 1609'. But the date '1609' is copied from the date of performance on the title-page of the play in the Folio. Publication of an authorized text a year before it was entered in the Stationers' Register would be an extraordinary and a pointless proceeding on the part of such a man as Burre. Whalley's note is merely a copy from Baker. On the evidence we have the Quarto of 1609 may be dismissed as impossible.

It is otherwise with the missing Quarto of 1612. Gifford says he had seen it, though he never mentions it again and, contrary to his usual practice with the Quartos, he made no use of it. He does not, for example, record any disagreement with the later texts. We should expect the Quarto, if it existed, to have been published by Burre. An edition by Browne and Busby is, of course, possible; but Burre was evidently anxious to secure Jonson's plays, and the transfer of *Epicoene* to him in 1612 suggests that he contemplated an edition. In that year he published *The Alchemist*, which he had registered in 1610. Was there any reason for his holding up *The Silent Woman*?

There are clear signs that the play caused trouble. Jonson virtually says so in the dedication to Sir Francis Stuart and in the second prologue '*occasion'd by some persons impertinent exception*' and not intended for delivery on the stage. 'Thinke nothing true', he says in the prologue; the play is pure fiction.

For he knowes, *Poet* neuer credit gain'd

By writing truths, but things (like truths) well fain'd.  
If any, yet, will (with particular slight

Of application) wrest what he doth write;

And that he meant or him, or her, will say:

They make a libell, which he made a play.

And in the dedication he makes a statement which will

reconcile us to the loss of an earlier Quarto if it had been published: 'There is not a line, or syllable in it chang'd from the simplicity of the first Copy.' If Jonson had been forced to suppress anything in that copy, it was characteristic of him to retrieve it in a later text.<sup>1</sup> 'And, when you shall consider,' he tells Stuart, 'through the certaine hatred of some, how much a mans innocency may bee in-danger'd by an vn-certaine accusation; you will, I doubt not, so beginne to hate the iniquitie of such natures, as I shall loue the contumely done me, whose end was so honorable, as to be wip'd off by your sentence.'

The passage which is likely to have brought Jonson into trouble was at the beginning of the fifth act, where La-Foole describes Daw as having a box of writing-materials

to draw maps of euery place, and person, where he comes.

CLE. How, maps of persons!

LA-F. Yes, sir, of NOMENTACK, when he was here, and of the Prince of MOLDAVIA, and of his mistris, mistris EPICOENE.

CLE. Away! he has not found out her latitude, I hope.

The words 'his mistris' unquestionably mean Daw's mistress, but in the context and, when spoken on the stage, they could be, and apparently were, interpreted to mean the Prince of Moldavia's mistress.

This sham prince was Stephano Janiculo, sometimes called Bogdan, for 'Bugdania' was another name for Moldavia.<sup>2</sup> He visited England in 1601 and enlisted the support of Elizabeth. He went to the English embassy at Constantinople, was lured from it and imprisoned by the Turks; he escaped disguised as a woman in 1606. He came to England in 1607 and left in November; King James was

<sup>1</sup> For instance, the Apologetical Dialogue to *Poetaster* was retrieved in the 1616 Folio (vol. iv, pp. 317 foll.).

<sup>2</sup> A full account of Stephano is given in Sir William Foster's edition of *The Travels of John Sanderson in the Levant 1584-1602*, pp. xxxv-vii, published by the Hakluyt Society, 1931. There is a contemporary notice of his adventures in *News from Poland* (1621, sigs. A 4 verso-B 4 verso), one of the countries to which he fled for refuge.

fool enough to give him a grant of £300, and next year to warrant the Levant Company to spend £3,000 in securing his 'restitution'.<sup>1</sup> Wotton's letters from Venice to Lord Salisbury throw further light on him. On 22 February 1608 Wotton writes that Stephano has arrived in Venice and proposes to quarter himself on Wotton. Wotton found Stephano and his portmanteaux one day at the embassy and asked for his credentials from the King. 'Whereupon he asked me very wonderingly whether I had no direction touching him from your Lordship, nor from my lady Arabella'—Arabella Stuart—'with a few other wild questions.'<sup>2</sup> Wotton politely packed him off, but he announced in Venice that, when he got his principedom, he was going to marry Lady Arabella. He was a safe distance from England before he ventured on this interesting announcement. But it caused a flutter in Venice because he was already married to a Venetian lady. On 7 November 1608 Wotton further reports to Salisbury that 'Stephano Bogdan' has written from Constantinople to the Archbishop of Philadelphia at Venice to divorce him from his Venetian wife. 'The matter is come to the hearing of her friends, who make no small noise of it, and the rather for a certain report, scattered here by the said intendant at his last passage this way (when he came from England), of some motions that had passed between him and the Lady Arabella of marriage, to succeed when he should be settled in his principedom.'<sup>3</sup> The lady's friends believed this, and pointed to James's treatment of him as corroborating the allegation.

The true facts about any proposals for Lady Arabella's marriage were well known in England and are on record. As a cousin of King James she was politically important. She was kept in confinement in December 1609 for promising her hand to an unnamed suitor—probably a rich

<sup>1</sup> See the *Calendar of Domestic State Papers* under the dates 26 October 1607, and 25 September 1608.

<sup>2</sup> See Logan Pearsall Smith, *The Life and Letters of Sir Henry Wotton*, vol. i, p. 414.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 438.



man, for she pleaded her poverty, and James pardoned her and gave her a pension.<sup>1</sup> On 2 February 1610 she became engaged to Sir William Seymour, and they appeared before the Privy Council and promised not to marry without the King's consent. She was granted a monopoly. But in July the pair married secretly and were imprisoned. In June 1611 she played an epicene part by escaping in boy's clothes from the Bishop of York who had charge of her, got to Blackwall and went on board a French vessel below Lee with several attendants; she was retaken at sea near Calais and lodged in the Tower.<sup>2</sup> She stayed there till her death in 1615.

Now within a week of her engagement to Seymour the Venetian ambassador on 8 February 1610 made a report which bears on *Epicoene*: 'Lady Arabella is seldom seen outside her rooms and lives in greater dejection than ever. She complains that in a certain comedy the play-wright introduced an allusion to her person and the part played by the Prince of Moldavia. The play was suppressed. Her Excellency is very ill-pleased and shows a determination in this coming Parliament'—which opened on 9 February—'to secure the punishment of certain persons, we don't know who.'<sup>3</sup> *Epicoene* was produced at the end of 1609 or the beginning of 1610: Wotton's report of November 1608 would set the scandal about Stephano afloat in England at once, but the statement of the Venetian ambassador slightly favours the latter date. Mr. Logan Pearsall Smith was the first to suggest that the suppressed play was *Epicoene*;<sup>4</sup> the suggestion has since been made independently by Sir E. K. Chambers.<sup>5</sup> The authorities would deal promptly with any insult, real or imagined, to a royal personage. Her

<sup>1</sup> *Domestic State Papers* under date 30 December 1609.

<sup>2</sup> See the report of Sir William Waad, lieutenant of the Tower, to Lord Salisbury in the *Domestic State Papers*, 5 June 1611, and Lady Dorothy Cope's letter to Carleton, 24 June.

<sup>3</sup> *Calendar of Venetian State Papers*, xi, no. 794, p. 427. The passage about the play is in cipher.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.* i, p. 414 n.

<sup>5</sup> *Elizabethan Stage*, iii. 370.

escapade in boy's clothes would lend colour to any rumour that she was referred to in the play.

One other passage in *Epicoene* betrays signs of nervousness. When Truewit disguises Cutberd as a doctor and Otter as a parson—'as able . . . and compleat . . . as may be wish'd'—Jonson adds this very undramatic proviso: 'And, I hope, without wronging the dignitie of either profession, since they are but persons put on, and for mirths sake, to torment him.'<sup>1</sup> The words may have been in the 'first Copy' which Jonson professed to reprint exactly, for he had got into trouble for satirizing lawyers in *Poetaster*.<sup>2</sup> But they read curiously like an afterthought inserted as a reply to critics.

Jonson should have had no difficulty in explaining the Moldavia allusion to the authorities when once they looked into it. But the further point arises—if they stopped the performance, would it be safe to print the passage in 1612 when Lady Arabella was in the Tower and the scandal fairly recent? By 1616 the affair was forgotten, and Jonson was just the man to let the world know what he had written, in order to show how wilfully he had been maligned.

To sum up this confusing and unsatisfactory evidence, we may say (1) it is clear that Burre at any rate intended to print the play in 1612; (2) Gifford says he had seen a quarto printed that year; (3) no one has seen it since. A quarto of 1612 would probably omit the passage supposed to reflect on Lady Arabella: that would account for Jonson's emphatic statement that the 1616 text was 'the first Copy' without the change of a line or syllable. A further clue to publication, or at least the intention to publish, in 1612 has been pointed out by Sir E. K. Chambers.<sup>3</sup> The commendatory verses prefixed to the Folio of 1616 include a copy by Francis Beaumont 'Vpon the Silent Woman', as well as his two poems in praise of *Volpone* and *Catiline* reprinted from the Quartos of those plays. Beaumont dis-

<sup>1</sup> Act iv, scene vii, 47-9.

<sup>2</sup> See vol. iv, p. 193.

<sup>3</sup> *Elizabethan State*, vol. iii, pp. 369-70.

cusses personal satire in the drama<sup>1</sup>—its effectiveness or otherwise in competent and incompetent hands—and Sir Edmund Chambers suggests that the lines were written for the Quarto of 1612. The suggestion must certainly be accepted, but it does not prove that Jonson did not keep the verses in his desk and use them for the first time in the Folio. The problem is insoluble unless a copy of the missing Quarto turns up.

The authoritative text is in any case that of the 1616 Folio. Jonson read the proofs, but not with his usual care. The misprints are mostly trivial, such as turned letters or wrong punctuation, but there are forty-seven of them.<sup>2</sup> The worst are 'a sauer i' the man' for 'saver in the main' (III. iii. 34); 'all women are not to be taken alwaies' for 'all ways' (IV. i. 90); and the misspellings '*numbre*' for '*nombre*' (IV. v. 329) and '*Paralisis*' (v. iii. 178).

In three large-paper copies of the 1616 Folio—the Grenville copy in the British Museum, the Fleming Crooks copy, now in the possession of Mr. H. L. Ford, and Sir C. Firth's copy, now in the possession of the editor—sheet Y y (Act I and Act II up to scene ii, line 64) has been reset. The line-arrangements of several pages differ from those of the ordinary issue; there are eighteen variant readings, all of which are wrong; the spelling is freely altered, the punctuation varies, and sometimes roman type is substituted for italic in the printing of proper names. In all, there are nearly two hundred and eighty changes. They have some textual importance because the Folio of 1640 was set up from a copy containing this ill-printed sheet.

The explanation is probably this. Large-paper copies of a work at the present day are usually printed after the ordinary issue on small paper has been worked off: there

<sup>1</sup> Satire at large, such as the character of Morose, not incidental allusions. Dryden was told that Jonson had known such a man (*Essays*, ed. Ker, vol. i, p. 84).

<sup>2</sup> Recorded in the critical apparatus, at II. ii. 37; III. 28, 56, 80, 113, 125, 134, 137, 139; IV. 17, 18, 51, 53, 54, 101; V. 1, 9, 23, 41, 45, 63, 81; VI. 21; III. iii. 19, 34, 87; V. 11, 28, 40, 45; VII. 32; IV. i. 90; V. 200, 213, 232, 260, 300, 305, 322, 329, 343; V. i. 11; III. 4, 52, 178; IV. 186.

is no clear proof that this was so in the seventeenth century, but probably it is the traditional practice. The dislocation in sheet Y y must have occurred when the edition was being printed off and after Jonson had passed the proofs. It was probably due to an accident in the printing-house—for instance, to a workman dropping the formes. It was reset without consulting Jonson. What he would have said if he had discovered a copy in this state can be but faintly imagined.

It would be useless to cumber the critical apparatus of *Epicoene* with this array of printer's variants. Thus there are thirty-eight interchanges of 'be' and 'bee', 'he' and 'hee', 'she' and 'shee', 'we' and 'wee', the printer taking the spelling which best suited his spacing of the line. A selection has been made giving (1) the deviations from the authorized text, (2) anything reproduced in the 1640 Folio which, but for this evidence, would be regarded as a change or a correction. But in the critical survey of the text which will precede the commentary a full record with a facsimile will be given because of the light it throws on the working methods of a seventeenth-century printer.

Stansby reprinted the play in quarto in 1620. The title-page is in two states. The first copies the Folio: 'Epicoene, or The silent Woman. A Comœdie. Acted in the yeare 1609. By the Children of her Majesties Revels. The Author B. I.' This was replaced by a cancel: 'The Silent Woman. A Comœdie. Acted by the Children of the Revels. The Author B. Ionson.' Had this been done earlier, we might have conjectured that *Epicoene* had disappeared because of its possible association with Lady Arabella, but no reason can be assigned for the change in 1620. 'Epicoene' is the only clue Jonson gave to the real sex of the character, but would any one but himself grasp its significance?

The collation, two leaves of A, B to O in fours, is in detail: A 1 recto, title-page; verso, blank; A 2 recto, the dedication; verso, the persons and the scene; B to O 4 recto, the text of the play; O 4 verso, blank. The running

title is '*The silent Woman*'. Five copies have been collated for the text of the present edition :

(1, 2) Two copies in the British Museum with press-marks 1346.a.9 and 644.b.51, the former T. Jolley's copy with the cancel title-page, the latter defective with sheet A missing.

(3) The Bodleian copy, formerly Malone's, with the original title-page : the press-mark is Malone 229 (3).

(4) The copy in the Harvard University Library, formerly W. A. White's, with the original title-page, from a photostat kindly supplied by the Librarian.

(5) The copy in the Dyce Library, with sheet A missing.

The Quarto is a grossly careless reprint of the 1616 Folio, with only two real departures from that text—'adiudg'd' for 'iudg'd' in III. ii. 57, and 'perpetuall about motion' for 'perpetuall motion' in V. iii. 63. These are not misprints like '*continue you it*' in V. ii. 62 or 'once againe' for 'once' in V. iii. 8, but they obviously have no authority. A stupid misprint of the Folio, 'you you'll' in II. iii. 139, is reproduced, and a speech which is obviously Truewit's is assigned to Clerimont (IV. iv. 186-9). Dropped or misplaced letters, which would strike the eye at once if Stansby or his corrector had glanced at the proofs—'pay' for 'pray', 'grat' for 'great', 'tls' for 'tis', 'id' for 'in'—disfigure the book. No variant readings have been detected in the copies examined.

The Folio of 1640 is a reprint by Richard Bishop of the 1616 Folio. Owing to the unfortunate accident that the copy which Bishop acquired from Stansby contained sheet Y y after it had been reset, the 1640 text reproduced its errors and alterations at the beginning of the play. The most important are the omission of the marginal note to the second prologue, explaining that it was '*Occasion'd by some persons impertinent exception*', and therefore, it may be assumed, never spoken on the stage ; the substitution of 'going' for 'marching' in I. i. 178 ; the omission of 'one CVT-BERD' in I. ii. 33 ; the assigning of La-Foole's

speech 'No, sir . . . Your seruant' in I. iv. 72-5 to Clerimont; and the odd change of 'puritane preachings' to 'Puritane Parlees' in II. ii. 34-5. It also introduced new blunders. In the list of the 'Persons of the Play' it duplicated the name of Mavis: she is 'MAD. MAVIS' in the list of the Collegiates, and also 'M<sup>rs</sup>. MAVIS, *The La. HAUGHTIES woman.*' instead of 'M<sup>rs</sup>. TRVSTY'. The chief textual errors are—'speake' for 'spend' (I. i. 36); 'particle' for 'article' (ib. 30); 'master' for 'mistris' (iv. 81); 'pitch' for 'pith' (III. ii. 44); 'ARTEMIDORTS' for 'ARTEMIDORVS' (ib. 62); 'difference' for 'diffidence' (IV. i. 68); 'search' for 'scratch' (v. 24); 'barke' for 'brake' (vi. 28); and '*divertendendo*' for '*diuertendo*' (v. iii. 72). The few corrections it makes are obvious, such as '*They*' for '*Thy*' (I. i. 102); 'DAW.' for 'DAV.' (II. iii. 125); and '*nombre*' for '*numbre*' (IV. v. 329). It changes the punctuation rather freely, especially in the substitution of the more logical semicolon for the comma; and it modernizes the spelling.

The text of the 1616 Folio has been twice reprinted. Dr. Aurelia Henry edited it for the Yale Studies in English, no. xxxi, in 1906: she took her text from the copy in the Library of Yale University and collated it with the two copies in the British Museum. Professor C. M. Gayley edited the play in his *Representative English Comedies*, 1913, vol. ii, pp. 113-43; he used one of the Bodleian copies. He modernizes the capitals and italics, and prints 'j' and 'v' according to current usage. The extremely accurate reprint of the Folio edited by Professor W. Bang at Louvain in the seventh volume of his *Materialien zur Kunde des älteren englischen Dramas* unfortunately stops short at the end of sheet Z z, which ends at Act III, scene i, line 20 of *Epicoene*.



# EPIC OE NE, O R

## The silent Woman.

*A Comædie.*

Acted in the yeere 1609. By  
the Children of her Maiesties

REVILLS.

The Author B. I.

HORAT.

*Vt sis tu similis Calî, Byrrhiq; latronum,  
Non ego sim Capri, neq; Sulci. Cur metuas me?*

---

L O N D O N,  
Printed by W I L L I A M S T A N S B Y.

---

M. D C. XVI.

The title-page of the 1616 Folio.





E P I C O E N E,  
O R  
The silent VVoman.

*A Comædie.*

Acted in the yeare 1609.  
*By the Children of her Majesties*  
R E V E L S.

The Author B. I.

H O R A T.

*Vt sis tu similis Cæli, Byrrhiq; latronum,  
Non ego sim Capri, neq; Sulci. Cur metuas me?*

---



---

L O N D O N,  
Printed by *William Stansby*, and are to be sold by  
*John Browne* at his shop in *Saint Dunstons*  
Church-yard in Fleetstreet.  
1 6 2 0.

The title-page of the 1620 Quarto, first issue.



# The Silent Woman.

*A Comœdie.*

Acted by the Children of the  
REVELS.

The Author B. IONSON.

HORAT.

*Vt sis tu similis Cæli, Dyrrihique latronum,  
Non ego sim Capri, neque Sulci. Cur metuas me?*

---



---

LONDON,  
Printed by *William Stansby*, and are to be sold by  
*John Browne* at his shop in *Saint Dunstons*  
*Church-yard* in *Fleetstreet*.  
1620.

The title-page of the 1620 Quarto, second issue.



# EPICŒNE, OR The Silent Woman.

A Comedy.

First Acted in the yeere 1609. By the  
Children of her MAJESTIES  
REVELLS.

With the allowance of the Master  
of REVELLS.

The Author B. J.

HORAT.

*Pe fit in fœculis Colla, Byrrhich, Latronum.  
Non ego sum Capri, neq; Salsici. Cui metuas me?*



---

LONDON,  
Printed by RICHARD BISHOP.

M. DC. XL.

The title-page of the 1640 Folio.



TO THE TRVLV  
NOBLE, BY ALL  
TITLES.

Sir Francis Stuart:

SIR,

**M***Y hope is not so nourish'd by example, as it will conclude, this dumbe peece should please you, by cause it hath pleas'd others before : but by trust, that when you haue read it, you will find it worthy to haue dis-pleas'd none. This makes, that I now num- 5 ber you, not onely in the Names of fauour, but the Names of iustice, to what I write ; and doe, presently, call you to the exercise of that noblest, and manlyest vertue : as coueting rather to be freed in my fame, by the authority of a Iudge, then the credit of an Vnder- 10 taker. Read therefore, I pray you, and censure. There is not a line, or syllable in it changed from the simplicity of the first Copy. And, when you shall consider, through the certaine hatred of some, how much a mans innocency may bee indanger'd by an 15 vn-certaine accusation ; you will, I doubt not, so beginne to hate the iniquitie of such natures, as I shall loue the contumely done me, whose end was so honorable, as to be wip'd off by your sentence.*

Your vnprofitable, but true loue, 20

BEN. IONSON.

DEDICATION. Heading TITLES ] TITLES, F2 3 by cause] because  
F3 10 then] than F2 (et passim) 18 honorable] honourable F2



## The Persons of the Play.

- MOROSE. *A Gent. that loues no noise.*  
 DAVP. EVGENIE. *A Knight his nephew.*  
 CLERIMONT. *A Gent. his friend.*  
 TRVE-WIT. *Another friend.*  
 5 EPICOENE. *A yong Gent. suppos'd the silent Woman.*  
 IOH. DAW. *A Knight, her seruant.*  
 AMOROUS LA FOOLE. *A Knight also.*  
 THOM: OTTER. *A land, and sea-Captaine.*  
 CVTBERD. *A Barber.*  
 10 MVTE. *One of MOROSE his seruants.*  
 MAD. HAUGHTY. }  
 MAD. CENTAVRE. } *Ladies Collegiates.*  
 M<sup>rs</sup>. MAVIS. }  
 M<sup>rs</sup>. TRVSTY. | *The La. HAUGHTIES woman.*  
 15 M<sup>rs</sup>. OTTER. | *The Captaines wife. { Pretenders.*  
 PARSON.  
 PAGES.  
 SERVANTS.

## THE SCENE

## LONDON.

20

THE PERSONS OF THE PLAY.      1, 3 Gent.] Gentleman Q      1 no]  
 not F2      11, 12 MAD.] Lady G      12 Collegiates] Col-  
 legiate F2, F3      13 M<sup>rs</sup>.] MAD. F2      14 M<sup>rs</sup>. TRVSTY] M<sup>rs</sup>. MAVIS  
 F2, F3      After The Scene F2 inserts the names of The principall  
 Comœdians given in F1 at the end of the Play.

# EPICOENE, OR The silent Woman.

## PROLOGVE.

**T**Ruth sayes, of old, the art of making plaies  
 Was to content the people ; & their praise  
 Was to the *Poet* money, wine, and bayes.  
 But in this age, a sect of writers are,  
 That, onely, for particular likings care, 5  
 And will taste nothing that is populare.  
 With such we mingle neither braines, nor brests ;  
 Our wishes, like to those (make publique feasts)  
 Are not to please the cookes tastes, but the guests.  
 Yet, if those cunning palates hether come, 10  
 They shall find guests entreaty, and good roome ;  
 And though all relish not, sure, there will be some,  
 That, when they leaue their seates, shall make 'hem say,  
 Who wrote that piece, could so haue wrote a play :  
 But that, he knew, this was the better way. 15  
 For, to present all custard, or all tart,  
 And haue no other meats, to beare a part,  
 Or to want bread, and salt, were but course art.  
 The *Poet* prayes you then, with better thought  
 To sit ; and, when his cates are all in brought, 20  
 Though there be none far fet, there will deare-bought  
 Be fit for ladies : some for lords, knights, squires,  
 Some for your waiting wench, and citie-wires,  
 Some for your men, and daughters of *white-Friars*.  
 Nor is it, onely, while you keepe your seate 25

Heading EPICOENE,] EPICOENE *Re, F2* PROLOGUE 8 (make  
 ... feasts)] make ... feasts, *Re, F2* 9 tastes,] taste *F2* 10  
 hether] hither *F2* 13 'hem] 'em *F3* (et passim) 21 far fet]  
 far-fet *F2*

Here, that his feast will last ; but you shall eate  
 A weeke at ord'naries, on his broken meat :  
 If his *Muse* be true,  
 Who commends her to you.

*Another.*

*Occa-  
 sion'd by  
 some per-  
 sons im-  
 pertinent  
 exception.*

**T**He ends of all, who for the *Scene* doe write,  
 Are, or should be, to profit, and delight.  
 And still 't hath beene the praise of all best times,  
 So persons were not touch'd, to taxe the crimes.  
 5 Then, in this play, which we present to night,  
 And make the object of your eare, and sight,  
 On forfeit of your selues, thinke nothing true :  
 Lest so you make the maker to iudge you.  
 For he knowes, *Poet* neuer credit gain'd  
 10 By writing truths, but things (like truths) well faïn'd.  
 If any, yet, will (with particular slight  
 Of application) wrest what he doth write ;  
 And that he meant or him, or her, will say :  
 They make a libell, which he made a play.

*Act I. Scene I.*

CLERIMONT, BOY, TRVE-WIT.

*He comes  
 out  
 making  
 himselfe  
 ready.*

**H**A' you got the song yet perfect I ga' you, boy ?  
 B O Y. Yes, sir.  
 C L E. Let me heare it.  
 B O Y. You shall, sir, but i'faith let no body else.  
 5 C L E. Why, I pray ?

PROLOGUE 27 ord'naries] ordinaries *Re* : Ordinaries *F2* 2nd  
 PROLOGUE Marginal note not in *Re*, *F2* 8 you.] you, *Re* : you ; *F2*  
 I. i. ACT I. SCENE I. | *A Room in Clerimont's House.* | *Enter Clerimont*  
*making himself ready, followed by his Page.* G 4 sir.] sir ; *F2*  
 5 pray] pay *Q*

B O Y. It will get you the dangerous name of a *Poet* in town, sir, besides me a perfect deale of ill will at the mansion you wot of, whose ladie is the argument of it : where now I am the welcom'st thing vnder a man that comes there.

10

C L E. I thinke, and aboue a man too, if the truth were rack'd out of you.

B O Y. No faith, I'll confesse before, sir. The gentlewomen play with me, and throw me o' the bed ; and carry me in to my lady ; and shee kisses me with her oil'd face ; and puts a perruke o' my head ; and askes me an' I will weare her gowne ; and I say, no : and then she hits me a blow o' the eare, and calls me innocent, and lets me goe.

C L E. No maruell, if the dore bee kept shut against your master, when the entrance is so easie to you—well sir, you shall goe there no more, lest I bee faine to seeke your voyce in my ladies rushes, a fortnight hence. Sing, sir.

Boy sings.

T R V. Why, here's the man that can melt away his time, and neuer feeles it ! what, betweene his mistris abroad, and his engle at home, high fare, soft lodging, fine clothes, and his fiddle ; hee thinkes the houres ha' no wings, or the day no post-horse. Well, sir gallant, were you strooke with the plague this minute, or condemn'd to any capitall punishment to morrow, you would beginne then to thinke, and value euery article o' your time, esteeme it at the true rate, and giue all for't.

C L E. Why, what should a man doe ?

T R V. Why, nothing : or that, which when 'tis done, is as idle. Harken after the next horse-race, or hunting-match ; lay wagers, praise *Puppy*, or *Pepper-corne*, *White-foote*, *Franklin* ; sweare vpon *White-maynes* partie ; spend aloud, that my lords may heare you ; visite my ladies at night, and bee able to giue 'hem the character of euery

Horses o' the time.

1 i. 7 sir.] sir ; F2      8 it:] it, Re, F2      15 oil'd] oyld Re, F2  
 17 gowne ;] gowne ? F2      22 St. dir. Boy sings.] Page sings. |  
 Still to be neat, still to be drest— | Enter Truewit G      27 strooke]  
 struck F2      30 article] particle F2      35 Marginal note not in  
 Re, F2      36 sweare] swere Q      spend] speak F2, F3

bowler, or better o' the greene. These be the things, wherein  
 40 your fashionable men exercise themselues, and I for companie.

C L E. Nay, if I haue thy authoritie, I'll not leaue yet. Come, the other are considerations, when wee come to haue gray heads, and weake hammes, moist eyes, and shrunke  
 45 members. Wee'll thinke on 'hem then ; then wee'll pray, and fast.

T R V. I, and destine onely that time of age to goodnesse, which our want of abilitie will not let vs employ in euill ?

C L E. Why, then 'tis time enough.

50 T R V. Yes : as if a man should sleepe all the terme, and thinke to effect his businesse the last day. O, C L E R I M O N T, this time, because it is an incorporeall thing, and not subiect to sense, we mocke our selues the fineliest out of it, with vanitie, and miserie indeede : not seeking an end  
 55 of wretchednesse, but onely changing the matter still.

C L E. Nay, thou'lt not leaue now——

T R V. See but our common disease ! with what iustice can wee complaine, that great men will not looke vpon vs, nor be at leisure to giue our affaires such dispatch, as wee  
 60 expect, when wee will neuer doe it to our selues : nor heare, nor regard our selues.

C L E. Foh, thou hast read P L V T A R C H S moralls, now, or some such tedious fellow ; and it shewes so vilely with thee : 'Fore god, 'twill spoile thy wit vtterly. Talke me of pinnes,  
 65 and feathers, and ladies, and rushes, and such things : and leaue this *Stoicitie* alone, till thou mak'st sermons.

T R V. Well, sir. If it will not take, I haue learn'd to loose as little of my kindnesse, as I can. I'll doe good to no man against his will, certainly. When were you at the colledge ?

70 C L E. What colledge ?

T R V. As if you knew not !

C L E. No faith, I came but from court, yesterday.

T R V. Why, is it not arriu'd there yet, the newes ? A

i. i. 39 better] bettor *F*2      48 our] ou *Q*      50 Yes:] Yes, *R*e, *F*2  
 56 CLE.] Clo. *Q*      60 nor heare] not heare *R*e, *F*2      72 but] bt *Q*

new foundation, sir, here i' the towne, of ladies, that call  
themselves the Collegiates, an order betweene courtiers, 75  
and country-madames, that live from their husbands ; and  
give entertainment to all the *Wits*, and *Braueries* o' the  
time, as they call 'hem : crie downe, or vp, what they like,  
or dislike in a braine, or a fashion, with most masculine, or  
rather *hermaphroditicall* authoritie : and, every day, gaine 80  
to their colledge some new probationer.

C L E. Who is the President ?

T R V. The graue, and youthfull matron, the lady  
H A V G H T Y.

C L E. A poxe of her autumnall face, her peec'd beautie : 85  
there's no man can bee admitted till shee be ready, now  
adaies, till shee has painted, and perfum'd, and wash'd, and  
scour'd, but the boy here ; and him shee wipes her oil'd  
lips vpon, like a sponge. I haue made a song, I pray thee  
heare it, o' the subiect. 90

S O N G.

*Still to be neat, still to be drest,  
As, you were going to a feast ;  
Still to be pou'dred, still perfum'd :  
Lady, it is to be presum'd,  
Though arts hid causes are not found, 95  
All is not sweet, all is not sound.  
Give me a looke, give me a face,  
That makes simplicitie a grace ;  
Robes loosely flowing, haire as free :  
Such sweet neglect more taketh me, 100  
Then all th'adulteries of art.  
They strike mine eyes, but not my heart.*

T R V. And I am, clearly, o' the other side : I loue  
a good dressing, before any beautie o' the world. O, a  
woman is, then, like a delicate garden ; nor, is there one 105  
kind of it : she may varie, every houre ; take often counsell

1. i. 88 scour'd] sour'd Re      89 pray thee] pr'y thee F2      92 As,]  
As F2      102 They Re, F2: Thy F1      not] not, Re

of her glasse, and choose the best. If shee haue good eares,  
 shew 'hem ; good haire, lay it out ; good legs, weare short  
 cloathes ; a good hand, discouer it often ; practise any art,  
 110 to mend breath, clense teeth, repaire eye-browes, paint, and  
 professe it.

C L E. How ? publicly ?

T R V. The doing of it, not the manner : that must bee  
 priuate. Many things, that seeme foule, i' the doing, doe  
 115 please, done. A lady should, indeed, studie her face, when  
 wee thinke shee sleepes : nor, when the dores are shut,  
 should men bee inquiring, all is sacred within, then. Is it  
 for vs to see their perrukes put on, their false teeth, their  
 complexion, their eye-browes, their nailes ? you see guilders  
 120 will not worke, but inclos'd. They must not discouer, how  
 little serues, with the helpe of art, to adorne a great deale.  
 How long did the canuas hang afore *Ald-gate* ? were the  
 people suffer'd to see the cities *Loue*, and *Charitie*, while  
 they were rude stone, before they were painted, and  
 125 burnish'd ? No. No more should seruants approach their  
 mistresses, but when they are compleat, and finish'd.

C L E. Well said, my T R V E - W I T.

T R V. And a wise ladie will keepe a guard alwaies vpon  
 the place, that shee may doe things securely. I once  
 130 followed a rude fellow into a chamber, where the poore  
 madame, for haste, and troubled, snatch'd at her perruke,  
 to couer her baldnesse : and put it on, the wrong way.

C L E. O prodigie !

T R V. And the vn-conscionable knaue held her in com-  
 135 plement an houre, with that reuerst face, when I still look'd  
 when shee should talke from the t'other side.

C L E. Why, thou should'st ha' releeu'd her.

T R V. No faith, I let her alone, as wee'l let this argu-  
 ment, if you please, and passe to another. When saw you  
 140 D A V P H I N E E V G E N I E ?

C L E. Not these three daies. Shall we goe to him this  
 morning ? he is very melancholique, I heare.

i. i. 107 choose] chuse *Re, F2*  
 121 serues] serue *Q*

117 inquiring,] inquiring ; *Re, F2*

T R V. Sicke o' the vncle? is hee? I met that stiffe peece of formalitie, his vncle, yesterday, with a huge turbant of night-caps on his head, buckled ouer his eares. 145

C L E. O, that's his custome when he walkes abroad. Hee can endure no noise, man.

T R V. So I haue heard. But is the disease so ridiculous in him, as it is made? they say, hee has beene vpon diuers treaties with the Fish-wiues, and Orenge-women; and 150 articles propounded betweene them: mary, the Chimney-sweepers will not be drawne in.

C L E. No, nor the Broome-men: they stand out stiffely. He cannot endure a Costard-monger, he swounes if he heare one.

T R V. Me thinkes, a Smith should be ominous. 155

C L E. Or any Hammer-man. A Brasier is not suffer'd to dwel in the parish, nor an Armorer. He would haue hang'd a Pewterers 'prentice once vpon a shroue-tuesdaies riot, for being o' that trade, when the rest were quit.

T R V. A Trumpet should fright him terribly, or the 160 Hau'-boyes?

C L E. Out of his senses. The Waights of the citie haue a pension of him, not to come neere that ward. This youth practis'd on him, one night, like the Bell-man; and neuer left till hee had brought him downe to the doore, with a 165 long-sword: and there left him flourishing with the aire.

B o y. Why, sir! hee hath chosen a street to lie in, so narrow at both ends, that it will receiue no coaches, nor carts, nor any of these common noises: and therefore, we that loue him, deuise to bring him in such as we may, now 170 and then, for his exercise, to breath him. Hee would grow resty else in his ease. His vertue would rust without action. I entreated a Beare-ward, one day, to come downe with the dogs of some foure parishes that way, and I thanke him, he did; & cryed his games vnder master M O R O S E 's win- 175 dore: till he was sent crying away, with his head made a most

i. i. 151 mary,] mary *Re*: marry *F2* (so usually) 158 vpon *Q*:  
vp on *F1*: on *Re*, *F2* 159 quit] quiet *F3* 170 in *om.* *Re*, *F2*  
172 ease. His] ease: his *Re*, *F2*



bleeding spectacle to the multitude. And, another time, a Fencer, marching to his prize, had his drum most tragically run through, for taking that street in his way, at my request.

180 T R V. A good wag. How do's he for the bells ?

C L E. O, i' the Queenes time, he was wont to goe out of towne euery satterday at ten a clock, or on holy-day-eues. But now, by reason of the sicknesse, the perpetuities of ringing has made him deuise a roome, with double walls, 185 and treble seelings ; the windores close shut, and calk'd : and there he liues by candle-light. He turn'd away a man, last weeke, for hauing a paire of new shooes that creak'd. And this fellow waits on him, now, in tennis-court socks, or slippers sol'd with wooll : and they talke each to other, 190 in a trunke. See, who comes here.

### *Act I. Scene II.*

DAUPHINE, TRVE-WIT, CLERIMONT.

HOW now ! what aile you sirs ? dumbe ?  
T R V. Strooke into stone, almost, I am here, with tales o' thine vncle ! There was neuer such a prodigie heard of.

D A V P. I would you would once loose this subiect, my 5 masters, for my sake. They are such as you are, that haue brought mee into that predicament, I am, with him.

T R V. How is that ?

D A V P. Mary, that he will dis-inherit me, no more. Hee thinks, I, and my companie are authors of all the ridiculous 10 acts, and moniments are told of him.

T R V. S'lid, I would be the author of more, to vex him, that purpose deserues it : it giues thee law of plaguing him. I'll tell thee what I would doe. I would make a false almanack ; get it printed : and then ha' him drawne out on 15 a coronation day to the *tower-wharfe*, and kill him with the

i. i. 178 marching] going *Re, F2, F3* 179 through] thorow *Q*  
189 sol'd] soal'd *F2* i. ii. Enter *Sir Dauphine Eugenie. G.*, continuing  
the scene 2 Strooke] Stroke *Re: Struck F2* 4 loose] lose *F2*  
9 authors] Authours *Q: authours F2* 10 moniments] mon'ments  
*Re, F2* 11 author] Author *Q*

noise of the ordinance. Dis-inherit thee ! hee cannot, man.  
Art not thou next of bloud, and his sisters sonne ?

D A V P. I, but he will thrust me out of it, he vowes, and marry.

T R V. How ! that's a more portent. Can he endure no <sup>20</sup> noise, and will venter on a wife ?

C L E. Yes : why, thou art a stranger, it seemes, to his best trick, yet. He has imploid a fellow this halfe yeere, all ouer *England*, to harken him out a dumbe woman ; bee shee of any forme, or any qualitie, so shee bee able to beare <sup>25</sup> children : her silence is dowrie enough, he saies.

T R V. But, I trust to god, he has found none.

C L E. No, but hee has heard of one that's lodg'd i' the next street to him, who is exceedingly soft-spoken ; thrifty of her speech ; that spends but sixe words a day. And her <sup>30</sup> hee's about now, and shall haue her.

T R V. Is't possible ! who is his agent i' the businesse ?

C L E. Mary, a Barber, one C V T - B E R D : an honest fellow, one that tells D A V P H I N E all here.

T R V. Why, you oppresse mee with wonder ! A woman, <sup>35</sup> and a barber, and loue no noise !

C L E. Yes faith. The fellow trims him silently, and has not the knacke with his sheeres, or his fingers : and that continence in a barber hee thinkes so eminent a vertue, as it has made him chiefe of his counsell. <sup>40</sup>

T R V. Is the barber to be seene ? or the wench ?

C L E. Yes, that they are.

T R V. I pray thee, D A V P H I N E, let's goe thether.

D A V P. I haue some businesse now : I cannot i' faith.

T R V. You shall haue no businesse shall make you neglect <sup>45</sup> this, sir, wee'll make her talke, beleuee it ; or if shee will not, wee can giue out, at least so much as shall interrupt the treatie : wee will breake it. Thou art bound in conscience, when hee suspects thee without cause, to torment him.

1. ii. 16 ordinance] Ordinance *F2* 22 Yes: why,] Yes, why *Re, F2*  
27 god] God *Q* 33 Barber,] Barber; *Re, F2* one CVT-BERD: om. *Re,*  
*F2, F3* 39 continence] continency *F2, F3* eminent] emient *Q* 43  
pray thee] pr'y thee *F2* (so 56) thether] thither *F2* (so 60) 46 sir,] sir; *F2*

50 D A V P. Not I, by any meanes. I'll giue no suffrage to't.  
He shall neuer ha' that plea against me, that I oppos'd the  
least phant'sie of his. Let it lie vpon my starres to be  
guiltie, I'll be innocent.

T R V. Yes, and be poore, and beg ; doe, innocent : when  
55 some groome of his has got him an heire, or this barber,  
if hee himselfe cannot. Innocent ! I pray thee, N E D,  
where lyes shee ? let him be innocent, still.

C L E. Why, right ouer against the barbers ; in the house,  
where sir I O H N D A W lyes.

60 T R V. You doe not meane to confound me !

C L E. Why ?

T R V. Do's he, that would marry her, know so much ?

C L E. I cannot tell.

T R V. 'Twere inough of imputation to her, with him.

65 C L E. Why ?

T R V. The onely talking sir i' th' towne ! I A C K D A W !  
And he teach her not to speake—God b'w'you. I haue  
some businesse too.

C L E. Will you not goe thether then ?

70 T R V. Not with the danger to meet D A W, for mine eares.

C L E. Why ? I thought you two had beene vpon very  
good termes.

T R V. Yes, of keeping distance.

C L E. They say he is a very good scholler.

75 T R V. I, and hee sayes it first. A poxe on him, a fellow  
that pretends onely to learning, buyes titles, and nothing  
else of bookes in him.

C L E. The world reports him to be very learned.

T R V. I am sorry, the world should so conspire to belie him.

80 C L E. Good faith, I haue heard very good things come  
from him.

T R V. You may. There's none so desperately ignorant to  
denie that: would they were his owne. God b'w'you gentle-  
men.

C L E. This is very abrupt !

Act I. Scene III.

DAVPHINE, CLERIMONT, BOY.

COME, you are a strange open man, to tell euery thing, thus.  
CLE. Why, beleue it DAVPHINE, TRVE-WIT'S  
a very honest fellow.

DAVP. I thinke no other : but this franke nature of his  
is not for secrets. 5

CLE. Nay, then, you are mistaken DAVPHINE : I  
know where he has beene well trusted, and discharg'd the  
trust very truely, and heartily.

DAVP. I contend not, NED, but, with the fewer a busi-  
nesse is carried, it is euer the safer. Now we are alone, if 10  
you'll goe thether, I am for you.

CLE. When were you there ?

DAVP. Last night : and such a *decameron* of sport fallen  
out ! BOCCACE neuer thought of the like. DAW do's  
nothing but court her ; and the wrong way. Hee would lie 15  
with her, and praises her modestie ; desires that shee would  
talke, and bee free, and commends her silence in verses :  
which hee reades, and sweares, are the best that euer man  
made. Then railes at his fortunes, stamps, and mutines, why  
he is not made a counsellor, and call'd to affaires of state. 20

CLE. I pray thee let's goe. I would faine partake this.  
Some water, Boy.

DAVP. Wee are inuited to dinner together, he and I, by  
one that came thether to him, sir LA-FOOLE.

CLE. O, that's a precious mannikin ! 25

DAVP. Doe you know him ?

CLE. I, and he will know you too, if ere he saw you but  
once, though you should meet him at church in the midst  
of praiers. Hee is one of the *Braueries*, though he be none  
o' the *Wits*. He will salute a Iudge vpon the bench, and 30  
a Bishop in the pulpit, a Lawyer when hee is pleading at

1. iii. G continues the scene 11 thether] thither F2 (so 24 14  
out l] out, Re, F2 21 pray thee] pr'y thee F2 (so 50) 22 Exit  
Page. add G 25 mannikin l] mannikin. Re, F2

the barre, and a Lady when shee is dauncing in a masque, and put her out. He do's giue playes, and suppers, and inuites his guests to 'hem, aloud, out of his windore, as they  
 35 ride by in coaches. He has a lodging in the *Strand* for the purpose. Or to watch when ladies are gone to the *China* houses, or the *Exchange*, that hee may meet 'hem by chance, and giue 'hem presents, some two or three hundred pounds-worth of toyes, to be laught at. He is neuer without a spare  
 40 banquet, or sweet-meats in his chamber, for their women to alight at, and come vp to, for a bait.

DAVP. Excellent! He was a fine youth last night, but now he is much finer! what is his christen-name? I ha' forgot.

45 CLE. Sir AMOROUS LA-FOOLE.

BOY. The gentleman is here below, that ownes that name.

CLE. Hart, hee's come, to inuite me to dinner, I hold my life.

50 DAVP. Like enough: pray thee, let's ha' him vp.

CLE. Boy, marshall him.

BOY. With a truncheon, sir?

CLE. Away, I beseech you. I'll make him tell vs his pedegree, now; and what meat he has to dinner; and,  
 55 who are his guests; and, the whole course of his fortunes: with a breath.

### *Act I. Scene III.*

LA-FOOLE, CLERIMONT, DAVPHINE.

S'Aue, deare sir DAVPHINE, honor'd master CLERIMONT.

CLE. Sir AMOROUS! you haue very much honested my lodging, with your presence.

1. iii. 36 purpose. Or] purpose: or *Re, F2* 38 presents] presents  
 40 for om. *Re, F2, F3* After 44 *Re-enter Page. G*  
 45 Sir] *Sis Re* 46 below om. *Re, F2, F3* owes *Re, F2*  
 53 After 'you.' *Exit Page. G* 1. iv. *Enter sir Amorous La-Foole. G,*  
 continuing the scene 1 honor'd] honour'd *F2*

LA - F. Good faith, it is a fine lodging ! almost, as delicate a lodging, as mine. 5

CLE. Not so, sir.

LA - F. Excuse me, sir, if it were i' the *Strand*, I assure you. I am come, master CLERIMONT, to entreat you wait vpon two or three ladies, to dinner, to day. 10

CLE. How, sir ! wait vpon 'hem ? did you euer see me carry dishes ?

LA - F. No, sir, dispence with me ; I meant, to beare 'hem companie.

CLE. O, that I will, sir. The doubtfulnessse o' your phrase, beleue it, sir, would breed you a quarrell, once an houre, with the terrible boyes, if you should but keepe 'hem fellowship a day. 15

LA - F. It should be extremely against my will, sir, if I contested with any man. 20

CLE. I beleue it, sir ; where hold you your feast ?

LA - F. At TOM OTTERS, sir.

DAVP. TOM OTTER ? what's he ?

LA - F. Captaine OTTER, sir ; he is a kind of gamster : but he has had command, both by sea, and by land. 25

DAVP. O, then he is *animal amphibium* ?

LA - F. I, sir : his wife was the rich *China*-woman, that the courtiers visited so often, that gaue the rare entertainment. She commands all at home.

CLE. Then, she is Captaine OTTER ? 30

LA - F. You say very well, sir ; she is my kins-woman, a LA - FOOLE by the mother side, and will inuite, any great ladies, for my sake.

DAVP. Not of the LA - FOOLES of *Essex* ?

LA - F. No, sir, the LA - FOOLES of *London*. 35

CLE. Now, h'is in.

LA - F. They all come out of our house, the LA - FOOLES o' the north, the LA - FOOLES of the west, the LA - FOOLES of the east, and south—we are as ancient a

I. iv. 17 but *om. Re, F2, F3* 24 gamster :] gamster, *Re*: gamester, *F2* 28 often,] often; *Re, F2* 38 of the west] o' the west *Q*

40 family, as any is in *Europe*—but I my selfe am descended  
 lineally of the *french* L A - F O O L E S—and, wee doe beare  
 for our coate *Yellow*, or *Or*, checker'd *Azure*, and *Gules*,  
 and some three or foure colours more, which is a very noted  
 coate, and has, some-times, beene solemnely worne by  
 45 diuers nobilitie of our house—but let that goe, antiquitie  
 is not respected now—I had a brace of fat Does sent me,  
 gentlemen, & halfe a dosen of phesants, a dosen or two of  
 godwits, and some other fowle, which I would haue eaten,  
 while they are good, and in good company—there will be  
 50 a great lady, or two, my lady H A V G H T Y, my lady  
 C E N T A V R E, mistris D O L M A V I S—and they come a'  
 purpose, to see the silent gentlewoman, mistris E P I C O E N E,  
 that honest sir I O H N D A W has promis'd to bring thether  
 —and then, mistris T R V S T Y, my ladies woman, will be  
 55 there too, and this honorable Knight, sir D A V P H I N E,  
 with your selfe, master C L E R I M O N T—and wee'll bee  
 very merry, and haue fidlers, and daunce—I haue beene a  
 mad wag, in my time, and haue spent some crownes since  
 I was a page in court, to my lord L O R T Y, and after, my  
 60 ladies gentleman-vsher, who got mee knighted in *Ireland*,  
 since it pleas'd my elder brother to die—I had as faire a  
 gold ierkin on that day, as any was worne in the *Iland*-  
 voyage, or at *Caliz*, none disprais'd, and I came ouer in it  
 hither, show'd my selfe to my friends, in court, and after  
 65 went downe to my tenants, in the countrey, and suruai'd  
 my lands, let new leases, tooke their money, spent it in the  
 eye o' the land here, vpon ladies—and now I can take vp  
 at my pleasure.

D A V P. Can you take vp ladies, sir ?

70 C L E. O, let him breath, he has not recouer'd.

D A V P. Would I were your halfe, in that commoditie—

L A - F. No, sir, excuse mee : I meant money, which can  
 take vp any thing. I haue another guest, or two, to inuite,

1. iv. 42 for *om. Re, F2, F3* 50 great] grat Q 55 honorable]  
 honourable Q, F2 63 *Caliz*] *Cadiz* F3 71 commoditie—  
 commodity. *Re, F2* 72 *LA-F.*] *CLE. Re, F2, F3*

and say as much to, gentlemen. I'll take my leaue abruptly,  
in hope you will not faile—Your seruant.

75

D A V P. Wee will not faile you, sir precious L A - F O O L E ;  
but shee shall, that your ladies come to see : if I haue  
credit, afore sir D A W.

C L E. Did you euer heare such a wind-fucker, as this ?

D A V P. Or, such a rooke, as the other ! that will betray so  
his mistris, to be seene. Come, 'tis time, we preuented it.

C L E. Goe.

## Act II. Scene I.

M O R O S E, M V T E.

C Annot I, yet, find out a more compendious method,  
then by this trunke, to saue my seruants the labour  
of speech, and mine eares, the discord of sounds ? Let mee  
see : all discourses, but mine owne, afflict mee, they seeme  
harsh, impertinent, and irksome. Is it not possible, that  
thou should'st answere me, by signes, and, I apprehend  
thee, fellow ? speake not, though I question you. You haue  
taken the ring, off from the street dore, as I bad you ?  
answere me not, by speech, but by silence ; vnlesse, it be  
otherwise (—) very good. And, you haue fastened on  
a thicke quilt, or flock-bed, on the out-side of the dore ;  
that if they knocke with their daggers, or with bricke-bats,  
they can make no noise ? but with your leg, your answere,  
vnlesse it be otherwise (—) very good. This is not, onely,  
fit modestie in a seruant, but good state, and discretion in  
a master. And you haue been with C V T B E R D, the  
barber, to haue him come to me ? (—) good. And, he  
will come presently ? answere me not but with your leg,  
vnlesse it be otherwise : if it be otherwise, shake your head,  
or shrug (—) so. Your *Italian*, and *Spaniard*, are wise in

*At the  
breaches,  
still the  
fellow  
makes  
legs : or  
signes.*

i. iv. 75 *Exit*. add G 79 -fucker] -sucker F3 81 mistris] master  
F2 : Master F3 82 *Exeunt*. add G ii. i. ACT II. SCENE I. | *A*  
*Room in Morose's House.* | *Enter Morose with a tube in his hand, followed*  
*by Mute.* G 1 Cannot] Can not Re, F2 9 vnlesse,] vnlesse F2 13 your  
answere] you answer F2, F3 20 shrug (—) so] shrug. (—) So Re, F2



these ! and it is a frugall, and comely grauitie. How long will it bee, ere CVTBERD come ? stay, if an houre, hold vp your whole hand ; if halfe an houre, two fingers ; if a quarter, one ; (—) good : halfe a quarter ? 'tis well. And  
 25 haue you giuen him a key, to come in without knocking ? (—) good. And, is the lock oild, and the hinges, to day ? (—) good. And the quilting of the staires no where worne out, and bare ? (—) very good. I see, by much doctrine, and impulsion, it may be effected : stand by. The *Turke*,  
 30 in this diuine discipline, is admirable, exceeding all the potentates of the earth ; still waited on by mutes ; and all his commands so executed ; yea, euen in the warre (as I haue heard) and in his marches, most of his charges, and directions, giuen by signes, and with silence : an exquisite  
 35 art ! and I am heartily asham'd, and angrie often-times, that the Princes of *Christendome*, should suffer a *Barbarian*, to transcend 'hem in so high a point of felicitie. I will practise it, hereafter. How now ? oh ! oh ! what villaine ? what prodigie of mankind is that ? looke. Oh ! cut his throat, cut his throat : what murderer, hell-hound, deuill can this be ?

*One  
windes  
a horne  
without.  
Againe.*

M v t. It is a post from the court——

M o r. Out rogue, and must thou blow thy horne, too ?

M v t. Alas, it is a post from the court, sir, that sayes,  
 45 hee must speake with you, paine of death——

M o r. Paine of thy life, be silent.

## *Act II. Scene II.*

TRVE-WIT, MOROSE, CVTBERD.

BY your leaue, sir (I am a stranger here) is your name, master MOROSE ? is your name, master MOROSE ? fishes ! *Pythagoreans* all ! this is strange ! What say you, sir, nothing ? Has HARPOCRATES beene here, with

II. i. 24 After 'one' holds up a finger bent. G 39 After 'looke.'  
 Exit Mute. G 40 deuill] diuill Fa After 41 Re-enter Mute. G  
 45 with om. Re, Fa, F3 II. ii. Enter Truewit with a post-horn, and  
 a halter in his hand. G, continuing the scene 1 sir (I . . . here)] sir,  
 I . . . here: Re, Fa 3 all !] all ? Re, Fa strange !] strange. Re, Fa

his club, among you? well sir, I will beleue you to bee the man, at this time: I will venter vpon you, sir. Your friends at court commend 'hem to you, sir——

(M o R. O men! ô manners! was there euer such an impudence?)

T R V. And are extremely solicitous for you, sir. 10

M o R. Whose knaue are you!

T R V. Mine owne knaue, and your compere, sir.

M o R. Fetch me my sword——

T R V. You shall taste the one halfe of my dagger, if you do (groome) and you, the other, if you stirre, sir: be patient, I charge you, in the kings name, and heare mee without insurrection. They say, you are to marry? to marry! doe you marke, sir?

M o R. How then, rude companion!

T R V. Mary, your friends doe wonder, sir, the *Thames* being so neere, wherein you may drowne so handsomely; or *London-bridge*, at a low fall, with a fine leape, to hurry you downe the streame; or, such a delicate steeple, i' the towne, as *Bow*, to vault from; or, a brauer height, as *Pauls*; or, if you affected to doe it neerer home, and a shorter way, an excellent garret windore, into the street; or, a beame, in the said garret, with this halter; which they haue sent, and desire, that you would sooner commit your graue head to this knot, then to the wed-lock nooze; or, take a little sublimate, and goe out of the world, like a rat; or a flie (as one said) with a straw i' your arse: any way, rather, then to follow this goblin *matrimony*. Alas, sir, doe you euer thinke to find a chaste wife, in these times? now? when there are so many masques, plaies, puritane preachings, mad-folkes, and other strange sights to be seene daily, priuate and publique? if you had liu'd in king *ETHELRED*'s time, sir, or *EDWARD* the Confessors,

*He shewes him a halter.*

ii. ii. 6 venter] venture F3 14 taste] taste, Re, F2 21 drowne] drowne, Re, F2 25 Pauls; Re, F2: Pauls, F1, Q 26 windore] window Re, F2 27 halter;] halter, Re, F2 31 or] or, Re, F2 35 preachings] parlee's Re: Parlees F2, F3 seene] seene, F2 37 *ETHELRED*'s Re, F2: *ETHELDRED*'s F1: *Etheldred*'s Q

you might, perhaps, haue found in some cold countrey-hamlet, then, a dull frostie wench, would haue been con-  
 40 tented with one man : now, they will as soone be pleas'd with one leg, or one eye. I'll tell you, sir, the monstrous hazards you shall runne with a wife.

M O R. Good sir ! haue I euer cosen'd any friends of yours of their land ? bought their possessions ? taken for-  
 45 feit of their morgage ? begg'd a reuersion from 'hem ? bastarded their issue ? what haue I done, that may deserue this ?

T R V. Nothing, sir, that I know, but your itch of marriage.

50 M O R. Why ? if I had made an assassinate vpon your father ; vitiated your mother ; rauished your sisters——

T R V. I would kill you, sir, I would kill you, if you had.

M O R. Why ? you doe more in this, sir : It were a vengeance centuple, for all facinorous acts, that could be  
 55 nam'd, to doe that you doe——

T R V. Alas, sir, I am but a messenger : I but tell you, what you must heare. It seemes, your friends are carefull after your soules health, sir, and would haue you know the danger (but you may doe your pleasure, for all them, I per-  
 60 swade not, sir) If, after you are married, your wife doe run away with a vaulter, or the *Frenchman* that walkes vpon ropes, or him that daunces the iig, or a fencer for his skill at his weapon, why it is not their fault ; they haue discharged their consciences : when you know what may hap-  
 65 pen. Nay, suffer valiantly, sir, for I must tell you, all the perills that you are obnoxious too. If shee be faire, yong, and vegetous, no sweet meats euer drew more flies ; all the yellow doublets, and great roses i' the towne will bee there. If foule, and crooked, shee'll bee with them, and buy those  
 70 doublets and roses, sir. If rich, and that you marry her dowry, not her ; shee'll raigne in your house, as imperious

11. ii. 39 frostie] frostrie Q 43 cosen'd] cosen'd, Re, F2 44 yours] yours, Re, F2 45 morgage] Mortgage F3 51 mother:] mother : Re, F2 53 It] it Re, F2 59 them,] them ; F2 60 If] if Re, F2 62 fencer] fencer, Re, F2 66 yong, and] and young, Q

as a widow. If noble, all her kindred will be your tyrannes.  
 If fruitfull, as proud as *May*, and humorous as *April*; she  
 must haue her doctors, her midwiues, her nurses, her long-  
 ings euery houre: though it be for the dearest morsell of 75  
 man. If learned, there was neuer such a parrat; all your  
 patrimony will be too little for the guests, that must be  
 inuited, to heare her speake *Latine* and *Greeke*: and you  
 must lie with her in those languages too, if you will please  
 her. If precise, you must feast all the silenc'd brethren, 80  
 once in three daies; salute the sisters; entertaine the whole  
 family, or wood of 'hem; and heare long-winded exercises,  
 singings, and catechisings, which you are not giuen to, and  
 yet must giue for: to please the zealous matron your wife,  
 who, for the holy cause, will cosen you, ouer and aboue. 85  
 You beginne to sweat, sir? but this is not halfe, i' faith:  
 you may do your pleasure notwithstanding, as I said before,  
 I come not to perswade you. Vpon my faith, master  
 seruigman, if you doe stirre, I will beat you.

*The Mute  
 is stealing  
 away.*

M O R. O, what is my sinne! what is my sinne?

90

T R V. Then, if you loue your wife, or rather, dote on her,  
 sir: ô, how shee'll torture you! and take pleasure i' your  
 torments! you shall lye with her but when she lists; she  
 will not hurt her beauty, her complexion; or it must be  
 for that iewell, or that pearle, when she do's; euery halfe 95  
 houres pleasure must be bought anew: and with the same  
 paine, and charge, you woo'd her at first. Then, you must  
 keepe what seruants shee please; what company shee will;  
 that friend must not visit you without her licence; and him  
 shee loues most shee will seeme to hate eagerliest, to decline 100  
 your ielousie; or, faine to bee ielous of you first; and for  
 that cause goe liue with her she-friend, or cosen at the col-  
 ledge, that can instruct her in all the mysteries, of writing  
 letters, corrupting seruants, taming spies; where shee must  
 haue that rich gounes for such a great day; a new one for 105  
 the next; a richer for the third; bee seru'd in siluer; haue  
 the chamber fill'd with a succession of groomes, foot-men,

vshers, and other messengers ; besides embroyderers, iewel-  
 lers, tyre-women, sempsters, fether-men, perfumers ; while  
 110 shee feeles not how the land drops away ; nor the acres  
 melt ; nor forsees the change, when the mercer has your  
 woods for her veluets ; neuer weighes what her pride costs,  
 sir : so shee may kisse a page, or a smoth chinne, that has  
 the despaire of a beard ; bee a states-woman, know all the  
 115 newes, what was done at *Salisbury*, what at the *Bath*, what  
 at court, what in progresse ; or, so shee may censure *poets*,  
 and authors, and stiles, and compare 'hem, DANIEL with  
 SPENSER, IONSON with the tother youth, and so  
 forth ; or, be thought cunning in controuersies, or the very  
 120 knots of diuinitie ; and haue, often in her mouth, the state  
 of the question : and then skip to the *Mathematiques*, and  
 demonstration and answere, in religion to one ; in state, to  
 another, in baud'ry to a third.

M O R. O, ô !

125 T R V. All this is very true, sir. And then her going in  
 disguise to that coniurer, and this cunning woman : where  
 the first question is, how soone you shall die ? next, if her  
 present seruant loue her ? next that, if she shall haue a new  
 seruant ? and how many ? which of her family would make  
 130 the best baud, male, or female ? what precedence shee shall  
 haue by her next match ? and sets downe the answers, and  
 beleeuues 'hem aboue the scriptures. Nay, perhaps she'll  
 study the art.

M O R. Gentle sir, ha' you done ? ha' you had your  
 135 pleasure o' me ? I'll thinke of these things.

T R V. Yes sir : and then comes reeking home of vapor  
 and sweat, with going afoot, and lies in, a moneth, of a new  
 face, all oyle, and birdlime ; and rises in asses milke, and  
 is clens'd with a new *fucus* : god b'w'you, sir. One thing  
 140 more (which I had almost forgot.) This too, with whom  
 you are to marry, may haue made a conuayance of her

II. ii. III forsees] foresees Q, F2  
 JOHNSON F2 136 vapor] vapour F2  
 ningham conj. 139 god] God Q

118 IONSON] Iohnson Q :  
 138 rises] rinses F. Cun-

virginity aforehand, as your wise widdowes doe of their states, before they marry, in trust to some friend, sir : who can tell ? or if she haue not done it yet, she may doe, vpon the wedding day, or the night before, and antidate you 145 cuckold. The like has beene heard of, in nature. 'Tis no deu's'd impossible thing, sir. God b'w'you : I'll be bold to leaue this rope with you, sir, for a remembrance. Farewell M V T E.

M O R. Come, ha' me to my chamber : but first shut the dore. O, shut the dore, shut the dore : Is he come againe ? *The horne againe.*

C V T. 'Tis I, sir, your barber.

M O R. O, C V T B E R D, C V T B E R D, C V T B E R D ! here has bin a cut-throate with me : helpe me in to my bed, and giue me physicke with thy counsell. 155

Act II. Scene III.

D A W, C L E R I M O N T, D A V P H I N E, E P I C O E N E.

N Ay, and she will, let her refuse, at her owne charges : 'tis nothing to me, gentlemen. But she will not bee inuited to the like feasts, or guests, euery day.

C L E. O, by no meanes, shee may not refuse—to stay at home, if you loue your reputation : 'Slight, you are inuited thither o' purpose to bee seene, and laught at by the lady of the colledge, and her shadowes. This trumpeter hath proclaim'd you. *They disswade her, priuately.*

D A V P. You shall not goe ; let him be laught at in your steade, for not bringing you : and put him to his extem- 10 porall faculty of fooling, and talking loud to satisfie the company.

C L E. He will suspect vs, talke aloud. 'Pray, mistris E P I C O E N E, let's see your verses ; we haue sir I O H N

II. ii. 144 or if] orif Fr 146 beene] bin Q 149 Exit. add G  
After 151 Enter Cutbeard. G 154 bin] beene F2 II. iii. SCENE II. |  
A Room in sir John Daw's House. | Enter Daw, Clerimont, Dauphine,  
and Epicane. G 1 and] an' F2 8 proclaim'd] proclym'd Q  
13 'Pray, Q : 'Pray' Fr : 'Pray' F2 14 verses ;] verses, F2

15 D A W 's leaue : doe not conceale your seruants merit, and  
your owne glories.

E P I. They'll proue my seruants glories, if you haue his  
leaue so soone.

D A V P. His vaine glories, lady !

20 D A W. Shew 'hem, shew 'hem, mistris, I dare owne  
'hem.

E P I. Iudge you, what glories ?

D A W. Nay, I'll read 'hem my selfe, too : an author must  
recite his owne workes. It is a *madrigall* of modestie.

25 *Modest, and faire, for faire and good are neere*  
*Neighbours, how ere.—*

D A V P. Very good.

C L E. I, is't not ?

D A W. *No noble vertue euer was alone,*  
30 *But two in one.*

D A V P. Excellent !

C L E. That againe, I pray' sir I O H N.

D A V P. It has some thing in 't like rare wit, and sense.

C L E. Peace.

35 D A W. *No noble vertue euer was alone,*  
*But two in one.*  
*Then, when I praise sweet modestie, I praise*  
*Bright beauties raies :*  
*And hauing prais'd both beauty'and modestee,*  
40 *I haue prais'd thee.*

D A V P. Admirable !

C L E. How it chimes, and cries tinke i' the close, diuinely !

D A V P. I, 'tis S E N E C A.

C L E. No, I thinke 'tis P L V T A R C H.

45 D A W. The *dor* on P L V T A R C H, and S E N E C A, I  
hate it : they are mine owne imaginations, by that light.  
I wonder those fellowes haue such credit with gentlemen !

C L E. They are very graue authors.

ii. iii. 20 DAW corr. F1 : Daw F1 originally 24 his | owne  
workes corr. F1 : his own | workes F1 originally workes] Worke Q  
madrigall corr. F1, F2 : madrigall F1 originally : Madrigall Q 28 is't]  
is't Ff. Q 32 pray'] pray F2 39 beauty'and] beauty and F2

DAW. Graue asses! meere *Essaists*! a few loose sentences, and that's all. A man would talke so, his whole 50 age, I doe vtter as good things euery houre, if they were collected, and obseru'd, as either of 'hem.

DAVP. Indeede! sir IOHN?

CLE. Hee must needs, liuing among the *Wits*, and *Braueries* too. 55

DAVP. I, and being president of 'hem, as he is.

DAW. There's ARISTOTLE, a mere common-place fellow; PLATO, a discourser; THYCIDIDES, and LIVIE, tedious and drie; TACITVS, an entire knot: sometimes worth the vntying, very seldome. 60

CLE. What doe you think of the *Poets*, sir IOHN?

DAW. Not worthy to be nam'd for authors. HOMER, an old tedious prolixasse, talkes of curriers, and chines of beefe. VIRGIL, of dunging of land, and bees. HORACE, of I know not what. 65

CLE. I thinke so.

DAW. And so PINDARVS, LYCOPHRON, ANACREON, CATVLLVS, SENECA the tragœdian, LVCAN, PROPERTIVS, TIBVLLVS, MARTIAL, IUVENAL, AVSONIVS, STATIVS, POLITIAN, VALERIVS 70 FLACCVS, and the rest—

CLE. What a sacke full of their names he has got!

DAVP. And how he poures 'hem out! POLITIAN, with VALERIVS FLACCVS!

CLE. Was not the character right, of him? 75

DAVP. As could be made, i' faith.

DAW. And PERSIVS, a crabbed cockescombe, not to be endur'd.

DAVP. Why? whom do you account for authors, sir IOHN DAW? 80

DAW. *Syntagma Iuris ciuilis*, *Corpus Iuris ciuilis*, *Corpus Iuris canonici*, the King of Spaines bible.

DAVP. Is the King of Spaines bible an author?

II. iii. 51 age,] age; F<sub>2</sub> 57 There's corr. Fr, Q, F<sub>2</sub>: There is Fr originally common-place fellow F<sub>2</sub>: common place-fellow Fr, Q 81 *Corpus Iuris canonici*] *Corpus Iuris canonici* F<sub>1</sub>



C L E. Yes, and *Syntagma*.

85 D A V P. What was that *Syntagma*, sir?

D A W. A ciuill law*(i)*er, a *Spaniard*.

D A V P. Sure, *Corpus* was a *Dutch*-man.

C L E. I, both the *Corpusses*, I knew 'hem: they were very corpulent authors.

90 D A W. And, then there's V A T A B L V S, P O M P O N A T I V S, S Y M A N C H A, the other are not to be receiu'd, within the thought of a scholler.

D A V P. Fore god, you haue a simple learn'd seruant, lady, in titles.

95 C L E. I wonder that hee is not called to the helme, and made a counsellor!

D A V P. He is one extraordinary.

C L E. Nay, but in ordinarie! to say truth, the state wants such.

100 D A V P. Why, that will follow.

C L E. I muse, a mistris can be so silent to the dotes of such a seruant.

D A W. 'Tis her vertue, sir. I haue written somewhat of her silence too.

105 D A V P. In verse, sir I O H N?

C L E. What else?

D A V P. Why? how can you iustifie your owne being of a *Poet*, that so slight all the old *Poets*?

D A W. Why? euery man, that writes in verse, is not  
110 a *Poet*; you haue of the *Wits*, that write verses, and yet are no *Poets*: they are *Poets* that liue by it, the poore fellowes that liue by it.

D A V P. Why? would not you liue by your verses, sir I O H N?

115 C L E. No, 'twere pittie he should. A knight liue by his verses? he did not make 'hem to that ende, I hope.

D A V P. And yet the noble S I D N E Y liues by his, and the noble family not asham'd.

ii. iii. 86 law*(i)*er] Lawier Q  
93 god] God Q

91 SYMANCHA,] SYMANCHA; F#  
114 IOHN ?] IOHN. Ff

CLE. I, he profest himselfe ; but sir I O H N D A W has more caution : hee'll not hinder his owne rising i' the state 120 so much ! doe you thinke hee will ? Your verses, good sir I O H N, and no *poems*.

DAW. *Silence in woman, is like speech in man,  
Deny't who can.*

DAV. Not I, beleue it : your reason, sir. 125

DAW. *Nor, is't a tale,  
That female vice should be a vertue male,  
Or masculine vice, a female vertue be :  
You shall it see  
Prou'd with increase, 130  
I know to speake, and shee to hold her peace.*

Do you conceiue me, gentlemen ?

DAV. No faith, how meane you with increase, sir I O H N ?

DAW. Why, with increase is, when I court her for the comon cause of mankind ; and she says nothing, but *con-* 135 *sentire videtur* : and in time is *grauida*.

DAV. Then, this is a ballad of procreation ?

CLE. A *madrigall* of procreation, you mistake.

EPI. 'Pray giue me my verses againe, seruant.

DAW. If you'll aske 'hem aloud, you shal. 140

CLE. See, here 's T R V E - W I T againe !

## Act II. Scene III.

CLERIMONT, T R V E - W I T, D A V P H I N E,

C V T - B E R D, D A W, E P I C O E N E.

W Here hast thou beene, in the name of madnesse !  
thus accoutred with thy horne ?

T R V. Where the sound of it might haue pierc'd your senses, with gladnes, had you beene in eare-reach of it.

II. iii. 122 and] are F<sub>2</sub>, F<sub>3</sub> 126 DAW. F<sub>2</sub>: DAV. F<sub>1</sub>: *Daup.* Q  
is't F<sub>2</sub>: i'st F<sub>1</sub>, Q 130 increase,] increase ; F<sub>2</sub> 133 faith,]  
faith ; F<sub>2</sub> 135 nothing] nothiug F<sub>1</sub> 138 procreation] procreation  
F<sub>1</sub> 140 you'll] you you'll F<sub>1</sub>, Q: you'le F<sub>2</sub> *Walks aside with the*  
*papers.* add G After 140 Enter Truewit with his horn. G 141  
T R V E - W I T Tru-wit Q (which adopts this spelling from this point)  
II. iv. G continues the scene

5 D A V P H I N E, fall downe and worship me : I haue forbid  
the banes, lad. I haue been with thy vertuous vncle, and  
haue broke the match.

D A V P. You ha' not, I hope.

T R V. Yes faith ; and thou shouldst hope otherwise, I  
10 should repent me : this horne got me entrãnce, kisse it.  
I had no other way to get in, but by faining to be a post ;  
but when I got in once, I prou'd none, but rather the con-  
trary, turn'd him into a post, or a stone, or what is stiffer,  
with thundring into him the incommodities of a wife, and  
15 the miseries of marriage. If euer G O R G O N were seene  
in the shape of a woman, hee hath seene her in my descrip-  
tion. I haue put him off o' that sent, for euer. Why doe  
you not applaud, and adore me, sirs ? why stand you  
mute ? Are you stupid ? you are not worthy o' the benefit.

20 D A V P. Did not I tell you ? mischiefe !—

C L E. I would you had plac'd this benefit somewhere  
else.

T R V. Why so ?

C L E. Slight, you haue done the most inconsiderate, rash,  
25 weake thing, that euer man did to his friend.

D A V P. Friend ! if the most malicious enemy I haue,  
had studied to inflict an iniury vpon me, it could not bee  
a greater.

T R V. Whercin ? for gods-sake ! Gent : come to your  
30 selues againe.

D A V P. But I presag'd thus much afore, to you.

C L E. Would my lips had beene soldred, when I spak  
on 't. Slight, what mou'd you to be thus impertinent ?

T R V. My masters, doe not put on this strange face to  
35 pay my courtesie : off with this visor. Haue good turnes  
done you, and thanke 'hem this way ?

D A V P. Fore heau'n, you haue vndone me. That, which  
I haue plotted for, and beene maturing now these foure  
moneths, you haue blasted in a minute : now I am lost,

II. iv. 9 and] an' F<sub>2</sub> 10 entrance,] entrance; F<sub>2</sub> 17 haue]  
hane Fr sent] scent F<sub>3</sub> 17 Why] Wby Fr 32 spak] spake  
Q, F<sub>2</sub>

I may speake. This gentlewoman was lodg'd here by me 40  
o' purpose, and, to be put vpon my vncke, hath profest this  
obstinate silence for my sake, being my entire friend ; and  
one, that for the requitall of such a fortune, as to marry  
him, would haue made mee very ample conditions : where  
now, all my hopes are vtterly miscarried by this vn lucky 45  
accident.

C L E. Thus 'tis, when a man will be ignorantly officious ;  
doe seruices, and not know his why : I wonder what cur-  
teous itch possess'd you ! you neuer did absurder part i'  
your life, nor a greater trespassse to friendship, to humanity. 50

D A V P. Faith, you may forgiue it, best : 'twas your  
cause principally.

C L E. I know it, would it had not.

D A V P. How now C V T B E R D ? what newes ?

C v t. The best, the happiest that euer was, sir. There 55  
has beene a mad gentleman with your vncke, this morning  
(I thinke this be the gentleman) that has almost talk'd him  
out of his wits, with threatning him from marriage—

D A V P. On, I pray thee.

C v t. And your vncke, sir, hee thinkes 'twas done by 60  
your procurement ; therefore he will see the party, you wot  
of, presently : and if he like her, he sayes, and that she be  
so inclining to dombe, as I haue told him, he sweares hee  
will marry her, to day, instantly, and not deferre it a minute  
longer. 65

D A V P. Excellent ! beyond our expectation !

T R v. Beyond your expectation ? by this light, I knewe  
it would bee thus.

D A V P. Nay, sweet T R V E - W I T, forgiue me.

T R v. No, I was ignorantly officious, impertinent : this 70  
was the absurd, weake part.

C L E. Wilt thou ascribe that to merit, now, was meere  
fortune ?

II. iv. 50 to humanity] or humanity F<sub>2</sub>, F<sub>3</sub> 51 DAVP.] DAVP F<sub>1</sub>  
it,] it F<sub>2</sub> 53 CLE.] DLE. F<sub>1</sub> After 53 Enter Cui beard. G 54  
DAVP.] CAVP. F<sub>1</sub> 56 After 'morning' seeing Truewit. G 59 pray  
thee] pr'y thee F<sub>2</sub> 63 dombe] dumbe F<sub>2</sub> 67 your] our F<sub>2</sub>, F<sub>3</sub>

T R V. Fortune? mere prouidence. Fortune had not a  
75 finger in 't. I saw it must necessarily in nature fall out so :  
my *genius* is neuer false to me in these things. Shew me,  
how it could be otherwise.

D A V P. Nay, gentlemen, contend not, 'tis well now.

T R V. Alasse, I let him goe on with inconsiderate, and  
80 rash, and what he pleas'd.

C L E. Away thou strange iustifier of thy selfe, to bee  
wiser then thou wert, by the euent.

T R V. Euent! By this light, thou shalt neuer perswade  
me, but I fore-saw it, aswell as the starres themselues.

85 D A V P. Nay, gentlemen, 'tis well now: doe you two  
entertaine sir I O H N D A W, with discourse, while I send  
her away with instructions.

T R V. I'll be acquainted with her, first, by your fauour.

C L E. Master T R V E - W I T, lady, a friend of ours.

90 T R V. I am sorry, I haue not knowne you sooner, lady,  
to celebrate this rare vertue of your silence.

C L E. Faith, an' you had come sooner, you should ha'  
seene, and heard her well celebrated in sir I O H N D A W's  
*madrigalls*.

95 T R V. I A C K D A W, god saue you, when saw you L A -  
F O O L E ?

D A W. Not since last night, master T R V E - W I T.

T R V. That's miracle! I thought you two had beene  
inseparable.

100 D A W. Hee's gone to inuite his guests.

T R V. Gods so! 'tis true! what a false memory haue  
I towards that man! I am one: I met him e'ne now,  
vpon that he calls his delicate fine blacke horse, rid into  
a foame, with poasting from place to place, and person to  
105 person, to giue 'hem the *cue*—

C L E. Lest they should forget?

T R V. Yes: there was neuer poore captaine tooke more

II. iv. 78 'tis] tis Fr, Q After 91 *Exeunt Daup. Epi. and Cut-*  
beard. G 95 TRV.] *True.* [advances to Daw.] G 98 miracle] a  
miracle Fa, F3 101 'tis Fa: tis Fr: tis Q 102 e'ne] ev'n Fa

paines at a muster to show men, then he, at this meale, to shew friends.

DAW. It is his quarter-feast, sir. 110

CLE. What! doe you say so, sir Iohn?

TRV. Nay, IACK DAW will not be out, at the best friends hee has, to the talent of his wit: where's his mistris, to heare and applaud him? is she gone!

DAW. Is mistris EPICOENE gone? 115

CLE. Gone afore, with sir DAVPHINE, I warrant, to the place.

TRV. Gone afore! that were a manifest iniurie; a disgrace and a halfe: to refuse him at such a festiuall time, as this, being a *Brauery*, and a *Wit* too. 120

CLE. Tut, hee'll swallow it like creame: hee's better read in *iure ciuili*, then to esteeme any thing a disgrace is offer'd him from a mistris.

DAW. Nay, let her eene goe; she shall sit alone, and bee dumbe in her chamber, a weeke together, for IOHN 125  
DAW, I warrant her: do's she refuse me?

CLE. No, sir, doe not take it so to heart: shee do's not refuse you, but a little neglect you. Good faith, TRVEWIT, you were too blame to put it into his head, that shee do's refuse him. 130

TRV. She do's refuse him, sir, palpably: how euer you mince it. An' I were as hee, I would sweare to speake ne're a word to her, to day, for't.

DAW. By this light, no more I will not.

TRV. Nor to any body else, sir. 135

DAW. Nay, I will not say so, gentlemen.

CLE. It had beene an excellent happy condition for the company, if you could haue drawne him to it.

DAW. I'll be very melancholique, i' faith.

CLE. As a dog, if I were as you, sir IOHN. 140

TRV. Or a snaile, or a hog-louse: I would roule my selfe vp for this day, introth, they should not vnwinde me.

D A W. By this pick-tooth, so I will.

C L E. 'Tis well done : he beginnes already to be angry  
145 with his teeth.

D A W. Will you goe, gentlemen ?

C L E. Nay, you must walke alone, if you bee right  
melancholique, sir I O H N.

T R V. Yes sir, wee'll dog you, wee'll follow you a farre  
150 off.

C L E. Was there euer such a two yards of knighthood,  
measur'd out by *Time*, to be sold to laughter ?

T R V. A meere talking mole ! hang him : no mushrome  
was euer so fresh. A fellow so vtterly nothing, as he knowes  
155 not what he would be.

C L E. Let's follow him : but first, let's goe to D A V-  
P H I N E, hee's houering about the house, to heare what  
newes.

T R V. Content.

## *Act II. Scene v.*

M O R O S E, E P I C O E N E, C V T B E R D, M V T E.

W Elcome C V T B E R D ; draw neere with you <r> faire  
chardge : and, in her eare, softly intreat her to vn-  
masque (—) So. Is the dore shut ? (—) inough. Now,  
C V T B E R D, with the same discipline I vse to my family,  
5 I will question you. As I conceiue, C V T B E R D, this  
gentlewoman is shee, you haue provided, and brought, in  
hope shee will fit me in the place and person of a wife ?  
Answer me not, but with your leg, vnlesse it be otherwise :  
(—) very well done C V T B E R D. I conceiue, besides,  
10 C V T B E R D, you haue beene pre-acquainted with Her  
birth, education, and quallities, or else you would not pre-  
ferre her to my acceptance, in the waighty consequence of

II. iv. 150 *Exit Daw.* add G 153 hang him om. Q II. v.  
SCENE III. | *A Room in Morose's House.* | *Enter Morose and Mute, fol-*  
*lowed by Cutbeard with Epicane.* G 1 your] you F1 3 dore]  
dore' F2 (*perhaps for 'dore,'*) 9 conceiue] conceiue F1 11  
quallities] qualities Q, F2

marriage. (—) this I conceiue, C V T B E R D. Answer  
me not but with your leg, vnlesse it bee otherwise. (—)  
Very well done C V T B E R D. Giue aside now a little, and 15  
leau me to examine her condition, and aptitude to my  
affection. Shee is exceeding faire, and of a speciall good *He goes  
about her,  
and  
viewes  
her.*  
fauour; a sweet composition, or harmony of limmes: her  
temper of beauty has the true height of my blood. The  
knaue hath exceedingly wel fitted me without: I will now  
trie her within. Come neere, faire gentlewoman: let not  
my behaiour seeme rude, though vnto you, being rare, it  
may happely appeare strange. (—) Nay, lady, you may *She  
curtisies.*  
speake, though C V T B E R D, and my man, might not: for,  
of all sounds, onely, the sweet voice of a faire lady has the 25  
iust length of mine eares. I beseech you, say lady, out of  
the first fire of meeting eyes, (they say) loue is stricken:  
doe you feele any such motion, sodenly shot into you, from  
any part you see in me? ha, lady? (—) Alasse, lady, *Curt'sie.*  
these answers by silent curt'sies, from you, are too court- 30  
lesse, and simple. I haue euer had my breeding in court:  
and shee that shall bee my wife, must bee accomplished  
with courtly, and audacious ornaments. Can you speake  
lady?

E P I. Iudge you, forsooth.

M O R. What say you, lady? speake out, I beseech you. *She  
speakes  
softly.*

E P I. Iudge you, forsooth.

M O R. O' my iudgement, a diuine softnes! but can you  
naturally, lady, as I enioyne these by doctrine & industry,  
referre your self to the search of my iudgement, and (not 40  
taking pleasure in your tongue, which is a womans chiefest  
pleasure) thinke it plausible, to answer me by silent gestures,  
so long as my speeches iumpe right, with what you con-  
ceiue? (—) Excellent! diuine! if it were possible she *Curt'sie.*  
should hold out thus! Peace C V T B E R D, thou art made 45  
for euer, as thou hast made mee, if this felicitie haue lasting:

ii. v. 23 happely] happily Q (—)] (—(Fr  
26 eares] eare Q 28 sodenly] suddenly F2  
45 CVTBERD] CVTBERD Fr

24 speake,] speak; F2  
41 tongue] tongue Fr



but I will trie her further. Deare lady, I am courtly, I tell you, and I must haue mine eares banqueted with pleasant, and wittie conferences, pretty girds, scoffes, and daliance  
 50 in her, that I meane to choose for my bedpheere. The ladies in court, thinke it a most desperate impaire to their quickenesse of wit, and good carriage, if they cannot giue occasion for a man to court 'hem; and, when an amorous discourse is set on foot, minister as good matter to continue  
 55 it, as himselfe: and doe you alone so much differ from all them, that, what they (with so much circumstance) affect, and toile for, to seeme learn'd, to seeme iudicious, to seeme sharpe, and conceited, you can bury in your selfe, with silence? and rather trust your graces to the faire conscience  
 60 of vertue, then to the worlds, or your owne proclamation?

E P I. I should be sorry else.

M O R. What say you, ladie? good ladie, speake out.

E P I. I should be sorrie, else.

M O R. That sorrow doth fill me with gladnesse! O  
 65 M O R O S E! thou art happie aboue mankinde! pray that thou maiest containe thy selfe. I will onely put her to it once more, and it shall be with the vtmost touch, and test of their sexe. But heare me, faire lady, I doe also loue to see her, whom I shall choose for my heicfar, to be the first  
 70 and principall in all fashions; præcede all the dames at court, by a fortnight; haue her counsell of taylors, linneners, lace-women, embroyderers, and sit with 'hem sometimes twise a day, vpon *French* intelligences; and then come foorth, varied like Nature, or oftner then she, and  
 75 better, by the helpe of Art, her æmulous seruant. This doe I affect. And how will you be able, lady, with this frugalitie of speech, to giue the manifold (but necessarie) instructions, for that bodies, these sleeues, those skirts, this cut, that stitch, this embroyderie, that lace, this wire, those knots,  
 80 that ruffe, those roses, this girdle, that fanne, the tother skarfe, these gloues? ha! what say you, ladie?

II. v. 58 conceited] concieted F<sub>2</sub> 63 else.] else F<sub>1</sub> 69 heicfar]  
 heifar F<sub>2</sub> 74 foorth] forth F<sub>2</sub> 78 skirts] Sirkts Q 81 ladie ?] ladie. F<sub>1</sub>

E P I. I'll leaue it to you, sir.

M O R. How lady? pray you, rise a note.

E P I. I leaue it to wisdome, and you sir.

M O R. Admirable creature! I will trouble you no more : 85  
I will not sinne against so sweet a simplicity. Let me now  
be bold to print, on those diuine lips, the seale of being  
mine. C V T B E R D, I giue thee the lease of thy house free :  
thanke me not, but with thy leg (——) I know what thou  
woul<d>st say, shee's poore, and her friends deceased ; shee 90  
has brought a wealthy dowrie in her silence, C V T B E R D :  
and in respect of her pouerty, C V T B E R D, I shall haue  
her more louing, and obedient, C V T B E R D. Goe thy  
waies, and get me a minister presently, with a soft, low  
voice to marry vs, and pray him he will not be impertinent, 95  
but brieft as he can ; away : softly, C V T B E R D. Sirrah,  
conduct your mistris into the dining roome, your now-  
mistris. O my felicity ! how I shall bee reueng'd on mine  
insolent kinsman, and his plots, to fright me from marry-  
ing ! This night I wil get an heire, and thrust him out of 100  
my bloud like a stranger ; he would be knighted, forsooth,  
and thought by that meanes to raigne ouer me, his title  
must doe it : no kinsman, I will now make you bring mee  
the tenth lords, and the sixteenth ladies letter, kinsman ;  
and it shall doe you no good kinsman. Your knighthood 105  
it selfe shall come on it's knees, and it shall be reiected ; it  
shall bee sued for it's fees to execution, and not bee re-  
deem'd ; it shall cheat at the tweluepeny ordinary, it  
knighthood, for it's diet all the terme time, and tell tales  
for it in the vacation, to the hostesse : or it knighthood shall 110  
doe worse ; take sanctuary in *Coleharbor*, and fast. It shall  
fright all it friends, with borrowing letters ; and when one  
of the foure-score hath brought it knighthood ten shillings,  
it knighthood shall go to the Cranes, or the Beare at the  
*Bridge-foot*, and be drunk in feare : it shal not haue money 115

11. v. 87 print, *corr.* F1, Q, F2 : print F1 originally 94 soft, low  
*corr.* F1, Q, F2 : soft-low F1 originally 96 After 'CVTBERD.' Exit  
Cut. G 97 now-mistris *corr.* F1, Q, F2 : now—mistris F1 originally  
98 After 'mistris.' Exit Mute followed by Epi. G 105 good] good, F2

to discharge one tauerne reckoning, to inuite the old creditors, to forbear it knighthood ; or the new, that should be, to trust it knighthood. It shall be the tenth name in the bond, to take vp the commoditie of pipkins, and stone  
 120 jugs ; and the part thereof shall not furnish it knighthood forth, for the attempting of a bakers widdow, a browne bakers widdow. It shall giue it knighthoods name, for a *stallion*, to all gamesome citizens wiues, and bee refus'd ; when the master of a dancing schoole, or (*How* do you call  
 125 him) the worst reueller in the towne is taken : it shall want clothes, and by reason of that, wit, to foole to lawyers. It shall not haue hope to repaire it selfe by *Constantinople*, *Ireland*, or *Virginia* ; but the best, and last fortune to it knighthood shall be, to make D O L T E A R E - S H E E T,  
 130 or K A T E C O M M O N, a lady : and so, it knighthood may eate.

## *Act II. Scene VI.*

T R U E - W I T, D A V P H I N E, C L E R I M O N T,  
 C V T B E R D.

A Re you sure he is not gone by ?

D A V P. No, I staid in the shop euer since.

C L E. But, he may take the other end of the lane.

D A V P. No, I told him I would be here at this end :  
 5 I appointed him hether.

T R V. What a barbarian it is to stay then !

D A V P. Yonder he comes.

C L E. And his charge left behinde him, which is a very good signe, D A V P H I N E.

10 D A V P. How now C V T B E R D, succedes it, or no ?

C V T. Past imagination, sir, *omnia secunda* ; you could

II. v. 120 jugs] Iugs Q knighthood] knighthod F2 131 *Exit.*  
 add G II. vi. SCENE IV. | *A Lane, near Morose's House.* | *Enter*  
*Truewit, Dauphine, and Clerimont.* G 5 hether] hither F2 (so 32)  
 After 9 *Enter Cutbeard.* G

not haue pray'd, to haue had it so wel: *Saltat senex*, as it is i' the prouerbe, he do's triumph in his felicity; admires the party! he has giuen me the lease of my house too! and, I am now going for a silent minister to marry 'hem, 15 and away.

TRV. Slight, get one o' the silenc'd ministers, a zealous brother would torment him purely.

CVT. *Cum priuilegio*, sir.

DAVP. O, by no meanes, let's doe nothing to hinder it 20 now; when 'tis done and finished, I am for you: for any deuise of vexation.

CVT. And that shall be, within this halfe houre, vpon my dexterity, gentlemen. Contrieue what you can, in the meane time, *bonis auibus*. 25

CLE. How the slaue doth *latine* it!

TRV. It would be made a iest to posterity, sirs, this daies mirth, if yee will.

CLE. Beshrew his heart that will not, I pronounce.

DAVP. And, for my part. What is't? 30

TRV. To translate all LA - FOOL - S company, and his feast hether, to day, to celebrate this bride-ale.

DAVP. I mary, but how will't be done?

TRV. I'll vndertake the directing of all the ladie-guests thether, and then the meat must follow. 35

CLE. For gods sake, let's effect it: it will be an excellent *comædy* of affliction, so many seuerall noyses.

DAVP. But are they not at the other place already, thinke you?

TRV. I'll warrant you for the colledge-honors: one o' 40 their faces has not the priming color laid on yet, nor the other her smocke sleek'd.

CLE. O, but they'll rise earlier then ordinary, to a feast.

TRV. Best goe see, and assure our selues.

CLE. Who knowes the house? 45

II. vi. 17 ministers,] ministers; F<sub>2</sub> 21 now; F<sub>2</sub>: now F<sub>1</sub>, Q  
25 Exit. add G 33 mary] marry F<sub>2</sub> 36 gods] Gods Q (so 51, 68)  
40 -honors] -honours Q 41 color] colour Q, F<sub>2</sub>

TRV. I'll lead you, were you neuer there yet?

DAVP. Not I.

CLE. Nor I.

TRV. Where ha' you liu'd then? not know TOM  
50 OTTER!

CLE. No : for gods sake, what is he?

TRV. An excellent animal, equall with your DAW, or  
LA-FOOLE, if not transcendent; and do's *latine* it as  
much as your barber: hee is his wifes Subiect, he calls her  
55 Princesse, and at such times as these, followes her vp and  
downe the house like a page, with his hat off, partly for  
heate, partly for reuerence. At this instant, hee is mar-  
shalling of his bull, beare, and horse.

DAVP. What be those, in the name of *Sphinx*?

60 TRV. Why sir? hee has beene a great man at the beare-  
garden in his time: and from that subtile sport, has tane  
the witty denomination of his chiefe carousing cups. One  
he calls his bull, another his beare, another his horse. And  
then hee has his lesser glasses, that hee calls his deere, and  
65 his ape; and seuerall degrees of 'hem too: and neuer is  
well, nor thinkes any intertainement perfect, till these be  
brought out, and set o' the cupbord.

CLE. For gods loue! we should misse this, if we should  
not goe.

70 TRV. Nay, he has a thousand things as good, that will  
speake him all day. He will raile on his wife, with certaine  
common places, behind her backe; and to her face——

DAVP. No more of him. Let's goe see him, I petition  
you.

Act III. Scene I.

OTTER, M<sup>rs</sup>. OTTER, TRVE-WIT,  
CLERIMONT, DAVPHINE.

N Ay, good Princesse, heare me *pauca verba*.  
M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. By that light, I'll ha' you chain'd vp, with  
your bul-dogs, and beare-dogges, if you be not ciuill the  
sooner. I'll send you to kennell, i'faith. You were best  
baite me with your bull, beare, and horse? Neuer a time, 5  
that the courtiers, or collegiates come to the house, but you  
make it a *shrouetuesday*! I would haue you get your *whit-*  
*sontide*-veluet-cap, and your staffe i' your hand, to inter-  
taine 'hem: yes introth, doe.

O T T. Not so, Princesse, neither, but vnder correction, 10  
sweete Princesse, gi' me leaue—these things I am knowne  
to the courtiers by. It is reported to them for my humor,  
and they receiue it so, and doe expect it. T O M O T T E R S  
bull, beare, and horse is knowne all ouer *England*, in *rerum*  
*natura*. 15

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Fore me, I wil *na-ture* 'hem ouer to *Paris-*  
garden, and *na-ture* you thether too, if you pronounce 'hem  
again. Is a beare a fit beast, or a bull, to mixe in society  
with great ladies? thinke i' your discretion, in any good  
politie. 20

O T T. The horse then, good Princesse.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Well, I am contented for the horse: they loue  
to bee well hors'd, I know. I loue it my selfe.

O T T. And it is a delicate fine horse this. *Poetarum*  
*Pegasus*. Vnder correction, Princesse, I V P I T E R did turne 25  
himselfe into a—*Taurus*, or Bull, vnder correction, good  
Princesse.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. By my integritie, I'll send you ouer to the

III. i. ACT III. SCENE I. | A Room in Otter's House. | Enter captain  
Otter with his cups, and mistress Otter G 8 intertaine] entertaine  
Q, F2 9 introth] in troth F2 12 humor] humour Q, F2  
17 'hem] them Q 24 this.] this F2: om. Q After 27 Enter  
Truewit, Clerimont, and Dauphine, behind. G

banke-side, I'll commit you to the Master of the garden, if  
 30 I heare but a syllable more. Must my house, or my roofe,  
 be polluted with the sent of beares, and buls, when it is  
 perfum'd for great ladies? Is this according to the instru-  
 ment, when I married you? That I would bee Princesse,  
 and raigne in mine owne house: and you would be my  
 35 subiect, and obay me? What did you bring me, should  
 make you thus peremptory? Do I allow you your halfe-  
 crowne a day, to spend, where you will, among your gam-  
 sters, to vex and torment me, at such times as these? Who  
 giues you your maintenance, I pray you? who allowes you  
 40 your horse-meat, and mans-meat? your three sutes of  
 apparell a yeere? your foure paire of stockings, one silke,  
 three worsted? your cleane linnen, your bands, and cuffs  
 when I can get you to weare 'hem? 'Tis mar'l you ha'  
 'hem on now. Who graces you with courtiers, or great per-  
 45 sonages, to speake to you out of their coaches, and come  
 home to your house? Were you euer so much as look'd  
 vpon by a lord, or a lady, before I married you: but on  
 the Easter, or Whitson-holy-daies? and then out at the  
 banquetting-house windore, when NED WHITING, or  
 50 GEORGE STONE, were at the stake?

(T R V. For gods sake, let's goe staue her off him.)

M<sup>r</sup>. O T. Answer me to that. And did not I take you  
 vp from thence, in an old greasie buffe-doublet, with points;  
 and greene vellet sleeues, out at the elbowes? you forget  
 55 this.

(T R V. Shee'll worry him, if we helpe not in time.)

M<sup>r</sup>. O T. O, here are some o' the gallants! Goe to, be-  
 haue your selfe distinctly, and with good moralitie; Or,  
 I protest, I'll take away your exhibition.

III. i. 31 sent] scent Q, F3      43 ha' 'hem] ha'hem Q, Ff      51 gods]  
 Gods Q      54 vellet] velvet F2      elbowes] eldowes F2      56 They  
 come forward. add G

Act III. Scene II.

TRVE-WIT, M<sup>r</sup>. OTTER, CAP. OTTER,  
CLERIMONT, DAVPHINE, CVTBERD.

BY your leaue, faire mistress OTTER, I'll be bold to  
enter these gentlemen in your acquaintance.

M<sup>r</sup>. OT. It shall not be obnoxious, or difficill, sir.

TRV. How do's my noble Captaine? Is the bull, beare,  
and horse, in *rerum natura* still? 5

OTT. Sir, *Sic visum superis*.

M<sup>r</sup>. OT. I would you would but intimate 'hem, doe.  
Goe your waies in, and get tosts, and butter, made for the  
wood-cocks. That's a fit prouince for you.

CLE. Alas, what a tyrannie, is this poore fellow married 10  
too.

TRV. O, but the sport will be anon, when we get him  
loose.

DAV. Dares he euer speake?

TRV. No Anabaptist euer rail'd with the like licence: 15  
but marke her language in the meane time, I beseech you.

M<sup>r</sup>. OT. Gentlemen, you are very aptly come. My cosin,  
sir AMOROVs, will be here briefly.

TRV. In good time lady. Was not sir IOHN DAW  
here, to aske for him, and the companie? 20

M<sup>r</sup>. OT. I cannot assure you, M<sup>r</sup>. TRVE-WIT. Here  
was a very melancholy knight in a ruffe, that demanded  
my subiect for some body, a gentleman, I thinke.

CLE. I, that was he, lady.

M<sup>r</sup>. OT. But he departed straight, I can resolute you. 25

DAV. What an excellent choice phrase, this lady ex-  
presses in!

TRV. O, sir! shee is the onely authentick courtier, that  
is not naturally bred one, in the citie.

III. ii. Act III.] Act. III. FI originally, miscorrected to 'Act. III.' G  
continues the scene. After 9 Drives him off. G 16 meane time]  
meane-time Q 17 M<sup>r</sup>. OT.] M. OT. F2, so at ll. 21, 25, 30, 34, 36,  
54, 57, 66 21 M<sup>r</sup>.] M. F2



30 M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. You haue taken that report vpon trust, gentlemen.

T R V. No, I assure you, the court gouernes it so, lady, in your behalfe.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. I am the seruant of the court, and courtiers, sir.

35 T R V. They are rather your idolaters.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Not so, sir.

D A V. How now, C V T B E R D ? Any crosse ?

C V T. O, no, sir : *Omnia bene*. 'Twas neuer better o' the hinges, all's sure. I haue so pleas'd him with a curate, that  
40 hee's gone too't almost with the delight he hopes for soone.

D A V. What is he, for a vicar ?

C V T. One that has catch'd a cold, sir, and can scarce bee heard sixe inches off ; as if he spoke out of a bull-rush, that were not pickt, or his throat were full of pith : a fine  
45 quick fellow, and an excellent barber of prayers. I came to tell you, sir, that you might *omnem mouere lapidem* (as they say) be readie with your vexation.

D A V. Gramercy, honest C V T B E R D, be there abouts with thy key to let vs in.

50 C V T. I will not faile you, sir : *Ad manum*.

T R V. Well, I'll goe watch my coaches.

C L E. Doe ; and wee'll send D A W to you, if you meet him not.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Is master T R V E - W I T gone ?

55 D A V. Yes, lady, there is some vnfortunate businesse fallen out.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. So I iudg'd by the phisiognomy of the fellow, that came in ; and I had a dreame last night too of the new pageant, and my lady Maiorresse, which is alwaies very  
60 ominous to me. I told it my lady H A V G H T Y t'other day ; when her honour came hether to see some *China* stuffes : and shee expounded it, out of A R T E M I D O R V S,

III. ii. 32 gouernes] go uernes *Fr* originally After 36 Enter Cut-  
beard. G 38 sir:] Sir, *F2* 44 pith] pitch *F2*, *F3* 48 there  
abouts] thereabouts *Q* 50 *Exit*. add G 55 vnfortunate]  
vnfortunate *Fr* 57 iudg'd] adiudg'd *Q* 61 hether] hither *F2*  
62 ARTEMIDORVS] ARTEMIDORTS *F2*

and I haue found it since very true. It has done me many affronts.

C L E. Your dreame, lady ? 65

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Yes, sir, any thing I doe but dreame o' the city. It staynd me a damasque table-cloth, cost me eighteen pound at one time ; and burnt me a blacke satten gowne, as I stood by the fire, at my ladie C E N T A V R E S chamber in the colledge, another time. A third time, at the Lords 70 masque, it dropt all my wire, and my ruffe with waxe-candle, that I could not goe vp to the banquet. A fourth time, as I was taking coach to goe to *Ware*, to meet a friend, it dash'd me a new sute all ouer (a crimson sattin doublet, and blacke veluet skirts) with a brewers horse, that I was 75 faine to goe in and shift mee, and kept my chamber a leash of daies for the anguish of it.

D A V P. These were dire mischances, lady.

C L E. I would not dwell in the citie, and 'twere so fatall to mee. 80

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Yes sir, but I doe take aduise of my doctor, to dreame of it as little, as I can.

D A V P. You doe well, mistris O T T E R.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Will it please you to enter the house farther, gentlemen ? 85

D A V P. And your fauour, lady : but we stay to speake with a knight, sir I O H N D A W, who is here come. We shall follow you, lady.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. At your owne time, sir. It is my cosen sir A M O R O V S his feast.—— 90

D A V P. I know it lady.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. And mine together. But it is for his honour ; and therefore I take no name of it, more then of the place.

D A V P. You are a bounteous kinswoman.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Your seruant, sir. 95

*Act III. Scene III.*

CLERIMONT, DAW, LA-FOOLE, DAV-  
PHINE, OTTER.

**W**Hy doe not you know it, sir I O H N D A W ?  
D A W. No, I am a rooke if I doe.

C L E. I'll tell you then, shee's married by this time !  
And whereas you were put i' the head, that shee was gone  
5 with sir D A V P H I N E, I assure you, sir D A V P H I N E  
has beene the noblest, honestest friend to you, that euer  
gentleman of your quality could boast off. He has dis-  
couer'd the whole plot, and made your mistris so acknow-  
ledging, and indeed, so ashamed of her iniurie to you, that  
10 she desires you to forgiue her, and but grace her wedding  
with your presence to day—She is to be married to a very  
good fortune, she saies, his vnkle, old M O R O S E : and she  
will'd me in priuate to tell you, that she shall be able to  
doe you more fauours, and with more securitie now, then  
15 before.

D A W. Did she say so, i' faith ?

C L E. Why, what doe you thinke of mee, sir I O H N !  
aske sir D A V P H I N E.

D A W. Nay, I beleeeue you. Good sir D A V P H I N E, did  
20 shee desire mee to forgiue her ?

D A V P. I assure you, sir I O H N, she did.

D A W. Nay then, I doe with all my heart, and I'll be  
*iouiall.*

C L E. Yes, for looke you sir, this was the iniury to you.  
25 L A - F O O L E intended this feast to honour her bridale  
day, and made you the propertie to inuite the colledge  
ladies, and promise to bring her : and then at the time,  
shee should haue appear'd (as his friend) to haue giuen you

III. iii. CLERIMONT.] *Cler. [coming forward with Daw.] G, who continues the scene.*  
1 not om. F<sub>2</sub> 4 i' the] i'th' F<sub>2</sub> 19 DAW. W:  
DAVP. Fr: *Daup.* Q: DAU. F<sub>2</sub>: *Dau.* F<sub>3</sub> 21 IONN.] ION. Fr  
28 should] would F<sub>2</sub>

the *dor*. Whereas now, sir DAVPHINE has brought her to a feeling of it, with this kinde of satisfaction, that you shall bring all the ladies to the place where shee is, and be verie iouiall; and there, she will haue a dinner, which shall be in your name: and so dis-appoint LA-FOOLE, to make you good againe, and (as it were) a sauer i' the ma<i>n.

DAW. As I am a knight, I honour her, and forgiue her hartily.

CLE. About it then presently, TRVE-WIT is gone before to confront the coaches, and to acquaint you with so much, if hee meet you. Ioyne with him, and 'tis well. See, here comes your *Antagonist*, but take you no notice, but be verie iouiall.

LA-F. Are the ladies come, sir IOHNDAW, and your mistris? sir DAVPHINE! you are exceeding welcome, and honest master CLERIMONT. Where's my cossen? did you see no collegiats, gentlemen?

DAVP. Collegiats! Doe you not heare, sir AMOROVs, how you are abus'd?

LA-F. How sir!

CLE. Will you speake so kindly to sir IOHNDAW, that has done you such an affront?

LA-F. Wherein, gentlemen? let me be a sutor to you to know, I beseech you!

CLE. Why sir, his mistris is married to day, to sir DAVPHINES vnkle, your cosens neighbour, and hee has diuerted all the ladies, and all your company thether, to frustrate your prouision, and sticke a disgrace vpon you. He was here, now, to haue intic'd vs away from you too: but we told him his owne, I thinke.

LA-F. Has sir IOHNDAW wrong'd me so in-humanely?

DAV. He has done it, sir AMOROVs, most maliciously, and trecherously: but if you'll be rul'd by vs, you shall quit him i'faith.

III. iii. 34 main *W. conj.* 37 presently,] presently. *F2* 39  
After 'well' Enter sir Amorous La-Foole. *G* 43 After 'mistris?' Exit  
Daw. *G* 55 thether] thither *F2* 56 prouision] provision *F1*  
60 DAV.] Daw. *Q*

L A - F. Good gentlemen! I'll make one, beleue it.  
How I pray?

65 D A V. Mary sir, get me your phesants, and your god-  
wits, and your best meat, and dish it in siluer dishes of your  
cosens presently, and say nothing, but clap mee a cleane  
towell about you, like a sewer; and bare-headed, march  
70 by) and we'll second you, where you shal set it o' the boord,  
and bid 'hem welcome to't, which shall show 'tis yours,  
and disgrace his preparation vtterly: and, for your cosen,  
whereas shee should bee troubled here at home with care  
of making and giuing welcome, shee shall transferre all that  
75 labour thether, and bee a principall guest her selfe, sit rank'd  
with the colledge-Honors, and bee honor'd, and haue her  
health drunke as often, as bare, and as lowd as the best  
of 'hem.

L A - F. I'll goe tell her presently. It shall be done, that's  
80 resolu'd.

C L E. I thought he would not heare it out, but 'twould  
take him.

D A V P. Well, there be guests, & meat now; how shal  
we do for musique?

85 C L E. The smell of the venison, going through the street,  
will inuite one noyse of fidders, or other.

D A V P. I would it would call the trumpeters thether.

C L E. Faith, there is hope, they haue intelligence of all  
feasts. There's good correspondence betwixt them, and the  
90 *London-cookes*. 'Tis twenty to one but we haue 'hem.

D A V P. 'Twill be a most solemne day for my vncle, and  
an excellent fit of mirth for vs.

C L E. I, if we can hold vp the æmulation betwixt  
F O O L E, and D A W, and neuer bring them to expostulate.

95 D A V P. Tut, flatter 'hem both (as T R V E - W I T sayes)  
and you may take their vnderstandings in a purse-net.  
They'll beleue themselues to be iust such men as we make

III. iii. 70 it om. Q  
87 DAVP] DAVP: F1

80 Exit. add G  
90 we] he F2, F3

83 now:] now, F2

'hem, neither more nor lesse. They haue nothing, not the vse of their senses, but by tradition.

C L E. See! Sir A M O R O V S has his towell on already. *He enters like a sewer.*  
Haue you perswaded your cossen?

L A - F. Yes, 'tis verie fæisible: shee'll do any thing she sayes, rather then the L A - F O O L E S shall be disgrac'd.

D A V P. She is a noble kinswoman. It will be such a pest'ling deuice, sir A M O R O V S! It will pound all your 105 enemies practises to poulder, and blow him vp with his owne mine, his owne traine.

L A - F. Nay, wee'll giue fire, I warrant you.

C L E. But you must carry it priuatly, without any noyse, and take no notice by any meanes—— 110

O T T. Gentlemen, my Princesse sayes, you shall haue all her siluer dishes, *festinate*: and she's gone to alter her tyre a little, and go with you——

C L E. And your selfe too, capitaine O T T E R.

D A V P. By any meanes, sir. 115

O T T. Yes, sir, I doe meane it: but I would entreate my cosen sir A M O R O V S, and you gentlemen, to be sutors to my Princesse, that I may carry my bull, and my beare, as well as my horse.

C L E. That you shall doe, capitaine O T T E R. 120

L A - F. My cosen will neuer consent, gentlemen.

D A V P. She must consent, sir A M O R O V S, to reason.

L A - F. Why, she sayes they are no *decorum* among ladies.

O T T. But they are *decora*, and that's better, sir. 125

C L E. I, shee must heare argument. Did not P A S I - P H A E, who was a queene, loue a bull? and was not C A L I S T O, the mother of A R C A S, turn'd into a beare, and made a starre, mistris V R S V L A, i' the heauens?

O T T. O God! that I could ha' said as much! I will 130 haue these stories painted i' the beare-garden, *ex Ouidij metamorphosi*.

D A V P. Where is your Princesse, Captaine? pray' be our leader.

135 O T T. That I shall, sir.

C L E. Make haste, good sir A M O R O V S.

### *Act III. Scene IIII.*

M O R O S E, E P I C O E N E, P A R S O N,  
C V T B E R D.

S Ir, there's an angel for your selfe, and a brace of angels for your cold. Muse not at this mannage of my bounty. It is fit wee should thanke fortune, double to nature, for any benefit she conferres vpon vs; besides, it is your im-  
5 perfection, but my solace.

*The parson speaks, as hauing a cold.* P A R. I thanke your worship, so is it mine, now.

M O R. What sayes he, C V T B E R D?

C V T. He saies, *Præsto*, sir, whensoever your worship needes him, hee can be ready with the like. He got this  
10 cold with sitting vp late, and singing catches with cloth-workers.

M O R. No more. I thanke him.

*He coughes.* P A R. Good keepe your worship, and giue you much ioy with your faire spouse. (Vmh, vmh.)

M O R. O, ô, stay C V T B E R D! let him giue me fīue shillings of my money backe. As it is bounty to reward benefits, so is it equity to mulct iniuries. I will haue it. What sayes he?

C V T. He cannot change it, sir.

20 M O R. It must be chang'd.

C V T. Cough againe.

M O R. What sayes he?

C V T. He will cough out the rest, sir.

*Again.* P A R. (Vmh, vmh, vmh.)

III. iii. 136 *Exeunt.* add G III. iv. SCENE II. | *A Room in Morose's House.* | *Enter Morose, Epicæne, Parson, and Cutbeard.* G EPI-  
COENE] *Epicæne* Q 6 worship.] worship; *Fa* 21 *Aside to Parson.* add G

M O R. Away, away with him, stop his mouth, away, I 25  
forgiue it.——

E P I. Fye, master M O R O S E, that you will vse this  
violence to a man of the church.

M O R. How !

E P I. It do's not become your grauity, or breeding, (as 30  
you pretend in court) to haue offered this outrage on a  
waterman, or any more boystrous creature, much lesse on  
a man of his ciuill coat.

M O R. You can speake then !

E P I. Yes, sir.

35

M O R. Speake out I meane.

E P I. I sir. Why, did you thinke you had married a  
statue? or a motion, onely? one of the *French* puppets,  
with the eyes turn'd with a wire? or some innocent out of  
the hospitall, that would stand with her hands thus, and 40  
a playse mouth, and looke vpon you.

M O R. O immodestie ! a manifest woman ! what C V T-  
B E R D ?

E P I. Nay, neuer quarrell with C V T B E R D, sir, it is too  
late now. I confesse, it doth bate somewhat of the modestie 45  
I had, when I writ simply maide : but I hope, I shall make  
it a stocke still competent, to the estate, and dignity of your  
wife.

M O R. Shee can talke !

E P I. Yes indeed, sir.

50

M O R. What, sirrah. None of my knaues, there? where  
is this impostor, C V T B E R D ?

E P I. Speake to him, fellow, speake to him. I'll haue  
none of this coacted, vnnaturall dumbnesse in my house,  
in a family where I gouerne. 55

M O R. She is my Regent already ! I haue married a  
P E N T H E S I L E A, a S E M I R A M I S, sold my liberty to  
a distaffe !

III. iv. After 26 *Exit Cut. thrusting out the Par. G* 36 *Speake*  
*corr. Fr, Q, F2: Speake, Fr originally* After 50 *Enter Mute. G*  
52 *Mute makes signs. add G* 55 *Exit Mute. add G*



*Act III. Scene v.*

TRVE-WIT, MOROSE, EPICOENE.

W Here's master MOROSE?

MOR. Is he come againe! lord haue mercy vpon me.

TRV. I wish you all ioy, mistris EPICOENE, with  
5 your graue and honourable match.EPI. I returne you the thanks, master TRVE-WIT,  
so friendly a wish deserues.

MOR. She has acquaintance, too!

TRV. God saue you, sir, and giue you all contentment  
10 in your faire choise, here. Before I was the bird of night  
to you, the owle, but now I am the messenger of peace,  
a doue, and bring you the glad wishes of many friends, to  
the celebration of this good houre.

MOR. What houre, sir?

15 TRV. Your marriage houre sir. I commend your resolu-  
tion, that (notwithstanding all the dangers I laid afore you,  
in the voice of a night-crow) would yet goe on, and bee  
your selfe. It shewes you are a man constant to your own  
ends, and vpright to your purposes, that would not be put  
20 off with left-handed cries.MOR. How should you arriue at the knowledge of so  
much!TRV. Why, did you euer hope, sir, committing the  
secrecie of it to a barber, that lesse then the whole towne  
25 should know it? you might as wel ha' told it the conduît,  
or the bake-house, or the infant'ry that follow the court,  
and with more securitie. Could your grautie forget so olde  
and noted a remnant, as, *lippis & tonsoribus notum*? Well  
sir, forgiue it your selfe now, the fault, and be communicable  
30 with your friends. Here will bee three or foure fashionable

III. v. Enter Truewit. G, continuing the scene. 2 lord] Lord Q.  
F2 11 owle,] owle; F2: owle F1: Owle Q 28 notum? F2: notum.  
F1, Q

ladies, from the colledge, to visit you presently, and their traine of minions, and followers.

M O R. Barre my dores ! barre my dores ! where are all my eaters ? my mouthes now ? barre vp my dores, you varlets.

35

E P I. He is a varlet, that stirres to such an office. Let 'hem stand open. I would see him that dares mooue his eyes toward it. Shal I haue a *barricado* made against my friends, to be barr'd of any pleasure they can bring in to me with honorable visitation ?

40

M O R. O *Amazonian* impudence !

T R V. Nay faith, in this, sir, she speakes but reason : and me thinkes is more continent then you. Would you goe to bed so presently, sir, afore noone ? a man of your head, and haire, should owe more to that reuerend ceremony, 45 and not mount the marriage-bed, like a towne-bul, or a mountaine-goate ; but stay the due season ; and ascend it then with religion, and feare. Those delights are to be steep'd in the humor, and silence of the night ; and giue the day to other open pleasures, and jollities of feast, of 50 musique, of reuells, of discourse : wee'll haue all, sir, that may make your *Hymen* high, and happy.

M O R. O, my torment, my torment !

T R V. Nay, if you indure the first halfe houre, sir, so tediously, and with this irksomnesse ; what comfort, or 55 hope, can this faire gentlewoman make to her selfe hereafter, in the consideration of so many yeeres as are to come——

M O R. Of my affliction. Good sir, depart, and let her doe it alone.

60

T R V. I haue done, sir.

M O R. That cursed barber !

T R V. (Yes faith, a cursed wretch indeed, sir.)

III. v. 34 After 'now?' Enter Servants. G 37 mooue] move F2  
40 visitation ? F2 : visitation. Fr, Q Exeunt Ser. add G 45  
reuerend] reueuerend Fr 49 humor] humour F2 50 jollities]  
iollities Q feast] feasting F2, F3 56 gentlewoman] Geutle-  
woman Q

M O R. I haue married his citterne, that's common to all  
65 men. Some plague, aboue the plague——

T R V. (All *Egypt's* ten plagues)

M O R. Reuenge me on him.

T R V. 'Tis very well, sir. If you laid on a curse or two,  
more, I'll assure you hee'll beare 'hem. As, that he may  
70 get the poxe with seeking to cure it, sir? Or, that while  
he is curling another mans haire, his owne may drop off?  
Or, for burning some male-baudes lock, he may haue his  
braine beat out with the curling-iron?

M O R. No, let the wretch liue wretched. May he get the  
75 itch, and his shop so lousie, as no man dare come at him,  
nor he come at no man.

T R V. (I, and if he would swallow all his balles for pills,  
let not them purge him)

M O R. Let his warming pan be euer cold.

80 T R V. (A perpetuall frost vnderneath it, sir)

M O R. Let him neuer hope to see fire againe.

T R V. (But in hell, sir)

M O R. His chaires be alwaies empty, his scissors rust,  
and his combes mould in their cases.

85 T R V. Very dreadfull that! (And may hee loose the in-  
uention, sir, of caruing lanternes in paper)

M O R. Let there be no baud carted that yeare, to employ  
a bason of his: but let him be glad to eate his sponge, for  
bread.

90 T R V. And drinke *lotium* to it, and much good doe him.

M O R. Or, for want of bread——

T R V. Eat eare-waxe, sir. I'll helpe you. Or, draw his  
owne teeth, and adde them to the lute-string.

M O R. No, beate the old ones to poulder, and make bread  
95 of them.

T R V. (Yes, make meale o' the millstones.)

M O R. May all the botches, and burnes, that he has cur'd  
on others, breake out vpon him.

T R V. And he now forget the cure of 'hem in himselfe, sir : or, if he do remember it, let him ha' scrap'd all his linnen into lint for 't, and haue not a rag left him, to set vp with.

M O R. Let him neuer set vp againe, but haue the gout in his hands for euer. Now, no more, sir.

T R V. O that last was too high set ! you might goe lesse with him i' faith, and bee reueng'd enough : as, that he be neuer able to new-paint his pole——

M O R. Good sir, no more. I forgot my selfe.

T R V. Or, want credit to take vp with a combe-maker——

M O R. No more, sir. 110

T R V. Or, hauing broken his glasse in a former despaire, fall now into a much greater, of euer getting another——

M O R. I beseech you, no more.

T R V. Or, that he neuer be trusted with trimming of any but chimney-sweepers—— 115

M O R. Sir——

T R V. Or, may he cut a colliers throat with his razor, by *chance-medlee*, and yet hang for't.

M O R. I will forgiue him, rather then heare any more. I beseech you, sir. 120

*Act III. Scene VI.*

DAW, MOROSE, TRVE-WIT, HAUGHTY, CENTAURE, MAVIS, TRVSTY.

THIS way, madame.

M O R. O, the sea breakes in vpon me ! another floud ! an inundation ! I shall be orewhelm'd with noise. It beates already at my shores. I feele an earthquake in my selfe, for't. 5

D A W. 'Giue you ioy, mistresse.

M O R. Has shee seruants too !

D A W. I haue brought some ladies here to see, and know

III. vi. *Enter Daw, introducing lady Haughty, Centaure, Mavis, and Trusty. G, continuing the scene*

*She kisses them severally as he presents them.* you. My ladie HAVGHTY, this my lady CENTAVRE, mistresse DOLMAVIS, mistresse TRVSTIE my ladie HAVGHTIES woman. Where's your husband? let's see him: can he endure no noise? let me come to him.

MOR. What *nomenclator* is this!

TRV. Sir IOHNDAW, sir, your wifes seruant, this.

15 MOR. ADAW, and her seruant! O, 'tis decreed, 'tis decreed of mee, and shee haue such seruants.

TRV. Nay sir, you must kisse the ladies, you must not goe away, now; they come toward you, to seeke you out.

HAV. I' faith, master MOROSE, would you steale a  
20 marriage thus, in the midst of so many friends, and not acquaint vs? Well, I'll kisse you, notwithstanding the iustice of my quarrell: you shall giue me leaue, mistresse, to vse a becomming familiarity with your husband.

EPI. Your ladship do's mean honour in it, to let me know  
25 hee is so worthy your fauour: as, you haue done both him and me grace, to visit so vnprepar'd a paire to entertaine you.

MOR. Complement! Complement!

EPI. But I must lay the burden of that, vpon my seruant, here.

30 HAV. It shall not need, mistresse MOROSE, wee will all beare, rather then one shall be opprest.

MOR. I know it: and you will teach her the faculty, if shee bee to learne it.

HAV. Is this the silent woman?

35 CEN. Nay, shee has found her tongue since shee was married, master TRVE-WIT sayes.

HAV. O, master TRVE-WIT! 'saue you. What kinde of creature is your bride here? she speakes, me thinkes!

TRV. Yes madame, beleue it, she is a gentlewoman of  
40 very absolute behaiour, and of a good race.

HAV. And IACKDAW told vs, she could not speake.

TRV. So it was carried in plot, madam, to put her vpon this old fellow, by sir DAVPHINE, his nephew, and one

III. vi. 14 wives] Wives F3 16 and] an' F2 (so 51) Going. add  
G 30 MOROSE.] MOROSE; F2 33 Walks aside while the rest  
talk apart. add G

or two more of vs : but shee is a woman of an excellent assurance, and an extraordinarie happie wit, and tongue. 45  
You shall see her make rare sport with D A W, ere night.

H A V. And he brought vs to laugh at her !

T R V. That falls out often, madame, that he that thinkes himselfe the master-wit, is the master-foole. I assure your lady-ship, yee cannot laugh at her. 50

H A V. No, wee'll haue her to the colledge : and shee haue wit, she shall bee one of vs ! shall shee not C E N T A V R E ? wee'll make her a collegiate.

C E N. Yes faith, madame, and M A V I S, and shee will set vp a side. 55

T R V. Beleuee it madame, and mistris M A V I S, shee will sustaine her part.

M A V. I'll tell you that, when I haue talk'd with her, and try'd her.

H A V. Vse her very ciuilly, M A V I S. 60

M A V. So I will, madame.

M O R. Blessed minute, that they would whisper thus euer.

T R V. In the meane time, madame, would but your lady-ship helpe to vexee him a little : you know his disease, talke to him about the wedding ceremonies, or call for your 65  
gloues, or——

H A V. Let me alone. C E N T A V R E, helpe me. M<sup>r</sup>. bride-groome, where are you ?

M O R. O, it was too miraculously good to last !

H A V. Wee see no ensignes of a wedding, here ; no 70  
character of a brideale : where be our skarfes, and our gloues ? I pray you, giue 'hem vs. Let's know your brides colours, and yours, at least.

C E N. Alas, madame, he has prouided none.

M O R. Had I knowne your ladiships painter, I would. 75

H A V. He has giuen it you, C E N T A V R E, yfaith. But, doe you heare, M. M O R O S E, a iest will not absolue you in this manner. You that haue suck'd the milke of the court,

and from thence haue beene brought vp to the very strong  
 80 meates, and wine, of it ; beene a courtier from the biggen,  
 to the night-cap : (as we may say) and you, to offend in  
 such a high point of ceremonie, as this ! and let your  
 nuptialls want all markes of solemnitie ! How much plate  
 haue you lost to day (if you had but regarded your profit)  
 85 what guifts, what friends, through your meere rusticitie ?

M O R. Madame——

H A V. Pardon mee, sir, I must insinuate your errorrs to  
 you. No gloues ? no garters ? no skarfes ? no *epithala-*  
*mium* ? no masque ?

90 D A W. Yes, madame, I'll make an *epithalamium*, I pro-  
 mis'd my mistris, I haue begunne it already : will your  
 ladiship heare it ?

H A V. I, good I A C K D A W.

M O R. Will it please your ladiship command a chamber,  
 95 and be priuate with your friend ? you shall haue your  
 choice of roomes, to retire to after : my whole house is  
 yours. I know, it hath beene your ladiships errand, into  
 the city, at other times, how euer now you haue beene  
 vnhappily diuerted vpon mee : but I shall be loth to breake  
 100 any honorable custome of your ladiships. And therefore,  
 good madame——

E P I. Come, you are a rude bride-groome, to entertayne  
 ladies of honour in this fashion.

C E N. He is a rude groome, indeed.

105 T R V. By that light, you deserue to be grafted, and haue  
 your hornes reach from one side of the Iland, to the other.  
 Doe not mistake me, sir, I but speake this, to giue the ladies  
 some heart againe, not for any malice to you.

M O R. Is this your *Brauo*, ladies ?

110 T R V. As god helpe me, if you vtter such another word,  
 I'll take mistris bride in, and beginne to you, in a very sad  
 cup, doe you see ? Goe too, know your friends, and such,  
 as loue you.

III. vi. 85 guifts] gifts Q, F2 88 you.] you, F2 90 pro-  
 mis'd] promise F3 97 ladiships] Ladishis Q 100 honorable]  
 honourable F2 110 god] God Q, F2 112 cup,] cup; F2

Act III. Scene VII.

CLERIMONT, MOROSE, TRVE-WIT, DAV-  
PHINE, LA-FOOLE, OTTER,  
M<sup>rs</sup>. OTTER, &c.

BY your leaue, ladies. Doe you want any musique? I haue brought you varietie of noyses. Play, sirs, all of you.

MOR. O, a plot, a plot, a plot, a plot vpon me! This day, I shall be their anville to worke on, they will grate me asunder. 'Tis worse then the noyse of a saw. *Musique of all sorts.*

CLE. No, they are haire, rosin, and guts. I can giue you the receipt.

TRV. Peace, boyes.

CLE. Play, I say.

TRV. Peace, rascalls. You see who's your friend now, sir? Take courage, put on a martyrs resolution. Mocke downe all their attemptings, with patience. 'Tis but a day, and I would suffer heroically. Should an asse exceed me in fortitude? No. You betray your infirmitie with your hanging dull eares, and make them insult: beare vp brauely, and constantly. Looke you here, sir, what honour is done you vnexpected, by your nephew; a wedding dinner come, and a Knight sewer before it, for the more reputation: and fine M<sup>rs</sup>. OTTER, your neighbour, in the rump, or tayle of it. *La-Foole passes ouer sewing the meate.* 20

MOR. Is that *Gorgon*, that *Medusa* come? Hide me, hide me.

TRV. I warrant you, sir, shee will not transforme you. Looke vpon her with a good courage. Pray you entertayne her, and conduct your guests in. No? Mistris bride, will you entreat in the ladies? your bride-groome is so shame-fac'd, here— 25

EP I. Will it please your ladiship, madame?

III. vii. Enter Clerimont, followed by a number of musicians. G, continuing the scene 2 Aside to the musicians, who strike up all together. add G 3 St. dir. all om. F3 (perhaps from a defective copy of F2) 16 La-Foole passes over the stage as a server, followed by servants carrying dishes, and mistress Otter. G 25 guests] Guess F3



- H A V. With the benefit of your companie, mistris.
- 30 E P I. Seruant, pray you performe your duties.  
DAW. And glad to be commanded, mistris.  
C E N. How like you her wit, M A V I S ?  
M A V. Very prettily, absolutely well.  
M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. 'Tis my place.
- 35 M A V. You shall pardon me, mistris O T T E R.  
M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Why I am a collegiate.  
M A V. But not in ordinary.  
M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. But I am.  
M A V. Wee'll dispute that within.
- 40 C L E. Would this had lasted a little longer.  
T R V. And that they had sent for the Heralds. Captayne  
O T T E R, what newes ?  
O T T. I haue brought my bull, beare, and horse, in pri-  
uate, and yonder are the trumpetters without, and the  
drum, gentlemen.
- The  
Drum  
and  
Trumpets  
sound.* M O R. O, ô, ô.  
O T T. And we will haue a rouse in each of 'hem, anon,  
for bold Britons, yfaith.  
M O R. O, ô, ô.
- 50 A L L. Follow, follow, follow.

*Act III. Scene I.*

T R V E - W I T, C L E R I M O N T, D A V P H I N E.

**W**As there euer poore bride-groome so tormented ? or  
man indeed ?

C L E. I haue not read of the like, in the *chronicles* of  
the land.

5 T R V. Sure, hee cannot but goe to a place of rest, after  
all this purgatorie.

III. vii. 32 MAVIS ? F2: MAVIS. F1: *Mavis*. Q 39 *Exeunt Ladies.*  
add G 41 After 'Heralds.' *Enter captain Otter*. G Captayne  
OTTER *corr.* F1: Captaine OTTER F1 originally 48 *They sound*  
again. add G 49 *Exit hastily.* add G 50 *Exeunt.* add G  
IV. i. ACT IV. SCENE I. | *A Room in Morose's House.* | *Enter Truewit*  
*and Clerimont.* G

C L E. He may presume it, I thinke.

T R V. The spitting, the coughing, the laughter, the nees-  
ing, the farting, dauncing, noise of the musique, and her  
masculine, and lowd commanding, and vrging the whole 10  
family, makes him thinke he has married a *furie*.

C L E. And shee carries it vp brauely.

T R V. I, shee takes any occasion to speake : that's the  
height on't.

C L E. And how soberly D A V P H I N E labours to satisfie 15  
him, that it was none of his plot !

T R V. And has almost brought him to the faith, i' the  
article. Here he comes. Where is he now ? what's become  
of him, D A V P H I N E ?

D A V. O, hold me vp a little, I shall goe away i' the iest 20  
else. Hee has got on his whole nest of night-caps, and  
lock'd himselfe vp, i' the top o' the house, as high, as euer  
he can climbe from the noise. I peep'd in at a crany, and  
saw him sitting ouer a crosse-beame o' the rooffe, like him o'  
the sadlers horse in *Fleetstreet*, vp-right : and he will sleepe 25  
there.

C L E. But where are your collegiates ?

D A V. With-drawne with the bride in priuate.

T R V. O, they are instructing her i' the colledge-Gram-  
mar. If shee haue grace with them, shee knowes all their 30  
secrets instantly.

C L E. Me thinks, the lady H A V G H T Y lookes well to  
day, for all my dispraise of her i' the morning. I thinke,  
I shall come about to thee againe, T R V E - W I T.

T R V. Beleeue it, I told you right. Women ought to re- 35  
paire the losses, time and yeeres haue made i' their features,  
with dressings. And an intelligent woman, if shee know by  
her selfe the least defect, will bee most curious, to hide it :  
and it becomes her. If shee be short, let her sit much, lest  
when shee stands, shee be thought to sit. If shee haue an 40  
ill foot, let her weare her gowne the longer, and her shoo  
the thinner. If a fat hand, and scald nailes, let her carue

the lesse, and act in gloues. If a sowre breath, let her neuer  
discourse fasting: and alwaies talke at her distance. If  
45 shee haue black and rugged teeth, let her offer the lesse at  
laughter, especially if shee laugh wide, and open.

C L E. O, you shall haue some women, when they laugh,  
you would thinke they bray'd, it is so rude, and——

T R V. I, and others, that will stalke i' their gait like an  
50 *Estrich*, and take huge strides. I cannot endure such a sight.  
I loue measure i' the feet, and number i' the voice: they  
are gentlenesses, that oft-times draw no lesse then the face.

D A V. How cam'st thou to studie these creatures so  
exactly? I would thou would'st make me a proficient.

55 T R V. Yes, but you must leaue to liue i' your chamber  
then a month together vpon *AMADIS de Gaule*, or *Don*  
*QVIXOTE*, as you are wont; and come abroad where the  
matter is frequent, to court, to tiltings, publique shoves,  
and feasts, to playes, and church sometimes: thither they  
60 come to shew their new tyres too, to see, and to be seene.  
In these places a man shall find whom to loue, whom to  
play with, whom to touch once, whom to hold euer. The  
varietie arrests his iudgement. A wench to please a man  
comes not downe dropping from the seeling, as he lyes on  
65 his backe droning a tobacco pipe. He must goe where  
shee is.

D A V. Yes, and be neuer the neere.

T R V. Out heretique. That diffidence makes thee worthy  
it should bee so.

70 C L E. He sayes true to you, D A V P H I N E.

D A V. Why?

T R V. A man should not doubt to ouer-come any woman.  
Thinke he can vanquish 'hem, and he shall: for though  
they denie, their desire is to be tempted. P E N E L O P E  
75 her selfe cannot hold out long. *Ostend*, you saw, was taken  
at last. You must perseuer, and hold to your purpose.  
They would sollicite vs, but that they are afraid. How-

rv. i. 52 that] thaa Q    oft-times] oftentimes F3    64 seeling]  
Ceiling F3    68 diffidence] difference F2, F3    76 perseuer]  
persevere F3

soeuer, they wish in their hearts we should sollicite them.  
Praise 'hem, flatter 'hem, you shal neuer want eloquence,  
or trust : euen the chastest delight to feele themselues that 80  
way rub'd. With praises you must mixe kisses too. If  
they take them, they'll take more. Though they striue, they  
would bee ouer-come.

C L E. O, but a man must beware of force.

T R V. It is to them an acceptable violence, and has oft- 85  
times the place of the greatest courtesie. Shee that might  
haue beene forc'd, and you let her goe free without touching,  
though shee then seeme to thanke you, will euer hate you  
after : and glad i' the face, is assuredly sad at the heart.

C L E. But all women are not to be taken al waies. 90

T R V. 'Tis true. No more then all birds, or all fishes.  
If you appeare learned to an ignorant wench, or iocund  
to a sad, or witty to a foolish, why shee presently begins to  
mistrust her selfe. You must approach them i' their owne  
height, their owne line : for the contrary makes many that 95  
feare to commit themselues to noble and worthy fellows,  
run into the imbraces of a rascall. If shee loue wit, giue  
verses, though you borrow 'hem of a friend, or buy 'hem, to  
haue good. If valour, talke of your sword, and be frequent  
in the mention of quarrels, though you be staunch in fight- 100  
ing. If actiuitie, be seene o' your *barbary* often, or leaping  
ouer stooles, for the credit of your back. If shee loue good  
clothes or dressing, haue your learned counsell about you  
euery morning, your *french* taylor, barber, linnener, &c.  
Let your poulder, your glasse, and your combe, be your 105  
dearest acquaintance. Take more care for the ornament of  
your head, then the safetie : and wish the common-wealth  
rather troubled, then a haire about you. That will take her.  
Then if shee be couetous and crauing, doe you promise  
any thing, and performe sparingly : so shall you keepe her 110  
in appetite still. Seeme as you would giue, but be like a  
barren field that yeelds little, or vn lucky dice, to foolish,

and hoping gamesters. Let your gifts be slight, and daintie,  
rather then pretious. Let cunning be aboue cost. Giue  
115 cherries at time of yeere, or apricots ; and say they were  
sent you out o' the countrey, though you bought 'hem in  
*Cheap-side*. Admire her tyres ; like her in all fashions ;  
compare her in euery habit to some deitie ; inuent excellent  
dreaumes to flatter her, and riddles ; or, if shee bee a great  
120 one, performe alwaies the second parts to her : like what  
shee likes, praise whom she praises, and faile not to make  
the houshold and seruants yours, yea the whole family, and  
salute 'hem by their names : ('tis but light cost if you can  
purchase 'hem so) and make her physitian your pensioner,  
125 and her chiefe woman. Nor will it bee out of your gaine  
to make loue to her too, so shee follow, not vs her, her ladies  
pleasure. All blabbing is taken away, when shee comes to  
be a part of the crime.

D A V. On what courtly lap hast thou late slept, to come  
130 forth so sudden and absolute a courtling ?

T R V. Good faith, I should rather question you, that are  
so harkning after these mysteries. I begin to suspect your  
diligence, D A V P H I N E. Speake, art thou in loue in  
earnest ?

135 D A V. Yes by my troth am I : 'twere ill dissembling  
before thee.

T R V. With which of 'hem, I pray thee ?

D A V. With all the collegiates.

C L E. Out on thee. Wee'll keepe you at home, beleuee  
140 it, i' the stable, and you be such a stallion.

T R V. No. I like him well. Men should loue wisely, and  
all women : some one for the face, and let her please the  
eye ; another for the skin, and let her please the touch ;  
a third for the voice, and let her please the eare ; and where  
145 the obiects mixe, let the senses so too. Thou wouldst thinke  
it strange, if I should make 'hem all in loue with thee afore  
night !

D A V. I would say thou had'st the best *philtre* i' the

world, and couldst doe more then madame MEDEA, or  
Doctor FOREMAN.

150

TRV. If I doe not, let me play the mounte-bank for my  
meate while I liue, and the bawd for my drinke.

DAV. So be it, I say.

Act III. Scene II.

OTTER, CLERIMONT, DAW, DAVPHINE,  
MOROSE, TRVE-WIT, LA-FOOLE,  
M<sup>rs</sup>. OTTER.

O Lord, gentlemen, how my knights and I haue mist you  
here!

CLE. Why, Captaine, what seruice? what seruice?

OTT. To see me bring vp my bull, beare, and horse to  
fight.

5

DAW. Yes faith, the Captaine saies we shall be his dogs  
to baite 'hem.

DAV. A good imployment.

TRV. Come on, let's see a course then.

LA-F. I am afraid my cousin will be offended if shee 10  
come.

OTT. Be afraid of nothing. Gentlemen, I haue plac'd  
the drum and the trumpets, and one to giue 'hem the signe  
when you are ready. Here's my bull for my selfe, and my  
beare for sir IOHN DAW, and my horse for sir AMOROS. 15  
Pray set your foot to mine, and yours to his, and——

LA-F. Pray god my cousin come not.

OTT. Saint GEORGE, and saint ANDREW, feare no  
cousins. Come, sound, sound. *Et rauco strepuerunt cornua  
cantu.*

20

TRV. Well said, Captaine, yfaith: well fought at the  
bull.

CLE. Well held at the beare.

TRV. Low, low, Captayne.

iv. ii. Enter Otter, with his three cups, Daw, and La-Foole. G, con-  
tinuing the scene 17 god] God Q 20 They drinke. add G

- 25 D A V. O, the horse has kickt off his dog alreadie.  
 L A - F. I cannot drinke it, as I am a Knight.  
 T R V. Gods so, off with his spurres, some-body.  
 L A - F. It goes againe my conscience. My cousin will bee  
 angrie with it.
- 30 D A W. I ha' done mine.  
 T R V. You fought high and faire, sir I O H N.  
 C L E. At the head.  
 D A V. Like an excellent beare-dog.  
 C L E. You take no notice of the businesse, I hope.
- 35 D A W. Not a word, sir, you see we are *iouiall*.  
 O T T. Sir A M O R O V S, you must not æquiocate. It  
 must bee pull'd downe, for all my cousin.  
 C L E. Sfoot, if you take not your drinke, they'll thinke  
 you are discontented with some thing : you'll betray all, if  
 40 you take the least notice.  
 L A - F. Not I, I'll both drinke, and talke then.  
 O T T. You must pull the horse on his knees, sir  
 A M O R O V S : feare no cousins. *Iacta est alea*.  
 T R V. O, now hee's in his vaine, and bold. The least hint  
 45 giuen him of his wife now, will make him raile desperately.  
 C L E. Speake to him of her.  
 T R V. Doe you, and I'll fetch her to the hearing of it.  
 D A V. Captaine hee-O T T E R, your shee-O T T E R is  
 comming, your wife.
- 50 O T T. Wife ! Buz. *Titivilitium*. There's no such thing  
 in nature. I confesse, gentlemen, I haue a cook, a laun-  
 dresse, a house-drudge, that serues my necessary turnes,  
 and goes vnder that title : But hee's an asse that will be  
 so *uxorious*, to tie his affections to one circle. Come, the  
 55 name dulls appetite. Here, replenish againe : another bout.  
 Wiues are nasty sluttish *animalls*.  
 D A V. O, Captaine.  
 O T T. As euer the earth bare, *tribus verbis*. Where's  
 master T R V E - W I T ?
- 60 D A W. Hee's slipt aside, sir.

C L E. But you must drinke, and be *iouiall*.

D A W. Yes, giue it me.

L A - F. And me, too.

D A W. Let's be *iouiall*.

L A - F. As *iouiall* as you will.

65

O T T. Agreed. Now you shall ha' the beare, cousin, and sir I O H N D A W the horse, and I'll ha' the bull still. Sound *Tritons* o' the *Thames*. *Nunc est bibendum, nunc pede libero*—

M O R. Villaines, murderers, sonnes of the earth, and traitors, what doe you there ?

*Morose speaks from above :*

C L E. O, now the trumpets haue wak'd him, we shall haue his companie.

*the trumpets sounding.*

O T T. A wife is a sciruy *clogdogdo* ; an vn lucky thing, a very foresaid beare-whelpe, without any good fashion or breeding : *mala bestia*.

75

D A V. Why did you marry one then, Captaine ?

*His wife is brought out to heare him.*

O T T. A poxe—I married with sixe thousand pound, I. I was in loue with that. I ha' not kist my *furie*, these fortie weekes.

80

C L E. The more to blame you, Captaine.

T R V. Nay, mistris O T T E R, heare him a little first.

O T T. Shee has a breath worse then my grand-mothers, *profecto*.

M<sup>r</sup>. O T. O treacherous lyar. Kisse mee, sweet master T R V E - W I T, and proue him a slaundering knaue.

85

T R V. I'll rather beleeeue you, lady.

O T T. And she has a perruke, that's like a pound of hempe, made vp in shoo-thrids.

M<sup>r</sup>. O T. O viper, mandrake !

90

O T T. A most vile face ! and yet shee spends me fortie pound a yeere in *mercury*, and hogs-bones. All her teeth were made i' the *Blacke-Friers* : both her eye-browes i' the *Strand*, and her haire in *Siluer-street*. Euery part o' the towne ownes a peece of her.

95

IV. ii. After 76 Re-enter Truewit behind, with mistress Otter. G Siluer-] Siluer- Q

94



M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. I cannot hold.

O T T. She takes her selfe asunder still when she goes to bed, into some twentie boxes ; and about next day noone is put together againe, like a great *Germane* clocke : and so  
100 comes forth and rings a tedious larum to the whole house, and then is quiet againe for an houre, but for her quarters. Ha' you done me right, gentlemen ?

*Shee falls  
vpon him  
and beates  
him.* M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. No, sir, I'll do you right with my quarters, with my quarters.

O T T. O, held, good Princesse.

T R V. Sound, sound.

C L E. A battell, a battell.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. You notorious stinkardly beareward, do's my breath smell ?

110 O T T. Vnder correction, deare Princesse : looke to my beare, and my horse, gentlemen.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Doe I want teeth, and eye-browes, thou bulldog ?

T R V. Sound, sound still.

115 O T T. No, I protest, vnder correction——

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. I, now you are vnder correction, you protest : but you did not protest before correction, sir. Thou I V D A S, to offer to betray thy Princesse ! I'll make thee an example——

*Morose  
descends  
with a  
long  
sword.* M O R. I will haue no such examples in my house, lady  
O T T E R.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Ah——

M O R. M<sup>rs</sup>. M A R Y A M B R E E, your examples are dangerous. Rogues, Hellhounds, *Stentors*, out of my dores,  
125 you sonnes of noise and tumult, begot on an ill *May*-day, or when the Gally-foist is a-floate to *Westminster* ! A trumpet could not be conceiu'd, but then !

D A V. What ailes you, sir ?

M O R. They haue rent my rooffe, walls, and all my  
130 windores asunder, with their brazen throates.

iv. ii. 96 M<sup>rs</sup>. O T.] Mrs. Ott. [comes forward.] G 103 St. dir.  
beates] beates vpon Q 122 Mrs. Otter, Daw, and La-Foole run off.  
add G 126 After 'Westminster!' Drives out the musicians. G

TRV. Best follow him, DAVPHINE.

DAV. So I will.

CLE. Where's DAW, and LA-FOOLE?

OTT. They are both run away, sir. Good gentlemen, helpe to pacifie my Princesse, and speake to the great ladies 135 for me. Now must I goe lie with the beares this fortnight, and keepe out o' the way, till my peace be made, for this scandale shee has taken. Did you not see my bull-head, gentlemen?

CLE. Is't not on, Captayne? 140

TRV. No: but he may make a new one, by that, is on.

OTT. O, here 'tis. And you come ouer, gentlemen, and aske for TOM OTTER, wee'll goe downe to *Ratcliffe*, and haue a course yfaith: for all these disasters. There's *bona spes* left. 145

TRV. Away, Captaine, get off while you are well.

CLE. I am glad we are rid of him.

TRV. You had neuer beene, vnlesse wee had put his wife vpon him. His humour is as tedious at last, as it was ridiculous at first. 150

### Act III. Scene III.

HAUGHTY, M<sup>rs</sup>. OTTER, MAVIS, DAW, LA-FOOLE, CENTAVRE, EPICOENE, TRVEWIT, CLERIMONT.

WE wondred why you shreek'd so, M<sup>rs</sup>. OTTER.

M<sup>rs</sup>. OT. O god, madame, he came downe with a huge long naked weapon in both his hands, and look'd so dreadfully! Sure, hee's beside himselfe.

MAV. Why what made you there, mistris OTTER? 5

M<sup>rs</sup>. OT. Alas, mistris MAVIS, I was chastising my subiect, and thought nothing of him.

DAW. Faith, mistris, you must doe so too. Learne to

iv. ii. 130, 132 *Exit*. add G 142 And] An' F2 146 *Exit*  
*Otter*. add G 150 *Exeunt*. add G iv. iii. SCENE II. | *A long*  
*open Gallery in the same.* | *Enter lady Haughty, mistress Otter, Mavis,*  
*Daw, La-Foole, Centaure, and Epicoene.* G 2 god] God Q

chastise. Mistris OTTER corrects her husband so, hee  
10 dares not speake, but vnder correction.

LA - F. And with his hat off to her : 'twould doe you  
good to see.

HA V. In sadnesse 'tis good, and mature counsell : prac-  
tise it, MOROSE. I'll call you MOROSE still now, as  
15 I call CENTAVRE, and MAVIS : we foure will be all  
one.

CEN. And you'll come to the colledge, and liue with vs ?

HA V. Make him giue milke, and hony.

MA V. Looke how you manage him at first, you shall  
20 haue him euer after.

CEN. Let him allow you your coach, and foure horses,  
your woman, your chamber-maid, your page, your gentle-  
man-vsher, your *french* cooke, and foure groomes.

HA V. And goe with vs, to *Bed'lem*, to the *China* houses,  
25 and to the *Exchange*.

CEN. It will open the gate to your fame.

HA V. Here's CENTAVRE has immortaliz'd her selfe,  
with taming of her wilde male.

MA V. I, shee has done the miracle of the kingdome.

30 EPI. But ladies, doe you count it lawfull to haue such  
pluralitie of seruants, and doe 'hem all graces ?

HA V. Why not ? why should women denie their fauours  
to men ? Are they the poorer, or the worse ?

DA W. Is the *Thames* the lesse for the *dyers* water,  
35 mistris ?

LA - F. Or a torch, for lighting many torches ?

TR V. Well said, LA - FOOLE ; what a new one he  
has got !

CEN. They are emptie losses, women feare, in this kind.

40 HA V. Besides, ladies should be mindfull of the approach  
of age, and let no time want his due vse. The best of our  
daies passe first.

MA V. We are riuers, that cannot be call'd backe,  
madame : shee that now excludes her louers, may liue to  
45 lie a forsaken beldame, in a frozen bed.

CEN. 'Tis true, MAVIS; and who will wait on vs to coach then? or write, or tell vs the newes then? Make *anagrammes* of our names, and inuite vs to the cock-pit, and kisse our hands all the play-time, and draw their weapons for our honors? 50

HAV. Not one.

DAW. Nay, my mistris is not altogether vn-intelligent of these things; here be in presence haue tasted of her fauours.

CLE. What a neighing hobby-horse is this! 55

EPI. But not with intent to boast 'hem againe, seruant. And haue you those excellent receits, madame, to keepe your selues from bearing of children?

HAV. O yes, MOROSE. How should we maintayne our youth and beautie, else? Many births of a woman 60 make her old, as many crops make the earth barren.

### *Act III. Scene III.*

MOROSE, DAVPHINE, TRUE-WIT, EPICOENE,  
CLERIMONT, DAW, HAUGHTY, LA-  
FOOLE, CENTAVRE, MAVIS, MR.  
OTTER, TRVSTY.

O My cursd angell, that instructed me to this fate!

DAV. Why, sir?

MOR. That I should bee seduc'd by so foolish a deuill, as a barber will make!

DAV. I would I had beene worthy, sir, to haue partaken 5 your counsell, you should neuer haue trusted it to such a minister.

MOR. Would I could redeeme it with the losse of an eye (nephew) a hand, or any other member.

DAV. Mary, god forbid, sir, that you should geld your 10 selfe, to anger your wife.

iv. iv. *Enter Morose and Dauphine.* G, continuing the scene 10  
god] God Q

M O R. So it would rid me of her ! and, that I did super-  
erogatorie penance, in a bellfry, at *Westminster-hall*, i' the  
cock-pit, at the fall of a stagge ; the tower-wharfe (what  
15 place is there else ?) *London-bridge*, *Paris-garden*, *Belins-*  
gate, when the noises are at their height and lowdest. Nay,  
I would sit out a play, that were nothing but fights at sea,  
drum, trumpet, and target !

D A V. I hope there shall be no such need, sir. Take  
20 patience, good vncle. This is but a day, and 'tis well worne  
too now.

M O R. O, 'twill bee so for euer, nephew, I foresee it, for  
euer. Strife and tumult are the dowrie that comes with  
a wife.

25 T R V. I told you so, sir, and you would not beleeeue me.

M O R. Alas, doe not rub those wounds, master T R V E-  
w I T, to bloud againe : 'twas my negligence. Adde not  
affliction to affliction. I haue perceiu'd the effect of it, too  
late, in madame O T T E R.

30 E P I. How doe you, sir ?

M O R. Did you euer heare a more vnecessary question ?  
as if she did not see ! Why, I doe as you see, *Empresse*,  
*Empresse*.

E P I. You are not well, sir ! you looke very ill ! some-  
35 thing has distempered you.

M O R. O horrible, monstrous impertinencies ! would not  
one of these haue seru'd ? doe you thinke, sir ? would  
not one of these haue seru'd ?

T R V. Yes, sir, but these are but notes of female kind-  
40 nesse, sir : certaine tokens that shee has a voice, sir.

M O R. O, is't so ? come, and 't be no otherwise——what  
say you ?

E P I. How doe you feele your selfe, sir ?

M O R. Againe, that !

45 T R V. Nay, looke you, sir : you would be friends with  
your wife vpon vn-conscionable termes, her silence——

E P I. They say you are run mad, sir.

M O R. Not for loue, I assure you, of you ; doe you see ?

E P I. O lord, gentlemen ! Lay hold on him for gods sake : what shal I doe ? who's his physitian (can you tel) 50 that knowes the state of his body best, that I might send for him ? Good sir, speake. I'll send for one of my doctors else.

M O R. What, to poyson me, that I might die intestate, and leaue you possest of all ? 55

E P I. Lord, how idly he talkes, and how his eyes sparkle ! He lookes greene about the temples ! Doe you see what blue spots he has ?

C L E. I, it's melancholy.

E P I. Gentlemen, for heauens sake counsell me. Ladies ! 60 Seruant, you haue read P L I N Y, and P A R A C E L S V S : Ne're a word now to comfort a poore gentlewoman ? Ay me ! what fortune had I to marry a distracted man ?

D A W. I'll tell you, mistris——

T R V. How rarely shee holds it vp ! 65

M O R. What meane you, gentlemen ?

E P I. What will you tell me, seruant ?

D A W. The disease in Greeke is called *Mavia*, in Latine, *Insania, Furor, vel Ecstasis melancholica*, that is, *Egressio*, when a man *ex melancholico, euadit fanaticus*. 70

M O R. Shall I haue a lecture read vpon me aliue ?

D A W. But he may be but *Phreneticus*, yet, mistris ? and *Phrenetis* is only *delirium*, or so——

E P I. I, that is for the disease, seruant : but what is this to the cure ? we are sure inough of the disease. 75

M O R. Let me goe.

T R V. Why, wee'll intreat her to hold her peace, sir.

M O R. O, no. Labour not to stop her. Shee is like a conduit-pipe, that will gush out with more force, when shee opens againe. 80

H A V. I'll tell you, M O R O S E, you must talke diuinitie to him altogether, or morall philosophie.

L A - F. I, and there's an excellent booke of morall philosophie, madame, of R A Y N A R D the foxe, and all the  
85 beasts, call'd, D O N E S philosophie.

C E N. There is, indeed, sir A M O R O V S L A - F O O L E.

M O R. O miserie!

L A - F. I haue read it, my lady C E N T A V R E, all ouer to my cousin, here.

90 M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. I, and 'tis a very good booke as any is, of the Modernes.

D A W. Tut, hee must haue S E N E C A read to him, and P L V T A R C H, and the Ancients; the Modernes are not for this disease.

95 C L E. Why, you discommended them too, to day, sir I O H N.

D A W. I, in some cases: but in these they are best, and A R I S T O T L E S *Ethicks*.

M A V. Say you so, sir I O H N? I thinke you are de-  
100 ceiu'd: you tooke it vpon trust.

H A V. Where's T R V S T Y, my woman? I'll end this difference. I prythee, O T T E R, call her. Her father and mother were both mad, when they put her to me.

M O R. I thinke so. Nay, gentlemen, I am tame. This  
105 is but an exercise, I know, a marriage ceremonie, which I must endure.

H A V. And one of 'hem (I know not which) was cur'd with the *Sicke-mans salue*; and the other with G R E E N E S *groates-worth of wit*.

110 T R V. A very cheape cure, madame.

H A V. I, it's very fæisible.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. My lady call'd for you, mistris T R V S T Y: you must decide a controuersie.

H A V. O T R V S T Y, which was it you said, your father,  
115 or your mother, that was cur'd with the *Sicke-mans salue*?

iv. iv. 82 him] her Q 107 'hem] them F<sub>2</sub>, F<sub>3</sub> After 110  
Enter Trusty. G 111 fæisible] feasible F<sub>3</sub> 114 TRVSTY]  
Trusty F<sub>2</sub>

T R V S. My mother, madame, with the *salve*.

T R V. Then it was the *Sicke-womans salve*.

T R V S. And my father with the *Groates-worth of wit*.  
But there was other meanes vs'd : we had a Preacher that  
would preach folke asleepe still ; and so they were pre- 120  
scrib'd to goe to church, by an old woman that was their  
physitian, thrise a weeke——

E P I. To sleepe ?

T R V S. Yes forsooth : and euery night they read them-  
selues asleepe on those bookes. 125

E P I. Good faith, it stands with great reason. I would  
I knew where to procure those bookes.

M O R. Oh.

L A - F. I can helpé you with one of 'hem, mistris M O -  
R O S E, the *groats-worth of wit*. 130

E P I. But I shall disfurnish you, sir A M O R O V S : can  
you spare it ?

L A - F. O, yes, for a weeke, or so ; I'll reade it my selfe  
to him.

E P I. No, I must doe that, sir : that must be my office. 135

M O R. Oh, oh !

E P I. Sure, he would doe well inough, if he could sleepe.

M O R. No, I should doe well inough, if you could sleepe.  
Haue I no friend that will make her drunke ? or giue her  
a little *ladanum* ? or *opium* ? 140

T R V. Why, sir, shee talkes ten times worse in her sleepe.

M O R. How !

C L E. Doe you not know that, sir ? neuer ceases all night.

T R V. And snores like a *porcpisce*.

M O R. O, redeeme me, fate, redeeme me, fate. For how 145  
many causes may a man be diuorc'd, nephew ?

D A V. I know not truely, sir.

T R V. Some Diuine must resolute you in that, sir, or  
canon-Lawyer.

M O R. I will not rest, I will not thinke of any other hope 150  
or comfort, till I know.



C L E. Alas, poore man.

T R V. You'll make him mad indeed, ladies, if you pursue this.

155 H A V. No, wee'll let him breathe, now, a quarter of an houre, or so.

C L E. By my faith, a large truce.

H A V. Is that his keeper, that is gone with him ?

D A W. It is his nephew, madame.

160 L A - F. Sir D A V P H I N E E V G E N I E.

C E N. He lookes like a very pittifull knight——

D A W. As can be. This marriage, has put him out of all.

L A - F. He has not a penny in his purse, madame——

D A W. He is readie to crie all this day.

165 L A - F. A very sharke, he set me i'the nicke t'other night at *primero*.

T R V. How these swabbers talke !

C L E. I, O T T E R S wine has swell'd their humours aboue a spring-tide.

170 H A V. Good M O R O S E, let's goe in againe. I like your couches exceeding well : we'll goe lie, and talke there.

E P I. I wait on you, madame.

T R V. 'Slight, I wil haue 'hem as silent as Signes, & their posts too, e're I ha' done. Doe you heare, lady-bride ?

175 I pray thee now, as thou art a noble wench, continue this discourse of D A V P H I N E within : but praise him exceedingly. Magnifie him with all the height of affection thou canst. (I haue some purpose in't) and but beate off these two rookes, I A C K D A W, and his fellow, with any discontentment hither, and I'll honour thee for euer.

180 E P I. I was about it, here. It angred mee to the soule, to heare 'hem beginne to talke so malepert.

T R V. Pray thee performe it, and thou win'st mee an idolater to thee, euerlasting.

185 E P I. Will you goe in, and heare me doe it ?

IV. iv. 160 DAVPHINE] *Dauphine*, Q 165 i'the] i'th' F<sub>2</sub> 171  
*Exeunt Hau. Cen. Mau. Tru. La-Foole, and Daw.* add G 173 'Slight]  
 'Sligh F<sub>2</sub> 174 posts] post F<sub>2</sub>, F<sub>3</sub> 180 honour] honor F<sub>2</sub>

TRV. No, I'll stay here. Driue 'hem out of your companie, 'tis all I aske : which cannot bee any way better done, then by extolling DAVPHINE, whom they haue so slighted.

EPI. I warrant you : you shall expect one of 'hem presently. 190

CLE. What a cast of kastrils are these, to hawke after ladies, thus ?

TRV. I, and strike at such an eagle as DAVPHINE.

CLE. He will be mad, when we tell him. Here he comes. 195

Act IIII. Scene v.

CLERIMONT, TRVE-WIT, DAVPHINE,  
DAW, LA-FOOLE.

O Sir, you are welcome.

TRV. Where's thine vncler ?

DAV. Run out o' dores in's night-caps, to talke with a *Casuiſt* about his diuorce. It workes admirably.

TRV. Thou would'st ha' said so, and thou had'st beene 5 here ! The ladies haue laught at thee, most *comically*, since thou wentst, DAVPHINE.

CLE. And askt, if thou wert thine vnclers keeper ?

TRV. And the brace of Babouns answer'd, yes ; and said thou wert a pittifull poore fellow, and did'st liue vpon 10 posts : and had'st nothing but three sutes of apparell, and some few beneuolences that lords ga' thee to foole to 'hem, and swagger.

DAV. Let me not liue, I'll beate 'hem. I'll binde 'hem both to grand Madames bed-postes, and haue 'hem bayted 15 with monkeyes.

TRV. Thou shalt not need, they shall be beaten to thy hand, DAVPHINE. I haue an execution to serue vpon 'hem, I warrant thee shall serue : trust my plot.

20 D A V. I, you haue many plots ! So you had one, to make all the wenches in loue with me.

T R V. Why, if I doe not yet afore night, as neere as 'tis ; and that they doe not euery one inuite thee, and be ready to scratch for thee : take the morgage of my wit.

25 C L E. 'Fore god, I'll be his witsnesse ; thou shalt haue it, D A V P H I N E : thou shalt be his foole for euer, if thou doest not.

T R V. Agreed. Perhaps 'twill bee the better estate. Doe you obserue this gallerie ? or rather lobby, indeed ? Here  
30 are a couple of studies, at each end one : here will I act such a *tragi-comædy* betweene the *Guelphes*, and the *Ghibellines*, D A W and L A - F O O L E—which of 'hem comes out first, will I seize on : (you two shall be the *chorus* behind the arras, and whip out betweene the *acts*, and speake.) If I  
35 doe not make 'hem keepe the peace, for this remnant of the day, if not of the yeere, I haue faild once—I heare D A W comming : Hide, and doe not laugh, for gods sake.

D A W. Which is the way into the garden, trow ?

T R V. O, I A C K D A W ! I am glad I haue met with  
40 you. In good faith, I must haue this matter goe no further betweene you. I must ha' it taken vp.

D A W. What matter, sir ? Betweene whom ?

T R V. Come, you disguise it—Sir A M O R O V S and you. If you loue me, I A C K, you shall make vse of your philo-  
45 sophy now, for this once, and deliuer me your sword. This is not the wedding the C E N T A V R E S were at, though there be a shee-one here. The bride has entreated me I will see no bloud shed at her bridall, you saw her whisper me ere-while.

50 D A W. As I hope to finish T A C I T V S, I intend no murder.

T R V. Doe you not wait for sir A M O R O V S ?

D A W. Not I, by my knight-hood.

iv. v. 24 scratch] search *F2*, *F3* 25 god] God *Q* (so 97, 221, 292, 338) shalt] shalr *F2* 37 gods *Fr*: God *Q*: Gods *F2* After 37 Re-enter Daw. G 40 further] further *F2* 43 it—] it- *Fr*: it, *F2* 48 bridall,] Bridall ; *F2*

T R V. And your schollership too ?

D A W. And my schollership too.

55

T R V. Goe to, then I returne you your sword, and aske you mercy ; but put it not vp, for you will be assaulted. I vnderstood that you had apprehended it, and walkt here to braue him : and that you had held your life contemptible, in regard of your honor.

60

D A W. No, no, no such thing I assure you. He and I parted now, as good friends as could be.

T R V. Trust not you to that visor. I saw him since dinner with another face : I haue knowne many men in my time vex'd with losses, with deaths, and with abuses, but so offended a wight as sir A M O R O V S, did I neuer see, or read of. For taking away his guests, sir, to day, that's the cause : and hee declares it behind your backe, with such threatnings and contempts—— He said to D A V P H I N E, you were the errandst asse——

70

D A W. I, he may say his pleasure.

T R V. And sweares, you are so protested a coward, that hee knowes you will neuer doe him any manly or single right, and therefore hee will take his course.

D A W. I'll giue him any satisfaction, sir——but fighting.

75

T R V. I, sir, but who knowes what satisfaction hee'll take ? bloud he thirsts for, and bloud he will haue : and where-about on you he will haue it, who knowes, but himselfe ?

D A W. I pray you, master T R V E - W I T, be you a mediator.

T R V. Well, sir, conceale your selfe then in this studie, till I returne. Nay, you must bee content to bee lock'd in : for, for mine owne reputation I would not haue you seene to receiue a publique disgrace, while I haue the matter in managing. Gods so, here hee comes : keepe your breath close, that hee doe not heare you sigh. In good faith, sir A M O R O V S, hee is not this way, I pray you bee mercifull, doe not murder him ; hee is a christian as good as you :

*He puts him vp.*

90 you are arm'd as if you sought a reuenge on all his race.  
 Good DAVPHINE, get him away from this place. I  
 neuer knew a mans choller so high, but hee would speake  
 to his friends, hee would heare reason. IACK DAW.  
 IACK DAW! a-sleepe?

95 DAW. Is he gone, master TRVE-WIT?

TRV. I, did you heare him?

DAW. O god, yes.

TRV. What a quick eare feare has?

DAW. And is he so arm'd, as you say?

100 TRV. Arm'd? did you euer see a fellow, set out to take  
 possession?

DAW. I, sir.

TRV. That may giue you some light, to conceiue of  
 him: but 'tis nothing to the principall. Some false brother  
 105 i' the house has furnish'd him strangely. Or, if it were out  
 o' the house, it was TOMOTTER.

DAW. Indeed, hee's a Captayne, and his wife is his kins-  
 woman.

TRV. Hee has got some-bodies old two-hand-sword, to  
 110 mow you off at the knees. And that sword hath spawn'd  
 such a dagger!—but then he is so hung with pikes, hal-  
 berds, peitronells, calliuers, and muskets, that he looks like  
 a Iustice of peace's hall: a man of two thousand a yeere,  
 is not sess'd at so many weapons, as he has on. There was  
 115 neuer fencer challeng'd at so many seuerall foiles. You  
 would think hee meant to murder all Saint PVLCHRES  
 parish. If hee could but victuall himselfe for halfe a yeere,  
 in his breeches, hee is sufficiently arm'd to ouer-runne a  
 countrie.

120 DAW. Good lord, what meanes he, sir! I pray you,  
 master TRVE-WIT, be you a mediator.

TRV. Well, I'll trie if he will be appeas'd with a leg or  
 an arme, if not, you must die once.

IV. v. 94 IACK DAW] JACK F2: Jack F3 95 DAW.] Daw.  
 [within.] G 96 I.] I; F2 97 god] God Q, F2 99 DAW.] Daw.  
 [Comes out of the closet.] G And] But F2 112 peitronells] Query,  
 petrionells 120 lord] Lord Q 123 arme.] arme; F2

D A W. I would be loth to loose my right arme, for writing *madrigalls*. 125

T R V. Why, if he will be satisfied with a thumb, or a little finger, all's one to me. You must thinke, I'll doe my best.

D A W. Good sir, doe.

C L E. What hast thou done ?

T R V. He will let me doe nothing, man, he do's all afore me, he offers his left arme. *He puts him up againe, and then came forth.*

C L E. His left wing, for a I A C K D A W.

D A V. Take it, by all meanes.

T R V. How ! Maime a man for euer, for a iest ? what 135 a conscience hast thou ?

D A V. 'Tis no losse to him : he has no employment for his armes, but to eate spoone-meat. Beside, as good maime his body as his reputation.

T R V. He is a scholler, and a *Wit*, and yet he do's not 140 thinke so. But he looses no reputation with vs, for we all resolu'd him an asse before. To your places againe.

C L E. I pray thee, let me be in at the other a little.

T R V. Looke, you'll spoile all : these be euer your tricks. 145

C L E. No, but I could hit of some things that thou wilt misse, and thou wilt say are good ones.

T R V. I warrant you. I pray forbear, I'll leaue it off, else.

D A V. Come away, C L E R I M O N T. 150

T R V. Sir A M O R O V S !

L A - F. Master T R V E - W I T.

T R V. Whether were you going ?

L A - F. Downe into the court, to make water.

T R V. By no meanes, sir, you shall rather tempt your 155 breeches.

L A - F. Why, sir ?

IV. v. 124 loose] lose F2 After 129 Clerimont and Dauphine come forward. G 134 DAV.] Daw. Q 137 losse] lesse F2 138 good] goods Q 141 loses] loses F2 After 150 Daup. and Cler. withdraw as before. Enter La-Foole. G 155 sir.] sir ; F2

TRV. Enter here, if you loue your life.

LA - F. Why ! why !

160 TRV. Question till your throat bee cut, doe : dally till  
the enraged soule find you.

LA - F. Who's that ?

TRV. DAW it is : will you in ?

LA - F. I, I, I'll in : what's the matter ?

165 TRV. Nay, if hee had beene coole inough to tell vs that,  
there had beene some hope to attone you, but he seemes so  
implacably enrag'd.

LA - F. 'Slight, let him rage. I'll hide my selfe.

TRV. Doe, good sir. But what haue you done to him  
170 within, that should prouoke him thus ? you haue broke  
some iest vpon him, afore the ladies——

LA - F. Not I, (I) neuer in my life, broke iest vpon any  
man. The bride was praising sir DAVPHINE, and he  
went away in snuffe, and I followed him, vnlesse he took  
175 offence at me, in his drinke ere while, that I would not  
pledge all the horse full.

TRV. By my faith, and that may bee, you remember  
well : but hee walkes the round vp and downe, through  
euery roome o' the house, with a towell in his hand, crying,  
180 where's LA - FOOLE ? who saw LA - FOOLE ? and  
when DAVPHINE, and I, demanded the cause, wee can  
force no answer from him, but (ô reuenge, how sweet art  
thou ! I will strangle him in this towell) which leads vs to  
coniecture, that the maine cause of his furie is for bringing  
185 your meate to day, with a towell about you, to his discredit.

LA - F. Like inough. Why, and he be angrie for that,  
I'll stay here, till his anger be blowne ouer.

TRV. A good becomming resolution, sir. If you can  
put it on o' the sudden.

190 LA - F. Yes, I can put it on. Or, I'll away into the  
country presently.

TRV. How will you get out o' the house, sir ? Hee knowes

you are i' the house, and hee'll watch you this se'n-night  
but hee'll haue you. Hee'll out-wait a sargeant for you.

L A - F. Why, then I'll stay here. 195

T R V. You must thinke, how to victuall your selfe in  
time, then.

L A - F. Why, sweet master T R V E - W I T, will you en-  
treat my cousin O T T E R, to send me a cold venison pasty,  
a bottle or two of wine, and a chamber pot? 200

T R V. A stoole were better, sir, of sir A - I A X his in-  
vention.

L A - F. I, that will be better indeed: and a pallat to  
lie on.

T R V. O, I would not aduise you to sleepe by any 205  
meanes.

L A - F. Would you not, sir? why, then I will not.

T R V. Yet, there's another feare——

L A - F. Is there, sir? What is't?

T R V. No, he cannot breake open this dore with his foot, 210  
sure.

L A - F. I'll set my backe against it, sir. I haue a good  
backe.

T R V. But, then, if he should batter.

L A - F. Batter! if he dare, I'll haue an action of batt'ry, 215  
against him.

T R V. Cast you the worst. He has sent for poulder  
alreadie, and what he will doe with it, no man knowes:  
perhaps blow vp the corner o' the house, where he suspects  
you are. Here he comes, in quickly. I protest, sir I O H N *He fumes,*  
D A W, he is not this way: what will you doe? before god, *as if one*  
you shall hang no *petarde* here. I'll die rather. Will you *were*  
not take my word? I neuer knew one but would be *present, to*  
satisfied. Sir A M O R O V S, there's no standing out. He *fright the*  
has made a *petarde* of an old brasse pot, to force your dore. *other, who*  
Thinke vpon some satisfaction, or termes, to offer him. *is run in*  
*to hide*  
*himselfe.*

iv. v. 200 pot?] pot. Ff: Pot. Q 214 then.] then Ff, Q 220  
comes.] comes; F2 222 *petarde* *petar de* (or perhaps *petar' de*) Q  
224 After 'AMOROV'S,' [speaks through the key-hole.] G



LA - F. Sir, I'll giue him any satisfaction. I dare giue any termes.

TRV. You'll leaue it to me, then?

230 LA - F. I, sir. I'll stand to any conditions.

He calls  
forth  
Cleri-  
mont, and  
Dau-  
phine.

TRV. How now, what thinke you, sirs? wer't not a difficult thing to determine, which of these two fear'd most?

CLE. Yes, but this feares the brauest: the other a whiniling dastard, IACK DAW! but LA - FOOLE, a braue heroique coward! and is afraid in a great looke, and a stout accent. I like him rarely.

TRV. Had it not beene pittie, these two should ha' beene conceal'd?

CLE. Shall I make a motion?

240 TRV. Briefly. For I must strike while 'tis hot.

CLE. Shall I goe fetch the ladies to the *catastrophe*?

TRV. Vmh? I, by my troth.

DAV. By no mortall meanes. Let them continue in the state of ignorance, and erre still: thinke 'hem wits, and  
245 fine fellowes, as they haue done. 'Twere sinne to reforme them.

TRV. Well, I will haue 'hem fetch'd, now I thinke on't, for a priuate purpose of mine: doe, CLERIMONT, fetch 'hem, and discourse to 'hem all that's past, and bring 'hem  
250 into the gallery here.

DAV. This is thy extreme vanitie, now: thou think'st thou wert vndone, if euery iest thou mak'st were not publish'd.

TRV. Thou shalt see, how vniust thou art, presently.  
255 CLERIMONT, say it was DAVPHINE's plot. Trust me not, if the whole drift be not for thy good. There's a carpet i' the next roome, put it on, with this scarfe ouer thy face, and a cushion o' thy head, and bee ready when I call AMORVS. Away—I O H N D A W.

IV. v. 227 LA - F.] La - F. [within,] G 231 St. dir. He . . . Dauphine]  
beckoning forward Cler. and Dauph. G 232 most?] most. Ff, Q  
234 whiniling] whinling F. Cunningham conj. 249 to 'hem] to hem  
Fr 255 After 'plot.' Exit Clerimont. G 259 After 'Away' Exit  
Daup. G After 'DAW.' Goes to Daw's closet, and brings him out. add G

D A W. What good newes, sir? 260

T R V. Faith, I haue followed, and argued with him hard for you. I told him, you were a knight, and a scholler; and that you knew fortitude did consist *magis patiendo quam faciendo, magis ferendo quam feriendo.*

D A W. It doth so indeed, sir. 265

T R V. And that you would suffer, I told him: so, at first he demanded, by my troth, in my conceipt, too much.

D A W. What was it, sir?

T R V. Your vpper lip, and sixe o' your fore-teeth.

D A W. 'Twas vnreasonable. 270

T R V. Nay, I told him plainly, you could not spare 'hem all. So after long argument (*pro & con*, as you know) I brought him downe to your two butter-teeth, and them he would haue.

D A W. O, did you so? why, he shall haue 'hem. 275

T R V. But he shall not, sir, by your leaue. The conclusion is this, sir, because you shall be very good friends hereafter, and this neuer to bee remembred, or vp-braided; besides, that he may not boast, he has done any such thing to you in his owne person: hee is to come here in disguise, 280 giue you fīue kicks in priuate, sir, take your sword from you, and lock you vp in that studie, during pleasure. Which will be but a little while, wee'll get it releas'd presently.

D A W. Fiue kicks? he shall haue sixe, sir, to be friends.

T R V. Beleeue mee, you shall not ouer-shoot your selfe, 285 to send him that word by me.

D A W. Deliuer it, sir. He shall haue it with all my heart, to be friends.

T R V. Friends? Nay, and he should not be so, and heartily too, vpon these termes, he shall haue me to enemie 290 while I liue. Come, sir, beare it brauely.

D A W. O god, sir, 'tis nothing.

T R V. True. What's sixe kicks to a man, that reads  
S E N E C A ?

195 D A W. I haue had a hundred, sir.

T R V. Sir A M O R O V S. No speaking one to another,  
or rehearsing old matters.

*Dauphine comes forth, and kicks him.* D A W. One, two, three, foure, fiae. I protest, sir  
A M O R O V S, you shall haue sixe.

T R V. Nay, I told you <you> should not talke. Come,  
giue him six, & he will needs. Your sword. Now returne  
to your safe custody: you shall presently meet afore the  
ladies, and be the dearest friends one to another—Giue  
me the scarfe, now, thou shalt beat the other bare-fac'd.

305 Stand by—sir A M O R O V S.

L A - F. What's here? A sword.

T R V. I cannot helpe it, without I should take the quar-  
rell vpon my selfe: here he has sent you his sword—

L A - F. I'll receiue none on't.

310 T R V. And he wills you to fasten it against a wall, and  
breake your head in some few seuerall places against the  
hilts.

L A - F. I will not: tell him roundly. I cannot endure  
to shed my owne blood.

315 T R V. Will you not?

L A - F. No. I'll beat it against a faire flat wall, if that  
will satisfie him: If not, he shall beat it himselfe, for  
A M O R O V S.

T R V. Why, this is strange starting off, when a man  
320 vnder-takes for you! I offered him another condition:  
Will you stand to that?

L A - F. I, what is't?

T R V. That you will be beaten, in priuate.

L A - F. Yes. I am content, at the blunt.

325 T R V. Then you must submit your selfe to bee hood-  
wink'd in this skarfe, and bee led to him, where hee will  
take your sword from you, and make you beare a blow,

iv. v. 300 you F3 305 by—] by, Ff, Q (cf. l. 259): by: W  
After 'by' [Dauphine retires, and Truewit goes to the other closet, and  
releases La-Foole.] G 311 places] place F2 322 is't? F2: is't. F1, Q  
After 324 Enter, above, Haughty, Centaure, Mavis, mistress Otter, Epicane,  
and Trusty. G

ouer the mouth, gules, and tweakes by the nose, *sans nombre*.

L A - F. I am content. But why must I be blinded? 330

T R V. That's for your good, sir: because, if hee should grow insolent vpon this, and publish it hereafter to your disgrace (which I hope he will not doe) you might sweare safely and protest, hee neuer beat you, to your knowledge.

L A - F. O, I conceiue. 335

T R V. I doe not doubt, but you'll be perfect good friends vpon't, and not dare to vtter an ill thought one of another, in future.

L A - F. Not I, as god helpe me, of him.

T R V. Nor he of you, sir. If he should—Come, sir. 340  
All hid, sir I O H N.

L A - F. Oh, sir I O H N, sir I O H N. Oh, ô-ô-ô-ô-Oh— *Dauphine enters to*

T R V. Good sir I O H N, leaue tweaking, you'll blow his nose off. 'Tis sir I O H N's pleasure, you should retire into the studie. Why, now you are friends. All bitterness 345  
betweene you, I hope, is buried; you shall come forth by and by, D A M O N & P Y T H I A S vpon't: and embrace with all the ranknesse of friendship that can be. I trust, wee shall haue 'hem tamer i' their language hereafter. D A V P H I N E, I worship thee. Gods will, the ladies haue 350  
surpris'd vs!

Act III. Scene VI.

H A V G H T Y, C E N T A V R E, M A V I S, M<sup>rs</sup>. O T -  
T E R, E P I C O E N E, T R V S T Y, D A V -  
P H I N E, T R V E - W I T, &c.

*Having  
discoverd  
part of  
the past  
scene,  
aboue*

C E N T A V R E, how our iudgements were impos'd on by these adulterate knights!

C E N. Nay, madame, M A V I S was more deceiu'd then we, 'twas her commendation vtter'd 'hem in the colledge.

IV. v. 329 *nombre* F2: *nombre* F1, Q 339 god] God Q 340  
After 'should' [binds his eyes.] G After 'sir.' [leads him forward.] G  
343 Good Q: Good, Ff IV. vi. Enter Haughty, Centaure, Mavis,  
mistress Otter, Epicane, and Trusty behind. G, continuing the scene.  
Marginal note—scene] Scene F2

5 M A V. I commended but their wits, madame, and their braueries. I neuer look'd toward their valours.

H A V. Sir D A V P H I N E is valiant, and a wit too, it seemes ?

M A V. And a brauerie too.

10 H A V. Was this his proiect ?

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. So master C L E R I M O N T intimates, madame.

H A V. Good M O R O S E, when you come to the colledge, will you bring him with you ? He seemes a very perfect gentleman.

15 E P I. He is so, madame, beleeeue it.

C E N. But when will you come, M O R O S E ?

E P I. Three or foure dayes hence, madame, when I haue got mee a coach, and horses.

H A V. No, to morrow, good M O R O S E, C E N T A V R E  
20 shall send you her coach.

M A V. Yes faith, doe, and bring sir D A V P H I N E with you.

H A V. Shee has promis'd that, M A V I S.

M A V. He is a very worthy gentleman, in his exteriors,  
25 madame.

H A V. I, he showes he is iudiciall in his clothes.

C E N. And yet not so superlatiuey neat as some, madame, that haue their faces set in a brake !

H A V. I, and haue euery haire in forme !

30 M A V. That weare purer linnen then our selues, and professe more neatnesse, then the *french hermaphrodite* !

E P I. I ladies, they, what they tell one of vs, haue told a thousand, and are the only theeues of our fame : that thinke to take vs with that perfume, or with that lace, and  
35 laugh at vs vn-conscionably when they haue done.

H A V. But, sir D A V P H I N E S carelesnesse becomes him.

C E N. I could loue a man, for such a nose !

M A V. Or such a leg !

40 C E N. He has an exceeding good eye, madame !

M A V. And a very good lock !

C E N. Good M O R O S E, bring him to my chamber first.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Please your honors, to meet at my house, madame ?

T R V. See, how they eye thee, man ! they are taken, 45  
I warrant thee.

H A V. You haue vnbrac'd our brace of knights, here,  
master T R V E - W I T.

T R V. Not I, madame, it was sir D A V P H I N E S ingine :  
who, if he haue disfurnish'd your ladiship of any guard, 50  
or seruice by it, is able to make the place good againe, in  
himselfe.

H A V. There's no suspition of that, sir.

C E N. God so, M A V I S, H A V G H T Y is kissing.

M A V. Let vs goe too, and take part. 55

H A V. But I am glad of the fortune (beside the discouerie  
of two such emptie caskets) to gaine the knowledge of so  
rich a mine of vertue, as sir D A V P H I N E.

C E N. We would be al glad to stile him of our friend-  
ship, and see him at the colledge. 60

M A V. He cannot mixe with a sweeter societie, I'll pro-  
phesie, and I hope he himselfe will thinke so.

D A V. I should be rude to imagine otherwise, lady.

T R V. Did not I tell thee, D A V P H I N E ? Why, all  
their actions are gouerned by crude opinion, without reason 65  
or cause ; they know not why they doe any thing : but as  
they are inform'd, beleeeue, iudge, praise, condemne, loue,  
hate, and in æmulation one of another, doe all these things  
alike. Onely, they haue a naturall inclination swayes 'hem  
generally to the worst, when they are left to themselues. 70  
But, pursue it, now thou hast 'hem.

H A V. Shall we goe in againe, M O R O S E ?

E P I. Yes, madame.

C E N. Wee'll entreat sir D A V P H I N E S companie.

iv. vi. 43 honors] Honours Q      46 Haughty comes forward. add G  
49 ingine] inginer Q      53 There's] There is Fa      55 They come  
forward. add G

75 TRV. Stay, good madame, the inter-view of the two friends, PYLADES and ORESTES: I'll fetch 'hem out to you straight.

HAV. Will you, master TRVE-WIT?

DAV. I, but noble ladies, doe not confesse in your  
80 countenance, or outward bearing to 'hem any discoverie of their follies, that wee may see, how they will beare vp againe, with what assurance, and erection.

HAV. We will not, sir DAVPHINE.

CEN. MAV. Vpon our honors, sir DAVPHINE.

85 TRV. Sir AMOROVVS, sir AMOROVVS. The ladies are here.

LA-F. Are they?

TRV. Yes, but slip out by and by, as their backs are turn'd, and meet sir IOHN here, as by chance, when I call  
90 you. IACK DAW.

DAW. What say you, sir?

TRV. Whip out behind me suddenly: and no anger i' your lookes to your aduersarie. Now, now.

LA-F. Noble sir IOHN DAW! where ha' you beene?

95 DAW. To seeke you, sir AMOROVVS.

LA-F. Me! I honor you.

DAW. I preuent you, sir.

CLE. They haue forgot their rapiers!

TRV. O, they meet in peace, man.

100 DAV. Where's your sword, sir IOHN?

CLE. And yours, sir AMOROVVS?

DAW. Mine! my boy had it forth, to mend the handle, eene now.

LA-F. And my gold handle was broke, too, and my boy  
105 had it forth.

DAV. Indeed, sir? How their excuses meet!

CLE. What a consent there is, i' the handles?

IV. vi. 85 TRV.] True. [goes to the first closet.] G 87 LA-F.]  
La-F. [within.] G 90 After 'you.' [Goes to the other.] G 91  
DAW.] Daw. [within.] G 93 La-Foole and Daw slip out of their  
respective closets, and salute each other. G 96 honor] honour Q.  
F<sub>2</sub>

TRV. Nay, there is so i' the points too, I warrant you.  
MR. T. O me ! madame, he comes againe, the mad man,  
away.

110

Act III. Scene VII.

MOROSE, TRVE-WIT, CLERIMONT,  
DAPHNE.

*He had  
found the  
two  
swords  
drawne  
within.*

WHAT make these naked weapons here, gentlemen ?  
TRV. O, sir ! here hath like to been murder since  
you went ! A couple of knights fallen out about the brides  
fauours : wee were faine to take away their weapons, your  
house had beene beg'd by this time else—

5

MOR. For what ?

CLE. For man-slaughter, sir, as being accessary.

MOR. And, for her fauours ?

TRV. I, sir, heretofore, not present. CLERIMONT,  
carry 'hem their swords, now. They haue done all the hurt  
they will doe.

DAV. Ha' you spoke with a lawyer, sir ?

MOR. O, no ! there is such a noyse i' the court, that  
they haue frighted mee home, with more violence then  
I went ! such speaking, and counter-speaking, with their  
seuerall voyces of *citations, appellations, allegations, certi-*  
*ficates, attachments, intergatories, references, conuictions, and*  
*afflictions* indeed, among the Doctors and Proctors ! that  
the noise here is silence too 't ! a kind of calme mid-night !

TRV. Why, sir, if you would be resolu'd indeed, I can  
bring you hether a very sufficient Lawyer, and a learned  
Diuine, that shall inquire into euery least scruple for you.

MOR. Can you, master TRVE-WIT ?

TRV. Yes, and are very sober graue persons, that will  
dispatch it in a chamber, with a whisper, or two.

25

iv. vi. After 108 Enter Morose, with the two swords, drawn, in his  
hands. G 109 man,] man ! F2 110 Ladies, Daw, and La-Foole  
run off. add G iv. vii. G continues the scene 2 murder]  
muder Q 10 Exit Cler. with the two swords. add G 17 inter-  
gatories] Interrogatories F2, F3 19 calme om. Q 21 hether  
hither Q, F2 (so 37) 24 TRV. om. Q



M O R. Good sir, shall I hope this benefit from you, and trust my selfe into your hands ?

T R V. Alas, sir ! your nephew, and I, haue beene asham'd, and oft-times mad since you went, to thinke how you are  
30 abus'd. Goe in, good sir, and lock your selfe vp till we call you, wee'll tell you more anon, sir.

M O R. Doe your pleasure with me, gentlemen ; I beleeeue in you : and that deserues no delusion——

T R V. You shall find none, sir : but heapt, heapt plentie  
35 of vexation.

D A V. What wilt thou doe now, W I T ?

T R V. Recouer me hether O T T E R, and the Barber, if you can, by any meanes, presently.

D A V. Why ? to what purpose ?

40 T R V. O, I'll make the deepest Diuine, and grauest Lawyer, out o' them two, for him——

D A V. Thou canst not man, these are waking dreames.

T R V. Doe not feare me. Clap but a ciuill gowne with a welt, o' the one ; and a canonical cloake with sleeues,  
45 o' the other : and giue 'hem a few termes i' their mouthes, if there come not forth as able a Doctor, and compleat a Parson, for this turne, as may be wish'd, trust not my election. And, I hope, without wronging the dignitie of either profession, since they are but persons put on, and for  
50 mirths sake, to torment him. The Barber smatters *latin*, I remember.

D A V. Yes, and O T T E R too.

T R V. Well then, if I make 'hem not wrangle out this case, to his no comfort, let me be thought a I A C K D A W,  
55 or L A - F O O L E, or any thing worse. Goe you to your ladies, but first send for them.

D A V. I will.

Act v. Scene 1.

LA-FOOLE, CLERIMONT, DAW,  
MAVIS.

WHere had you our swords, master CLERIMONT?  
CLE. Why, DAVPHINE tooke 'hem from the  
mad-man.

LA-F. And he tooke 'hem from our boyes, I warrant  
you? 5

CLE. Very like, sir.

LA-F. Thanke you, good master CLERIMONT. Sir  
JOHN DAW, and I are both beholden to you.

CLE. Would I knew how to make you so, gentlemen.

DAW. Sir AMOROVs, and I are your seruants, sir. 10

MAV. Gentlemen, haue any of you a pen-and-inke?  
I would faine write out a riddle in *Italian*, for sir DAV-  
PHINE, to translate.

CLE. Not I, in troth, lady, I am no scriuener.

DAW. I can furnish you, I thinke, lady. 15

CLE. He has it in the haft of a knife, I beleeeue!

LA-F. No, he has his boxe of instruments.

CLE. Like a surgeon!

LA-F. For the *mathematiques*: his squire, his com-  
passes, his brasse pens, and black-lead, to draw maps of 20  
euery place, and person, where he comes.

CLE. How, maps of persons!

LA-F. Yes, sir, of NOMENTACK, when he was here,  
and of the Prince of *Moldauia*, and of his mistris, mistris  
EPICENE. 25

CLE. Away! he has not found out her latitude, I hope.

LA-F. You are a pleasant gentleman, sir.

CLE. Faith, now we are in priuate, let's wanton it a  
little, and talke waggishly. Sir JOHN, I am telling sir

v. i. ACT v. SCENE 1. | *A Room in Morose's House.* | *Enter La-Foole,*  
*Clerimont, and Daw.* G 10 I] I, F2 After 10 *Enter Mavis.* G  
11 -inke?] -inke. Ff: -Inke. Q 15 *Exeunt Daw and Mavis.* add G  
19 squire] Square F3 After 25 *Re-enter Daw.* G

30 A M O R O V S here, that you two gouerne the ladies, where  
e're you come, you carry the feminine gender afore you.

D A W. They shall rather carry vs afore them, if they  
will, sir.

C L E. Nay, I beleue that they doe, withall—But, that  
35 you are the prime-men in their affections, and direct all  
their actions——

D A W. Not I: sir A M O R O V S is.

L A - F. I protest, sir I O H N is.

D A W. As I hope to rise i' the state, sir A M O R O V S,  
40 you ha' the person.

L A - F. Sir I O H N, you ha' the person, and the discourse too.

D A W. Not I, sir. I haue no discourse—and then you  
haue actiuitie beside.

L A - F. I protest, sir I O H N, you come as high from  
45 *Tripoly*, as I doe euery whit: and lift as many ioyn'd  
stooles, and leape ouer 'hem, if you would vse it——

C L E. Well, agree on't together knights; for betweene  
you, you diuide the kingdome, or common-wealth of ladies  
affections: I see it, and can perceiue a little how they  
50 obserue you, and feare you, indeed. You could tell strange  
stories, my masters, if you would, I know.

D A W. Faith, we haue seene somewhat, sir.

L A - F. That we haue—vellet petti-coates, & wrought  
smocks, or so.

55 D A W. I, and——

C L E. Nay, out with it, sir I O H N: doe not enuie your  
friend the pleasure of hearing, when you haue had the  
delight of tasting.

D A W. Why—a——doe you speake, sir A M O R O V S.

60 L A - F. No, doe you, sir I O H N D A W.

D A W. I' faith, you shall.

L A - F. I' faith, you shall.

D A W. Why, we haue beene——

L A - F. In the great bed at *Ware* together in our time.  
65 On, sir I O H N.

D A W. Nay, doe you, sir A M O R O V S.

C L E. And these ladies with you, Knights ?

L A - F. No, excuse vs, sir.

D A W. We must not wound reputation.

L A - F. No matter—they were these, or others. Our 70  
bath cost vs fiftene pound, when we came home.

C L E. Doe you heare, sir I O H N, you shall tell me but  
one thing truely, as you loue me.

D A W. If I can, I will, sir.

C L E. You lay in the same house with the bride, here ? 75

D A W. Yes, and conuerst with her hourelly, sir.

C L E. And what humour is shee of ? is shee comming,  
and open, free ?

D A W. O, exceeding open, sir. I was her seruant, and  
sir A M O R O V S was to be. 80

C L E. Come, you haue both had fauours from her ? I  
know, and haue heard so much.

D A W. O, no, sir.

L A - F. You shall excuse vs, sir : we must not wound  
reputation. 85

C L E. Tut, shee is married, now ; and you cannot hurt  
her with any report, and therefore speake plainly : how  
many times, yfaith ? which of you lead first ? Ha ?

L A - F. Sir I O H N had her mayden-head, indeed.

D A W. O, it pleases him to say so, sir, but sir A M O R O V S 90  
knowes what's what, as well.

C L E. Do'st thou yfaith, A M O R O V S ?

L A - F. In a manner, sir.

C L E. Why, I commend you lads. Little knowes *Don*  
*Bride-groome* of this. Nor shall he, for me. 95

D A W. Hang him, mad oxe.

C L E. Speake softly : here comes his nephew, with the  
lady H A V G H T Y. Hee'll get the ladies from you, sirs, if  
you looke not to him in time.

L A - F. Why, if he doe, wee'll fetch 'hem home againe, 100  
I warrant you.

*Act v. Scene II.*

H A V G H T Y, D A V P H I N E, C E N T A V R E, M A -  
V I S, C L E R I M O N T.

I Assure you, sir D A V P H I N E, it is the price and estima-  
tion of your vertue onely, that hath embarqu'd me to  
this aduventure, and I could not but make out to tell you  
so ; nor can I repent me of the act, since it is alwayes an  
5 argument of some vertue in our selues, that we loue and  
affect it so in others.

D A V. Your ladiship sets too high a price, on my weak-  
nesse.

H A V. Sir, I can distinguish gemmes from peebles——

10 D A V. (Are you so skilfull in stones ?)

H A V. And, howsoever I may suffer in such a iudgement  
as yours, by admitting equality of ranke, or societie, with  
C E N T A V R E, or M A V I S——

D A V. You doe not, madame, I perceiue they are your  
15 mere foiles.

H A V. Then are you a friend to truth, sir. It makes mee  
loue you the more. It is not the outward, but the inward  
man that I affect. They are not apprehensiuie of an eminent  
perfection, but loue flat, and dully.

20 C E N. Where are you, my lady H A V G H T Y ?

H A V. I come presently, C E N T A V R E. My chamber,  
sir, my Page shall show you ; and T R V S T Y, my woman,  
shall be euer awake for you : you need not feare to com-  
municate any thing with her, for shee is a F I D E L I A. I  
25 pray you weare this iewell for my sake, sir D A V P H I N E.  
Where's M A V I S, C E N T A V R E ?

C E N. Within, madame, a writing. I'll follow you pre-  
sently. I'll but speake a word with sir D A V P H I N E.

D A V P. With me, madame ?

v. ii. Enter Dauphine and Haughty. G, continuing the scene 4 so  
om. Q 9 peebles] pebles F2 20 CEN.] Cen. [within.] G  
25 After 'DAUPHINE.' Enter Centaure. G 28 After 'presently.'  
[Exit Haughty.] G

CEN. Good sir DAVPHINE, doe not trust HAVGHTY, 30  
nor make any credit to her, what euer you doe besides. Sir  
DAVPHINE, I giue you this caution, shee is a perfect  
courtier, and loues no body, but for her vses : and for her  
vses, shee loues all. Besides, her physitians giue her out to  
be none o' the clearest, whether she pay 'hem or no, heau'n 35  
knowes : and she's aboue fiftie too, and pargets ! See her  
in a fore-noone. Here comes MAVIS, a worse face then  
shee ! you would not like this, by candle-light. If you'll  
come to my chamber one o' these mornings early, or late  
in an euening, I'll tell you more. Where's HAVGHTY, 40  
MAVIS ?

MAV. Within, CENTAVRE.

CEN. What ha' you, there ?

MAV. An *Italian* riddle for sir DAVPHINE, (you shall  
not see it yfaith, CENTAVRE.) Good sir DAVPHINE, 45  
solue it for mee. I'll call for it anon.

CLE. How now, DAVPHINE ? how do'st thou quit  
thy selfe of these females ?

DAVP. 'Slight, they haunt me like *fayries*, and giue me  
iewells here, I cannot be rid of 'hem. 50

CLE. O, you must not tell, though.

DAVP. Masse, I forgot that : I was neuer so assaulted.  
One loues for vertue, and bribes me with this. Another  
loues me with caution, and so would possesse me. A third  
brings me a riddle here, and all are ieaious : and raile each 55  
at other.

CLE. A riddle ? pray' le' me see't ? Sir DAVPHINE, *He reads*  
*I chose this way of intimation for priuacie. The ladies here, the paper.*  
*I know, haue both hope, and purpose, to make a collegiate*  
*and seruant of you. If I might be so honor'd, as to appeare 60*  
*at any end of so noble a worke, I would enter into a fame of*  
*taking physique to morrow, and continue it foure or fue dayes,*  
*or longer, for your visitation.* MAVIS. By my faith, a

v. ii. 38 After 'candle-light.' Re-enter Mavis. G 45 After 'CEN-  
TAVRE.' [Exit Cen.] G 46 Exit. add G 47 Cle.] Cler. [coming  
forward.] G 60 honor'd] honour'd Q, F2 62 continue] continue  
you Q

subtle one ! Call you this a riddle ? What's their plaine  
65 dealing, trow ?

DAVP. We lack TRVE-WIT, to tell vs that.

CLE. We lack him for somewhat else too : his Knights  
*reformados* are wound vp as high, and insolent, as euer they  
were.

70 DAVP. You iest.

CLE. No drunkards, either with wine or vanitie, euer con-  
fess'd such stories of themselues. I would not giue a flies leg,  
in ballance against all the womens reputations here, if they  
could bee but thought to speake truth : and for the bride,  
75 they haue made their *affidauit* against her directly——

DAVP. What, that they haue lyen with her ?

CLE. Yes, and tell times, and circumstances, with the  
cause why, and the place where. I had almost brought  
'hem to affirme that they had done it, to day.

80 DAVP. Not both of 'hem.

CLE. Yes faith : with a sooth or two more I had effected  
it. They would ha' set it downe vnder their hands.

DAVP. Why, they will be our sport, I see, still ! whether  
we will, or no.

### *Act v. Scene III.*

TRVE-WIT, MOROSE, OTTER, CVT-

BERD, CLERIMONT,

DAVPHINE.

O, Are you here ? Come DAVPHINE. Goe, call your  
vncke presently. I haue fitted my Diuine, & my  
Canonist, died their beards and all : the knaues doe not  
know themselues, they are so exalted, and alter'd. Prefer-  
5 ment changes any man. Thou shalt keepe one dore, and  
I another, and then CLERIMONT in the midst, that he  
may haue no meanes of escape from their cauilling, when  
they grow hot once. And then the women (as I haue giuen  
v. ii. 76 lyen] Iain F3 v. iii. Enter Truswit. G, continuing the  
scene 4 themselues,] themselves, F2 : themselues Fr, Q 8  
once] once againe Q

the bride her instructions) to breake in vpon him, i' the  
*l'enuoy*. O, 'twill be full and twanging! Away, fetch him. 10  
 Come, master Doctor, and master Parson, looke to your  
 parts now, and discharge 'hem brauely: you are well set  
 forth, performe it as well. If you chance to be out, doe not  
 confesse it with standing still, or humming, or gaping one  
 at another: but goe on, and talke alowd, and eagerly, vse 15  
 vehement action, and onely remember your termes, and  
 you are safe. Let the matter goe where it will: you haue  
 many will doe so. But at first, bee very solemne, and graue  
 like your garments, though you loose your selues after, and  
 skip out like a brace of iugglers on a table. Here hee 20  
 comes! set your faces, and looke superciliously, while I  
 present you.

M O R. Are these the two learned men?

T R V. Yes, sir, please you salute 'hem?

M O R. Salute 'hem? I had rather doe any thing, then 25  
 weare out time so vnfruitfully, sir. I wonder, how these  
 common formes, as *god saue you*, and *you are well-come*, are  
 come to be a habit in our liues! or, *I am glad to see you!*  
 when I cannot see, what the profit can bee of these wordes,  
 so long as it is no whit better with him, whose affaires are 30  
 sad, & grievous, that he heares this salutation.

T R V. 'Tis true, sir, wee'll goe to the matter then.  
 Gentlemen, master Doctor, and master Parson, I haue  
 acquainted you sufficiently with the busines, for which you  
 are come hether. And you are not now to enforme your 35  
 selues in the state of the question, I know. This is the  
 gentleman, who expects your resolution, and therefore,  
 when you please, beginne.

O T T. Please you, master Doctor.

C v T. Please you, good master Parson.

40

O T T. I would heare the Canon-law speake first.

C v T. It must giue place to positie Diuinitie, sir.

v. iii. 10 After 'him.' *Exit Dauphine.* | *Enter Otter disguised as a divine,*  
*and Cutbeard as a canon lawyer.* G 19 loose] lose F2 After 22  
*Re-enter Dauphine with Morose.* G 27 god] God Q, F2 35 hether]  
 hither Q, F2



M O R. Nay, good gentlemen, doe not throw me into  
 circumstances. Let your comforts arriue quickly at me,  
 45 those that are. Be swift in affoording me my peace, if so  
 I shall hope any. I loue not your disputations, or your  
 court-tumults. And that it be not strange to you, I will  
 tell you. My father, in my education, was wont to aduise  
 mee, that I should alwayes collect, and contayne my mind,  
 50 not suffring it to flow loosely ; that I should looke to what  
 things were necessary to the carriage of my life, and what  
 not : embracing the one, and eschewing the other. In  
 short, that I should endeare my selfe to rest, and auoid  
 turmoile : which now is growne to be another nature to me.  
 55 So that I come not to your publike pleadings, or your  
 places of noise ; not that I neglect those things, that make  
 for the dignitie of the common-wealth : but for the meere  
 auoiding of clamors, & impertinencies of Orators, that know  
 not how to be silent. And for the cause of noise, am I now  
 60 a sutor to you. You doe not know in what a miserie I haue  
 beene exercis'd this day, what a torrent of euill ! My very  
 house turnes round with the tumult ! I dwell in a wind-  
 mill ! The perpetuall motion is here, and not at *Eltham*.

T R V. Well, good master Doctor, will you breake the  
 65 ice ? master Parson will wade after.

C v T. Sir, though vnworthy, and the weaker, I will pre-  
 sume.

O T T. 'Tis no presumption, *domine* Doctor.

M O R. Yet againe !

70 C v T. Your question is, for how many causes a man may  
 haue *diuortium legitimum*, a lawfull diuorce. First, you must  
 vnderstand the nature of the word diuorce, *à diuertendo*——

M O R. No excursions vpon words, good Doctor, to the  
 question briefly.

75 C v T. I answer then, the Canon-law affords diuorce

v. iii. 45 affoording] affording *F2* 52 one.] *F2* : one *Q*, *F1*  
 58 clamors] clamours *Q*, *F2* impertinences *corr. F1*, *Q* : imper-  
 tinencies *F2* : pertinences *F1* originally 59 be *corr. F1*, *F2* : bee  
*F1* originally, *Q* 60 sutor] suitor *F2* 63 motion] about motion  
*Q* 72 *diuertendo*] *diuertendo* *F2*, *F3*

but in few cases, and the principall is in the common case, the adulterous case. But there are *duodecim impedimenta*, twelue impediments (as we call 'hem) all which doe not *dirimere contractum*, but *irritum reddere matrimonium*, as wee say in the Canon-law, *not take away the bond, but cause* 80 *a nullitie therein.*

M O R. I vnderstood you, before : good sir, auoid your impertinencie of translation.

O T T. He cannot open this too much, sir, by your fauour.

M O R. Yet more !

85

T R V. O, you must giue the learned men leaue, sir. To your impediments, master Doctor.

C V T. The first is *impedimentum erroris*.

O T T. Of which there are seuerall *species*.

C V T. I, as *error personæ*.

90

O T T. If you contract your selfe to one person, thinking her another.

C V T. Then, *error fortunæ*.

O T T. If shee be a beggar, and you thought her rich.

C V T. Then, *error qualitatis*.

95

O T T. If shee proue stubborne, or head-strong, that you thought obedient.

M O R. How ? is that, sir, a lawfull impediment ? One at once, I pray you gentlemen.

O T T. I, *ante copulam*, but not *post copulam*, sir.

100

C V T. M<sup>r</sup>. Parson saies right. *Nec post nuptiarum benedictionem*. It doth indeed but *irrita reddere sponsalia*, annull the contract : after marriage it is of no obstancy.

T R V. Alas, sir, what a hope are we fall'n from, by this time !

105

C V T. The next is *conditio* : if you thought her free borne, and shee proue a bond-woman, there is impediment of estate and condition.

O T T. I, but M<sup>r</sup>. Doctor, those seruitudes are *sublatæ*, now, among vs christians.

110

C V T. By your fauour, master Parson——

O T T. You shall giue me leaue, master Doctor.

M o R. Nay, gentlemen, quarrell not in that question ; it concernes not my case : passe to the third.

115 C v T. Well then, the third is *votum*. If either partie haue made a vow of chastitie. But that practice, as master Parson said of the other, is taken away among vs, thanks be to discipline. The fourth is *cognatio* : if the persons be of kinne, within the degrees.

120 O T T. I : doe you know, what the degrees are, sir ?

M o R. No, nor I care not, sir : they offer me no comfort in the question, I am sure.

C v T. But, there is a branch of this impediment may, which is *cognatio spiritualis*. If you were her god-father,  
125 sir, then the marriage is incestuous.

O T T. That *comment* is absurd, and superstitious, master Doctor. I cannot endure it. Are we not all brothers and sisters, and as much a kinne in that, as god-fathers, and god-daughters ?

130 M o R. O me ! to end the controuersie, I neuer was a god-father, I neuer was a god-father in my life, sir. Passe to the next.

C v T. The fift is *crimen adulterij* : the knowne case. The sixth, *cultus disparitas*, difference of religion : haue you euer  
135 examin'd her what religion shee is of ?

M o R. No, I would rather shee were of none, then bee put to the trouble of it !

O T T. You may haue it done for you, sir.

M o R. By no meanes, good sir, on, to the rest : shall you  
140 euer come to an end, thinke you ?

T R v. Yes, hee has done halfe, sir. (On, to the rest) be patient, and expect, sir.

C v T. The seuenth is, *vis* : if it were vpon compulsion, or force.

145 M o R. O no, it was too voluntarie, mine : too voluntarie.

C v T. The eight is, *ordo* : if euer shee haue taken holy orders.

O T T. That's superstitious, too.

M O R. No matter, master Parson : would shee would go into a nunnerie yet.

C v T. The ninth is, *ligamen* : if you were bound, sir, to 150 any other before.

M O R. I thrust my selfe too soone into these fetters.

C v T. The tenth is, *publica honestas* : which is *inchoata quædam affinitas*.

O T T. I, or *affinitas orta ex sponsalibus* : and is but *leue* 155 *impedimentum*.

M O R. I feele no aire of comfort blowing to me, in all this.

C v T. The eleuenth is, *affinitas ex fornicatione*.

O T T. Which is no lesse *vera affinitas*, then the other, master Doctor. 160

C v T. True, *quæ oritur ex legitimo matrimonio*.

O T T. You say right, venerable Doctor. And, *nascitur ex eo, quod per coniugium duæ personæ efficiuntur una caro*——

M O R. Hey-day, now they beginne.

C v T. I conceiue you, master Parson. *Ita per fornicationem æque est verus pater, qui sic generat*—— 165

O T T. *Et vere filius qui sic generatur*——

M O R. What's all this to me ?

C L E. Now it growes warme.

C v T. The twelfth, and last is, *si forte coire nequibis*. 170

O T T. I, that is *impedimentum grauissimum*. It doth vtterly annull, and annihilate, that. If you haue *manifestam frigiditatem*, you are well, sir.

T R v. Why, there is comfort come at length, sir. Confesse your self but a man vnable, and shee will sue to be 175 diuorc'd first.

O T T. I, or if there be *morbis perpetuus, & insanabilis*, as *Paralysis, Elephantiasis*, or so——

D A v. O, but *frigidity* is the fairer way, gentlemen.

O T T. You say troth, sir, and as it is in the *canon*, master 180 Doctor.

C v T. I conceiue you, sir.

C L E. Before he speakes.

O T T. That a boy, or child, vnder yeeres, is not fit for  
185 marriage, because he cannot reddere debitum. So your omni-  
potentes——

T R V. Your impotentes, you whorson Lobster.

O T T. Your impotentes, I should say, are *minime apti ad contrahenda matrimonium*.

190 T R V. *Matrimonium*? Wee shall haue most vn-matri-  
moniall *latin*, with you: *matrimonia*, and be hang'd.

D A V. You put 'hem out, man.

C v T. But then there will arise a doubt, master Parson,  
in our case, *post matrimonium*: that *frigiditye præditus*,  
195 (doe you conceiue me, sir?)

O T T. Very well, sir.

C v T. Who cannot *uti, vxore pro vxore*, may *habere eam pro sorore*.

O T T. Absurd, absurd, absurd, and merely *apostaticall*.

200 C v T. You shall pardon me, master Parson, I can proue it.

O T T. You can proue a Will, master Doctor, you can  
proue nothing else. Do's not the verse of your owne *canon*  
say, *Hæc socianda vetant conubia, facta retractant*——

C v T. I grant you, but how doe they *retractare*, master  
205 Parson?

M o R. (O, this was it, I fear'd.)

O T T. *In æternum*, sir.

C v T. That's false in diuinitie, by your fauour.

O T T. 'Tis false in humanitie, to say so. Is hee not  
210 *prorsus inutilis ad thorum*? Can he *præstare fidem datam*?  
I would faine know.

C v T. Yes: how if he doe *conualere*?

O T T. He cannot *conualere*, it is impossible.

T R V. Nay, good sir, attend the learned men, they'll  
215 thinke you neglect 'hem else.

C v T. Or, if he doe *simulare* himselfe *frigidum, odio uxoris*, or so?

v. iii. 187 *Aside to Otter. add G* 203 say, Q: say. Ff *conubia*  
*connubia* Q, F2 207 In] In Q, Ff 213 cannot corr. Fr, Q, F2:  
can not Fr originally

- OTT. I say, he is *adulter manifestus*, then.  
 DAVP. (They dispute it very learnedly, yfaith.)  
 OTT. And *prostitutor vxoris*, and this is positue. 220  
 MOR. Good sir, let me escape.  
 TRV. You will not doe me that wrong, sir?  
 OTT. And therefore, if he bee *manifeste frigidus*, sir——  
 CVT. I, if he be *manifeste frigidus*, I grant you——  
 OTT. Why, that was my conclusion. 225  
 CVT. And mine too.  
 TRV. Nay, heare the conclusion, sir.  
 OTT. Then, *frigiditatis causa*——  
 CVT. Yes, *causa frigiditatis*——  
 MOR. O, mine eares! 230  
 OTT. Shee may haue *libellum diuortij*, against you.  
 CVT. I, *diuortij libellum* shee will sure haue.  
 MOR. Good *eccho's*, forbear.  
 OTT. If you confesse it.  
 CVT. Which I would doe, sir—— 235  
 MOR. I will doe any thing——  
 OTT. And cleere my selfe in *foro conscientiae*——  
 CVT. Because you want indeed——  
 MOR. Yet more?  
 OTT. *Exercendi potestate*. 240

Act v. Scene III.

EPICOENE, MOROSE, HAUGHTY, CENTAVRE,  
 MAVIS, M<sup>rs</sup>. OTTER, DAW, TRVE-WIT,  
 DAVPHINE, CLERIMONT, LA-  
 FOOLE, OTTER,  
 CVTBERD.

I Will not endure it any longer. Ladies, I beseech you  
 helpe me. This is such a wrong, as neuer was offer'd to  
 poore bride before. Vpon her marriage day, to haue her  
 husband conspire against her, and a couple of mercinarie

v. iii. 234 it.] it—— Fa v. iv. *Epicane rushes in, followed by  
 Haughty, Centaure, Mavis, Mistress Otter, Daw, and La-Foole. G, con-  
 tinuing the scene*

5 companions, to be brought in for formes sake, to perswade  
a separation ! If you had bloud, or vertue in you, gentle-  
men, you would not suffer such eare-wigs about a husband,  
or scorpions, to creep between man and wife——

MOR. O, the varietie and changes of my torment !

10 HAV. Let 'hem be cudgell'd out of dores, by our  
groomes.

CEN. I'll lend you my foot-man.

MAV. Wee'll haue our men blánket 'hem i' the hall.

M<sup>r</sup>. OT. As there was one, at our house, madame, for  
15 peeping in at the dore.

DAW. Content, yfaith.

TRV. Stay, ladies, and gentlemen, you'll heare, before  
you proceed ?

MAV. I'lld ha' the bride-groome blanketted, too.

20 CEN. Beginne with him first.

HAV. Yes, by my troth.

MOR. O, mankind generation !

DAVP. Ladies, for my sake forbear.

HAV. Yes, for sir DAVPHINES sake.

25 CEN. He shall command vs.

LA-F. He is as fine a gentleman of his inches, madame,  
as any is about the towne, and weares as good colours when  
he list.

TRV. Be brief, sir, and confesse your infirmitie, shee'll  
30 be a-fire to be quit of you, if shee but heare that nam'd  
once, you shall not entreat her to stay. Shee'll flie you,  
like one that had the marks vpon him.

MOR. Ladies, I must craue all your pardons——

TRV. Silence, ladies.

35 MOR. For a wrong I haue done to your whole sexe, in  
marrying this faire, and vertuous gentlewoman——

CLE. Heare him, good ladies.

MOR. Being guiltie of an infirmitie, which before I  
confer'd with these learned men, I thought I might haue  
40 conceal'd——

T R V. But now being better inform'd in his conscience by them, hee is to declare it, & giue satisfaction, by asking your publique forgiuenesse.

M O R. I am no man, ladies.

A L L. How!

M O R. Vtterly vn-abled in nature, by reason of *frigidity*, to performe the duties, or any the least office of a husband.

M A V. Now, out vpon him, prodigious creature!

C E N. Bride-groome vncarnate.

H A V. And would you offer it, to a young gentlewoman? 50

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. A lady of her longings?

E P I. Tut, a deuice, a deuice, this, it smells rankly, ladies. A mere comment of his owne.

T R V. Why, if you suspect that, ladies, you may haue him search'd. 55

D A W. As the custome is, by a iurie of physitians.

L A - F. Yes faith, 'twill be braue.

M O R. O me, must I vnder-goe that!

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. No, let women search him, madame: we can doe it our selues. 60

M O R. Out on me, worse!

E P I. No, ladies, you shall not need, I'll take him with all his faults.

M O R. Worst of all!

C L E. Why, then 'tis no diuorce, Doctor, if shee consent 65 not?

C V T. No, if the man be *frigidus*, it is *de parte vxoris*, that wee grant *libellum diuortij*, in the law.

O T T. I, it is the same in *theologie*.

M O R. Worse, worse then worst!

T R V. Nay, sir, bee not vtterly dis-heartned, wee haue yet a small relique of hope left, as neere as our comfort is blowne out. C L E R I M O N T, produce your brace of Knights. What was that, master Parson, you told me *in errore qualitatis*, e'ne now? D A V P H I N E, whisper the 75 bride, that shee carry it as if shee were guiltie, and asham'd.



O T T. Mary sir, *in errore qualitatis* (which master Doctor did forbear to vrge) if shee bee found *corrupta*, that is, vitiated or broken vp, that was *pro virgine desponsa*,  
80 espous'd for a maid——

M O R. What then, sir ?

O T T. It doth *dirimere contractum*, and *irritum reddere* too.

T R V. If this be true, we are happy againe, sir, once  
85 more. Here are an honorable brace of Knights, that shall affirme so much.

D A W. Pardon vs, good master C L E R I M O N T.

L A - F. You shall excuse vs, master C L E R I M O N T.

C L E. Nay, you must make it good now, Knights, there  
90 is no remedie, I'll eate no words for you, nor no men : you know you spoke it to me ?

D A W. Is this gentleman-like, sir ?

T R V. I A C K D A W, hee's worse then sir A M O R O V S : fiercer a great deale. Sir A M O R O V S, beware, there be  
95 ten D A W E S in this C L E R I M O N T.

L A - F. I'll confesse it, sir.

D A W. Will you, sir A M O R O V S ? will you wound reputation ?

L A - F. I am resolu'd.

100 T R V. So should you be too, I A C K D A W : what should keepe you off ? shee is but a woman, and in disgrace. Hee'll be glad on't.

D A W. Will he ? I thought he would ha' beene angrie.

C L E. You will dispatch, Knights, it must be done,  
105 yfaith.

T R V. Why, an' it must it shall, sir, they say. They'll ne're goe backe. Doe not tempt his patience.

D A W. It is true indeed, sir.

L A - F. Yes, I assure you, sir.

110 M O R. What is true gentlemen ? what doe you assure me ?

v. iv. 85 honorable] honourable Q, F2 90 remedie,] remedie; F2  
92 -like] -like-like Q 100 DAW: what] DAW. What F2 106  
must] must, F2

D A W. That we haue knowne your bride, sir——

L A - F. In good fashion. Shee was our mistris, or so——

C L E. Nay, you must be plaine, Knights, as you were  
to me. 115

O T T. I, the question is, if you haue *carnaliter*, or no.

L A - F. *Carnaliter* ? what else, sir ?

O T T. It is inough : a plaine *nullitie*.

E P I. I am vn-done, I am vn-done !

M O R. O, let me worship and adore you, gentlemen ! 120

E P I. I am vn-done !

M O R. Yes, to my hand, I thanke these Knights : master  
Parson, let me thanke you otherwise.

C E N. And, ha' they confess'd ?

M A V. Now out vpon 'hem, informers ! 125

T R V. You see, what creatures you may bestow your  
fauours on, madames.

H A V. I would except against 'hem as beaten Knights,  
wench, and not good witnesses in law.

M<sup>rs</sup>. O T. Poore gentlewoman, how shee takes it ! 130

H A V. Be comforted, M O R O S E, I loue you the better  
for't.

C E N. So doe I, I protest.

C V T. But gentlemen, you haue not knowne her, since  
*matrimonium* ? 135

D A W. Not to day, master Doctor.

L A - F. No, sir, not to day.

C V T. Why, then I say, for any act before, the *matri-*  
*monium* is good and perfect : vnlesse, the worshipfull Bride-  
groome did precisely, before witnesse demand, if shee were 140  
*virgo ante nuptias*.

E P I. No, that he did not, I assure you, master Doctor.

C V T. If he cannot proue that, it is *ratum coniugium*, not-  
withstanding the premises. And they doe no way *impedire*.  
And this is my sentence, this I pronounce. 145

O T T. I am of master Doctors resolution too, sir : if you  
made not that demand, *ante nuptias*.

M O R. O my heart ! wilt thou breake ? wilt thou breake ?  
this is worst of all worst worsts ! that hell could haue  
150 deuis'd ! Marry a whore ! and so much noise !

D A V P. Come, I see now plaine confederacie in this  
Doctor, and this Parson, to abuse a gentleman. You studie  
his affliction. I pray' bee gone companions. And gentle-  
men, I begin to suspect you for hauing parts with 'hem.  
155 Sir, will it please you heare me ?

M O R. O, doe not talke to me, take not from mee the  
pleasure of dying in silence, nephew.

D A V P. Sir, I must speake to you. I haue beene long  
your poore despis'd kins-man, and many a hard thought  
160 has strength'ned you against me : but now it shall appeare  
if either I loue you or your peace, and preferre them to all  
the world beside. I will not bee long or grievous to you,  
sir. If I free you of this vnhappy match absolutely, and  
instantly after all this trouble, and almost in your despaire,  
165 now——

M O R. (It cannot be.)

D A V P. Sir, that you bee neuer troubled with a murmure  
of it more, what shall I hope for, or deserue of you ?

M O R. O, what thou wilt, nephew ! thou shalt deserue  
170 mee, and haue mee.

D A V P. Shall I haue your fauour perfect to me, and loue  
hereafter ?

M O R. That, and any thing beside. Make thine owne  
conditions. My whole estate is thine. Manage it, I will  
175 become thy Ward.

D A V P. Nay, sir, I will not be so vn-reasonable.

E P I. Will sir D A V P H I N E be mineemie too ?

D A V P. You know, I haue beene long a suter to you,  
vncke, that out of your estate, which is fifteen hundred a  
180 yeere, you would allow me but fife hundred during life, and  
assure the rest vpon me after : to which I haue often, by  
my selfe and friends tendred you a writing to signe, which

v. iv. 153 gone] gone, *Fa* 177 DAVPHINE *corr. Fi*: DAVPHINE,  
*Fi originally* 178 long a] a long *Q*

you would neuer consent, or incline too. If you please but to effect it now——

M O R. Thou shalt haue it, nephew. I will doe it, and more. 185

D A V P. If I quit you not presently, and for-euer of this cumber, you shall haue power instantly, afore all these, to reuoke your act, and I will become, whose slaue you will giue me to, for-euer.

M O R. Where is the writing? I will seale to it, that, or 190 to a blanke, and write thine owne conditions.

E P I. O me, most vnfortunate wretched gentlewoman!

H A V. Will sir D A V P H I N E doe this?

E P I. Good sir, haue some compassion on me.

M O R. O, my nephew knowes you belike: away *crocodile*. 195

C E N. He do's it not sure, without good ground.

D A V P. Here, sir.

M O R. Come, nephew: giue me the pen. I will subscribe to any thing, and seale to what thou wilt, for my deliuerance. Thou art my restorer. Here, I deliuer it thee 200 as my deed. If there bee a word in it lacking, or writ with false orthographie, I protest before——I will not take the aduantage.

D A V P. Then here is your release, sir; you haue married *He takes a boy: a gentlemans son, that I haue brought vp this halfe of Epi- yeere, at my great charges, and for this composition, which comes perruke.* I haue now made with you. What say you, master Doctor? this is *iustum impedimentum*, I hope, *error personæ*?

O T T. Yes sir, *in primo gradu*.

C V T. *In primo gradu*.

210

D A V P. I thanke you, good Doctor C V T B E R D, and *He pulls of their beards, and dis- Parson O T T E R. You are beholden to 'hem, sir, that haue guise.* taken this paines for you: and my friend, master T R V E- w I T, who enabled 'hem for the businesse. Now you may goe in and rest, be as priuate as you will, sir. I'll not 215

v. iv. 183 too] to F2 186 presently, F2: presently? F1, Q  
195 nephew corr. F1, F2: Nephew Q: nephew, F1 originally 197  
Gives him the parchments. add G 202 before——] before [heaven]  
G: the missing word is 'God' 203 Returns the writings. G 215  
After 'sir.' [Exit Morose.] G

trouble you, till you trouble me with your funerall, which I care not how soone it come. C V T B E R D, I'll make your lease good. Thanke mee not, but with your leg, C V T B E R D. And T O M O T T E R, your Princesse shall be  
 220 reconcil'd to you. How now, gentlemen! doe you looke at me?

C L E. A boy.

D A V P. Yes, mistris E P I C O E N E.

T R V. Well, D A V P H I N E, you haue lurch'd your  
 225 friends of the better halfe of the garland, by concealing this part of the plot! but much good doe it thee, thou deseru'st it, lad. And C L E R I M O N T, for thy vnexpected bringing in these two to confession, weare my part of it freely. Nay, sir D A W, and sir L A - F O O L E, you see the gentlewoman  
 230 that has done you the fauours! we are all thankfull to you, and so should the woman-kind here, specially for lying on her, though not with her! You meant so, I am sure? But, that we haue stuck it vpon you to day, in your own imagin'd persons, and so lately; this *Amazon*, the champion  
 235 of the sexe, should beate you now thriftily, for the common slanders, which ladies receiue from such cuckowes, as you are. You are they, that when no merit or fortune can make you hope to enioy their bodies, will yet lie with their reputations, and make their fame suffer. Away you com-  
 240 mon moths of these, and all ladies honors. Goe, trauaile to make legs and faces, and come home with some new matter to be laught at: you deserue to liue in an aire as corrupted, as that wherewith you feed rumor. Madames, you are mute, vpon this new *metamorphosis*! but here  
 245 stands shee, that has vindicated your fames. Take heed of such *insectæ* hereafter. And let it not trouble you that you haue discover'd any mysteries to this yong gentleman. He is (a'most) of yeeres, & will make a good visitant within this twelue-month. In the meane time, wee'll all

v. iv. 228 in om. F<sub>2</sub>, F<sub>3</sub> 237 or] of F<sub>2</sub>, F<sub>3</sub> 240 trauaile]  
 travel F<sub>3</sub> 243 After 'rumor.' [Exeunt Daw and La-Foole.] G  
 246 you] you, F<sub>2</sub>

vndertake for his secrecie, that can speake so well of his 250  
silence.

Spectators, if you like this *comædie*, rise  
cheerefully, and now M O R O S E is gone in, clap your hands.  
It may be, that noyse will cure him, at least please him.

T H E E N D.

v. iv. 251 After 'silence.' [*Coming forward.*] G  
add G

253 *Exeunt.*

This Comoedie was first  
acted, in the yeere  
1609.

*By the Children of her Maiesties*  
REVELLS.

The principall Comœdians were,

NAT. FIELD.	}	{	WILL. BARKSTED.
GIL. CARIE.			WILL. PEN.
HVG. ATTAWEL.			RIC. ALLIN.
IOH. SMITH.			IOH. BLANEY.

*With the allowance of the Master of* R E V E L L S .

*This page was added in F1. In F2 the statements about the date, the company, and the Master of the Revels were omitted, and the list of 'The principall Comœdians' was transferred to the back of the half-title where it followed 'The persons of the Play' and 'The Scene'.*

---

# THE ALCHEMIST

---





## THE TEXT

*The Alchemist* was entered on the Stationers' Register by Walter Burre on 3 October 1610. He published it in quarto in 1612. The entry is as follows :

3<sup>o</sup> Octobris

Walter Burre. Entred for his copy vnder thandes of Sir George Bucke and Th'wardens a Comœdy called, The Alchymist made by Ben: Johnson  
vj<sup>d</sup>

Arber, *Transcript*, III. 445.

The printer was Thomas Snodham, who did his work badly. John Stepneth was a partner with Burre in the publication ; both of them published at the sign of The Crane in Paul's Churchyard. In 1612 Stepneth also entered Jonson's *Epi-grams* on the Register.<sup>1</sup>

The collation of the Quarto, A to M, is in detail : A 1 recto, title-page, with the verso blank ; A 2, dedication to Lady Mary Wroth ; A 3 recto, ' To the Reader ', continued on the verso, which also has verses by George Lucy ; A 4 recto, ' The Persons of the Comœdie ', and ' The Argument ' ; A 4 verso, ' The Prologue ' ; B to M, the text of the play. The running title is ' *The ALCHEMIST* '. The number of lines on the page varies from thirty-six to thirty-seven, the later pages being fuller to enable the printer to end on sheet M. Owing to the extra line D 3, I 3, and K 3 are not signed. The catchword on C 3 recto (I. iii. 76-7) is ' *Cinoper* ; ', the text on the verso is ' *Cinoper*.' On K 2 (IV. v. 25-32), where the conclusion of Döl's ravings and the dialogue of Mammon and Face are printed in parallel columns, to show that they are all speaking together, the text is in small type spread across the page ; of all the copies examined only Mr. Wise's copy is uncropped at this point.

Six copies have been collated for the text of the present edition :

(1) The British Museum copy (marked A in the following list) ;

<sup>1</sup> On 15 May (Arber, iii. 485).

(2) The Malone copy in Bodley, in which three leaves, A 2 to A 4, are missing (B) ;

(3) The two Dyce copies at South Kensington, of which one is perfect (C 1), and the other (C 2) lacks E 2 and E 3 and has M 3 supplied in manuscript ;

(4) The copy in the Library of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, given to the College with seven other plays by Bryan Twyne in 1644 (D) ;

(5) Mr. T. J. Wise's copy (E).

The following corrections have been found in the six copies :

A 2 <sup>v</sup>	Dedication, l. 9	thatremembers A, E	that remembers C 1 & 2, D
A 3 <sup>r</sup>	To the Reader,		
	1. 6	Age, A, E	Age) C 1 & 2, D
	1. 7	Iigges, and Daunces, A, E	Daunces, and Antickes, C 1 & 2, D
	1. 15	Multitude A, E	Many C 1 & 2, D
B 1 <sup>r</sup>	1. i. 18	Will A	Will B, C 1 & 2, D, E
B 1 <sup>v</sup>	52	-hahch C 1 & 2	-hatch A, B, D, E
B 2	68	Sublim'd . . . exalted . . . fix'd C 1 & 2	Sublim'd . . . exalted . . . fix'd A, B, D, E
	69	third region, the high state of grace C 1 & 2	third region, the high state of grace A, B, D, E
	70	spirit . . . quintessence C 1 & 2	spirit . . . quintessence A, B, D, E
	71	Philosophers worke C 1 & 2	Philosophers worke A, B, D, E
	77	great Art C 1 & 2	great Art A, B, D, E
	79	proiection C 1 & 2	proiection A, B, D, E
	83	Equi clibanum C 1 & 2	Equi Clibanum A, B, D, E
B 3 <sup>v</sup>	1. ii. 1, 2	{ . . . I thinke, . . . In truth, (Doctor)	{ C 1 & 2 { (Doctor. . . I think, . . . In truth, } A, B, D, E
B 4 <sup>r</sup>	15	you C 1 & 2	you. A, B, D, E
	27	Turque C 1 & 2	Turke A, B, D, E
	28	Doe C 1 & 2	Doe, A, B, D, E
	39	Sr, C 1 & 2	Sir A, B, D, E
C 4 <sup>v</sup>	11. i. 4	Ophyr C 1	Ophir A, B, C 2, D, E
	7	word. C 1	word, A, B, C 2, D, E
	9	die C 1	Die A, B, C 2, D, E
	10	card C 1	Card A, B, C 2, D, E

D 1 <sup>v</sup>	76	water, <i>A</i>	water ? <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
	88	wood <i>A</i>	wood, <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
	92	<i>Pythagora's A</i>	<i>Pythagora's B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
D 2 <sup>r</sup>	II. ii. 32	be, <i>A</i>	be <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
D 4 <sup>r</sup>	II. iii. 52	Sir <i>A</i>	Sir, <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
E 2 <sup>r</sup>	184	<i>Elizir B</i>	<i>Elixir A, C 1, D, E</i>
E 3 <sup>r</sup>	266	'Hart <i>A, C 1</i>	'Hart, <i>B, D, E</i>
E 4 <sup>v</sup>	II. iv. 11	sanguine <i>C 1</i>	<i>sanguine A, Sanguine B, C 2, D, E</i>
	II. v. 9	<i>dulcefis, A, C 1</i>	<i>dulcefis ? B, C 2, D, E</i>
F 2 <sup>v</sup>	II. vi. 28	impart <i>E</i>	impart— <i>A, B, C 1 &amp; 2, D</i>
	32	yet, <i>E</i>	yet ; <i>A, B, C 1 &amp; 2, D</i>
	35	deale. <i>E</i>	deale, <i>A, B, C 1 &amp; 2, D</i>
	37	here <i>E</i>	here, <i>A, B, C 1 &amp; 2, D</i>
F 3 <sup>r</sup>	63	Quarrells <i>E</i>	Quarrells, <i>A, B, C 1 &amp; 2, D</i>
	70	And <i>E</i>	And, <i>A, B, C 1 &amp; 2, D</i>
	74	Say <i>A, C 2, E</i>	Stay <i>B, C 1, D</i>
	85	he . . . fayles <i>E</i>	he, . . . fayles, <i>A, B, C 1 &amp; 2, D</i>
F 3 <sup>v</sup>	III. i. 29	so. <i>A, C 2, E</i>	so ; <i>B, C 1, D</i>
F 4 <sup>v</sup>	III. ii. 36	Friend, <i>E</i>	Friend. <i>A, B, C 1 &amp; 2, D</i>
H 3 <sup>v</sup>	IV. i. 49	Want <i>A</i>	want <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
H 4 <sup>r</sup>	70	court, <i>A, B, C 1</i>	court <i>C 2, D, E</i>
	71	Art . . . words <i>A</i>	Art, . . . words, <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
L 3 <sup>r</sup>	v. ii. 41	MEI. 1. <i>A</i>	NEI. 1. <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
	42	deceiu'd <i>A</i>	deceiu'd, <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
		keyes, <i>A</i>	keyes : <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
L 3 <sup>v</sup>	v. iii. 23	Officers   <i>A</i>	Officers, <i>B, C 1 &amp; 2, D, E</i>
M 2 <sup>v</sup>	v. v. 7	Braine ? <i>A, C 2</i>	Braine. <i>B, C 1, D, E</i>
M 3 <sup>r</sup>	46	buthe <i>A</i>	but he <i>B, C 1, D, E</i>
M 3 <sup>v</sup>	72	they, are <i>E</i>	they 'are <i>A, B, C 1, D</i>

Lines in which a stop, faint in some copies and missing in others, has dropped out in the printing are not recorded as variants.

In the minor points of spelling and punctuation the Quarto is lax. So also is the Folio. Jonson's metrical apostrophe, as usual, gave the printers trouble. We have restored it on the authority of the Quarto in 'who'are' (II. ii. 67), 'They'are' (III. ii. 122), 'to'you' (IV. iii. 89). The Quarto sometimes inserts the stop wrongly and the Folio reproduces it;<sup>1</sup> the Folio prints such an absurdity

<sup>1</sup> I. ii. 5, III. 7, 43 ; II. ii. 95, 105, III. 43 ; IV. vii. 64.

as 'nd' in I. iii. 85. But there are clear signs in the Folio text of Jonson's care for punctuation. When Mammon is told that his stuff will shortly be changed to gold and silver, he replies, 'Silver, I care not for':<sup>1</sup> the comma was added in the Folio. And better still, when Surly is cross-questioning Mammon about the sham lord, Dol's supposed brother whom Mammon professes to know, although, when hard-pressed, he cannot recall his name, Surly asks 'What call you her, brother?' The modern punctuation would be 'her—brother',<sup>2</sup> and the actor could point the innuendo with a mocking emphasis. The comma is retained in the 1640 Folio, and two previous editors of the play note it as a misprint of the Folios.<sup>3</sup>

Generally the punctuation of both texts is careless, and we have had to make many small corrections to bring it up to Jonson's standard in the earlier plays.<sup>3</sup>

The Quarto preserves more of Jonson's classicized spelling of Latin derivatives, such as 'æquall' (I. i. 145), 'præcise' (ibid. 164), 'præuaricate' (II. iii. 19), and 'ædified' (III. i. 45), though its practice is not uniform.<sup>4</sup> But it gives three misspellings which are impossible for Jonson—'*Metaposcopie*' (I. iii. 44), '*solæcisme*' (IV. i. 101), and '*fæces*' (IV. v. 31). The Folio copies these and adds 'labaratory' (IV. i. 171), which the Quarto spells correctly. A similar error is '*sapor stipstick*' in both texts in II. v. 10; the 1640 Folio corrected to '*styptick*'. Other errors of the Quarto reproduced in 1616 are—'No' for 'Now' (II. iii. 18), 'I haue trick' for 'a trick' (III. ii. 142), 'had' for 'he had' (V. v. 32), the omission of Face's name before his speeches in III. iii. 62 and IV. iv. 3, and the attribution of Dapper's speech to Face in V. iv. 60.

Textual changes in the Folio are slight. Most of them

<sup>1</sup> IV. i. 4.

<sup>2</sup> II. iii. 272.

<sup>3</sup> See the critical apparatus at the Prologue, l. 18; I. i. 11, 25, 112, ii. 5, 26, 45, iii. 7, 43, 85, iv. 1, 9; II. i. 12, ii. 62, 67, 105, iii. 36, 43, 215, 269, 282, v. 18, 55, 60, 79, 86, vi. 34, 41, 58; III. i. 29, ii. 46, 102, 122, iii. 42, 66, 72; IV. i. 11, 53, 63, ii. 28, iii. 64, 88, 89, v. 74, vii. 28-9, 47, 64, 65; V. i. 28, iii. 33, iv. 44, v. 63, 94, 105.

<sup>4</sup> Compare the examples noted in *Sejanus*, vol. iv, pp. 337-8.

are a toning down of phrases with a mildly Scriptural ring. 'Gods will!' is altered to 'Death on me!' in I. i. 148, and the attenuated 'Gad' to 'IOVE' in I. ii. 135; the language of the Puritans is retouched in several passages. 'They are the exercises of the spirit' disappears from Tribulation's speech at the beginning of the third act, and his 'Seed of Vipers, Sonnes of *Belial*' becomes 'seed of sulphure, sonnes of fire' (v. iii. 44). Similarly with Ananias: his 'vessels Of shame, and of dishonour' is changed to 'vessells Of pride, lust, and the cart' (v. v. 23-4), and even Nimrod, who was secular enough to be let alone, becomes 'Idol' (ibid., 99). These faint echoes of the Bible might, in Jonson's day, be censured as profane. Fortunately Ananias was permitted to testify at the close:

I am strong,  
And will stand vp, well girt, against an host  
That threaten GAD in exile.

No loss of filthy lucre could daunt the fortitude or dam the piety of this 'silenced saint'. And fortunately Jonson did not sacrifice Subtle's righteous indignation against 'the varlet that cossend the *Apostles*' (II. v. 72-3), though this was sufficiently explicit to be dangerous.

The oddest change is in Face's account of Dapper, the lawyer's clerk. In the Quarto he

Will take his oth, o' the *Greeke Testament*,  
If need be, in his pocket. (I. ii. 56-7.)

Dapper might quite well carry a pocket Testament about with him to administer the oath to clients. But the Folio substitutes 'the *greeke* XENOPHON'. Some topical allusion may have given point to the joke, but it reads lamely now, even with Face's further assurance that Dapper 'can court His mistris, out of OVID'. Dapper shows no signs of acquaintance with the *Ars Amatoria*, and he certainly did not get the suggestion for wearing a leaden heart when his mistress forsook him<sup>1</sup> out of the *Remedia Amoris*.

<sup>1</sup> III. v. 45.

Other changes are to emphasize Mammon's refusal to employ for bawds any but fathers and mothers by inserting

They will do it best.

Best of all others.<sup>1</sup>—

and to transpose two lines in Act II, scene iii, lines 221-4, which read in the Quarto :

FAC.<sup>2</sup> Stay man, what is she? FAC. A Lords Sister, Sir.

MAM. How! Pray thee stay? FAC. She's mad Sir,  
& sent hether—

(He'll be mad too. MAM. I warrant thee.) Why sent hether?

FAC. Sir, to be cur'd.

The Folio arrangement is—

MAM. How! 'Pray thee stay? FAC. She's mad, sir,  
and sent hether—

MAM. Stay, man, what is shee? FAC. A lords sister, sir,  
(Hee'll be mad too. MAM. I warrant thee.) Why sent hether?

FAC. Sir, to be cur'd.

We have followed Gifford in accepting the order of the Quarto ; it is, as he says, much more natural. He thought the change an oversight ; it was probably caused by the *ὁμοιοτέλετον* of 'sent hether' in two succeeding lines of the original text and by correcting 'FAC.' to 'MAM.'

The Folio of 1640 reprints the 1616 text, with hardly any alteration. Two lines

Faith, I haue a confidence in his good nature (i. ii. 115)

Were at the last thred, you see ; and downe had gone  
(iii. ii. 2)

are smoother metrically by the omission of 'a' in the first line and 'the' in the second. This Folio makes a few obvious corrections, but otherwise its tendency is to modernize the spelling and punctuation.

A facsimile of the Quarto text was published in the Noel Douglas Replicas in 1927 from the British Museum copy.

<sup>1</sup> II. ii. 58-9.

<sup>2</sup> A blunder for MAM.

---

The Folio text has also been reprinted. Dr. C. M. Hathaway edited it for the Yale Studies in English in 1903, no. XVII. He printed from Professor W. L. Phelps's copy, which he collated with the Hoe copy of the Quarto. In 1904 Professor Felix E. Schelling edited it for Heath's *Belles Lettres* series, in a very accurate text; in 1913 Dr. G. A. Smithson edited it in the second volume of Professor Gayley's *Representative English Comedies*. The last two modernize capitals and italic type, use the modern 'j' and 'v', and insert modern stage directions.





# THE ALCHEMIST.

Written  
by  
BEN. IONSON.

———*Neque, me ut miratur turba, laboro:  
Contentus paucis lectoribus.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed by *Thomas Snodham*, for *Walter Burre*,  
and are to be sold by *John Stepneth*, at the  
West-end of *Pauls*.  
1612.

The title-page of the 1612 Quarto



# THE ALCHEMIST.

*A Comædie.*

Acted in the yeere 1610. By the  
Kings MAIESTIES  
Seruants.

The Author B. I.

LVCRET.

——— *petere inde coronam,*  
*Vnde prius nulli velarunt tempora Musa.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed by WILLIAM STANSBY

---

M. DC. XVI.

The title-page of the 1616 Folio.



# THE ALCHEMIST.

A Comedy.

Acted in the yeere 1610. By the  
Kings MAIESTIES  
SERVANTS.

With the allowance of the Master  
of REVELLS.

The Author B. J.

---

LUCRET.

——— *petere inde coronam,*  
*Unde pride nulli volueris tempora Misce.*

---



---

LONDON,  
Printed by RICHARD BISHOP.

M. DC. XL.

The title-page of the 1640 Folio.



TO THE LADY, MOST  
DESERVING HER NAME,  
AND BLOVD:

Mary,

L. A. WROTH.

MADAME,

**I**N the age of sacrifices, the truth of religion was not  
in the greatnesse, & fat of the offrings, but in the  
deuotion, and zeale of the sacrificers: Else, what  
could a handfull of gummes haue done in the sight  
of a hecatombe? or, how might I appeare at this 5  
altar, except with those affections, that no lesse loue  
the light and witnesse, then they haue the conscience  
of your vertue? If what I offer beare an acceptable  
odour, & hold the first strength, it is your value of it,  
which remembers, where, when, and to whom it was 10  
kindled. Otherwise, as the times are, there comes  
rarely forth that thing, so full of authoritie, or ex-  
ample, but by assiduitie and custome, growes lesse,  
and looses. This, yet, safe in your iudgement (which  
is a SIDNEY S) is forbidden to speake more; lest 15

DEDICATION in roman in Q Heading DESERVING . . . BLOVD:] most  
æquall with vertue, and her Blood: The Grace, and Glory of women. Q  
5-8 or, how . . . vertue?] Or how, yet, might a gratefull munde be furnish'd  
against the iniquitie of Fortune; except, when she fail'd it, it had power  
to impart it selfe? A way found out, to ouercome euen those, whom  
Fortune hath enabled to returne most, since they, yet leaue themselves  
more. In this assurance am I planted; and stand with those affections  
at this Altar, as shall no more auoide the light and witnesse, then they  
doe the conscience of your vertue. Q 9 value of it, which] valem,  
that Q 10 which] that remembers corr. Q: thatremembers Q  
originally 11 as the times are] in these times Q 12 authoritie,]  
authority F2 13 assiduitie] daylinesse Q 14 looses] loses F2  
This, yet] But this Q 15 lest] least Q



*it talke, or looke like one of the ambitious Faces of the time : who, the more they paint, are the lesse themselves.*

Your La:

true honorer,

BEN. IONSON.

## TO THE READER.

**I**F thou beest more, thou art an *Vnderstander*, and then I trust thee. If thou art one that tak'st vp, and but a *Pretender*, beware at what hands thou receiue'st thy commoditie ; for thou wert neuer more fair in the way to be cos'ned (then in this Age) in Poetry, especially in Playes : wherein, now, 5 the Concupiscence of Daunces, and Antickes so raigneth, as to runne away from Nature, and be afraid of her, is the onely point of art that tickles the Spectators. But how out of purpose, and place, doe I name Art ? when the Professors are growne so obstinate contemners of it, and presumers on their owne Naturalls, as they are deriders of all diligence that way, and, by simple mocking at the termes, when they understand not the things, thinke to get of wittily with their Ignorance. Nay, they are esteem'd the more learned, and sufficient for this, by the Many, through their excellent vice of iudgement. For 15 they commend Writers, as they doe Fencers, or Wrastlers ; who if they come in robustuously, and put for it with a great deale of violence, are receiue'd for the brauer fellowes : when many times their owne rudenesse is the cause of their disgrace, and a little touch of their Aduersary giues all that boisterous force the foyle. I deny not, but that these men, who alwaies seeke to doe more then inough, may some time happen on some thing that is good, and great ; but very seldome : And when it comes it doth not recompence the rest of their ill. It sticks out perhaps, and is more eminent, because all is sordide, and 25 vile about it : as lights are more discern'd in a thick darknesse, then a faint shadow. I speake not this, out of a hope to doe good on any man, against his will ; for I know, if it were put to the question of theirs, and mine, the worse would finde more suffrages : because the most fauour common errors. But I 30 giue thee this warning, that there is a great difference between those, that (to gain the opinion of Copie) vtter all they can, how euer vnfitly ; and those that vse election, and a meane. For it is onely the disease of the vnskilfull, to thinke rude things greater then polish'd : or scatter'd more numerous then compos'd. 35

TO THE READER om. Ff 5 Age) corr. Q : Age, Q originally  
 6 Daunces, and Antickes corr. Q : Igges, and Daunces Q originally  
 15 Many corr. Q : Multitude Q originally

## The Persons of the Play.

SVBTLE, <i>The Alchemist.</i>	EPICVRE MAMMON, <i>A Knight.</i>
FACE, <i>The house-keeper.</i>	SVRLEY, <i>A Gamster.</i>
DOL. COMMON, <i>Their Colleague.</i>	TRIBVLATION, <i>A Pastor of Amsterdā.</i>
DAPPER, <i>A Clarke.</i>	ANANIAS, <i>A Deacon there.</i>
DRVGGER, <i>A Tabacco-man.</i>	KASTRILL, <i>The angry Boy.</i>
LOVE-WIT, <i>Master of the house.</i>	

D A. PLIANT, *His sister : A widdow.*

NEIGHBOVRS.

OFFICERS.

MVTES.

---

## THE SCENE

## LONDON.

---

The Persons of the Play. Play] Comœdie Q SURLEY] Per-  
 tinax Surly G DOL.] DOL: Q TRIBVLATION] Tribulation whole-  
 some G Amsterdā] Amstredam Q DA.] DA: Q THE SCENE  
 LONDON. not in Q After The Scene Fa inserts the Actor-list given in  
 FI at the end of the Play

# The Alchemist.

## THE ARGUMENT.

*The sicknesse hot, a master quit, for feare,  
 His house in towne : and left one seruant there.  
 Ease him corrupted, and gaue meanes to know  
 A cheater, and his punque ; who, now brought low,  
 Leaving their narrow practise, were become 5  
 Cos'ners at large : and, onely wanting some  
 House to set vp, with him they here contract,  
 Each for a share, and all begin to act.  
 Much company they draw, and much abuse,  
 In casting figures, telling fortunes, newes, 10  
 Selling of flyes, flat bawdry, with the stone :  
 Till it, and they, and all in fume are gone.*

THE ARGUMENT. *Q* prints in roman  
 abuse *Q*

4 *who,*] who *Q*

9 *abuse,*]

## PROLOGVE.

- FORTVNE, that fauours fooles, these two short houres  
 We wish away ; both for your sakes, and ours,  
 Iudging Spectators : and desire in place,  
 To th'Author iustice, to our selues but grace.  
 5 Our *Scene* is *London*, 'cause we would make knowne,  
 No countries mirth is better then our owne.  
 No clime breeds better matter, for your whore,  
 Bawd, squire, impostor, many persons more,  
 Whose manners, now call'd humors, feed the stage :  
 10 And which haue still beene subiect, for the rage  
 Or spleene of *comick*-writers. Though this pen  
 Did neuer aime to grieue, but better men ;  
 How e'er the age, he liues in, doth endure  
 The vices that shee breeds, about their cure.  
 15 But, when the wholesome remedies are sweet,  
 And, in their working, gaine, and profit meet,  
 He hopes to find no spirit so much diseas'd,  
 But will, with such faire correctiues, be pleas'd.  
 For here, he doth not feare, who can apply.  
 20 If there be any, that will sit so nigh  
 Vnto the streame, to looke what it doth run,  
 They shall find things, they'd thinke, or wish, were done ;  
 They are so naturall follies, but so showne,  
 As euen the doers may see, and yet not owne.

PROLOGVE] THE PROLOGVE. *Q*, which prints in italic 5 knowne]  
 knowne. *Q* 6 then] than *F2* 10 for] to *Q* 11 comick-  
 writers] Comick writers *Q* 18 correctiues,] *Correctiues*, *Q* : cor-  
 rectiues *F1* : correctives *F2* 23 follies, but] *follies* : But *Q*

## Act I. Scene I.

FACE, SVBTLE, DOL Common.

BEleeu't, I will. SVB. Thy worst. I fart at thee.

DOL. Ha' you your wits? Why gentlemen! for loue——

FAC. Sirrah, I'll strip you—— SVB. What to doe? lick figs

Out at my—— FAC. Rogue, rogue, out of all your sleights.

DOL. Nay, looke yee! Soueraigne, Generall, are you mad-men? 5

SVB. O, let the wild sheepe loose. Ile gumme your silkes

With good strong water, an' you come. DOL. Will you haue

The neighbours heare you? Will you betray all?

Harke, I heare some body. FAC. Sirrah—— SVB. I shall marre -

All that the taylor has made, if you approch. 10

FAC. You most notorious whelp, you insolent slaue, Dare you doe this? SVB. Yes faith, yes faith. FAC. Why! who

Am I, my mungrill? Who am I? SVB. I'll tell you, Since you know not your selfe—— FAC. Speake lower, rogue.

SVB. Yes. You were once (time's not long past) the good, 15 Honest, plaine, liuery-three-pound-thrum; that kept Your masters worships house, here, in the *friers*, For the vacations—— FAC. Will you be so lowd?

I. i. ACT. I. SCENE. I. | FACE. SVBTLE. DOL Common. Q (which so punctuates the headings of act and scene throughout): ACT I. SCENE I. | A Room in Lovewit's House. | Enter Face, in a captain's uniform, with his sword drawn, and Subtle with a vial, quarrelling, and followed by Dol Common. G: so Schelling, omitting 'with his sword drawn' (see l. 115) 7 an' you Q, FI 9 Sirrah——] S'ah. Q 11 slaue, Q: slaue. Ff 14 selfe——] selfe. Q 18 vacations——] vacations. Q Will] Will Q originally

- S v B. Since, by my meanes, translated suburb-Captayne.  
 20 F A c. By your meanes, Doctor dog? S v B. Within  
 mans memorie,  
 All this, I speake of. F A c. Why, I pray you, haue I  
 Beene countenanc'd by you? or you, by me?  
 Doe but collect, sir, where I met you first.  
 S v B. I doe not heare well. F A c. Not of this, I thinke  
 it.
- 25 But I shall put you in mind, sir, at *pie-corner*,  
 Taking your meale of steeme in, from cookes stalls,  
 Where, like the father of hunger, you did walke  
 Piteously costiue, with your pinch'd-horne-nose,  
 And your complexion, of the *romane* wash,  
 30 Stuck full of black, and melancholique wormes,  
 Like poulder-cornes, shot, at th'*artillerie-yard*.  
 S v B. I wish, you could aduance your voice, a little.  
 F A c. When you went pinn'd vp, in the seuerall rags,  
 Yo'had rak'd, and pick'd from dung-hills, before day,  
 35 Your feet in mouldie slippers, for your kibes,  
 A felt of rugg, and a thin thredden cloake,  
 That scarce would couer your no-buttocks—— S v B. So,  
 sir!
- F A c. When all your *alchemy*, and your *algebra*,  
 Your *mineralls*, *vegetalls*, and *animalls*,  
 40 Your coniuring, cosning, and your dosen of trades,  
 Could not relieue your corps, with so much linnen  
 Would make you tinder, but to see a fire;  
 I ga' you count'nance, credit for your coales,  
 Your stills, your glasses, your *materialls*,  
 45 Built you a fornace, drew you customers,  
 Aduanc'd all your black arts; lent you, beside,  
 A house to practise in—— S v B. Your masters house?  
 F A c. Where you haue studied the more thriuing skill  
 Of bawdrie, since. S v B. Yes, in your masters house.

i. i. 25 -corner,] -Corner, Q: corner. F1 37 -buttocks——] -but-  
 tockes. Q So, sir!] So Sr. Q 40 trades,] Trades Q 47 in  
 ——] in. Q

You, and the rats, here, kept possession. 50  
 Make it not strange. I know, yo'were one, could keepe  
 The buttry-hatch still lock'd, and saue the chippings,  
 Sell the dole-beere to *aqua-vitæ*-men,  
 The which, together with your *christ-masse* vailes,  
 At *post and paire*, your letting out of counters, 55  
 Made you a pretty stock, some twentie markes,  
 And gaue you credit, to conuerse with cob-webs,  
 Here, since your mistris death hath broke vp house.

F A C. You might talke softlier, raskall. S v B. No, you  
*scarabe*,

I'll thunder you, in peeces. I will teach you 60  
 How to beware, to tempt a *furie*'again  
 That carries tempest in his hand, and voice.

F A C. The place has made you valiant. S v B. No, your  
 clothes.

Thou vermine, haue I tane thee, out of dung,  
 So poore, so wretched, when no liuing thing 65  
 Would keepe thee companie, but a spider, or worse ?  
 Rais'd thee from broomes, and dust, and watring pots ?  
*Sublim'd* thee, and *exalted* thee, and *fix'd* thee  
 I' the *third region*, call'd our *state of grace* ?  
 Wrought thee to *spirit*, to *quintessence*, with paines 70  
 Would twise haue won me the *philosophers worke* ?  
 Put thee in words, and fashion ? made thee fit  
 For more then ordinarie fellowships ?  
 Giu'n thee thy othes, thy quarrelling dimensions ?  
 Thy rules, to cheat at horse-race; cock-pit, cardes, 75  
 Dice, or what euer gallant tincture, else ?  
 Made thee a second, in mine owne great art ?  
 And haue I this for thanke ? Doe you rebell ?

1. i. 51 yo'were] you were Q 52 -hatch] -hach Q originally  
 55 and] and Q, Ff 66 would] would not F2 68 Sublim'd . . . exalted  
 . . . fix'd] Sublim'd . . . exalted . . . fix'd Q originally 69 third region]  
 third region Q originally our state of grace] the high state of grace  
 corr. Q: call'd the high state of grace Q originally 70 spirit . . .  
 quintessence] spirit . . . quintessence Q originally 71 philosophers  
 worke] Philosophers worke corr. Q: Philosophers worke Q originally  
 77 great art] great Art Q originally: great Art corr. Q 78 thanke]  
 thanks F2



Doe you flie out, i' the *projection*?

80 Would you be gone, now? D O L. Gentlemen, what meane you?

Will you marre all? S v B. Slaue, thou hadst had no name——

D O L. Will you vn-doe your selues, with ciuill warre?

S v B. Neuer beene knowne, past *equi clibanum*,

The heat of horse-dung, vnder ground, in cellars,

85 Or an ale-house, darker then deafe I O H N 's : beene lost

To all mankind, but laundresses, and tapsters,

Had not I beene. D O L. Do'you know who heares you, Soueraigne?

F A C. Sirrah—— D O L. Nay, Generall, I thought you were ciuill——

F A C. I shall turne desperate, if you grow thus lowd.

90 S v B. And hang thy selfe, I care not. F A C. Hang thee, colliar,

And all thy pots, and pans, in picture I will,

Since thou hast mou'd me.—— D O L. (O, this'll ore-throw all.)

F A C. Write thee vp bawd, in *Paules* ; haue all thy tricks Of cosing with a hollow cole, dust, scrapings,

95 Searching for things lost, with a siue, and sheeres,

Erecting *figures*, in your rowes of *houses*,

And taking in of shaddowes, with a glasse,

Told in red letters : And a face, cut for thee,

Worse then G A M A L I E L R A T S E Y 's. D O L. Are you sound?

100 Ha' you your senses, masters? F A C. I will haue

A booke, but barely reckoning thy impostures,

Shall proue a true *philosophers stone*, to printers.

S v B. Away, you trencher-raskall. F A C. Out you dog-leach,

The vomit of all prisons—— D O L. Will you be

i. i. 79 *projection*] *projection* Q *originally* 81 name——] Name,  
Q 82 vn-doe] vndoe Q 83 *clibanum* Q *originally*, Ff: *Clibanum*  
corr. Q 85 then] than F2 88 ciuill——] ciuill. Q 92  
me.——] me. Q (O, . . . all.)] ô, . . . all. Q 99 RATSEY's.] *Ratsey's*, Q

Your owne destructions, gentlemen? F A C. Still spew'd 105  
out

For lying too heauy o' the basket. S v B. Cheater.

F A C. Bawd. S v B. Cow-herd. F A C. Coniurer. S v B.

Cut-purse. F A C. Witch. D o L. O me!

We are ruin'd! lost! Ha' you no more regard  
To your reputations? Where's your iudgement? S'light,  
Haue yet, some care of me, o' your *republique*— 110

F A C. Away this brach. I'll bring thee, rogue, within  
The *statute of sorcerie, tricesimo tertio*,  
Of H A R R Y the eight: I, and (perhaps) thy necke  
Within a nooze, for laundring gold, and barbing it.

D o L. You'll bring your head within a cocks-combe, will 110  
you? *Shee catcheth out Face his sword: and breakes Subtles glasse.*

And you, sir, with your *menstrue*, gather it vp.

S'death, you abominable paire of stinkards,

Leaue off your barking, and grow one againe,

Or, by the light that shines, I'll cut your throats.

I'll not be made a prey vnto the *marshall*, 120

For ne're a snarling dog-bolt o' you both.

Ha' you together cossen'd all this while,

And all the world, and shall it now be said

Yo'haue made most courteous shift, to cosen your selues?

You will accuse him? You will bring him in 125

Within the *statute*? Who shall take your word?

A whore-sonne, vpstart, *apocryphall* captayne,

Whom not a puritane, in black-friers, will trust

So much, as for a feather! And you, too,

Will giue the cause, forsooth? You will insult, 130

And claime a primacie, in the diuisions?

You must be chiefe? as if you, onely, had

The poulder to proiect with? and the worke

1. i. 105 FAC. om. F2, F3 106-7 Cheater. | FAC. Bawd. SVB. Q,  
F1: Cheater. FAC. Bawd. | SVB. F2 107 me! me. Q 108  
ruin'd! lost!] ruin'd lost. Q 110 *republique*—] *Republique*. Q  
112 *tertio*,] *tertio* Q, F2: *tertio*. F1 113 eight] Eighth F3 114 it  
not in Q 115 *Stage dir. not in Q* Face his] Face's F3 117 abomi-  
nable] abominable Q 126 word?] word, Q 129 feather!]  
fether? Q

Were not begun out of equalitie?

135 The venter *tripartite*? All things in common?

Without prioritie? S'death, you perpetuall curre,

Fall to your couples againe, and cossen kindly,

And heartily, and louingly, as you should,

And loose not the beginning of a *terme*,

140 Or, by this hand, I shall grow factious too,

And, take my part, and quit you. F A C. 'Tis his fault,

He euer murmures, and objects his paines,

And sayes, the weight of all lyes vpon him.

S v B. Why, so it do's. D o L. How does it? Doe not we

145 Sustaine our parts? S v B. Yes, but they are not equall.

D o L. Why, if your part exceed to day, I hope

Ours may, to morrow, match it. S v B. I, they may.

D o L. May, murmuring mastiffe? I, and doe. Death  
on me!

Helpe me to thrattell him. S v B. D O R O T H E E, mistris

D O R O T H E E,

150 'Ods precious, I'll doe any thing. What doe you meane?

D o L. Because o' your *fermentation*, and *cibation*?

S v B. Not I, by heauen—— D o L. Your *Sol*, and

*Luna*—— helpe me.

S v B. Would I were hang'd then. I'll conforme my selfe.

D o L. Will you, sir, doe so then, and quickly: sweare.

155 S v B. What should I sweare? D o L. To leaue your  
faction, sir.

And labour, kindly, in the commune worke.

S v B. Let me not breath, if I meant ought, beside.

I onely vs'd those speeches, as a spurre

To him. D o L. I hope we need no spurres, sir. Doe we?

160 F A C. 'Slid, proue to day, who shall sharke best. S v B.  
Agreed.

i. i. 134 equalitie] æqualitie Q 137 couples] couples, Q 139  
loose] lose F<sub>2</sub> 144 DOL.] DAL. Q 145 equall] æquall Q  
148 mastiffe?] mastiffe, F<sub>2</sub> Death on me] Gods will Q 149  
thrattell] throttle F<sub>2</sub> After 'him.' Seizes Sub. by the throat. G  
150 'Ods] O'ds Q, Fr 152 heauen——] heauen. Q Luna——] Luna:  
Q After 'me.' to Facs. G 154 sir.] sir? F<sub>2</sub> 155 To] 'To F<sub>2</sub>

D o L. Yes, and worke close, and friendly. S v B. 'Slight,  
the knot

Shall grow the stronger, for this breach, with me.

D o L. Why so, my good babounes ! Shall we goe make  
A sort of sober, sciruy, precise neighbours,  
(That scarce haue smil'd twice, sin' the king came in) 165  
A feast of laughter, at our follies ? raskalls,  
Would runne themselues from breath, to see me ride,  
Or you t'haue but a hole, to thrust your heads in,  
For which you should pay eare-rent ? No, agree.  
And may *Don Prouost* ride a feasting, long, 170  
In his old veluet ierken, and stayn'd scarfes,  
(My noble Soueraigne, and worthy Generall)  
Ere we contribute a new crewell garter  
To his most worsted worship. S v B. Royall D o L !  
Spoken like C L A R I D I A N A, and thy selfe ! 175

F A C. For which, at supper, thou shalt sit in triumph,  
And not be stil'd D o L Common, but D o L Proper,  
D o L Singular : the longest cut, at night,  
Shall draw thee for his D o L Particular.

S v B. Who's that ? one rings. To the windo', D o L.

Pray heau'n, 180

The master doe not trouble vs, this quarter.

F A C. O, feare not him. While there dyes one, a weeke,  
O'the plague, hee's safe, from thinking toward *London*.

Beside, hee's busie at his hop-yards, now :

I had a letter from him. If he doe, 185

Hee'll send such word, for ayring o' the house

As you shall haue sufficient time, to quit it :

Though we breake vp a fortnight, 'tis no matter.

S v B. Who is it, D o L ? D o L. A fine yong quodling.

F A C. O,

My Lawyers clarke, I lighted on, last night, 190

1. i. 161 'Slight,] Slight Q 162 for] fot F2 They shake hands.  
add G 164 precise] præcise Q 169 eare-rent ?] Eare-rent: Q  
170 a feasting] afeasting F2 175 selfe l] selfe Q 180 windo']  
wido' F2 Exit Dol. add G 183 thinking] thinking, Q 184  
now :] now, Q 187 it :] it. Q After 188 Re-enter Dol. G

In *Hol'bourne*, at the dagger. He would haue

(I told you of him) a *familiar*,

To rifle with, at horses, and winne cups.

D O L. O, let him in. S V B. Stay. Who shall doo't?

F A C. Get you

195 Your robes on. I will meet him, as going out.

D O L. And what shall I doe? F A C. Not be seene,  
away.

Seeme you very reseru'd. S V B. Inough. F A C. God  
b'w'you, sir.

I pray you, let him know that I was here.

His name is D A P P E R. I would gladly haue staid, but——

## *Act I. Scene II.*

D A P P E R, F A C E, S V B T L E.

C A P taine, I am here. F A C. Who's that? He's come,  
I think, Doctor.

Good faith, sir, I was going away. D A P. In truth,

I'am very sorry, Captaine. F A C. But I thought

Sure, I should meet you. D A P. I, I'am very glad.

5 I had a *sciruy writ*, or two, to make,

And I had lent my watch last night, to one

That dines, to day, at the shrieffs: and so was rob'd

Of my passe-time. Is this the cunning-man?

F A C. This is his worship. D A P. Is he a Doctor?

F A C. Yes.

10 D A P. And ha' you broke with him, Captain? F A C. I.

D A P. And how?

F A C. Faith, he do's make the matter, sir, so daintie,

I know not what to say—— D A P. Not so, good Captaine.

1. i. 196 *Exit Dol.* add G 197 After 'Inough.' *Exit.* G b'] be Q  
1. ii. G continues the scene 1 Captaine] *Dap.* [within.] Captain G  
After 1 Enter *Dapper.* G Doctor.] (Doctor. Originally ranged with l. 2  
in Q, afterwards placed above the line (see p. 276) 3 I'am] I am Q  
4 *DAP. om. F2* I, I'am] I am Q 5 I had] I had Q, Ff 7  
shrieffs] Sherifes F2 8 After 'passe-time.' Re-enter *Subtle* in his velvet  
cap and gown. G 12 say——] say. Q

F A C. Would I were fairely rid on't, beleue me.

D A P. Nay, now you grieue me, sir. Why should you wish so ?

I dare assure you. I'll not be vngratefull. 15

F A C. I cannot thinke you will, sir. But the law  
Is such a thing—— And then, he sayes, *Reade's* matter  
Falling so lately—— D A P. *Reade* ? He was an asse,  
And dealt, sir, with a foole. F A C. It was a clarke, sir.

D A P. A clarke ? F A C. Nay, heare me, sir, you know  
the law 20

Better, I thinke—— D A P. I should, sir, and the danger.  
You know I shew'd the *statute* to you ? F A C. You did so.

D A P. And will I tell, then ? By this hand, of flesh,  
Would it might neuer wright good *court-hand*, more,  
If I discouer. What doe you thinke of me, 25  
That I am a *Chiause* ? F A C. What's that ? D A P. The  
*Turke*, was here——

As one would say, doe you thinke I am a *Turke* ?

F A C. I'll tell the Doctor so. D A P. Doe, good sweet  
Captaine.

F A C. Come, noble Doctor, 'pray thee, let's preuaile,  
This is the gentleman, and he is no *Chiause*. 30

S v B. Captaine, I haue return'd you all my answere.  
I would doe much, sir, for your loue—— But this  
I neither may, nor can. F A C. Tut, doe not say so.  
You deale, now, with a noble fellow, Doctor,  
One that will thanke you, richly, and h'is no *Chiause* : 35  
Let that, sir, moue you. S v B. Pray you, forbear——

F A C. He has

Foure angels, here—— S v B. You doe me wrong, good sir.

F A C. Doctor, wherein ? To tempt you, with these  
spirits ?

S v B. To tempt my art, and loue, sir, to my perill.

1. ii. 13 on't] of it G 15 you. corr. Q, Ff: you Q originally: you, F3  
18 lately——] lately. Q 21 thinke——] thinke Q 24 wright]  
write F2 26 *Turke*, was, Q, Ff 27 *Turke*] *Turque* Q  
originally 28 Doe,] Doe Q originally 37 here——] here. Q  
39 sir] Sr, Q originally: Sir corr. Q

- 40 'Fore heau'n, I scarce can thinke you are my friend,  
That so would draw me to apparant danger.

F A C. I draw you? A horse draw you, and a halter,  
You, and your flies together—— D A P. Nay, good Cap-  
tayne.

F A C. That know no difference of men. S v B. Good  
wordes, sir.

- 45 F A C. Good deeds, sir Doctor dogs-meate. 'Slight I  
bring you

No cheating CLIM-o'-the-CLOVGHS, or CLARIBELS,  
That looke as bigge as *five-and-fiftie*, and *flush*,  
And spit out secrets, like hot custard—— D A P. Cap-  
tayne.

- F A C. Nor any melancholike vnder-scribe,  
50 Shall tell the *Vicar*: but, a speciall gentle,  
That is the heire to fortie markes, a yeere,  
Consorts with the small poets of the time,  
Is the sole hope of his old grand-mother,  
That knowes the law, and writes you sixe faire hands,  
Is a fine clarke, and has his cyphring perfect,  
55 Will take his oath, o' the *greeke* XENOPHON,  
If need be, in his pocket: and can court  
His mistris, out of OVID. D A P. Nay, deare Captayne.

F A C. Did you not tell me, so? D A P. Yes, but I'd  
ha' you

- 60 Vse master Doctor, with some more respect.

F A C. Hang him proud stagge, with his broad veluet  
head.

But, for your sake, I'd choake, ere I would change  
An article of breath, with such a puck-fist——  
Come let's be gone. S v B. Pray you, le' me speake with  
you.

- 65 D A P. His worship calls you, Captayne. F A C. I am  
sorry,

i. ii. 43 together——] together. Q 45 sir] Sr. Q: sir, Ff dogs-  
meate] Dogges-mouth Q 48 custard——] Custard. Q 50 gentle] G  
Genteel F3 56 XENOPHON] Testament Q 62 choake,] choake  
Q 63 -fist——] fist. Q 64 After 'gone.' Going. G

I e're imbarqu'd my selfe, in such a businesse.

D A P. Nay, good sir. He did call you. F A C. Will he take, then ?

S v B. First, heare me—— F A C. Not a syllable, 'lesse you take.

S v B. Pray ye', sir—— F A C. Vpon no termes, but an *assumpsit*.

S v B. Your humor must be law. F A C. Why now, sir, *He takes the money.*

Now, I dare heare you with mine honour. Speake.

So may this gentleman too. S v B. Why, sir—— F A C. No whispring.

S v B. 'Fore heau'n, you doe not apprehend the losse You doe your selfe, in this. F A C. Wherein ? For what ?

S v B. Mary, to be so' importunate for one, 75  
That, when he has it, will vn-doe you all :  
Hee'll winne vp all the money i' the towne.

F A C. How ! S v B. Yes. And blow vp gamster, after gamster,

As they doe crackers, in a *puppit*-play.

If I doe giue him a *familiar*, 80

Giue you him all you play for ; neuer set him :

For he will haue it. F A C. Y'are mistaken, Doctor.

Why, he do's aske one but for cups, and horses,

A rifling *flye* : none o' your great *familiars*.

D A P. Yes, Captayne, I would haue it, for all games. 85

S v B. I told you so. F A C. 'Slight, that's a new businesse !

I vnderstood you, a tame bird, to flie

Twise in a *terme*, or so ; on friday-nights,

When you had left the office : for a nagge,

Of fortie, or fiftie shillings. D A P. I, 'tis true, sir, 90

But I doe thinke, now, I shall leaue the law,

And therefore—— F A C. Why, this changes quite the case !

i. ii. 69 sir——] Sr. Q 70 humor] humour F2 Stage-dir. not  
in Q 72 After 'sir' Offering to whisper Face. G whispring.]  
whispring. Q 82 Y'are] You are F2 86 Fac.] Face. [Taking Dap.  
aside.] G 92 therefore——] therefore. Q



Do' you thinke, that I dare moue him? D A P. If you please, sir,

All's one to him, I see. F A C. What! for that money?

95 I cannot with my conscience. Nor should you

Make the request, me thinkes. D A P. No, sir, I meane

To adde consideration. F A C. Why, then, sir,

I'll trie. Say, that it were for all games, Doctor?

S v B. I say, then, not a mouth shall eate for him

100 At any ordinarie, but o' the score,

That is a gaming mouth, conceiue me. F A C. Indeed!

S v B. Hee'll draw you all the treasure of the realme,

If it be set him. F A C. Speake you this from art?

S v B. I, sir, and reason too: the ground of art.

105 H'is o' the onely best complexion,

The queene of *Fairy* loues. F A C. What! is he! S v B. Peace.

Hee'll ouer-heare you. Sir, should shee but see him——

F A C. What? S v B. Do not you tell him. F A C. Will he win at cards too?

S v B. The spirits of dead H O L L A N D, liuing I S A A C,

110 You'd sweare, were in him: such a vigorous luck

As cannot be resisted. 'Slight hee'll put

Sixe o' your gallants, to a cloke, indeed.

F A C. A strange successe, that some man shall be borne too!

S v B. He heares you, man—— D A P. Sir, Ile not be ingratfull.

115 F A C. Faith, I haue a confidence in his good nature:

You heare, he sayes, he will not be ingratfull.

S v B. Why, as you please, my venture followes yours.

F A C. Troth, doe it, Doctor. Thinke him trustie, and make him.

He may make vs both happy in an houre:

120 Win some fīue thousand pound, and send vs two on't.

D A P. Beleeue it, and I will, sir. F A C. And you shall, sir.

i. ii. 98 After 'trie.' Goes to *Subtle*. G 114 man——] man. Q  
115 a om. F2 119 hower] hower Q 120 on't] o'it F2 121  
Takes him aside. add G

You haue heard all? D A P. No, what was't? nothing,  
I sir.

*Face takes  
him aside.*

F A C. Nothing? D A P. A little, sir. F A C. Well, a rare  
starre

Raign'd, at your birth. D A P. At mine, sir? no. F A C.  
The Doctor

Sweares that you are—— S v B. Nay, Captaine, yo'll tell  
all, now.

125

F A C. Allied to the queene of *Faerie*. D A P. Who?  
that I am?

Beleeue it, no such matter—— F A C. Yes, and that  
Yo'were borne with a caule o' your head. D A P. Who saies  
so? F A C. Come.

You know it well inough, though you dissemble it.

D A P. I-fac, I doe not. You are mistaken. F A C. How! 130

Sweare by your fac? and in a thing so knowne

Vnto the Doctor? How shall we, sir, trust you

I'the other matter? Can we euer thinke,

When you haue wonne fūe, or sixe thousand pound,

You'll send vs shares in't, by this rate? D A P. By I o v e,  
sir,

135

I'll winne ten thousand pound, and send you halfe.

I-fac's no oath. S v B. No, no, he did but iest.

F A C. Goe too. Goe, thanke the Doctor. He's your  
friend

To take it so. D A P. I thanke his worship. F A C. So?

Another angell. D A P. Must I? F A C. Must you? Slight, 140

What else is thankes? will you be triuiall? Doctor,

When must he come, for his *familiar*?

D A P. Shall I not ha' it with me? S v B. O, good sir!

There must a world of ceremonies passe,

You must be bath'd, and fumigated, first;

145

Besides, the Queene of *Faerie* do's not rise,

Till it be noone. F A C. Not, if she daunc'd, to night.

I. ii. 122 *Stage direction not in Q* 127 matter——] matter. Q  
130 I-fac] I fac Q 135 Ioue] Gad Q 137 I-fac's] I fac is Q  
138 He's] He is Q friend] friend. Q 141 *Dapper gives him the*  
*money.* add G 143 sir!] Sir, Q

S v B. And she must blesse it. F A c. Did you neuer see  
Her royall *Grace*, yet? D A P. Whom? F A c. Your aunt  
of *Faerie*?

150 S v B. Not, since she kist him, in the cradle, Captayne,  
I can resolute you that. F A c. Well, see her *Grace*,  
What ere it cost you, for a thing that I know!  
It will be somewhat hard to compasse: but,  
How euer, see her. You are made, beleue it,  
155 If you can see her. Her *Grace* is a lone woman,  
And very rich, and if she take a phant'sye,  
She will doe strange things. See her, at any hand.  
'Slid, she may hap to leaue you all she has!  
It is the Doctors feare. D A P. How will't be done, then?

160 F A c. Let me alone, take you no thought. Doe you  
But say to me, Captayne, I'll see her *Grace*.

One  
knocks  
without.

D A P. Captain, I'll see her *Grace*. F A c. Inough. S v B.  
Who's there?

Anone. (Conduct him forth, by the backe way)  
Sir, against one a clock, prepare your selfe.

165 Till when you must be fasting; onely, take  
Three drops of vinegar, in, at your nose;  
Two at your mouth; and one, at either eare;  
Then, bath your fingers endes; and wash your eyes;  
To sharpen your fiue senses; and, cry *hum*,  
170 Thrise; and then *buz*, as often; and then, come.

F A c. Can you remember this? D A P. I warrant you.

F A c. Well, then, away. 'Tis, but your bestowing  
Some twenty nobles, 'mong her *Graces* seruants;  
And, put on a cleane shirt: You doe not know  
175 What grace her *Grace* may doe you in cleane linnen.

1. ii. 149 FAC. om. F2, F3 152 know!] know. Q 158 has!] has:  
Q 160 alone,] alone Q 161 me,] me' F2 162 Stage-dir. not  
in Q 163 Aside to Face. add G 164 a clock] aclock F2  
168 bath] bathe F2 170 Exit. add G

Act I. Scene III.

SVBTLE, DRVGGER, FACE.

Come in (Good wiues, I pray you forbear me, now.  
Troth I can doe you no good, till after-noone)

What is your name, say you, ABEL DRVGGER?

DRV. Yes, sir.

SVB. A seller of *tabacco*? DRV. Yes, sir. SVB. 'Vmh.  
Free of the *Grocers*? DRV. I, and't please you. SVB.  
Well——

Your businesse, ABEL? DRV. This, and't please your  
worship,

I am a yong beginner, and am building  
Of a new shop, and't like your worship; iust,  
At corner of a street: (Here's the plot on't.)

And I would know, by art, sir, of your worship, 10  
Which way I should make my dore, by *necromancie*.

And, where my shelues. And, which should be for boxes.

And, which for pots. I would be glad to thriue, sir.

And, I was wish'd to your worship, by a gentleman,  
One Captaine FACE, that say's you know mens *planets*, 15  
And their good *angels*, and their bad. SVB. I doe,

If I doe see 'hem—— FAC. What! my honest ABEL?  
Thou art well met, here! DRV. Troth, sir, I was speaking,  
Iust, as your worship came here, of your worship.

I pray you, speake for me to master Doctor. 20

FAC. He shall doe any thing. Doctor, doe you heare?  
This is my friend, ABEL, an honest fellow,  
He lets me haue good *tabacco*, and he do's not  
Sophisticate it, with sack-lees, or oyle,  
Nor washes it in muscadell, and graines, 25

I. iii. *Exeunt Face and Dapper*. G, continuing the scene 1 Come]  
Sub. [within.] Come G in (Good] in. Good Q 2 after-noone)]  
afternoone. Q After 2 Re-enters, followed by Drugger. G 4  
*tabacco*] *Tobacco* Q (so 23) 5, 6, 8 and't] an't F2 5 Well——]  
Well. Q 7 I am] I'am Q, Ff 11 *necromancie*] *Necromantie* Q  
12 boxes.] Boxes, Q 17 see 'hem——] see'hem. Q After ' 'hem'  
*Re-enter Face*. G 18 here!] here. Q

- Nor buries it, in grauell, vnder ground,  
 Wrap'd vp in greasie leather, or piss'd clouts :  
 But keeps it in fine lilly-pots, that open'd,  
 Smell like conserue of roses, or *french* beanes.
- 30 He has his maple block, his siluer tongs,  
*Winchester* pipes, and fire of iuniper.  
 A neate, spruce-honest-fellow, and no gold-smith.  
 S v B. H'is a fortunate fellow, that I am sure on——  
 F A C. Alreadie, sir, ha' you found it? Lo' thee A B E L !
- 35 S v B. And, in right way to 'ward riches—— F A C. Sir.  
 S v B. This summer,  
 He will be of the clothing of his companie :  
 And, next spring, call'd to the scarlet. Spend what he can.  
 F A C. What, and so little beard? S v B. Sir, you must  
 thinke,  
 He may haue a receipt, to make haire come.
- 40 But hee'll be wise, preserue his youth, and fine for't :  
 His fortune lookes for him, another way.  
 F A C. 'Slid, Doctor, how canst thou know this so soone?  
 I am amus'd, at that! S v B. By a rule, Captaine,  
 In *metoposcopia*, which I doe worke by,
- 45 A certaine starre i'the fore-head, which you see not.  
 Your chest-nut, or your oliue-colour'd face  
 Do's neuer faile : and your long eare doth promise.  
 I knew't, by certaine spots too, in his teeth,  
 And on the naile of his *mercurial* finger.
- 50 F A C. Which finger's that? S v B. His little finger.  
 Looke.  
 Yo'were borne vpon a wensday? D R V. Yes, indeed, sir.  
 S v B. The thumb, in *chiromantie*, we giue V E N V S ;  
 The fore-finger to I O V E ; the midst, to S A T V R N E ;  
 The ring to S O L ; the least, to M E R C V R I E :
- 55 Who was the lord, sir, of his *horoscope*,

i. iii. 32 gold-smith] Goldsmith Q 33 on——] on. Q 35  
 summer,] Summer. Q 36 companie:] company. Q 43 I am]  
 I'am Q, Fr 44 *metoposcopia*] *Metaposcopia* Q: *metaposcopia* Ff:  
 metoposcopy G 53 -finger] -finger, Q, Fz 54 ring] ring, Fz  
 Sol:] Sol, Q

His *house of life* being *Libra*, which fore-shew'd,  
He should be a merchant, and should trade with ballance.

F A C. Why, this is strange ! Is't not, honest N A B ?

S v B. There is a ship now, comming from *Ormus*,  
That shall yeeld him, such a commoditie 60  
Of drugs—— This is the west, and this the south ?

D R V. Yes, sir. S v B. And those are your two sides ?

D R V. I, sir.

S v B. Make me your dore, then, south ; your broad side,  
west :

And, on the east-side of your shop, aloft,  
Write *Mathlai*, *Tarmiel*, and *Baraborat* ; 65  
Vpon the north-part, *Rael*, *Velel*, *Thiel*.

They are the names of those *Mercurial* spirits,  
That doe fright flies from boxes. D R V. Yes, sir. S v B.

And

Beneath your threshold, bury me a load-stone  
To draw in gallants, that weare spurres : The rest, 70  
They'll seeme to follow. F A C. That's a secret, N A B !

S v B. And, on your stall, a puppet, with a vice,  
And a court-fucus, to call city-dames.  
You shall deale much, with *mineralls*. D R V. Sir, I haue,  
At home, alreadie—— S v B. I, I know, you'haue *arsnike*, 75  
*Vitriol*, *sal-tartre*, *argaile*, *alkaly*,

*Cinoper* : I know all. This fellow, Captaine,  
Will come, in time, to be a great distiller,  
And giue a say (I will not say directly,  
But very faire) at the *philosophers stone*. 80

F A C. Why, how now, A B E L ! Is this true ? D R V.

Good Captaine,

What must I giue ? F A C. Nay, Ile not counsell thee.  
Thou hearst, what wealth (he sayes, spend what thou canst)  
Th'art like to come too. D R V. I would gi' him a crowne.

1. iii. 56 *Libra*, which] *Libra*. Which Q 57 merchant] Marchant Q  
59 *Ormus*] *Ormu's* Q 61 drugs——] Drugs. Q Pointing to the  
plan. add G 67 *Mercurial*] *Mercurian* Q 68 sir.] Sir, Q 77  
*Cinoper*.] *Cinoper*. Q : but catchword of C 3 recto, l. 76, *Cinoper* ;  
82 After ' giue?' *Aside to Face*. G 83 wealth (he . . . canst)] wealth,  
he . . . canst, Q

85 F A C. A crowne! '⟨a⟩nd toward such a fortune? Hart,  
Thou shalt rather gi' him thy shop. No gold about thee?

D R V. Yes, I haue a *portague*, I ha' kept this halfe yeere.

F A C. Out on thee, N A B; S'light, there was such an  
offer——

'Shalt keepe 't no longer, I'll gi' it him for thee?

90 Doctor, N A B prayes your worship, to drinke this: and  
sweares

He will appeare more gratefull, as your skill

Do's raise him in the world. D R V. I would intreat

Another fauour of his worship. F A C. What is't, N A B?

D R V. But, to looke ouer, sir, my *almanack*,

95 And crosse out my ill-dayes, that I may neither

Bargaine, nor trust vpon them. F A C. That he shall, N A B.

Leaue it, it shall be done, 'gainst after-noone.

S v B. And a direction for his shelues. F A C. Now,  
N A B?

Art thou well pleas'd, N A B? D R V. Thanke, sir, both  
your worships. F A C. Away.

100 Why, now, you smoky persecuter of nature!

Now, doe you see, that some-thing's to be done,

Beside your beech-coale, and your cor'siue waters,

Your crosse-lets, crucibles, and cucurbites?

You must haue stuffe, brought home to you, to worke on?

105 And, yet, you thinke, I am at no expence,

In searching out these veines, then following 'hem,

Then trying 'hem out. 'Fore god, my intelligence

Costs me more money, then my share oft comes too,

In these rare workes. S v B. You're pleasant, sir. How  
now?

i. iii. 85 'and] And Q: 'nd F1 (cf. iv. vii. 52): and F2 88 NAB:]  
Nab, Q: NAB. F2 90 this:] this, Q 93 fauour] fauor Q  
99 Thanke] 'Thank F2 Exit Druggier. add G 100 nature!]  
Nature, Q 106 'hem] 'em F3 (et passim) 107 god] God Q  
108 Costs] Cost F2 then] than F2

Act I. Scene III.

FACE, DOL, SVBTLE.

What say's my daintie DOLKIN? DOL. Yonder  
fish-wife

Will not away. And there's your giantesse,  
The bawd of *Lambeth*. SVB. Hart, I cannot speake with  
'hem.

DOL. Not, afore night, I haue told 'hem, in a voice,  
Thorough the trunke, like one of your *familiars*. 5  
But I haue spied sir EPICVRE MAMMON—— SVB.  
Where?

DOL. Comming along, at far end of the lane,  
Slow of his feet, but earnest of his tongue,  
To one, that's with him. SVB. FACE, goe you, and shift.  
DOL, you must presently make readie, too—— 10

DOL. Why, what's the matter? SVB. O, I did looke  
for him  
With the sunnes rising : 'Maruaile, he could sleepe !  
This is the day, I am to perfect for him  
The *magisterium*, our *great worke*, the *stone* ;  
And yeeld it, made, into his hands : of which, 15  
He has, this month, talk'd, as he were possess'd.  
And, now, hee's dealing peeces on't, away.  
Me thinkes, I see him, entring ordinaries,  
Dispensing for the poxe ; and plaguy-houses,  
Reaching his dose ; walking *more-fields* for lepers ; 20  
And offring citzens-wiues pomander-bracelets,  
As his preseruatiue, made of the *elixir* ;  
Searching the spittle, to make old bawdes yong ;  
And the high-waies, for beggars, to make rich :  
I see no end of his labours. He will make 25

I. iv. Act . . . SVBTLE.] *Re-enter Dol. G.*, continuing the scene I  
say's] say's, Q, Fr : sayes F2 6 MAMMON——] *Mammon. Q*  
9 shift. F2 : shift, Q, Fr Exit Face. add G 12 rising : 'Mar-  
uaile] rising. 'Meruaile Q : rising : 'Marvel F3 sleepe!] sleepe. Q 16  
possess'd.] possess'd on't, Q 24 rich:] rich, Q



Nature asham'd, of her long sleepe : when art,  
 Who's but a step-dame, shall doe more, then shee,  
 In her best loue to man-kind, euer could.  
 If his dreame last, hee'll turne the age, to gold.

*Act II. Scene I.*

MAMMON, SURLY.

Come on, sir. Now, you set your foot on shore  
 In *nouo orbe* ; Here's the rich *Peru* :  
 And there within, sir, are the golden mines,  
 Great SALOMON'S *Ophir* ! He was sayling to't,  
 5 Three yeeres, but we haue reach'd it in ten months.  
 This is the day, wherein, to all my friends,  
 I will pronounce the happy word, *be rich*.  
 This day, you shall be *spectatissimi*.  
 You shall no more deale with the hollow die,  
 10 Or the fraile card. No more be at charge of keeping  
 The liuery-punke, for the yong heire, that must  
 Seale, at all houres, in his shirt. No more,  
 If he denie, ha' him beaten to't, as he is  
 That brings him the commoditie. No more  
 15 Shall thirst of satten, or the couetous hunger  
 Of veluet entrailes, for a rude-spun cloke,  
 To be displaid at *Madame AVGVST A's*, make  
 The sonnes of *sword*, and *hazzard* fall before  
 The golden calfe, and on their knees, whole nights,  
 20 Commit idolatrie with wine, and trumpets :  
 Or goe a feasting, after drum and ensigne.  
 No more of this. You shall start vp yong *Vice-royes*,  
 And haue your punques, and punquettees, my SVRLY.

i. iv. 26 sleepe :] sleepe, Q 27 then] than F<sub>2</sub> After 29  
*Exeunt. G* II. i. ACT II. SCENE I. | *An outer Room in Lovewit's*  
*House.* | *Enter Sir Epicure Mammon and Surly. G* 1 foot] foote, Q  
 4 SALOMON'S] *Solomon's* F<sub>3</sub> (so 82) *Ophir* ! Ff: *Ophyr.* Q originally:  
*Ophir.* corr. Q to't,] to't Q 7 word,] word. Q originally 9 die  
*Q* originally, Ff: Die corr. Q 10 card *Q* originally, Ff: Card corr. Q  
 11 the] my Q 12 more, F<sub>2</sub> : more Q, F<sub>1</sub> 20 trumpets :]  
 Trumpets Q

And vnto thee, I speake it first, *be rich*.

Where is my S v b t l e, there ? Within hough ? {Within} 25  
Sir.

Hee'll come to you, by and by. M A M. That's his fire-  
drake,

His lungs, his *Zephyrus*, he that puffed his coales,  
Till he firke nature vp, in her owne center.

You are not faithfull, sir. This night, I'll change

All, that is mettall, in my house, to gold.

30

And, early in the morning, will I send

To all the plumbers, and the pewterers,

And buy their tin, and lead vp : and to *Lothbury*,

For all the copper. S v r. What, and turne that too ?

M A M. Yes, and I'll purchase *Deuonshire*, and *Cornwaile*, 35  
And make them perfect *Indies* ! You admire now ?

S v r. No faith. M A M. But when you see th'effects of  
the great med'cine !

Of which one part proiected on a hundred

Of *Mercurie*, or *Venus*, or the *Moone*,

Shall turne it, to as many of the *Sunne* ;

40

Nay, to a thousand, so *ad infinitum* :

You will beleue me. S v r. Yes, when I see't, I will.

But, if my eyes doe cossen me so (and I

Giuing 'hem no occasion) sure, I'll haue

A whore, shall pisse 'hem out, next day. M A M. Ha !

Why ?

45

Doe you thinke, I fable with you ? I assure you,

He that has once the *flower of the sunne*,

The perfect *ruby*, which we call *elixir*,

Not onely can doe that, but by it's vertue,

Can confer honour, loue, respect, long life,

50

Giue safety, valure : yea, and victorie,

To whom he will. In eight, and twentie dayes,

I'll make an old man, of fourescore, a childe.

II. i. 25 {Within} Face. [within.] G 30 my Q: thy Ff 35  
Cornwaile] Cornwall F3 36 Indies!] Indies. Q 44 Giuing 'hem]  
Giuing'hem Q 45 pisse 'hem out,] pisse'hem out Q 50 honour]  
honor F2 51 valure] valor F2: Valour F3

- S v R. No doubt, hee's that alreadie. M A M. Nay, I  
meane,
- 55 Restore his yeeres, renew him, like an eagle,  
To the fifth age ; make him get sonnes, and daughters,  
Yong giants ; as our *Philosophers* haue done  
(The antient *Patriarkes* afore the flood)  
But taking, once a weeke, on a kniues point,
- 60 The quantitie of a graine of mustard, of it :  
Become stout M A R S E S, and beget yong C v P I D S.  
S v R. The decay'd *Vestall's* of *Pickt-hatch* would thanke  
you,  
That keepe the fire a-liue, there. M A M. 'Tis the secret  
Of nature, naturiz'd 'gainst all infections,
- 65 Cures all diseases, comming of all causes,  
A month's griefe, in a day ; a yeeres, in twelue :  
And, of what age soeuer, in a month.  
Past all the doses, of your drugging Doctors.  
I'll vndertake, withall, to fright the plague
- 70 Out o' the kingdome, in three months. S v R. And I'll  
Be bound, the players shall sing your praises, then,  
Without their poets. M A M. Sir, I'll doo't. Meane time,  
I'll giue away so much, vnto my man,  
Shall serue th'whole citie, with preseruatiue,
- 75 Weekly, each house his dose, and at the rate——  
S v R. As he that built the water-worke, do's with water ?  
M A M. You are incredulous. S v R. Faith, I haue a  
humor,  
I would not willingly be gull'd. Your *stone*  
Cannot transmute me. M A M. P E R T I N A X, <my>  
S v R L Y, .
- 80 Will you beleeeue antiquitie ? recordes ?  
I'll show you a booke, where M o s e s, and his sister,  
And S A L O M O N haue written, of the art ;  
I, and a treatise penn'd by A D A M. S v R. How !

II. i. 54 Doubt,] doubt Q 61 MARSES] *Marsses* Q 65 Cures]  
Cure F2 . 75 Weekly,] Weekly ; F2 76 water ?] water, Q  
originally 77 humor] humour F2 79 my G conj. (cf. II. ii. 5)

M A M. O' the *Philosophers stone*, and in high-*Dutch*.

S v R. Did A D A M write, sir, in high-*Dutch*? M A M. He did :

85

Which proues it was the primitiue tongue. S v R. What paper?

M A M. On cedar board. S v R. O that, indeed (they say) Will last 'gainst wormes. M A M. 'Tis like your *Irish* wood, 'Gainst cob-webs. I haue a peece of I A S O N S fleece, too, Which was no other, then a booke of *alchemy*,  
Writ in large sheepe-skin, a good fat ram-vellam.

90

Such was P Y T H A G O R A's thigh, P A N D O R A's tub ; And, all that fable of M E D E A's charmes, The manner of our worke : The Bulls, our fornace, Still breathing fire ; our *argent-viue*, the Dragon :

95

The Dragons teeth, *mercury* sublimate, That keeps the whitenesse, hardnesse, and the biting ; And they are gather'd, into I A S O N's helme, (Th'*alembeke*) and then sow'd in M A R S his field, And, thence, sublim'd so often, till they are fix'd.

100

Both this, th'*Hesperian* garden, C A D M V S storie, I O V E's shower, the boone of M I D A S, A R G V S eyes, B O C C A C E his *Demogorgon*, thousands more, All abstract riddles of our *stone*. How now?

## Act II. Scene II.

M A M M O N, F A C E, S V R L Y.

D Oe wee succeed? Is our day come? and hold's it?

F A C. The euening will set red, vpon you, sir ; You haue colour for it, crimson : the red *ferment* Has done his office. Three houres hence, prepare you To see projection. M A M. P E R T I N A X, my S V R L Y, Againe, I say to thee, aloud : *be rich*.

5

II. i. 84-5 high-*Dutch*] *high Dutch* Q 88 wood,] wood Q originally 90 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 92 P Y T H A G O R A's] *Pythagora's* Q originally 94 fornace] Furnace F<sub>3</sub> (so usually) II. ii. Enter Face, as a servant. G, continuing the scene 3 crimson :] crimson, Q 4 houres] howers Q

This day, thou shalt haue ingots : and, to morrow,  
Giue lords th'affront. Is it, my ZEPHYRVS, right ?  
Blushes the *bolts-head* ? F A C. Like a wench with child, sir,  
10 That were, but now, discover'd to her master.

M A M. Excellent wittie *Lungs* ! My onely care is,  
Where to get stuffe, inough now, to proiect on,  
This towne will not halfe serue me. F A C. No, sir ? Buy  
The couering of o' churches. M A M. That's true. F A C.  
Yes.

15 Let 'hem stand bare, as doe their auditorie.  
Or cap 'hem, new, with shingles. M A M. No, good thatch :  
Thatch will lie light vpo' the rafters, *Lungs*.  
*Lungs*, I will manumit thee, from the fornice ;  
I will restore thee thy complexion, *Puffe*,

20 Lost in the embers ; and repaire this braine,  
Hurt wi' the fume o'the mettalls. F A C. I haue blowne, sir,  
Hard, for your worship ; throwne by many a coale,  
When 'twas not beech ; weigh'd those I put in, iust,  
To keepe your heat, still euen ; These beard-eyes

25 Haue wak'd, to reade your seuerall colours, sir,  
Of the *pale citron*, the *greene lyon*, the *crow*,  
The *peacocks taile*, the *plumed swan*. M A M. And, lastly,  
Thou hast descryed the *flower*, the *sanguis agni* ?

F A C. Yes, sir. M A M. Where's master ? F A C. At's  
praiers, sir, he,

30 Good man, hee's doing his deuotions,  
For the successe. M A M. *Lungs*, I will set a period,  
To all thy labours : Thou shalt be the master  
Of my *seraglia*. F A C. Good, sir. M A M. But doe you  
heare ?

I'll geld you, *Lungs*. F A C. Yes, sir. M A M. For I doe  
meane

35 To haue a list of wiues, and concubines,

II. ii. 12 stuffe, inough Q, F1: stuffe enough F2: *query*, stuffe inough,  
on,] on Q 13 Buy] Take Q 14 of] off F3 15 auditorie.]  
Auditorie, Q 16 thatch:] Thatch. Q 21 wi' the] with the Q  
24 beard-eyes] beared eyes Q 29 At's] At his G 32 be] be,  
Q originally 33 *seraglia*] *Seraglio* F3 34 you,] you' Q

Equall with SALOMON; who had the *stone*  
 Alike, with me: and I will make me, a back  
 With the *elixir*, that shall be as tough  
 As HERCVLES, to encounter fiftie a night.  
 Th'art sure, thou saw'st it *bloud*? F A C. Both *bloud*, and  
*spirit*, sir. 40

M A M. I will haue all my beds, blowne vp; not stüft:  
 Downe is too hard. And then, mine oual roome,  
 Fill'd with such pictures, as TIBERIVS tooke  
 From ELEPHANTIS: and dull ARETINE  
 But coldly imitated. Then, my glasses, 45  
 Cut in more subtill angles, to disperse,  
 And multiply the figures, as I walke  
 Naked betweene my *succubæ*. My mists  
 I'le haue of perfume, vapor'd 'bout the roome,  
 To loose our selues in; and my baths, like pits 50  
 To fall into: from whence, we will come forth,  
 And rowle vs drie in gossamour, and roses.  
 (Is it arriu'd at *ruby*?)—— Where I spie  
 A wealthy citizen, or rich lawyer,  
 Haue a sublim'd pure wife, vnto that fellow 55  
 I'll send a thousand pound, to be my cuckold.

F A C. And I shall carry it? M A M. No. I'll ha' no bawds,  
 But fathers, and mothers. They will doe it best.  
 Best of all others. And, my flatterers  
 Shall be the pure, and grauest of Diuines, 60  
 That I can get for money. My mere fooles,  
 Eloquent burgesses, and then my poets,  
 The same that writ so subtly of the *fart*,  
 Whom I will entertaine, still, for that subiect.  
 The few, that would giue out themselues, to be 65  
 Court, and towne-stallions, and, each where, belye  
 Ladies, who' are knowne most innocent, for them;

II. ii. 36 Equall] Æquall Q SALOMON] Solomon F3 40 and  
 F2: & Q: and F1 53 (Is... *ruby*?)——] Is... *Ruby*? Q 54  
 rich] a rich G 58-9 They... others. *Not in Q* 59 And,] And Q  
 60 pure] best Q 62 poets,] poets F1: Poets Q, F2 66 each,  
 where] each-where F2 67 who' are Q: who are Ff

- Those will I begge, to make me *eunuchs* of :  
 And they shall fan me with ten estrich tales  
 70 A piece, made in a plume, to gather wind.  
 We will be braue, *Puffe*, now we ha' the *med'cine*.  
 My meat, shall all come in, in *Indian* shells,  
 Dishes of agate, set in gold, and studded,  
 With emeralds, saphyres, hiacynths, and rubies.  
 75 The tongues of carpes, dormise, and camels heeles,  
 Boil'd i' the spirit of S O L, and dissolu'd pearle,  
 (A P I C I V S diet, 'gainst the *epilepsie*)  
 And I will eate these broaths, with spoones of amber,  
 Headed with diamant, and carbuncle.  
 80 My foot-boy shall eate phesants, caluerd salmons,  
 Knots, godwits, lamprey's : I my selfe will haue  
 The beards of barbels, seru'd, in stead of sallades ;  
 Oild mushromes ; and the swelling vnctuous paps  
 Of a fat pregnant sow, newly cut off,  
 85 Drest with an exquisite, and poynant sauce ;  
 For which, Ile say vnto my cooke, there's gold,  
 Goe forth, and be a knight. F A C. Sir, I'll goe looke  
 A little, how it heightens. M A M. Doe. My shirts  
 I'll haue of taffata-sarsnet, soft, and light  
 90 As cob-webs ; and for all my other rayment  
 It shall be such, as might prouoke the *Persian* ;  
 Were he to teach the world riot, a new.  
 My gloues of fishes, and birds-skins, perfum'd  
 With gummes of *paradise*, and easterne aire——  
 95 S V R. And do you thinke to haue the *stone*, with this ?  
 M A M. No, I doe thinke, t'haue all this, with the *stone*.  
 S V R. Why, I haue heard, he must be *homo frugi*,  
 A pious, holy, and religious man,  
 One free from mortall sinne, a very virgin.  
 100 M A M. That makes it, sir, he is so. But I buy it.  
 My venter brings it me. He, honest wretch,

II. ii. 69 me] me, Q  
 101 venter] venture F3

88 After 'heightens.' Exit. G  
 92 a new] anew F2

91 *Persian*;  
 95 do you] do'you Q, Ff

A notable, superstitious, good soule,  
Has worne his knees bare, and his slippers bald,  
With prayer, and fasting for it : and, sir, let him  
Do it alone, for me, still. Here he comes, 105  
Not a prophane word, afore him : 'Tis poyson.

Act II. Scene III.

MAMMON, SVBTLE, SVRLY, FACE.

G Ood morrow, father. S V B. Gentle sonne, good morrow,

And, to your friend, there. What is he, is with you ?

M A M. An heretique, that I did bring along,  
In hope, sir, to conuert him. S V B. Sonne, I doubt 5  
Yo'are couetous, that thus you meet your time  
I' the iust point : preuent your day, at morning.

This argues something, worthy of a feare

Of importune, and carnall appetite.

Take heed, you doe not cause the blessing leaue you,  
With your vngouern'd hast. I should be sorry, 10

To see my labours, now, e'ene at perfection,

Got by long watching, and large patience,

Not prosper, where my loue, and zeale hath plac'd 'hem.

Which (heauen I call to witnesse, with your selfe,  
To whom, I haue pour'd my thoughts) in all my ends, 15

Haue look'd no way, but vnto publike good,

To pious vses, and deere charitie,

No<w> growne a prodigie with men. Wherein

If you, my sonne, should now preuaricate,

And, to your owne particular lusts, employ 20

So great, and catholique a blisse : be sure,

A curse will follow, yea, and ouertake

Your subtle, and most secret wayes. M A M. I know, sir,

II. ii. 105 Do it] Do'it Q, Ff  
the scene 17 charitie.] Charitie Q 18 Now F2 : No Q, Fr  
19 preuaricate] præuaricate Q 21 blisse:] blisse; Q 23 wayes]  
way F3



- You shall not need to feare me. I but come,  
 25 To ha' you confute this gentleman. S v R. Who is,  
 Indeed, sir, somewhat caustie of beliefe  
 Toward your *stone*: would not be gull'd. S v B. Well,  
 sonne,  
 All that I can conuince him in, is this,  
 The worke is done: Bright S o L is in his *robe*.  
 30 We haue a *med'cine* of the *triple Soule*,  
 The *glorified spirit*. Thankes be to heauen,  
 And make vs worthy of it. *Allen spiegel*.  
 F A C. Anone, sir. S v B. Looke well to the register,  
 And let your heat, still, lessen by degrees,  
 35 To the *Aludels*. F A C. Yes, sir. S v B. Did you looke  
 O'the *Bolts-head* yet? F A C. Which, on *D*. sir? S v B. I.  
 What's the complexion? F A C. Whitish. S v B. Infuse  
 vinegar,  
 To draw his *volatile substance*, and his *tincture*:  
 And let the water in *Glasse E*. be *feltred*,  
 40 And put into the *Gripes egge*. Lute him well;  
 And leaue him clos'd in *balneo*. F A C. I will, sir.  
 S v R. What a braue language here is? next to canting?  
 S v B. I haue another worke; you neuer saw, sonne,  
 That, three dayes since, past the *Philosophers wheele*,  
 45 In the lent heat of *Athanor*; and's become  
*Sulphur o' nature*. M A M. But 'tis for me? S v B. What  
 need you?  
 You haue inough, in that is, perfect. M A M. O, but——  
 S v B. Why, this is couetise! M A M. No, I assure you,  
 I shall employ it all, in pious vses,  
 50 Founding of colledges, and *grammar schooles*,  
 Marrying yong virgins, building hospitalls,  
 And now, and then, a church. S v B. How now? F A C.  
 Sir, please you,

II. iii. 25 SVR.] SVB. Q 27 *stone*: would] Stone. Would Q SVB.]  
 SVB. Q 32 *Allen spiegel*] *Vlen spiegel* Q 33 FAC.] *Face*. [*within*.]  
 G (so at 35, 36, 37, 41) 36 Which,] Which Q, Ff 43 I haue]  
 I'haue Q, Ff 47 is,] is F2 52 then,] then Q After 'church.  
 Re-enter Face. G now?] now. Q Sir.] Sir Q originally

Shall I not change the *feltre*? S v B. Mary, yes.

And bring me the complexion of *Glasse B*.

M A M. Ha' you another? S v B. Yes, sonne, were I  
assur'd

55

Your pietie were firme, we would not want

The meanes to glorifie it. But I hope the best :

I meane to tinct *C*. in *sand-heat*, to morrow,

And giue him *imbibition*. M A M. Of white oile?

S v B. No, sir, of red. *F*. is come ouer the *helme* too,

60

I thanke my Maker, in S. M A R I E S *bath*,

And shewes *lac Virginis*. Blessed be heauen.

I sent you of his *faeces* there, *calcin'd*.

Out of that *calx*, I' ha' wonne the *salt* of M E R C V R Y.

M A M. By powring on your *rectified water*?

65

S v B. Yes, and *reuerberating* in *Athanor*.

How now? What colour saies it? F A C. The ground  
black, sir.

M A M. That's your *crowes-head*? S v R. Your cocks-  
comb's, is it not?

S v B. No, 'tis not perfect, would it were the *crow*.

That worke wants some-thing. (S v R. O, I look'd for this. 70

The hay is a pitching.) S v B. Are you sure, you loos'd  
'hem

I' their owne *menstrue*? F A C. Yes, sir, and then married  
'hem,

And put 'hem in a *Bolts-head*, nipp'd to *digestion*,

According as you bad me; when I set

The *liquor* of M A R S to *circulation*,

75

In the same heat. S v B. The processe, then, was right.

F A C. Yes, by the token, sir, the *Retort* brake,

And what was sau'd, was put into the *Pellicane*,

And sign'd with H E R M E S *seale*. S v B. I thinke 'twas so.

We should haue a new *amalgama*. (S v R. O, this ferret 80

Is ranke as any pole-cat.) S v B. But I care not.

II. iii. After 54 Exit Face. G 61 Maker] maker F2 After  
66 Re-enter Face. G 68 -head] head. Q is it G: is't Q, Ff  
70, 71 (SVR. O . . . pitching.) SVR. O . . . pitching. Q 71 hay is a]  
hay is W: hay 's G 80, 81 (SVR. O, . . . -cat.) SVR. O, . . . -cat. Q

Let him e'ene die ; we haue enough beside,  
In *embrion*. H. ha's his *white shirt* on ? F A C. Yes, sir,  
Hee's ripe for *inceration* : He stands warme,

85 In his *ash-fire*. I would not, you should let  
Any die now, if I might counsell, sir,  
For lucks sake to the rest. It is not good.

M A M. He saies right. (S v R. I, are you bolted ?)

F A C. Nay, I know't, sir,  
I'haue seene th'ill fortune. What is some three ounces  
90 Of fresh *materialls* ? M A M. Is't no more ? F A C. No  
more, sir,

Of gold, t'*amalgame*, with some sixe of *Mercurie*.

M A M. Away, here's money. What will serue ? F A C.  
Aske him, sir.

M A M. How much ? S v B. Giue him nine pound : you  
may gi' him ten.

S v R. Yes, twentie, and be cossend, doe. M A M. There'tis.

95 S v B. This needs not. But that you will haue it, so,  
To see conclusions of all. For two  
Of our inferiour workes, are at *fixation*.

A third is in *ascension*. Goe your waies.

Ha' you set the oile of *Luna* in *kemia* ?

100 F A C. Yes, sir. S v B. And the *philosophers* vinegar ?  
F A C. I.

S v R. We shall haue a sallad. M A M. When doe you  
make *proiection* ?

S v B. Sonne, be not hastie, I *exalt* our *med'cine*,  
By hanging him in *balneo vaporoso* ;

And giuing him solution ; then *congeale* him ;

105 And then *dissolue* him ; then againe *congeale* him ;  
For looke, how oft I iterate the worke,  
So many times, I adde vnto his vertue.

As, if at first, one ounce conuert a hundred,

After his second loose, hee'll turne a thousand ;

11. iii. 82 enough] enough, Q  
bolted ?)] Svr. . . . bolted ? Q, Ff  
pound, Q 100 Exit. add G

83 H.] H F1  
92 serue ?] serue. Q

88 (Svr. . . .  
93 pound :]

His third solution, ten ; his fourth, a hundred. 110

After his fifth, a thousand thousand ounces

Of any imperfect mettall, into pure

Siluer, or gold, in all examinations,

As good, as any of the naturall mine.

Get you your stuffe here, against after-noone, 115

Your brasse, your pewter, and your andirons.

M A M. Not those of iron ? S v B. Yes. You may bring  
them, too.

Wee'll change all mettall's. S v R. I beleeeue you, in that.

M A M. Then I may send my spits ? S v B. Yes, and  
your racks.

S v R. And dripping-pans, and pot-hangers, and hookes ? 120

Shall he not ? S v B. If he please. S v R. To be an asse.

S v B. How, sir ! M A M. This gent'man, you must beare  
withall.

I told you, he had no faith. S v R. And little hope, sir,

But, much lesse charitie, should I gull my selfe.

S v B. Why, what haue you obseru'd, sir, in our art, 125

Seemes so impossible ? S v R. But your whole worke, no  
more.

That you should hatch gold in a fornace, sir,

As they doe egges, in *Egypt* ! S v B. Sir, doe you

Beleeue that egges are hatch'd so ? S v R. If I should ?

S v B. Why, I thinke that the greater miracle. 130

No egge, but differs from a chicken, more,

Then mettalls in themselues. S v R. That cannot be.

The egg's ordain'd by nature, to that end :

And is a chicken in *potentia*.

S v B. The same we say of lead, and other mettalls, 135

Which would be gold, if they had time. M A M. And that

Our art doth funder. S v B. I, for 'twere absurd

To thinke that nature, in the earth, bred gold

Perfect, i'the instant. Something went before.

There must be remote matter. S v R. I, what is that ? 140

II. iii. 120 SVR.] SVB. F3 127 That] That, Q 128 *Egypt*!] *Egypt*. Q  
132 Then] Than F2 137 funder] further F2 139  
Perfect.] Perfect Q

S v B. Mary, we say—— M A M. I, now it heats : stand  
Father.

Pound him to dust—— S v B. It is, of the one part,  
A humide exhalation, which we call  
*Materia liquida*, or the *unctuous water* ;

145 On th'other part, a certaine crasse, and viscous  
Portion of earth ; both which, concorporate,  
Doe make the elementarie matter of gold :  
Which is not, yet, *propria materia*,  
But commune to all mettalls, and all stones.

150 For, where it is forsaken of that moysture,  
And hath more drynesse, it becomes a stone ;  
Where it retaines more of the humid fatnesse,  
It turnes to *sulphur*, or to *quick-siluer* :  
Who are the parents of all other mettalls.

155 Nor can this remote matter, sodainly,  
Progresse so from extreme, vnto extreme,  
As to grow gold, and leape ore all the meanes.  
Nature doth, first, beget th'imperfect ; then  
Proceedes shee to the perfect. Of that ayrie,

160 And oily water, *mercury* is engendred ;  
*Sulphure* o'the fat, and earthy part : the one  
(Which is the last) supplying the place of male,  
The other of the female, in all mettalls.

Some doe beleue *hermaphrodeitie*,

165 That both doe act, and suffer. But, these two  
Make the rest ductile, malleable, extensiuue.  
And, euen in gold, they are ; for we doe find  
Seedes of them, by our fire, and gold in them :  
And can produce the *species* of each metall

170 More perfect thence, then nature doth in earth.  
Beside, who doth not see, in daily practice,  
Art can beget bees, hornets, beetles, waspes,  
Out of the carcasses, and dung of creatures ;  
Yea, scorpions, of an herbe, being ritely plac'd :

ii. iii. 141 say——] say. Q heats:] heates, Q 142 dust——]  
Dust. Q 170, 176 then] than F2 174 ritely] rightly F3  
plac'd:] plac'd. Q

And these are liuing creatures, far more perfect, 175  
 And excellent, then mettalls. M A M. Well said, father !  
 Nay, if he take you in hand, sir, with an argument,  
 Hee'll bray you in a morter. S v R. 'Pray you, sir, stay.  
 Rather, then I'll be brai'd, sir, I'll beleuee,  
 That *Alchemie* is a pretty kind of game, 180  
 Somewhat like tricks o'the cards, to cheat a man,  
 With charming. S v B. Sir ? S v R. What else are all your  
 termes,  
 Whereon no one o' your writers grees with other ?  
 Of your *elixir*, your *lac virginis*,  
 Your *stone*, your *med'cine*, and your *chrysosperme*, 185  
 Your *sal*, your *sulphur*, and your *mercurie*,  
 Your *oyle of height*, your *tree of life*, your *bloud*,  
 Your *marchesite*, your *tutie*, your *magnesia*,  
 Your *toade*, your *crow*, your *dragon*, and your *panthar*,  
 Your *sunne*, your *moone*, your *firmament*, your *adrop*, 190  
 Your *lato*, *azoch*, *zernich*, *chibrit*, *heautarit*,  
 And then, your *red man*, and your *white woman*,  
 With all your broths, your *menstrues*, and *materialls*,  
 Of pisse, and egge-shells, womens termes, mans bloud,  
 Haire o' the head, burnt clouts, chalke, merds, and clay, 195  
 Poulder of bones, scalings of iron, glasse,  
 And worlds of other strange *ingredients*,  
 Would burst a man to name ? S v B. And all these, nam'd  
 Intending but one thing : which art our writers  
 Vs'd to obscure their art. M A M. Sir, so I told him, 200  
 Because the simple idiot should not learne it,  
 And make it vulgar. S v B. Was not all the knowledge  
 Of the *Egyptians* writ in mystick *symboles* ?  
 Speake not the *Scriptures*, oft, in *parables* ?  
 Are not the choisest *fables* of the *Poets*, 205  
 That were the fountaines, and first springs of wisdom,

11. iii. 176 mettalls] Metall Q 178 'Pray] Pray Q 183 grees]  
 'grees F2 184 *elixir* Ff: *Elizir* Q originally: *Elixir* corr. Q 192  
 then,] then Q 193 broths] Broathes Q 195 o' the] o'th F2  
 196 Poulder] Powder F3 203 *Egyptians*] *Ægyptians* Q, F3 204  
*Scriptures*, oft,] *Scriptures* oft Q

Wrapt in perplexed *allegories*? M A M. I vrg'd that,  
And clear'd to him, that S I S I P H U S was damn'd  
To roule the ceaslesse stone, onely, because  
He would haue made ours common. Who is this?

*Dol is  
seene.*

S v B. God's precious—— What doe you meane? Goe  
in, good lady,

Let me intreat you. Where's this varlet? F A C. Sir?

S v B. You very knaue! doe you vse me, thus? F A C.  
Wherein, sir?

S v B. Goe in, and see, you traitor. Goe. M A M. Who  
is it, sir?

215 S v B. Nothing, sir. Nothing. M A M. What's the mat-  
ter? good sir!

I haue not seene you thus distemp'ed. Who is't?

S v B. All arts haue still had, sir, their aduersaries,

*Face  
returns.*

But ours the most ignorant. What now?

F A C. 'Twas not my fault, sir, shee would speake with  
you.

220 S v B. Would she, sir? Follow me. M A M. Stay, *Lungs*.

F A C. I dare not, sir.

M A M. Stay man, what is shee? F A C. A lords sister,  
sir.

M A M. How! 'Pray thee stay? F A C. She's mad, sir,  
and sent hether —

(Hee'll be mad too. M A M. I warrant thee.) Why sent  
hether?

F A C. Sir, to be cur'd. S v B. Why, raskall! F A C. Loe  
you. Here, sir.

*He goes  
out.*

M A M. 'Fore-god, a B R A D A M A N T E, a braue piece.

S v R. Hart, this is a bawdy-house! I'll be burnt else.

M A M. O, by this light, no. Doe not wrong him. H's

ii. iii. 210 made om. F2 211 SVB. om. F2 212 After 'you.'  
*Dol retires.* G After 'varlet' Re-enter Face. G 213 knaue! doe]  
knaue. Doe Q 214 After 'Goe.' Exit Face. G Who] who Q  
215 What's] What is Q good] Good Q. good, Ff 217 sir,] sir; F2  
218, 224, 234 Stage directions not in Q 220 After 'me.' Exit. G  
MAM.] Mam. [stopping him.] G 221-2 So in Q, G; transposed in Ff  
220 Stay] stay Q 222 'Pray] Pray Q hether] hither F2  
224 SVB.] Sur. F3: Sub. [within.] G 225 -god] -God Q piece.]  
piecel Q 226 -house!] House. Q

Too scrupulous, that way. It is his vice.

No, h'is a rare physitian, doe him right.

An excellent *Paracelsian* ! and has done 230

Strange cures with *minerall physicke*. He deales all

With *spirits*, he. He will not heare a word

Of *G A L E N*, or his tedious *recipe's*.

How now, *Lungs* ! *F A C*. Softly, sir, speake softly. I meant *Face*

To ha' told your worship all. This must not heare. *againe.*

*M A M*. No, he will not be gull'd ; let him alone.

*F A C*. Y'are very right, sir, shee is a most rare schollar ;

And is gone mad, with studying *B R A V G H T O N S* workes.

If you but name a word, touching the *Hebrew*,

Shee falls into her fit, and will discourse 240

So learnedly of *genealogies*,

As you would runne mad, too, to heare her, sir.

*M A M*. How might one doe t'haue conference with her,

*Lungs* ?

*F A C*. O, diuers haue runne mad vpon the conference.

I doe not know, sir : I am sent in hast, 245

To fetch a violl. *S V R*. Be not gull'd, sir *M A M M O N*.

*M A M*. Wherein ? 'Pray yee, be patient. *S V R*. Yes, as

you are.

And trust confederate knaues, and bawdes, and whores.

*M A M*. You are too foule, beleue it. Come, here, *Allen*.

One word. *F A C*. I dare not, in good faith. *M A M*. Stay,

knaue. 250

*F A C*. H'is extreme angrie, that you saw her, sir.

*M A M*. Drinke that. What is shee, when shee's out of

her fit ?

*F A C*. O, the most affablest creature, sir ! so merry !

So pleasant ! shee'll mount you vp, like *quick-siluer*,

*Ouer the helme* ; and *circulate*, like *oyle*, 255

A very *vegetall* : discourse of *state*,

ii. iii. 228 way.] way: Q 235 heare.] heare, Q 237 right, sir]  
right. Sir Q schollar:] schollar: Q 238 BRAUGHTONS] Broughtons  
Q 242 her, sir.] her; Sir, Q 246 viol] vial Q 249 Allen]  
Zephyrus Q: *Allen* in some copies of F2 250 After 'faith.' Going. G  
252 After 'that.' Gives him money. G 255 oyle,] oyle: Q



Of *mathematiques*, *bawdry*, any thing——

M A M. Is shee no way accessible? no meanes,  
No trick, to giue a man a tast of her—— wit——

260 Or so?—— *Ulen.* F A C. I'll come to you againe, sir.

M A M. S V R L Y, I did not thinke, one o' your breeding  
Would traduce personages of worth. S V R. Sir E P I C V R E,  
Your friend to vse: yet, still, loth to be gull'd.

I doe not like your *philosophicall* bawdes.

265 Their *stone* is lecherie enough, to pay for,  
Without this bait. M A M. 'Hart, you abuse your selfe.

I know the lady, and her friends, and meanes,

The originall of this disaster. Her brother

Ha's told me all. S V R. And yet, you ne're saw her

270 Till now? M A M. O, yes, but I forgot. I haue (beleeeue it)

One o'the trecherou'st memories, I doe thinke,

Of all mankind. S V R. What call you her, brother?

M A M. My lord——

He wi'not haue his name knowne, now I thinke on't.

S V R. A very trecherous memorie! M A M. O' my  
faith——

275 S V R. Tut, if you ha' it not about you, passe it,  
Till we meet next. M A M. Nay, by this hand, 'tis true.

Hee's one I honour, and my noble friend,

And I respect his house. S V R. Hart! can it be,

That a graue sir, a rich, that has no need,

280 A wise sir, too, at other times, should thus

With his owne oathes, and arguments, make hard meanes

To gull himselfe? And this be your *elixir*,

Your *lapis mineralis*, and your *lunarie*,

Giue me your honest trick, yet, at *primero*,

285 Or *gleeke*; and take your *lutum sapientis*,

Your *menstruum simplex*: I'll haue gold, before you,

II. iii. 259-60 her—— wit—— | Or so?——] her—— | Wit? or so? Q  
260 *Ulen* not in Q: Sub. [within.] Ulen! G Exit. add G 263 vse:  
yet] vse. Yet Q 266 'Hart,] 'Hart Q originally 269 Ha's] H's as  
Q, Ff 271 trecherou'st corr. Ff: treacherou'st Q, Ff originally  
272 Svr.] SvB. Q, Ff her,] her Q 274 O'] O Q 282 And  
F3: And, Q, Ff

And, with lesse danger of the *quick-siluer* ;  
 Or the hot *sulphur*. F A C. Here's one from Captaine  
 F A C E, sir, To Surly.  
 Desires you meet him i'the *Temple-church*,  
 Some halfe houre hence, and vpon earnest busnesse. 290  
 Sir, if you please to quit vs, now ; and come,  
 Againe, within two houres : you shall haue He  
 My master busie examining o' the workes ; whispers  
 And I will steale you in, vnto the partie, Mam-  
 That you may see her conuerse. Sir, shall I say, mon.  
 You'll meet the Captaines worship ? S V R. Sir, I will. 295  
 But, by attorney, and to a second purpose.  
 Now, I am sure, it is a bawdy-house ;  
 I'll sweare it, were the *Marshall* here, to thanke me :  
 The naming this Commander, doth confirme it. 300  
*Don F A C E* ! Why, h'is the most autentique dealer  
 I' these commodities ! The *Superintendent*  
 To all the queinter traffiquers, in towne.  
 He is their *Visiter*, and do's appoint  
 Who lyes with whom ; and at what houre ; what price ; 305  
 Which gowne ; and in what smock ; what fall ; what tyre.  
 Him, will I proue, by a third person, to find  
 The subtilties of this darke *labyrinth* :  
 Which, if I doe discouer, deare sir M A M M O N,  
 You'll giue your poore friend leaue, though no *Philosopher*, 310  
 To laugh : for you that are, 'tis thought, shall weepe.  
 F A C. Sir. He do's pray, you'll not forget. S V R. I will  
 not, sir.  
 Sir E P I C V R E, I shall leaue you ? M A M. I follow you,  
 streight.  
 F A C. But doe so, good sir, to auoid suspicion.  
 This gent'man has a par'lous head. M A M. But wilt thou,

Allen,

315

II. iii. 287 -*siluer* ;] -*silver*, F2 288, 291 *Stage directions not in Q*  
 288 After '*sulphur*.' Re-enter Face. G 292 houres] howers Q (so 305)  
 296 *Walks aside*. add G 301 autentique] authentique F2 302  
*Superintendent*] *Superintendent*. F2 303 queinter] quainter F3  
 313 you ?] you. Q : you. [Exit. G 315 Allen not in Q

Be constant to thy promise? F A C. As my life, sir.

M A M. And wilt thou insinuate what I am? and praise me?

And say I am a noble fellow? F A C. O, what else, sir?

And, that you'll make her royall, with the stone,

320 An Empresse; and your selfe king of *Bantam*.

M A M. Wilt thou doe this? F A C. Will I, sir? M A M.

*Lungs*, my *Lungs*!

I loue thee. F A C. Send your stuffe, sir, that my master

May busie himselfe, about proiection.

M A M. Th'hast witch'd me, rogue: Take, goe. F A C.

Your iack, & all, sir.

325 M A M. Thou art a villaine—— I will send my iack;

And the weights too. Slaue, I could bite thine eare.

Away, thou dost not care for me. F A C. Not I, sir?

M A M. Come, I was borne to make thee, my good weasell;

Set thee on a bench: and, ha' thee twirle a chaine

330 With the best lords vermine, of 'hem all. F A C. Away, sir.

M A M. A *Count*, nay, a *Count-palatine*—— F A C. Good

sir, goe.

M A M. Shall not aduance thee, better: no, nor faster.

## *Act II. Scene IIII.*

S V B T L E, F A C E, D O L.

HAs he bit? Has he bit? F A C. And swallow'd too,  
my S V B T L E.

I ha' giu'n him line, and now he playes, I faith.

S V B. And shall we twitch him? F A C. Thorough both  
the gills.

A wench is a rare bait, with which a man

5 No sooner's taken, but he straight firkes mad.

S V B. D O L, my lord W H A T S' H V M's sister, you must  
now

II. iii. 324 After 'goe.' Gives him money. G 332 better:] better; Q  
After 332 Exit. G II. iv. Act . . . D O L ] Re-enter Subile and Dol.  
G, continuing the scene 6 WHATS'HVM's] WHA'TS'HVMS Ff:  
Whachums Q.

Beare your selfe *statelich*. D O L. O, let me alone.

I'll not forget my race, I warrant you.

I'll keepe my distance, laugh, and talke aloud ;

Haue all the tricks of a proud sciruy ladie, 10

And be as rude'as her woman. F A C. Well said, *Sanguine*.

S v B. But will he send his andirons ? F A C. His iack too ;

And's iron shooring-horne : I ha' spoke to him. Well,

I must not loose my wary gamster, yonder.

S v B. O *Monsieur Caution*, that will not be gull'd ? 15

F A C. I, if I can strike a fine hooke into him, now,  
The *Temple*-church, there I haue cast mine angle.

Well, pray for me. I'll about it. S v B. What, more  
gudgeons !

D O L, scout, scout ; stay F A C E, you must goe to the dore : *One knocks*

'Pray god, it be my *Anabaptist*. Who is't, D O L ? 20

D O L. I know him not. He lookes like a gold-end-man.

S v B. Gods so ! 'tis he, he said he would send. What  
call you him ?

The *sanctified Elder*, that should deale

For M A M M O N S iack, and andirons ! Let him in.

Stay, helpe me of, first, with my gowne. Away 25

Ma-dame, to your with-drawing chamber. Now,

In a new tune, new gesture, but old language.

This fellow is sent, from one negotiates with me

About the *stone*, too ; for the *holy Brethren*

Of *Amsterdam*, the *exil'd Saints* : that hope 30

To raise their *discipline*, by it. I must vse him

•In some strange fashion, now, to make him admire me.

II. iv. 7 *statelich*] *statelich* Q 10 *ladie*] *Lady* : Q 11 *rude*  
as] *rude* as F2 *Sanguine* corr. Q, Ff: *sanguine* Q originally 13  
spoke] spoken F2 14 *loose*] *lose* F2 18 *Stage-direction not*  
in Q 19 After 'scout,' *Dol goes to the window*. G 20 *god*] *god*  
God Q 24 MAMMONS] *Mammons*, Q 25 After 'gowne.' *Exit*  
*Face with the gown*. G 26 *Ma-dame*] *Madame* F2 After 'cham-  
ber.' *Exit Dol*. G 30 *Amsterdam*] *Amstredam* Q

## Act II. Scene v.

SVBTLE, FACE, ANANIAS.

WHere is my drudge? F A C. Sir. S v B. Take away  
the recipient,

And rectifie your *menstrue*, from the *phlegma*.

Then powre it, o' the *Sol*, in the *cucurbite*,

And let 'hem macerate, together. F A C. Yes, sir.

5 And saue the ground? S v B. No. *Terra damnata*

Must not haue entrance, in the *worke*. Who are you?

A N A. A *faithfull Brother*, if it please you. S v B. What's  
that?

A *Lullianist*? a *Ripley*? *Filius artis*?

Can you *sublime*, and *dulcesie*? *calcine*?

10 Know you the *sapor pontick*? *sapor stipectick*?

Or, what is *homogene*, or *heterogene*?

A N A. I vnderstand no *heathen* language, truly.

S v B. *Heathen*, you KNIPPER-DOLING? Is *Ars*  
*sacra*,

Or *Chrysopæia*, or *Spagirica*,

15 Or the *pamphysick*, or *panarchick* knowledge,

A *heathen* language? A N A. *Heathen Greeke*, I take it.

S v B. How? *heathen Greeke*? A N A. All's *heathen*, but  
the *Hebrew*.

S v B. Sirah, my varlet, stand you forth, and speake to  
him,

Like a *Philosopher*: Answer, i'the language.

20 Name the vexations, and the martyrizations

Of mettalls, in the *worke*. F A C. Sir, *Putrefaction*,

*Solution*, *Ablution*, *Sublimation*,

*Cohobation*, *Calcination*, *Ceration*, and

*Fixation*. S v B. This is *heathen Greeke*, to you, now?

25 And when comes *Viuification*? F A C. After *Mortification*.

II. v. Act . . . ANANIAS.] Enter Ananias. G, continuing the scene  
1 After 'Sir.' Re-enter Face. G 3 o'] 'o Q 9 *dulcesie* ?] *dulcesie*.  
Q originally 10 *stipectick*] *stipectick* Q, F1: *stipectick* F2 18  
Sirah] S'rah Q him, F2: him Q, F1

S v B. What's *Cohobation*? F A c. 'Tis the powring on  
Your *Aqua Regis*, and then drawing him off,  
To the *trine circle* of the *seuen spheares*.

S v B. What's the proper passion of mettalls? F A c.  
*Malleation*.

S v B. What's your *ultimum supplicium auri*? F A c.  
*Antimonium*.

30

S v B. This's *heathen Greeke*, to you? And, what's your  
*Mercury*?

F A c. A very fugitiue, he will be gone, sir.

S v B. How know you him? F A c. By his *viscositie*,  
His *oleositie*, and his *suscitabilitie*.

S v B. How doe you *sublime* him? F A c. With the *calce*  
of egge-shels,

35

White marble, *talck*. S v B. Your *magisterium*, now?

What's that? F A c. Shifting, sir, your elements,

Drie into cold, cold into moist, moist in-

to hot, hot into drie. S v B. This's *heathen Greeke* to you,  
still?

Your *lapis philosophicus*? F A c. 'Tis a *stone*, and not

40

A *stone*; a *spirit*, a *soule*, and a *body*:

Which, if you doe *dissolue*, it is *dissolu'd*,

If you *coagulate*, it is *coagulated*,

If you make it to *flye*, it *flyeth*. S v B. Inough.

This's *heathen Greeke*, to you? What are you, sir?

45

A N A. Please you, a seruant of the *exil'd Brethren*,

That deale with widdowes, and with orphanes goods;

And make a iust account, vnto the *Saints*:

A *Deacon*. S v B. O, you are sent from master W H O L -  
S O M E,

Your teacher? A N A. From T R I B V L A T I O N W H O L -  
S O M E,

50

Our very zealous *Pastor*. S v B. Good. I haue

II. v. 28 of] off F2 29 *Malleation*.] *Malleation*, F1 originally  
36 marble, *talck*] marblec, *halke* F2: Marble, *Chalk* F3 40, 41 a  
stone, and not | A] a stone, | And not a G 41 stone:] Stone, Q  
44 *Exit Face*. add G 45 sir?] Sir. Q

Some orphanes goods to come here. A N A. Of what kind, sir?

S v B. Pewter, and brasse, andirons, and kitchin ware, Mettalls, that we must vse our med'cine on :

55 Wherein the *Brethren* may haue a penn'orth,  
For readie money. A N A. Were the orphanes parents  
*Sincere professors*? S v B. Why doe you aske? A N A.  
Because

We then are to deale iustly, and giue (in truth)  
Their vtmost valew. S v B. 'Slid, you'd cossen, else,  
60 And if their parents were not of the *faithfull*?  
I will not trust you, now I thinke on't,  
Till I ha' talk'd with your *Pastor*. Ha' you brought money  
To buy more coales? A N A. No, surely. S v B. No?  
How so?

A N A. The *Brethren* bid me say vnto you, sir.  
65 Surely, they will not venter any more,  
Till they may see *proiection*. S v B. How! A N A. Yo'haue  
had,

For the *instruments*, as bricks, and lome, and glasses,  
Alreadie thirtie pound; and, for *materialls*,  
They say, some ninetie more: And, they haue heard, since,  
70 That one, at *Heidelberg*, made it, of an egge,  
And a small paper of pin-dust. S v B. What's your name?

A N A. My name is A N A N I A S. S v B. Out, the varlet  
That cossend the *Apostles*! Hence, away,  
Flee *Mischiefe*; had your *holy Consistorie*

75 No name to send me, of another sound;  
Then wicked A N A N I A S? Send your *Elders*,  
Hither, to make atonement for you, quickly.  
And gi' me satisfaction; or out-goes  
The fire: and downe th'*alembekes*, and the fornace,  
80 *Piger Henricus*, or what not. Thou wretch,  
Both *Sericon*, and *Bufo*, shall be lost,

ii. v. 55 penn'orth, F2: penn'orth. Q, F1 60 And] And, Q, Ff  
65 venter] venture F3 70 Heidelberg] Heidelberg Q 75 sound;]  
sound, F2 76 Then] Than F2 79 fornace,] fornace. Ff:  
Fornace. Q

Tell 'hem. All hope of rooting out the *Bishops*,  
 Or th' *Antichristian Hierarchie* shall perish,  
 If they stay threescore minutes. The *Aqueitie*,  
*Terreitie*, and *Sulphureitie* 85  
 Shall runne together againe, and all be annull'd,  
 Thou wicked ANANIAS. This will fetch 'hem,  
 And make 'hem hast towards their gulling more.  
 A man must deale like a rough nurse, and fright  
 Those, that are froward, to an appetite. 90

Act II. Scene VI.

FACE, SVBTLE, DRUGGER.

H'Is busie with his spirits, but wee'll vpon him.  
 S v B. How now! What mates? What *Baiards* ha'  
 wee here?

F A C. I told you, he would be furious. Sir, here's N A B,  
 Has brought yo' another piece of gold, to looke on :  
 (We must appease him. Giue it me) and prayes you, 5  
 You would deuise (what is it N A B?) D R V. A signe, sir.

F A C. I, a good lucky one, a thriuing signe, Doctor.

S v B. I was deuising now. F A C. ('Slight, doe not say  
 so,

He will repent he ga' you any more.)  
 What say you to his *constellation*, Doctor? 10

The *Ballance*? S v B. No, that way is stale, and common.  
 A townes-man, borne in *Taurus*, giues the bull ;  
 Or the bulls-head : In *Aries*, the ram.

A poore deuice. No, I will haue his name  
 Form'd in some mystick character ; whose *radij*, 15  
 Striking the senses of the passers by,  
 Shall, by a vertuall influence, breed affections,  
 That may result vpon the partie owncs it :

II. v. 86 annull'd,] annull'd Q, Fr . 87 After 'ANANIAS.' Exit  
*Ananias.* II. vi. Re-enter Face in his uniform, followed by Drugger.  
 G, continuing the scene 8, 9 ('Slight . . . more.]) 'Slight . . .  
 more. Q 14 No,] No. Q



As thus—— F A C. N A B ! S v B. He first shall haue a bell, that's A B E L ;

20 And, by it, standing one, whose name is D E E,  
In a rugg gowne ; there's D. and Rug, that's D R V G :  
And, right anenst him, a Dog snarling Er ;  
There's D R V G G E R, A B E L D R V G G E R. That's his signe.  
And here's now *mysterie*, and *hieroglyphick* !

25 F A C. A B E L, thou art made. D R V. Sir, I doe thanke his worship.

F A C. Sixe o' thy legs more, will not doe it, N A B.  
He has brought you a pipe of *tabacco*, Doctor. D R V. Yes, sir :  
I haue another thing, I would impart——

F A C. Out with it, N A B. D R V. Sir, there is lodg'd, hard by me,

30 A rich yong widdow—— F A C. Good ! a *bona roba* ?  
D R V. But nineteene, at the most. F A C. Very good, A B E L.

D R V. Mary, sh'is not in fashion, yet ; shee weares  
A hood : but 't stands a cop. F A C. No matter, A B E L.

D R V. And, I doe, now and then, giue her a *fucus*——

35 F A C. What ! dost thou deale, N A B ? S v B. I did tell you, Captaine.

D R V. And physick too sometime, sir : for which shee trusts me

With all her mind. Shee's come vp here, of purpose  
To learne the fashion. F A C. Good (his match too !) on, N A B.

D R V. And shee do's strangely long to know her fortune.

40 F A C. Gods lid, N A B, send her to the Doctor, hether.

D R V. Yes, I haue spoke to her of his worship, alreadie :  
But shee's afraid, it will be blowne abroad,  
And hurt her marriage. F A C. Hurt it ? 'Tis the way

II. vi. 25 F A C. om. Q 27 *tabacco*] *Tobacco* Q (so 77) 28 impart——]  
impart Q originally 30 widdow——] Widdow. Q 32 yet ;] yet,  
Q originally 34 then,] then Q, Ff *fucus*——] *fucus*, Q 35 deale,]  
deale. Q originally 36 sir:] Sir, Q 37 here,] here Q originally  
38 Good (his . . . too !)] Good, His . . . too ! Q 40 N A B,] Nab ! Q  
send] Send Q, Ff hether] hither F2 42 abroad, F2 : abroad Q, Ff

To heale it, if 'twere hurt ; to make it more  
Follow'd, and sought : N A B, thou shalt tell her this. 45  
Shee'll be more knowne, more talk'd of, and your widdowes  
Are ne'er of any price till they be famous ;  
Their honour is their multitude of sutors :  
Send her, it may be thy good fortune. What ?  
Thou dost not know. D R v. No, sir, shee'll neuer marry 50  
Vnder a knight. Her brother has made a vow.

F A c. What, and dost thou despaire, my little N A B,  
Knowing, what the Doctor has set downe for thee,  
And, seeing so many, o'the citie, dub'd ?  
One glasse o' thy water, with a *Madame*, I know, 55  
Will haue it done, N A B. What's her brother ? a knight ?

D R v. No, sir, a gentleman, newly warme in'his land, sir,  
Scarse cold in'his one and twentie ; that do's gouerne  
His sister, here : and is a man himselfe  
Of some three thousand a yeere, and is come vp 60  
To learne to quarrell, and to liue by his wits,  
And will goe downe againe, and dye i'the countrey.

F A c. How ! to quarrell ? D R v. Yes, sir, to carry  
quarrells,  
As gallants doe, and manage 'hem, by line.

F A c. 'Slid, N A B ! The Doctor is the onely man 65  
In *Christendome* for him. He has made a table,  
With *Mathematicall* demonstrations,  
Touching the Art of quarrells. He will giue him  
An instrument to quarrell by. Goe, bring 'hem, both :  
Him, and his sister. And, for thee, with her 70  
The Doctor happ'ly may perswade. Goe to.  
'Shalt giue his worship, a new damaske suite  
Vpon the premisses. S v B. O, good Captaine. F A c. He  
shall,

He is the honestest fellow, Doctor. Stay not,

II. vi. 45 Follow'd,] Follow'd Q 48 sutors:] Sutors. Q 57  
newly] newly, Q 58 in'his] in his Q, Ff 63 quarrells, Ff:  
Quarrells Q originally : Quarrells, corr. Q 65 NAB ] Nab. Q 70  
And,] And Q originally 72 'Shalt] 'Shat F3 74 Stay corr. Q.  
Ff : Say Q originally

75 No offers, bring the damaske, and the parties.

D R V. I'll trie my power, sir. F A C. And thy will too,  
N A B.

S V B. 'Tis good *tabacco* this! What is't an ounce?

F A C. He'll send you a pound, Doctor. S V B. O, nó.

F A C. He will do't.

It is the gooddest soule. A B E L, about it.

80 (Thou shalt know more anone. Away, be gone.)

A miserable rogue, and liues with cheese,

And has the wormes. That was the cause indeed

Why he came now. He dealt with me, in priuate,

To get a med'cine for 'hem. S V B. And shall, sir. This  
workes.

85 F A C. A wife, a wife, for one on'vs, my deare S V B T L E :

Wee'll eene draw lots, and he, that failes, shall haue

The more in goods, the other has in taile.

S V B. Rather the lesse. For shee may be so light

Shee may want graines. F A C. I, or be such a burden,

90 A man would scarce endure her, for the whole.

S V B. Faith, best let's see her first, and then determine.

F A C. Content. But D O L must ha' no breath on't.

S V B. Mum.

Away, you to your S V R L Y yonder, catch him.

F A C. 'Pray god, I ha' not stai'd too long. S V B. I  
feare it.

### *Act III. Scene I.*

TRIBVLATION, ANANIAS.

**T**Hese chastisements are common to the *Saints*,  
And such rebukes we of the *Separation*

Must beare, with willing shoulders, as the trialls

Sent forth, to tempt our frailties. A N A. In pure zeale,

II. vi. 80 *Exit Abel.* add G 86 he, . . . failes,] he . . . fayles Q  
originally 94 god,] God Q *Exeunt.* add G III. i. ACT III. SCENE I.  
*The Lane before Lovewit's House.* | *Enter Tribulation Wholesome, and*  
*Ananias.* G 2-4 we of the . . . Sent forth,] th'*Elect* must beare,  
with patience; | They are the exercises of the Spirit, | And sent Q

I doe not like the man : He is a *heathen*. 5

And speakes the language of *Canaan*, truly.

TR I. I thinke him a prophane person, indeed. A N A.

He beares

The visible marke of the *Beast*, in his fore-head.

And for his *Stone*, it is a worke of darknesse,

And, with *Philosophie*, blinds the eyes of man. 10

TR I. Good *Brother*, we must bend vnto all meanes,  
That may giue furtherance, to the *holy cause*.

A N A. Which his cannot : The *sanctified cause*  
Should haue a *sanctified course*. TR I. Not alwaies neces-  
sary.

The children of perdition are, oft-times, 15

Made instruments euen of the greatest workes.

Beside, we should giue somewhat to mans nature,

The place he liues in, still about the fire,

And fume of mettalls, that intoxicate

The braine of man, and make him prone to passion. 20

Where haue you greater *Atheists*, then your Cookes ?

Or more prophane, or cholerick then your Glasse-men ?

More *Antichristian*, then your Bell-founders ?

What makes the Deuill so deuillish, I would aske you,

*Sathan*, our common enemie, but his being 25

Perpetually about the fire, and boyling

*Brimstone*, and *arsnike* ? We must giue, I say,

Vnto the motiues, and the stirrers vp

Of humours in the bloud. It may be so,

When as the *worke* is done, the *stone* is made, 30

This heate of his may turne into a zeale,

And stand vp for the *beauteous discipline*,

Against the menstruous cloth, and ragge of *Rome*.

We must await his calling, and the comming

Of the good spirit. You did fault, t'vpbraid him 35

With the *Brethrens* blessing of *Heidelberg*, waighing

III. i. 5 man:] man, F2 14 necessary.] necessary: F2 15 are,  
Q: are F1 21-3 then] than F2 23 *Antichristian*.] *Antichristian* Q  
24 Deuill] Diuell Q 29 humours] humors Q, F2 so.] so. Q  
originally, Ff: so; corr. Q 33 menstruous] mestruous F2

- What need we haue, to hasten on the worke,  
 For the restoring of the *silenc'd Saints*,  
 Which ne'er will be, but by the *Philosophers stone*.  
 40 And, so a learned *Elder*, one of *Scotland*,  
 Assur'd me ; *Aurum potabile* being  
 The onely med'cine, for the ciuill *Magistrate*,  
 T'incline him to a feeling of the cause :  
 And must be daily vs'd, in the disease.
- 45 A N A. I haue not edified more, truely, by man ;  
 Not, since the *beautifull light*, first, shone on me :  
 And I am sad, my zeale hath so offended.
- T R I. Let vs call on him, then. A N A. The motion's  
 good,  
 And of the spirit ; I will knock first : Peace be within.

*Act III. Scene II.*

S V B T L E, T R I B V L A T I O N, A N A N I A S.

- O, Are you come? 'Twas time. Your threescore  
 minutes  
 Were at the last thred, you see ; and downe had gone  
*Furnus acedix, Turris circulatorius :*  
*Lembeke, Bolts-head, Retort, and Pellicane*  
 5 Had all beene cinders. Wicked A N A N I A S !  
 Art thou return'd ? Nay then, it goes downe, yet.
- T R I. Sir, be appeased, he is come to humble  
 Himselfe in spirit, and to aske your patience,  
 If too much zeale hath carried him, aside,  
 10 From the due path. S V B. Why, this doth qualifie !
- T R I. The *Brethren* had no purpose, verely,  
 To giue you the least grieuance : but are ready  
 To lend their willing hands, to any proiect

III. i. 45 edified] ædified Q 47 sad,] sad Q 49 After 'first:'  
*Knocks. G After 49 The door is opened, and they enter. G* III. ii.  
 SCENE II. | *A Room in Lovewit's House. | Enter Subtle, followed by*  
*Tribulation and Ananias. G 2 the om. F2 3 circulatorius:]*  
*circulatorius, Q 10 qualifie ] qualefie. Q*

The spirit, and you direct. S v B. This qualifies more !

T R I. And, for the orphanes goods, let them be valew'd, 15  
Or what is needfull, else, to the holy worke,  
It shall be numbred : here, by me, the *Saints*  
Throw downe their purse before you. S v B. This qualifies,  
most !

Why, thus it should be, now you vnderstand.  
Haue I discours'd so vnto you, of our *Stone* ? 20  
And, of the good that it shall bring your cause ?  
Shew'd you, (beside the mayne of hiring forces  
Abroad, drawing the *Hollanders*, your friends,  
From th' *Indies*, to serue you, with all their fleete)  
That euen the med'cinall vse shall make you a faction, 25  
And party in the realme ? As, put the case,  
That some great man in state, he haue the gout,  
Why, you but send three droppes of your *Elixir*,  
You helpe him straight : there you haue made a friend.  
Another has the palsey, or the dropsie, 30  
He takes of your incombustible stuffe,  
Hee's yong againe : there you haue made a friend.  
A Lady, that is past the feate of body,  
Though not of minde, and hath her face decay'd  
Beyond all cure of paintings, you restore 35  
With the oyle of *Talck* ; there you haue made a friend :  
And all her friends. A lord, that is a *Leper*,  
A knight, that has the bone-ache, or a squire  
That hath both these, you make 'hem smooth, and sound,  
With a bare *fricace* of your med'cine : still, 40  
You increase your friends. T R I. I, 'tis very pregnant.  
S v B. And, then, the turning of this Lawyers pewter  
To plate, at *Christ-masse*—— A N A. *Christ-tide*, I pray  
you.

S v B. Yet, A N A N I A S ? A N A. I haue done. S v B.  
Or changing

III. ii. 14 more !] more. Q 18 qualifies,] qualifies F2 most !]  
most. Q 35 paintings,] painting; Q 36 *Talck* ;] *Talck* : Q :  
*Talck* ; Ff friend:] Friend. corr. Q: Friend, Q originally 38 -ache,]  
-ache; F2 41 pregnant] pręgnant Q

- 45 His parcell guilt, to massie gold. You cannot  
 But raise you friends. Withall, to be of power  
 To pay an armie, in the field, to buy  
 The king of *France*, out of his realmes ; or *Spaine*,  
 Out of his *Indies* : What can you not doe,
- 50 Against lords spirituall, or temporall,  
 That shall oppone you ? T R I. Verily, 'tis true.  
 We may be temporall lords, our selues, I take it.  
 S v B. You may be any thing, and leaue off to make  
 Long-winded exercises : or suck vp,
- 55 Your ha, and hum, in a tune. I not denie,  
 But such as are not graced, in a state,  
 May, for their ends, be aduerse in religion,  
 And get a tune, to call the flock together :  
 For (to say sooth) a tune do's much, with women,
- 60 And other phlegmatick people, it is your bell.  
 A N A. Bells are prophane : a tune may be religious.  
 S v B. No warning with you ? Then, farewell my  
 patience.  
 'Slight, it shall downe : I will not be thus tortur'd.  
 T R I. I pray you, sir. S v B. All shall perish. I haue  
 spoke it.
- 65 T R I. Let me find grace, sir, in your eyes ; the man  
 He stands corrected : neither did his zeale  
 (But as your selfe) allow a tune, some-where.  
 Which, now, being to'ard the stone, we shall not need.  
 S v B. No, nor your holy vizard, to winne widdowes
- 70 To giue you legacies ; or make zealous wiues  
 To rob their husbands, for the *common cause* :  
 Nor take the start of bonds, broke but one day,  
 And say, *they were forfeited, by providence*.  
 Nor shall you need, ore-night to eate huge meales,
- 75 To celebrate your next daies fast the better :  
 The whilst the *Brethren*, and the *Sisters*, humbled,  
 Abate the stiffenesse of the flesh. Nor cast

Before your hungrie hearers, scrupulous bones,  
As whether a *Christian* may hawke, or hunt ;  
Or whether, *Matrons, of the holy assembly*, 80  
May lay their haire out, or weare doublets :  
Or haue that idoll *Starch*, about their linnen.

A N A. It is, indeed, an idoll. T R I. Mind him not, sir.  
I doe command thee, spirit (of zeale, but trouble)  
To peace within him. Pray you, sir, goe on. 85

S v B. Nor shall you need to libell 'gainst the *Prelates*,  
And shorten so your eares, against the hearing  
Of the next wire-drawne grace. Nor, of necessitie,  
Raile against playes, to please the *Alderman*,  
Whose daily custard you deuoure. Nor lie 90  
With zealous rage, till you are hoarse. Not one  
Of these so singular arts. Nor call your selues,  
By names of T R I B V L A T I O N, P E R S E C V T I O N,  
R E S T R A I N T, L O N G - P A T I E N C E, and such like,  
affected

By the whole family, or wood of you, 95  
Onely for glorie, and to catch the eare  
Of the *Disciple*. T R I. Truely, sir, they are  
Wayes, that the *godly Brethren* haue inuented,  
For propagation of the *glorious cause*,  
As very notable meanes, and whereby, also, 100  
Themselves grow soone, and profitably famous.

S v B. O, but the *stone*, all's idle to it ! nothing !  
The art of *Angels*, Natures miracle,  
The *diuine secret*, that doth flye in clouds,  
From *east to west* : and whose tradition 105  
Is not from men, but spirits. A N A. I hate *Traditions* :  
I do not trust them—— T R I. Peace. A N A. They are  
*Popish*, all.

I will not peace. I will not—— T R I. A N A N I A S.

A N A. Please the prophane, to grieve the godly : I may not.

III. ii. 80 whether.] whether F2 81 doublets:] doublets, Q 94  
like,] like F2 99 glorious] holy Q 102 to it] to't Q, F1: to't F2  
100 meanes,] meanes; Q 106 Traditions:] Traditions. Q 107  
them——] 'hem. Q 109 godly:] godly. Q



- 110 S v B. Well, A N A N I A S, thou shalt ouer-come.  
 T R I. It is an ignorant zeale, that haunts him, sir.  
 But truely, else, a very faithful *Brother*,  
 A botcher : and a man, by reuelation,  
 That hath a competent knowledge of the truth.
- 115 S v B. Has he a competent summe, there, i' the bagg,  
 To buy the goods, within ? I am made guardian,  
 And must, for charitie, and conscience sake,  
 Now, see the most be made, for my poore orphane :  
 Though I desire the *Brethren*, too, good gayners.
- 120 There, they are, within. When you haue view'd, & bought  
 'hem,  
 And tane the inuentorie of what they are,  
 They're readie for *proiection* ; there's no more  
 To doe : cast on the *med'cine*, so much siluer  
 As there is tinne there, so much gold as brasse,
- 125 I'll gi' it you in, by waight. T R I. But how long time,  
 Sir, must the *Saints* expect, yet ? S v B. Let me see,  
 How's the moone, now ? Eight, nine, ten dayes hence  
 He will be *siluer potate* ; then, three dayes,  
 Before he *citronise* : some fiftene dayes,
- 130 The *Magisterium* will be perfected.  
 A N A. About the second day, of the third weeke,  
 In the ninth month ? S v B. Yes, my good A N A N I A S.  
 T R I. What will the orphanes goods arise to, thinke you ?  
 S v B. Some hundred markes ; as much as fill'd three  
 carres,
- 135 Vnladed now : you'll make sixe millions of 'hem.  
 But I must ha' more coales laid in. T R I. How ! S v B.  
 Another load,  
 And then we ha' finish'd. We must now encrease  
 Our fire to *ignis ardens*, we are past  
*Fimus equinus, Balnei, Cineris*,
- 140 And all those lenter heats. If the holy purse

III. ii. 112 truely] truley F2 *Brother*,] *Brother* ; Q 122 They're  
 Q : They are Ff 123 *med'cine*, so] *med'cine* : So Q 132 Yes,] Yes  
 F2 135 you'll] you shall Q 137 ha'] have F3

Should, with this draught, fall low, and that the *Saints*  
Doe need a present summe, I haue <a> trick  
To melt the pewter, you shall buy now, instantly,  
And, with a tincture, make you as good *Dutch* dollers,  
As any are in *Holland*. T R I. Can you so? 145

S v B. I, and shall bide the third examination.

A N A. It will be ioyfull tidings to the *Brethren*.

S v B. But you must carry it, secret. T R I. I, but stay,  
This act of coyning, is it lawfull? A N A. Lawfull?

We know no Magistrate. Or, if we did, 150

This's forraine coyne. S v B. It is no coyning, sir.

It is but casting. T R I. Ha? you distinguish well.

Casting of money may be lawfull. A N A. 'Tis, sir.

T R I. Truly, I take it so. S v B. There is no scruple,  
Sir, to be made of it; beleue A N A N I A S: 155

This case of conscience he is studied in.

T R I. I'll make a question of it, to the *Brethren*.

A N A. The *Brethren* shall approue it lawfull, doubt not.

Where shall't be done? S v B. For that wee'll talke, anone. *Knock*

There's some to speake with me. Goe in, I pray you, *without.*

And view the parcells. That's the inuentorie.

I'll come to you straight. Who is it? F A C E! Appeare.

### Act III. Scene III.

S v B T L E, F A C E, D O L.

H O W now? Good prise? F A C. Good poxe! Yond'  
caustiue cheater

Neuer came on. S v B. How then? F A C. I ha' walk'd  
the round,

Till now, and no such thing. S v B. And ha' you quit him?

F A C. Quit him? and hell would quit him too, he were  
happy.

III. ii. 142 a F2: not in Q. Fr 159 shall't] shall it F2 160  
Stage direction not in Q 162 After 'straight.' Exeunt Trib. and Ana.  
G FACE!] Face! Q III. iii. Enter Face in his uniform. G, con-  
tinuing the scene 1 caustiue] costiu Q 4 and] an' F2

- 5 'Slight would you haue me stalke like a mill-iade,  
 All day, for one, that will not yeeld vs graines ?  
 I know him of old. S v B. O, but to ha' gull'd him,  
 Had beene a maistry. F A C. Let him goe, black Boy,  
 And turne thee, that some fresh newes may possesse thee.
- 10 A noble *Count*, a *Don* of *Spaine* (my deare  
 Delicious compeere, and my partie-bawd)  
 Who is come hether, priuate, for his conscience,  
 And brought munition with him, sixe great slopps,  
 Bigger then three *Dutch* hoighs, beside round trunkes,
- 15 Furnish'd with pistolets, and pieces of eight,  
 Will straight be here, my rogue, to haue thy bath  
 (That is the colour,) and to make his batttry  
 Vpon our D o L, our Castle, our *cinque-Port*,  
 Our *Douer* pire, our what thou wilt. Where is shee ?
- 20 Shee must prepare perfumes, delicate linnen,  
 The bath in chiefe, a banquet, and her wit,  
 For shee must milke his *Epithidimis*.  
 Where is the *Doxie* ? S v B. I'll send her to thee :  
 And but dispatch my brace of little I O H N L E Y D E N S,
- 25 And come againe my selfe. F A C. Are they within then ?  
 S v B. Numbring the summe. F A C. How much ? S v B.  
 A hundred marks, Boy.  
 F A C. Why, this's a lucky day ! Ten pounds of M A M-  
 M O N !
- Three o' my clarke ! A portague o' my grocer !  
 This o' the *Brethren* ! beside reuersions,
- 30 And states, to come i' the widdow, and my *Count* !  
 My share, to day, will not be bought for fortie—— D o L.  
 What ?  
 F A C. Pounds, daintie D o R o T H E E, art thou so neere ?  
 D o L. Yes, say lord *Generall*, how fares our campe ?

III. iii. 12 hether, priuate,] hither, private F2 13 slopps] Sloops  
 F3 14 then] than F2 17 (That . . . colour,)] That . . . colour, Q  
 22 milke] feele Q 26 *Exit*. add G 27 MAMMON!] Mam-  
 mon? Q 28 clarke! . . . grocer!] Clearke. . . Grocer. Q 29  
*Brethren*] *Brethren*, Q 30 states,] states F2 *Count*] *Count*. Q  
 31 After 'fortie' Enter Dol. G

F A C. As, with the few, that had entrench'd themselves  
Safe, by their discipline, against a world, D O L : 35  
And laugh'd, within those trenches, and grew fat  
With thinking on the booties, D O L, brought in  
Daily, by their small parties. This deare houre,  
A doughtie *Don* is taken, with my D O L ;  
And thou maist make his ransome, what thou wilt, 40  
My *Dousabell* : He shall be brought here, fetter'd  
With thy faire lookes, before he sees thee ; and throwne  
In a downe-bed, as darke as any dungeon ;  
Where thou shalt keepe him waking, with thy drum ;  
Thy drum, my D O L ; thy drum ; till he be tame 45  
As the poore black-birds were i' the great frost,  
Or bees are with a bason : and so hiue him  
I'the swan-skin couerlid, and cambrick sheets,  
Till he worke honey, and waxe, my little *Gods-guift*.

D O L. What is he, Generall ? F A C. An *Adalantado*, 50  
A *Grande*, girle. Was not my D A P P E R here, yet ?

D O L. No. F A C. Nor my D R V G G E R ? D O L.

Neither. F A C. A poxe on 'hem,  
They are so long a furnishing ! Such stinkards  
Would not be seene, vpon these festiuall dayes.  
How now ! ha' you done ? S v B. Done. They are gone.

The summe 55

Is here in banque, my F A C E. I would, we knew  
Another chapman, now, would buy 'hem out-right.

F A C. 'Slid, N A B shall doo't, against he ha' the widdow,  
To furnish houshold. S v B. Excellent, well thought on,  
Pray god, he come. F A C. I pray, he keepe away 60  
Till our new businesse be o're-past. S v B. But, F A C E,  
How cam'st thou, by this secret *Don* ? <F A C.> A spirit  
Brought me th'intelligence, in a paper, here,  
As I was coniuring, yonder, in my circle  
For S v R L Y : I ha' my flies abroad. Your bath 65

III. iii. 35 Safe.] Safe F2 38 houre] hower Q (so 76) 42 sees] see's  
Q, Ff thee ;] thee, Q 49 -guift] -gift F2 50 he,] he F2 53 fur-  
nishing!] furnishing. Q After 54 Re-enter Subtle. G 59 Excellent,]  
Excellent Q 60 god] God Q 62 secret] secret, F2 Fac. F2: om. Q, Ff

Is famous, S V B T L E, by my meanes. Sweet D O L,  
 You must goe tune your virginall, no loosing  
 O' the least time. And, doe you heare? good action.  
 Firke, like a flounder; kisse, like a scallop, close :  
 70 And tickle him with thy mother-tongue. His great  
 V E R D V G O-ship has not a iot of language :  
 So much the easier to be cossin'd, my D O L L Y.  
 He will come here, in a hir'd coach, obscure,  
 And our owne coach-man, whom I haue sent, as guide,  
 One No creature else. Who's that? S v b. It i' not he?  
 knocks. F A C. O no, not yet this houre. S v b. Who is't? D O L.  
 D A P P E R,  
 Your Clarke. F A C. Gods will, then, *Queene of Faerie*,  
 On with your tyre; and, Doctor, with your robes.  
 Lett's dispatch him, for gods sake. S v b. 'Twill be long.  
 80 F A C. I warrant you, take but the *cues* I giue you,  
 It shall be brieft enough. 'Slight, here are more!  
 A B E L, and I thinke, the angrie boy, the heire,  
 That faine would quarrell. S v b. And the widdow?  
 F A C. No,  
 Not that I see. Away. O sir, you are welcome.

## Act III. Scene IIII.

F A C E, D A P P E R, D R V G G E R, K A S T R I L.

**T**He Doctor is within, a mouing for you;  
 (I haue had the most adoe to winne him to it)  
 He sweares, you'll be the dearling o' the dice :  
 He neuer heard her *Highnesse* dote, till now (he sayes.)

III. iii. 66 famous,] famous Q, Ff 67 loosing] losing F2 69  
 close :] close ; Q 72 cossin'd,] cozen'd ; F2 DOLLY.] DOLLY Ff  
 75 After 'that?' Exit Dol. G : Dol peeps through the window. Schelling  
 i'not he?] is not he! F2 Stage direction not in Q 76 After  
 'houre.' Re-enter Dol. G 77 then,] then F2 78 After 'tyre';  
 Exit Dol. G 79 Lett's] Lett's vs Q gods] Gods Q 80 you,]  
 you. Q cues] QQ. Q 81 After 'inough.' Goes to the window. G  
 more.] more. Q 84 After 'Away.' Exit Sub. G III. iv. Act  
 ... KASTRIL.] Enter Dapper. G, continuing the scene 2 (I... it)]  
 I... it; Q 4 (he sayes.) not in Q, G

Your aunt has giu'n you the most gracious words, 5  
That can be thought on. D A P. Shall I see her *Grace*?

F A C. See her, and kisse her, too. What? honest N A B!  
Ha'st brought the damaske? N A B. No, sir, here's *tabacco*.

F A C. 'Tis well done, N A B: Thou'lt bring the damaske  
too?

D R V. Yes, here's the gentleman, Captaine, master  
K A S T R I L, 10

I haue brought to see the Doctor. F A C. Where's the  
widdow?

D R V. Sir, as he likes, his sister (he sayes) shall come.

F A C. O, is it so? 'good time. Is your name K A S-  
T R I L, sir?

K A S. I, and the best o'the K A S T R I L S, I'lld be sorry  
else,

By fiftene hundred, a yeere. Where is this Doctor? 15

My mad *tabacco*-Boy, here, tells me of one,  
That can doe things. Has he any skill? F A C. Wherein,  
sir?

K A S. To carry a busnesse, manage a quarrell, fairely,  
Vpon fit termes. F A C. It seemes sir, yo'are but yong  
About the towne, that can make that a question! 20

K A S. Sir, not so yong, but I haue heard some speech  
Of the angrie Boyes, and seene 'hem take *tabacco*;  
And in his shop: and I can take it too.  
And I would faine be one of 'hem, and goe downe  
And practise i'the countrey. F A C. Sir, for the *Duello*, 25  
The Doctor, I assure you, shall informe you,  
To the least shaddow of a haire: and shew you,  
An instrument he has, of his owne making,  
Where-with, no sooner shall you make report  
Of any quarrell, but he will take the height on't, 30  
Most instantly; and tell in what degree,  
Of saf'ty it lies in, or mortalitie.

III. iv. 7 After 'too.' Enter *Abel*, followed by *Kastril*. G 8 *tabacco*  
*Tobacco* Q (so 16, 22, 127) NAB. for DRV. Q, Ff 9 done,  
NAB:] done. Q 13 'good] Good Q 15 a yeere] ayeare F2  
29 Where-with] Wherewith Q, F2 32 saf'ty] safetie F2

And, how it may be borne, whether in a *right line*,  
Or a *halfe-circle* ; or may, else, be cast

35 Into an *angle blunt*, if not *acute* :

All this he will demonstrate. And then, rules,  
To giue, and take the lie, by. K A S. How ? to take it ?

F A C. Yes, in *oblique*, hee'll shew you ; or in *circle* :  
But neuer in *diameter*. The whole towne

40 Studie his *theoremes*, and dispute them, ordinarily,  
At the eating *Academies*. K A S. But, do's he teach  
Liuing, by the wits, too ? F A C. Any thing, what euer.  
You cannot thinke that subtiltie, but he reades it.

He made me a Captaine. I was a starke pimpe,  
45 Iust o' your standing, 'fore I met with him :  
It i' not two months since. I'll tell you his method.  
First, he will enter you, at some ordinarie.

K A S. No, I'll not come there. You shall pardon me.

F A C. For why, sir ?

K A S. There's gaming there, and tricks. F A C. Why,  
would you be

50 A gallant, and not game ? K A S. I, 'twill spend a man.

F A C. Spend you ? It will repaire you, when you are  
spent.

How doe they liue by their wits, there, that haue vented  
Sixe times your fortunes ? K A S. What, three thousand  
a yeere !

F A C. I, fortie thousand. K A S. Are there such ? F A C.  
I, sir.

55 And gallants, yet. Here's a yong gentleman,  
Is borne to nothing, fortie markes a yeere,  
Which I count nothing. H'is to be initiated,  
And haue a *flye* o'the Doctor. He will winne you  
By vnresistable lucke, within this fortnight,

60 Inough to buy a *baronie*. They will set him  
Vpmost, at the Groome-porters, all the *Christmasse* !

III. iv. 44 Captaine.] Captaine ; Q  
young F2 57 H'is] He is F2  
*Christmasse* ] *Christmasse* Q

54 I.] I' F2 55 yong]  
60 *baronie*] *Baronry* Q 61

And, for the whole yeere through, at euerie place,  
Where there is play, present him with the chaire ;  
The best attendance, the best drinke, sometimes  
Two glasses of *canarie*, and pay nothing ; 65  
The purest linnen, and the sharpest knife,  
The partrich next his trencher : and, somewhere,  
The daintie bed, in priuate, with the daintie.  
You shall ha' your ordinaries bid for him,  
As play-houses for a poet ; and the master 70  
Pray him, aloud, to name what dish he affects,  
Which must be butterd shrimps : and those that drinke  
To no mouth else, will drinke to his, as being  
The goodly, *president* mouth of all the boord.

K A S. Doe you not gull one ? F A C. 'Od's my life ! Do  
you thinke it ? 75

You shall haue a cast commander, (can but get  
In credit with a glouer, or a spurrier,  
For some two paire, of eithers ware, afore-hand)  
Will, by most swift posts, dealing with him,  
Arriue at competent meanes, to keepe himselfe, 80  
His punke, and naked boy, in excellent fashion.  
And be admir'd for't. K A S. Will the Doctor teach this ?

F A C. He will doe more, sir, when your land is gone,  
(As men of spirit hate to keepe earth long)  
In a vacation, when small monie is stirring, 85  
And ordinaries suspended till the tearme,  
Hee'll shew a perspectiue, where on one side  
You shall behold the faces, and the persons  
Of all sufficient yong heires, in towne,  
Whose bonds are currant for commoditie ; 90  
On th'other side, the marchants formes, and others,  
That, without help of any second broker,  
(Who would expect a share) will trust such parcels :

III. iv. 63 chaire;] Chayre, Q 74 goodly, *president* mouth]  
goodly *President*-Mouth Q 75 'Od's] God's Q 76-8 (can . . .  
-hand)] can . . . -hand, Q 79 with] but with G 84 long)] long(  
*Fi* originally 91 marchants] Merchants Q: merchants *Fa* 92  
That] (That *Fi* without] without, *Fi* originally



- In the third square, the verie street, and signe  
 95 Where the commoditie dwels, and do's but wait  
 To be deliuer'd, be it pepper, sope,  
 Hops, or tabacco, oat-meale, woad, or cheeses.  
 All which you may so handle, to enioy,  
 To your owne vse, and neuer stand oblig'd.
- 100 K A S. I'faith ! Is he such a fellow ? F A C. Why, N A B  
 here knowes him.  
 And then for making matches, for rich widdowes,  
 Yong gentlewomen, heyres, the fortunat'st man !  
 Hee's sent too, farre, and neere, all ouer *England*,  
 To haue his counsell, and to know their fortunes.
- 105 K A S. Gods will, my suster shall see him. F A C. I'll tell  
 you, sir,  
 What he did tell me of N A B. It's a strange thing !  
 (By the way you must eate no cheese, N A B, it breeds  
 melancholy :  
 And that same melancholy breeds wormes) but passe it,  
 He told me, honest N A B, here, was ne'er at tauerne,  
 110 But once in's life. D R V. Truth, and no more I was not.  
 F A C. And, then he was so sick—— D R V. Could he  
 tell you that, too ?  
 F A C. How should I know it ? D R V. In troth we had  
 beene a shooting,  
 And had a piece of fat ram-mutton, to supper,  
 That lay so heauy o' my stomack—— F A C. And he has  
 no head
- 115 To beare any wine ; for, what with the noise o'the fiddlers,  
 And care of his shop, for he dares keepe no seruants——  
 D R V. My head did so ake—— F A C. As he was faine  
 to be brought home,  
 The Doctor told me. And then, a good old woman——  
 D R V. (Yes, faith, she dwells in *Sea-coale-lane*) did cure  
 me,
- 120 With sodden ale, and pellitorie o'the wall :

Cost me but two pence. I had another sicknesse,  
Was worse then that. F A C. I, that was with the grieve  
Thou took'st for being sess'd at eightene pence,  
For the water-worke. D R V. In truth, and it was like  
T'haue cost me almost my life. F A C. Thy haire went off? 125

D R V. Yes, sir, 'twas done for spight. F A C. Nay, so  
sayes the Doctor.

K A S. Pray thee, *tabacco*-Boy, goe fetch my suster,  
I'll see this learned Boy, before I goe :  
And so shall shee. F A C. Sir, he is busie now :  
But, if you haue a sister to fetch hether, 130  
Perhaps, your owne paines may command her sooner ;  
And he, by that time, will be free. K A S. I goe.

F A C. DRUGGER, shee's thine: the damaske. (SVBTLE,  
and I  
Must wrastle for her.) Come on, master D A P P E R.  
You see, how I turne clients, here, away, 135  
To giue your cause dispatch. Ha' you perform'd  
The ceremonies were inioyn'd you? D A P. Yes, o'the vinegar,  
And the cleane shirt. F A C. 'Tis well : that shirt may doe  
you

More worship then you thinke. Your aunt's a fire,  
But that shee will not shew it, t'haue a sight on you. 140  
Ha' you prouided for her *Graces* seruants ?

D A P. Yes, here are sixe-score E D W A R D shillings.  
F A C. Good.

D A P. And an old H A R R Y's soueraigne. F A C. Very good.

D A P. And three I A M E S shillings, and an E L I Z A -  
B E T H groat,

Iust twentie nobles. F A C. O, you are too iust. 145  
I would you had had the other noble in M A R I E S.

D A P. I haue some P H I L I P, and M A R I E S. F A C.  
I, those same

Are best of all. Where are they? Harke, the Doctor.

III. iv. 122 then] than F<sub>2</sub> (so 139) 123 sess'd] seast Q 132  
goe.] goe, Sir. Q Exit, add G 133 After 'damaske.' Exit Abel. G  
133-4 (SVBTLE, . . . her.)] Subtle, . . . her. Q 139 fire,] fire Q, F<sub>1</sub>

## Act III. Scene v.

SVBTLE, FACE, DAPPER, DOL.

Subtle  
disguisd  
like a  
Priest of  
Faery.

IS yet her *Graces* cossen come? F A C. He is come.  
S V B. And is he fasting? F A C. Yes. S V B. And hath  
cry'd hum?

F A C. Thrise, you must answer. D A P. Thrise. S V B.  
And as oft *buz*?

F A C. If you haue, say. D A P. I haue. S V B. Then, to  
her cuz,

5 Hoping, that he hath vinegard his senses,  
As he was bid, the *Faery Queene* dispenses,  
By me, this robe, the petticote of F O R T V N E ;  
Which that he straight put on, shee doth importune.  
And though to F O R T V N E neere be her petticote,

10 Yet, neerer is her smock, the *Queene* doth note :  
And, therefore, euen of that a piece shee hath sent,  
Which, being a child, to wrap him in, was rent ;  
And prayes him, for a scarfe, he now will weare it  
(With as much loue, as then her *Grace* did teare it)

They  
blind him  
with a rag.

About his eyes, to shew, he is fortunate.  
And, trusting vnto her to make his state,  
Hee'll throw away all worldly pelfe, about him ;  
Which that he will performe, shee doth not doubt him.

F A C. Shee need not doubt him, sir. Alas, he has  
nothing,

20 But what he will part withall, as willingly,  
Vpon her *Graces* word (throw away your purse)  
As shee would aske it : (hand-kerchiefes, and all)  
Shee cannot bid that thing, but hee'll obay.

He  
throwes  
away, as  
they bid  
him

(If you haue a ring, about you, cast it off,  
Or a siluer seale, at your wrist, her *Grace* will send  
Her *Faeries* here to search you, therefore deale

III. v. Enter Subtle, disguised like a priest of Fairy, with a stripe of  
cloth. G, continuing the scene The stage directions at lines 1, 15, 25,  
31, and 58 are not in Q 1 Is yet] Sub. [In a feigned voice.] Is yet G  
22 aske it:] aske it, Q 24, 28 [If . . . vn-done.] If . . . vndone. Q

Directly with her *Highnesse*. If they find  
That you conceale a mite, you are vn-done.)

D A P. Truly, there's all. F A C. All what? D A P. My  
money, truly.

F A C. Keepe nothing, that is transitorie, about you. 30  
(Bid D O L play musique.) Looke, the *Elues* are come *Dol enters*  
To pinch you, if you tell not truth. Aduise you. *with a cit-*  
*terne: they*

D A P. O, I haue a paper with a spur-ryall in't. F A C. *pinch*  
*him.*  
*Ti, ti,*

They knew't, they say. S v B. *Ti, ti, ti, ti*, he has more yet.

F A C. *Ti, ti-ti-ti*. I'the tother pocket? S v B. *Titi, titi,*  
*titi, titi.* 35

They must pinch him, or he will neuer confesse, they say.

D A P. O, ô. F A C. Nay, 'pray you hold. He is her  
*Graces* nephew.

*Ti, ti, ti?* What care you? Good faith, you shall care.

Deale plainly, sir, and shame the *Faeries*. Shew

You are an innocent. D A P. By this good light, I ha'  
nothing. 40

S v B. *Ti ti, ti ti to ta*. He do's equiuocate, shee sayes :  
*Ti, ti do ti, ti ti do, ti da*. And swears by the light, when  
he is blinded.

D A P. By this good darke, I ha' nothing but a halfe-  
crowne

Of gold, about my wrist, that my loue gaue me ;

And a leaden heart I wore, sin' shee forsooke me. 45

F A C. I thought, 'twas something. And, would you in-  
curre

Your aunts displeasure for these trifles? Come,

I had rather you had throwne away twentie halfe-crownes.

You may weare your leaden heart still. How now?

S v B. What newes, D O L? D O L. Yonder's your  
knight, sir M A M M O N. 50

III. v. 31 (Bid . . . musique.)] Bid . . . musique. Q 34 *Aside to*  
*Face*. add Schelling 35 After 'pocket?' *Aside to Subtle*. G *Titi . . .*  
*titi*] *Titi, titi, titi, titi, titi*. F2 41 equiuocate] æquiuocate Q  
48 *Takes it off*. add G 49 After 'still.' Enter *Dol* hastily. G  
50 What] what F2

F A C. Gods lid, we neuer thought of him, till now.  
Where is he? D O L. Here, hard by. H'is at the doore.

S v B. And, you are not readie, now? D O L, get his  
suit.

He must not be sent back. F A C. O, by no meanes.

55 What shall we doe with this same Puffin, here,  
Now hee's o'the spit? S v B. Why, lay him back a while,  
With some deuce. *Ti, ti ti, ti ti ti.* Would her *Grace* speake  
with me?

*He  
speakes  
through  
the key-  
hole, the  
other  
knocking.*

I come. Helpe, D O L. F A C. Who's there? Sir E P I-  
C V R E ;

My master's i'the way. Please you to walke  
Three or foure turnes, but till his back be turn'd,  
And I am for you. Quickly, D O L. S v B. Her *Grace*  
Commends her kindly to you, master D A P P E R.

D A P. I long to see her *Grace*. S v B. Shee, now, is set  
At dinner, in her bed; and shee has sent you,

65 From her owne priuate trencher, a dead mouse,  
And a piece of ginger-bread, to be merry withall,  
And stay your stomack, lest you faint with fasting:  
Yet, if you could hold out, till shee saw you (shee sayes)  
It would be better for you. F A C. Sir, he shall

70 Hold out, and 'twere this two houres, for her *Highnesse*;  
I can assure you that. We will not loose  
All we ha' done—— S v B. He must nor see, nor speake  
To any body, till then. F A C. For that, wee'll put, sir,  
A stay in's mouth. S v B. Of what? F A C. Of ginger-  
bread.

75 Make you it fit. He that hath pleas'd her *Grace*,  
Thus farre, shall not now crinckle, for a little.  
Gape sir, and let him fit you. S v B. Where shall we now  
Bestow him? D O L. I' the priuie. S v B. Come along, sir,  
I now must shew you *Fortunes* priuy lodgings.

III. v. 53 *Exit Dol.* add G 55 Puffin] Puffing F2 57  
After 'deuce.' Re-enter Dol with Face's clothes. G 64 shee om. F2  
70 houres] howers Q 71 loose] lose F2 72 done——] done. Q  
74 in 's] in 'is Q, Ff. Jonson may have written in 'his. 77 After  
'you.' They thrust a gag of gingerbread in his mouth. G

F A C. Are they perfum'd? and his bath readie?' S v B.  
All.

80

Onely the Fumigation's somewhat strong.

F A C. Sir E P I C V R E, I am yours, sir, by and by.

Act III. Scene I.

F A C E, M A M M O N, D O L.

O, Sir, yo'are come i'the onely, finest time——

M A M. Where's master? F A C. Now preparing for  
proiection, sir.

Your stufte will b(e)'all chang'd shortly. M A M. Into gold?

F A C. To gold, and siluer, sir. M A M. Siluer, I care not  
for.

F A C. Yes, sir, a little to giue beggars. M A M. Where's  
the lady?

5

F A C. At hand, here. I ha' told her such braue things,  
o' you,

Touching your bountie and your noble spirit—— M A M.  
Hast thou?

F A C. As shee is almost in her fit to see you.

But, good sir, no *diuinitie* i' your conference,

For feare of putting her in rage—— M A M. I warrant thee. 10

F A C. Sixe men will not hold her downe. And then,  
If the old man should heare, or see you—— M A M. Feare  
not.

F A C. The very house, sir, would runne mad. You know it  
How scrupulous he is, and violent,  
'Gainst the least act of sinne. *Physick, or Mathematicques,* 15  
*Poetrie, State, or Bawdry* (as I told you)

Shee will endure, and neuer startle: But

No word of controuersie. M A M. I am school'd, good *Allen*.

III. v. 82 F A C.] *Face*. [*speaking through the key-hole.*] G After 82  
*Exeunt with Dapper.* G IV. i. M A M M O N] M A M M O N F 2 ACT IV.  
SCENE I. | *A Room in Lovewit's House.* | *Enter Face and Mammon.* G  
4 Siluer.] Siluer Q 6 o'] on Q 11 men] men, sir, G And then,]  
And, then Q, Ff 12 you——] you. Q 18 *Allen*] *Lungs* Q

F A C. And you must praise her house, remember that,  
 20 And her nobilitie. M A M. Let me, alone :

No *Herald*, no nor *Antiquarie*, *Lungs*,

Shall doe it better. Goe. F A C. Why, this is yet

A kind of moderne happinesse, to haue

D O L Common for a great lady. M A M. Now, E P I C V R E,  
 25 Heighten thy selfe, talke to her, all in gold ;

Raine her as many showers, as I O V E did drops

Vnto his D A N A E : Shew the *God* a miser,

Compar'd with M A M M O N. What ? the *stone* will do't.

Shee shall feele gold, tast gold, heare gold, sleepe gold :

30 Nay, we will *concumbers* gold. I will be puissant,

And mightie in my talke to her ! Here shee comes.

F A C. To him, D O L, suckle him. This is the noble  
 knight,

I told your ladship—— M A M. Madame, with your par-  
 don,

I kisse your vesture. D O L. Sir, I were vn-ciuill

35 If I would suffer that, my lip to you, sir.

M A M. I hope, my lord your brother be in health, lady ?

D O L. My lord, my brother is, though I no ladie, sir.

F A C. (Well said my *Guiny*-bird.) M A M. Right noble  
 madame——

F A C. (O, we shall haue most fierce idolatrie !)

40 M A M. 'Tis your prerogatiue. D O L. Rather your  
 courtesie.

M A M. Were there nought else t'inlarge your vertues, to  
 me,

These answeres speake your breeding, and your bloud.

D O L. Bloud we boast none, sir, a poore Baron's daughter.

M A M. Poore ! and gat you ? Prophane not. Had your  
 father

iv. i. 24 After 'lady.' *Aside, and exit.* G 27 DANAE:] *Danae*, : Q  
 28 Compar'd] Compa'rd Q 31 her!] her. Q After 'her!' *Re-enter*  
*Face with Dol richly dressed.* G 33 ladship——] Ladship. Q  
 35 that,] that; corr. F2 36 hope,] hope F2 38 (Well . . .  
 -bird.) Well . . . -bird. Q 39 (O, . . . idolatrie !) O, . . . Idolatry !  
 Q 44 Poore !] Poore, Q not. Had] not, had Q

Slept all the happy remnant of his life 45  
 After the act, lyen but there still, and panted,  
 H'had done inough, to make himselfe, his issue,  
 And his posteritie noble. D o L. Sir, although  
 We may be said to want the guilt, and trappings,  
 The dresse of honor ; yet we striue to keepe 50  
 The seedes, and the materialls. M A M. I doe see  
 The old ingredient, vertue, was not lost,  
 Nor the drug, money, vs'd to make your compound.  
 There is a strange nobilitie, i' your eye,  
 This lip, that chin ! Me thinks you doe resemble 55  
 One o' the *Austriack* princes. F A C. Very like,  
 Her father was an *Irish* costar-monger.

M A M. The house of *Valois*, iust, had such a nose.  
 And such a fore-head, yet, the *Medici*  
 Of *Florence* boast. D o L. Troth, and I haue beene lik'ned 60  
 To all these Princes. F A C. I'll be sworne, I heard it.

M A M. I know not how ! it is not any one,  
 But e'en the very choise of all their features.

F A C. I'll in, and laugh. M A M. A certaine touch, or  
 aire,  
 That sparkles a diuinitie, beyond 65  
 An earthly beautie ! D o L. O, you play the courtier.

M A M. Good lady, gi' me leaue—— D o L. In faith, I  
 may not,

To mock me, sir. M A M. To burne i' this sweet flame :  
 The *Phænix* neuer knew a nobler death.

D o L. Nay, now you court the courtier : and destroy 70  
 What you would build. This art, sir, i' your words,  
 Calls your whole faith in question. M A M. By my soule——

D o L. Nay, oathes are made o' the same aire, sir. M A M.  
 Nature

Neuer bestow'd vpon mortalitie,

iv. i. 49 want] Want *Q* originally guilt] guilt *corr.* *Fz* 53 drug.]  
*Drug*, *Q*: drug *Ff* 55 chin !] chinne. *Q* 58 nose.] Nose ; *Q*  
 62 not how ! it] not, how ; It *Q* 63 e'en] ee'n *Q*, *Ff* 64 After  
 'laugh.' *Aside and exit.* G 66 beautie !] beauty. *Q* 70 court]  
 court, *Q* originally courtier :] Courtier, *Q* 71 art, . . . words,  
*Ff*: Art . . . words *Q* originally : Art, . . . words, *corr.* *Q*



75 A more vnblam'd, a more harmonious feature :

Shee play'd the step-dame in all faces, else.

Sweet madame, le' me be particular——

D O L. Particular, sir ? I pray you, know your distance.

M A M. In no ill sense, sweet lady, but to aske

80 How your faire graces passe the houres ? I see

Yo'are lodg'd, here, i'the house of a rare man,

An excellent Artist : but, what's that to you ?

D O L. Yes, sir. I studie here the *mathematiques*,

And distillation. M A M. O, I crie your pardon.

85 H'is a diuine instructor ! can extract

The soules of all things, by his art ; call all

The vertues, and the miracles of the Sunne,

Into a temperate fornace : teach dull nature

What her owne forces are. A man, the Emp'rour

90 Has courted, aboue K E L L E Y : sent his medalls,

And chaines, t'inuite him. D O L. I, and for<sup>th</sup>his physick,  
sir——

M A M. Aboue the art of Æ S C V L A P I V S,

That drew the enuy of the Thunderer !

I know all this, and more. D O L. Troth, I am taken, sir,

95 Whole, with these studies, that contemplate nature :

M A M. It is a noble humour. But, this forme

Was not intended to so darke a vse !

Had you beene crooked, foule, of some course mould,

A cloyster had done well : but, such a feature

100 That might stand vp the glorie of a kingdome,

To liue recluse ! is a mere *solæcisme*,

Though in a nunnery. It must not be.

I muse, my lord your brother will permit it !

You should spend halfe my land first, were I hee.

105 Do's not this diamant better, on my finger,

Then i' the quarrie ? D O L. Yes. M A M. Why, you are  
like it.

iv. i. 80 houres] howers Q

93 Thunderer!] Thunderer. Q

97 intended] entended Q

*solæcisme*] *solæcisme* Q, Ff

84 your] you F<sub>2</sub>

96 humour] Humor Q

vse !] vse. Q

103 it !] it : Q

86 art:] art, Q

humor Q: humor F<sub>2</sub>

101 recluse !] recluse ? Q

106 Then] Than F<sub>2</sub>

You were created, lady, for the light !

Heare, you shall weare it ; take it, the first pledge  
Of what I speake : to binde you, to beleue me.

D O L. In chaines of adamant ? M A M. Yes, the strongest  
bands. 110

And take a secret, too. Here, by your side,  
Doth stand, this houre, the happiest man, in *Europe*.

D O L. You are contented, sir ? M A M. Nay, in true  
being :

The enuy of Princes, and the feare of States.

D O L. Say you so, sir E P I C V R E ! M A M. Yes, & thou  
shalt proue it, 115

Daughter of honor. I haue cast mine eye  
Vpon thy forme, and I will reare this beautie,  
Aboue all stiles. D O L. You meane no treason, sir !

M A M. No, I will take away that iealousie.

I am the lord of the *Philosophers stone*, 120  
And thou the lady. D O L. How sir ! ha' you that ?

M A M. I am the master of the *maistrie*.

This day, the good old wretch, here, o' the house  
Has made it for vs. Now, hee's at *proiection*.

Thinke therefore, thy first wish, now ; let me heare it : 125  
And it shall raine into thy lap, no shower,

But flouds of gold, whole cataracts, a deluge,  
To get a nation on thee ! D O L. You are pleas'd, sir,  
To worke on the ambition of our sexe.

M A M. I'am pleas'd, the glorie of her sexe should know, 130  
This nooke, here, of the *Friers*, is no climate  
For her, to liue obscurely in, to learne  
Physick, and surgery, for the Constables wife  
Of some odde Hundred in *Essex* ; but come forth,  
And tast the aire of palaces ; eate, drinke 135  
The toyles of *Emp'ricks*, and their boasted practice ;  
Tincture of pearle, and corral, gold, and amber ;

iv. i. 107 the light!] light. Q 112 houre] hower Q in] of Q  
115 DOL.] DOL, Q EPICVRE!] Epicure? Q 118 sir!] Sir? Q  
121 sir!] Sir, Q 135 palaces:] Palaces, Q 136 Emp'ricks]  
Empricks Q

- Be seene at feasts, and triumphs ; haue it ask'd,  
 What miracle shee is ? set all the eyes  
 140 Of court a-fire, like a burning glasse,  
 And worke 'hem into cinders ; when the iewells  
 Of twentie states adorne thee ; and the light  
 Strikes out the starres ; that, when thy name is mention'd,  
 Queenes may looke pale : and, we but shewing our loue,  
 145 NERO'S POPPÆA may be lost in storie !  
 Thus, will we haue it. D O L. I could well consent, sir.  
 But, in a monarchy, how will this be ?  
 The Prince will soone take notice ; and both seize  
 You, and your *stone* : it being a wealth vnfit  
 150 For any priuate subiect. M A M. If he knew it.  
 D O L. Your selfe doe boast it, sir. M A M. To thee, my life.  
 D O L. O, but beware, sir ! You may come to end  
 The remnant of your daies, in a loth'd prison,  
 By speaking of it. M A M. 'Tis no idle feare !  
 155 Wee'll therefore goe with all, my girle, and liue  
 In a free state ; where we will eate our mullets,  
 Sous'd in high-countray wines, sup phesants egges,  
 And haue our cockles, boild in siluer shells,  
 Our shrimps to swim againe, as when they liu'd,  
 160 In a rare butter, made of dolphins milke,  
 Whose creame do's looke like opalls : and, with these  
 Delicate meats, set our selues high for pleasure,  
 And take vs downe againe, and then renew  
 Our youth, and strength, with drinking the *elixir*,  
 165 And so enioy a perpetuitie  
 Of life, and lust. And, thou shalt ha' thy wardrobe,  
 Richer then *Natures*, still, to change thy selfe,  
 And vary oftener, for thy pride, then shee :  
 Or *Art*, her wise, and almost-equall seruant.

IV. i. 144 we] we, Q 145 POPPÆA F2 : POPPÆA F1 storie !]  
 story. Q 148 notice:] notice, Q 149 stone:] Stone, Q 152  
 sir !] Sir. Q 154 feare !] feare. Q 155 with all] withall F2  
 156 state:] State, Q 163 againe,] againe ; Q 164 elixir,]  
 Elixir : Q 167-8 then] than F2 169 -equall] -æquall Q After  
 169 Re-enter Face. G

F A C. Sir, you are too loud. I heare you, euery word, 170  
Into the laboratory. Some fitter place.

The garden, or great chamber aboue. How like you her?

M A M. Excellent! *Lungs*. There's for thee. F A C. But,  
doe you heare?

Good sir, beware, no mention of the *Rabbines*.

M A M. We thinke not on 'hem. F A C. O, it is well, sir.

S V B T L E!

175

Act III. Scene II.

FACE, S V B T L E, K A S T R I L, D A M E

P L I A N T.

D O s t thou not laugh? S V B. Yes. Are they gone?

F A C. All's cleare.

S V B. The widdow is come. F A C. And your quarrelling  
disciple?

S V B. I. F A C. I must to my Captaine-ship againe,  
then.

S V B. Stay, bring 'hem in, first. F A C. So I meant.  
What is shee?

A *Bony-bell*? S V B. I know not. F A C. Wee'll draw lots, 5

You'll stand to that? S V B. What else? F A C. O, for  
a suite,

To fall now, like a cortine : flap. S V B. To th' dore, man.

F A C. You'll ha' the first kisse, 'cause I am not readie.

S V B. Yes, and perhaps hit you through both the nostrils.

F A C. Who would you speak with? K A S. Wher's the 10  
Captaine? F A C. Gone, sir,

About some businesse. K A S. Gone? F A C. Hee'll re-  
turne straight.

But master Doctor, his Lieutenant, is here.

iv. i. 171 laboratory.] *Laboratory*: Q: laboratory. Ff place.] place,  
Q 175 After 'hem.' *Exeunt Mam. and Dol.* G S V B T L E! ] *Subtle*—Q  
iv. ii. *Enter Subtle.* G, continuing the scene 1 cleare.] cleare Ff  
originally 5 -bell ?] -Bell ? ? Q 7 cortine] Curtine Q: Curtain  
F3 8 *Exit.* add G 10-11 F A C. . . . K A S. . . . ] *Face.* [within.]  
. . . Kas. [within.] G (for all speeches) After 12 *Enter KastriL*,  
followed by *Dame Pliant.* G

S v B. Come neere, my worshipfull Boy, my *terræ Fili*,  
That is, my Boy of land ; make thy appoches :

15 Welcome, I know thy lusts, and thy desires,  
And I will serue, and satisfie 'hem. Beginne,  
Charge me from thence, or thence, or in this line ;  
Here is my center : Ground thy quarrell. K A S. You lie.

S v B. How, child of wrath, and anger ! the loud lie ?  
20 For what, my sodaine Boy ? K A S. Nay, that looke you  
too,

I am afore-hand. S v B. O, this's no true *Grammar*,  
And as ill *Logick* ! You must render causes, child,  
Your first, and second *Intentions*, know your *canons*,  
And your *diuisions*, *moodes*, *degrees*, and *differences*,  
25 Your *prædicaments*, *substance*, and *accident*,  
*Series externe*, and *interne*, with their *causes*  
*Efficient*, *materiall*, *formall*, *finall*,  
And ha' your *elements* perfect—— K A S. What is this  
The angrie tongue he talks in ? S v B. That false precept,

30 Of being afore-hand, has deceiu'd a number ;  
And made 'hem enter quarrells, often-times,  
Before they were aware : and, afterward,  
Against their wills. K A S. How must I doe then, sir ?

S v B. I crie this lady mercy. Shee should, first,  
35 Haue beene saluted. I doe call you lady,

He kisses her. My soft, and buxome widdow. K A S. Is shee, i-faith ?

S v B. Yes, or my art is an egregious lyar.

K A S. How know you ? S v B. By inspection, on her  
fore-head,

He kisses her againe. And subiltie of her lip, which must be tasted  
Often, to make a iudgement. 'Slight, shee melts  
Like a *Myrobalane* ! Here is, yet, a line  
In *riuio frontis*, tells me, he is no knight.

P L I. What is he then, sir ? S v B. Let me see your hand.

iv. ii. 15 lusts] lust F2 20 sodaine] sudden F3 (so usually)  
too.] too ; Q : to, F3 22 Logick [] Logick. Q 28 perfect——]  
perfect. Q this Q: this! Ff 29 After 'in?' Aside. G precept]  
præcept Q 37. 40 Stage directions not in Q 38 SvB.] SUR. F2

O, your *linea Fortunæ* makes it plaine ; 45  
And *stella*, here, in *monte Veneris* :

But, most of all, *iunctura annularis*.

He is a souldier, or a man of art, lady :

But shall haue some great honour, shortly. P L I. Brother,  
Hee's a rare man, beleeeue me ! K A S. Hold your peace. 50  
Here comes the tother rare man. 'Saue your Captaine.

F A C. Good master K A S T R I L. Is this your sister ?

K A S. I, sir.

Please you to kusse her, and be proud to know her ?

F A C. I shall be proud to know you, ladie. P L I.

Brother,

He calls me ladie, too. K A S. I, peace. I heard it. 55

F A C. The *Count* is come. S v B. Where is he ? F A C.

At the dore.

S v B. Why, you must entertaine him. F A C. What'll  
you doe

With these the while ? S v B. Why, haue 'hem vp, and  
shew 'hem

Some fustian booke, or the darke glasse. F A C. 'Fore god,  
Shee is a delicate dab-chick ! I must haue her. 60

S v B. Must you ? I, if your fortune will, you must.

Come sir, the Captaine will come to vs presently.

I'll ha' you to my chamber of *demonstrations*,  
Where I'll shew you both the *Grammar*, and *Logick*,  
And *Rhetorick* of quarrelling ; my whole method, 65

Drawne out in tables : and my instrument,  
That hath the seuerall scale vpon't, shall make you  
Able to quarrell, at a strawes breadth, by *Moone*-light.

And, lady, I'll haue you looke in a glasse,  
Some halfe an houre, but to cleare your eye-sight, 70  
Against you see your fortune : which is greater,  
Then I may iudge vpon the sodaine, trust me.

iv. ii. 50 mel] me. Q After 'mel' Re-enter Face, in his uniform. G  
55 Takes her aside. add G 59 god] God Q 60 Exit. add G  
61 Must] Must, Q 65 quarrelling:] Quarrelling, Q 66 tables:]  
Tables, Q 67 scale] Scales F3 70 houre] hower Q 71  
fortune:] Fortune, Q 72 Then] Than F2 After 72 Exit, followed  
by Kast. and Dame P. G

## Act III. Scene III.

FACE, SVBTLE, SVRLY.

W Here are you, Doctor? S V B. I'll come to you presently.

F A C. I will ha' this same widdow, now I ha' seene her, On any composition. S V B. What doe you say?

F A C. Ha' you dispos'd of them? S V B. I ha' sent 'hem vp.

5 F A C. SVBTLE, in troth, I needs must haue this widdow.

S V B. Is that the matter? F A C. Nay, but heare me.

S V B. Goe to,

If you rebell once, D O L shall know it all.

Therefore be quiet, and obey your chance.

F A C. Nay, thou art so violent now—— Doe but conceiue :

10 Thou art old, and canst not serue—— S V B. Who, cannot I?

'Slight, I will serue her with thee, for a—— F A C. Nay, But vnderstand : I'll gi' you composition.

S V B. I will not treat with thee : what, sell my fortune ? 'Tis better then my birth-right. Doe not murmur.

15 Winne her, and carrie her. If you grumble, D O L

Knowes it directly. F A C. Well sir, I am silent.

Will you goe helpe, to fetch in *Don*, in state ?

S V B. I follow you, sir : we must keepe F A C E in awe, Or he will ouer-looke vs like a tyranne.

*Surly like* Braine of a taylor ! Who comes here ? *Don I o n !*

*a Spaniard.*

S V R. *Sennores, beso las manos, à vuestras mercedes.*

S V B. Would you had stoup'd a little, and kist our *anos*.

iv. iii. *Re-enter Face*. G, continuing the scene 1 SVB.] *Sub.*  
[*within.*] G 3 After 'composition.' *Re-enter Subtle*. G SVB.] SVB..  
Q 4 ha' sent] h'sent F2 9 now——] now. Q 11 'Slight]  
'Sblood Q 12 gi'] giue Q 14 then] than F2 17 *Exit.*  
add G 18 sir :] Sir, Q 19 tyranne] Tyrant F3 After 19  
*Re-enter Face, introducing Surly disguised as a Spaniard.* G 20, 42  
*Stage directions not in Q* 20 ION] John F3 21 *beso las Q, F2 :*  
*besolas F1*

F A C. Peace S V B T L E. S V B. Stab me ; I shall neuer  
hold, man.  
He lookes in that deepe ruffe, like a head in a platter,  
Seru'd in by a short cloake vpon two tressils ! 25  
F A C. Or, what doe you say to a collar of brawne, cut  
downe  
Beneath the souse, and wriggled with a knife ?  
S V B. 'Slud, he do's looke too fat to be a *Spaniard*.  
F A C. Perhaps some *Fleming*, or some *Hollander* got him  
In D'ALVA's time : Count EGMONT'S bastard. S V B.  
Don, 30  
Your sciruy, yellow, *Madrid* face is welcome.  
S V R. *Gratia*. S V B. He speakes, out of a fortification.  
'Pray god, he ha' no squibs in those deepe sets.  
S V R. *Por dios, Sennores, muy linda casa !*  
S V B. What sayes he ? F A C. Praises the house, I thinke, 35  
I know no more but's action. S V B. Yes, the *Casa*,  
My precious D I E G O, will proue faire inough,  
To cossen you in. Doe you marke ? you shall  
Be cossened, D I E G O. F A C. Cossened, doe you see ?  
My worthy *Donzel*, cossened. S V R. *Entiendo*. 40  
S V B. Doe you intend it ? So doe we, deare *Don*.  
Haue you brought pistolets ? or portagues ? *He feeles  
his  
pockets.*  
My solemne *Don* ? Dost thou feele any ? F A C. Full.  
S V B. You shall be emptied, *Don* ; pumped, and drawne,  
Drie, as they say. F A C. Milked, in troth, sweet *Don*. 45  
S V B. See all the monsters ; the great lyon of all, *Don*.  
S V R. *Con licencia, se puede ver à esta Sennorà ?*  
S V B. What talkes he now ? F A C. O'the *Sennora*.  
S V B. O, *Don*,  
That is the lyonesse, which you shall see  
Also, my *Don*. F A C. 'Slid, S V B T L E, how shall we doe ? 50  
S V B. For what ? F A C. Why, D O L'S emploi'd, you  
know. S V B. That's true !

rv. iii. 25 tressils.] tressils. Q, F2 31 *Madrid*] *Madrid* Q 33  
god] God Q 36 *Casa*,] *Casa* ! F2 46 SVB.] SWB. F2 47  
*Sennorà*] *Sennora* F2 51 true!] true. Q



'Fore heau'n I know not : He must stay, that's all.

F A C. Stay ? That he must not by no meanes. S v B.  
No, why ?

F A C. Vnlesse you'll marre all. 'Slight, hee'll suspect it.

55 And then he will not pay, not halfe so well.

This is a trauell'd punque-master, and do's know

All the delayes : a notable hot raskall,

And lookes, already, rampant. S v B. 'Sdeath, and M A M-  
M O N

Must not be troubled. F A C. M A M M O N, in no case !

60 S v B. What shall we doe then ? F A C. Thinke : you  
must be sodaine.

S v R. *Entiendo, que la Sennora es tan hermosa, que  
codicio tan*

*à verla, como la bien auenturánça de mi vida.*

F A C. *Mi vida ?* 'Slid, S v B T L E, he puts me in minde  
o'the widow.

What dost thou say to draw her to it ? ha ?

65 And tell her, it is her fortune. All our venter

Now lies vpon't. It is but one man more,

Which on's chance to haue her : and, beside,

There is no maiden-head, to be fear'd, or lost.

What dost thou thinke on't, S v B T L E ? S v B. Who, I ?  
Why——

70 F A C. The credit of our house too is engag'd.

S v B. You made me an offer for my share e're while.

What wilt thou gi' me, i-faith ? F A C. O, by that light,

Ile not buy now. You know your doome to me.

E'en take your lot, obey your chance, sir ; winne her,

75 And weare her, out for me. S v B. 'Slight. I'll not worke  
her then.

F A C. It is the common cause, therefore bethinke you.

D o L else must know it, as you said. S v B. I care not.

S v R. *Sennores, por que se tarda tanta ?*

iv. iii. 54 hee'll] he will G 59 MAMMON] MAMMOM F2 62  
à om. G verla G: verla Q, Ff auenturánça] auenturánza F2 64 to  
it G: to't Q, Ff 65 venter] venture F3 75 her, out] her out, F3  
78 porque G: por que Q, Ff tarda tanta] tãrda tãnta Q: tarda tanto G

S v B. Faith, I am not fit, I am old. F A C. That's now  
no reason, sir.

S v R. *Puede ser, de hazer burla de mi amor.* 80

F A C. You heare the *Don*, too? By this ayre, I call,  
And loose the hinges. D O L. S v B. A plague of hell——

F A C. Will you then doe? S v B. Yo'are a terrible  
rogue,

Ile thinke of this: will you, sir, call the widow?

F A C. Yes, and Ile take her too, with all her faults, 85  
Now I doe thinke on't better. S v B. With all my heart, sir,  
Am I discharg'd o'the lot? F A C. As you please. S v B.  
Hands.

F A C. Remember now, that, vpon any change,  
You neuer claime her. S v B. Much good ioy, and health  
to'you, sir.

Marry a whore? *Fate*, let me wed a witch first. 90

S v R. *Por estas honrada's barbas*—— S v B. He swears  
by his beard.

Dispatch, and call the brother too. S v R. *Tiengo dūda,*  
*Sennores,*

*Que on me hāgan alguna traycion.*

S v B. How, issue on? Yes, *præsto Sennor*. Please you  
*Enthratha* the *chambratha*, worthy *Don*; 95

Where if it please the *Fates*, in your *bathada*,  
You shall be sok'd, and strok'd, and tub'd, and rub'd:  
And scrub'd, and fub'd, deare *Don*, before you goe.

You shall, in faith, my sciruië *babion Don*:

Be curried, claw'd, and flaw'd, and taw'd, indeed. 100

I will the heartilier goe about it now,

And make the widdow a punke, so much the sooner,

To be reueng'd on this impetuous F A C E:

The quickly doing of it is the grace.

iv. iii. 81 call, Q: call. Ff 82 hinges. Q: hinges, Ff 84  
widow] Widodw F2 86 sir,] Sir. Q 87 They take hands.  
add G 88 that, Q: that Ff 89 to'you Q: to you Ff 90 witch]  
Witch, Q 92 After 'too.' Exit Face. G Tiengo] Tengo G 99  
babion] Babion Q: Baboon F3 After 104 Exeunt Sub. and  
Surly. G

## Act III. Scene III.

FACE, KASTRIL, D.A. PLIANT,  
SVBTLE, SVRLY.

C Ome ladie : I knew, the Doctor would not leaue,  
Till he had found the very nick of her fortune.

K A S. To be a *Countesse*, say you ? <F A C.> A *Spanish Countesse*, sir.

P L I. Why ? is that better then an *English Countesse* ?

5 F A C. Better ? 'Slight, make you that a question, ladie ?

K A S. Nay, shee is a foole, Captaine, you must pardon her.

F A C. Aske from your courtier, to your innes of court-man,

To your mere millaner : they will tell you all,  
Your *Spanish iennet* is the best horse. Your *Spanish*

10 Stoupe is the best garbe. Your *Spanish* beard  
Is the best cut. Your *Spanish* ruffles are the best  
Weare. Your *Spanish Pauin* the best daunce.

Your *Spanish* titillation in a gloue

The best perfume. And, for your *Spanish* pike,

15 And *Spanish* blade, let your poore Captaine speake.

Here comes the Doctor. S v B. My most honor'd ladie,  
(For so I am now to stile you, hauing found

By this my *scheme*, you are to vnder-goe

An honorable fortune, very shortly.)

20 What will you say now, if some—— F A C. I ha' told her  
all, sir.

And her right worshipfull brother, here, that shee shall be  
A *Countesse* : doe not delay 'hem, sir. A *Spanish Countesse*.

S v B. Still, my scarce worshipfull Captaine, you can keepe

IV. iv. SCENE II. | *Another Room in the same.* | Enter Face, Kastril, and  
Dame Pliant. G 3 FAC. Q : om. Ff 4 then] than F2 (so 44)  
8 millaner : they] Millaner ; They Q 16 After ' Doctor.' Enter  
Subtle with a paper. G honor'd] honour'd F2 17-19 (For . . .  
shortly.)] For . . . shortly. Q 19 honorable] honourable Q, F2  
20 ha'] had F2

No secret. Well, since he has told you, madame,  
 Doe you forgiue him, and I doe. K A S. Shee shall doe  
 that, sir. 25  
 I'll looke to't, 'tis my charge. S v B. Well then. Nought  
 rests  
 But that shee fit her loue, now, to her fortune.  
 P L I. Truely, I shall neuer brooke a *Spaniard*. S v B.  
 No?  
 P L I. Neuer, sin' *eighty-eight* could I abide 'hem,  
 And that was some three yeere afore I was borne, in truth. 30  
 S v B. Come, you must loue him, or be miserable :  
 Choose, which you will. F A C. By this good rush, per-  
 swade her,  
 Shee will crie straw-berries else, within this twelue-month.  
 S v B. Nay, shads, and mackrell, which is worse. F A C.  
 Indeed, sir?  
 K A S. Gods lid, you shall loue him, or Ile kick you.  
 P L I. Why? 35  
 Ile doe as you will ha' me, brother. K A S. Doe,  
 Or by this hand, I'll maull you. F A C. Nay, good sir,  
 Be not so fierce. S v B. No, my enraged child,  
 Shee will be rul'd. What, when shee comes to tast  
 The pleasures of a Countesse! to be courted—— 40  
 F A C. And kist, and ruffled! S v B. I, behind the hangings.  
 F A C. And then come forth in pomp! S v B. And know  
 her state!  
 F A C. Of keeping all th'idolaters o'the chamber  
 Barer to her, then at their prayers! S v B. Is seru'd  
 Vpon the knee! F A C. And has her pages, huishers, 45  
 Foot-men, and coaches—— S v B. Her sixe mares——  
 F A C. Nay, eight!  
 S v B. To hurry her through *London*, to th'*Exchange*,  
*Bet'lem*, the *China*-houses—— F A C. Yes, and haue

iv. iv. 30 borne,] borne Q 37 sir,] Sir. Q 39 What,] What Q  
 40 Countesse!] Countesse, Q 41 ruffled!] ruffled—— Q 42  
 pomp!] pompe—— Q S v B.] SUR. F2 (so 44) state!] State—— Q  
 44 prayers!] prayers—— Q 45 knee!] knee—— Q huishers]  
 ushers F2 46 eight!] eight—— Q 48 -houses] -house F2

- The citizens gape at her, and praise her tyres !  
 50 And my-lords goose-turd bands, that rides with her !  
 K A S. Most braue ! By this hand, you are not my suster,  
 If you refuse. P L I. I will not refuse, brother.  
 S v R. *Que es esto, Sennores, que non se venga ?*  
*Esta tardanza me mata !* F A C. It is the *Count* come !  
 55 The Doctor knew he would be here, by his art.  
 S v B. *En gallanta Madama, Don ! gallantissima !*  
 S v R. *Por todos los dioses, la mas acabada*  
*Hermosura, que he visto en mi vida !*  
 F A C. Is't not a gallant language, that they speake ?  
 60 K A S. An admirable language ! Is't not *French* ?  
 F A C. No, *Spanish*, sir. K A S. It goes like law-*French*,  
 And that, they say, is the court-liest language. F A C. List, sir.  
 S v R. *El Sol ha perdido su lumbre, con el*  
*Resplandor, que tr  e esta dama. Valgame dios !*  
 65 F A C. He admires your sister. K A S. Must not shee  
 make curtsie ?  
 S v B. 'Ods will, shee must goe to him, man ; and kisse him !  
 It is the *Spanish* fashion, for the women  
 To make first court. F A C. 'Tis true he tells you, sir :  
 His art knowes all. S v R. *Per que no se ac  de ?*  
 70 K A S. He speakes to her, I thinke ? F A C. That he  
 do's sir.  
 S v R. *Por el amor de dios, que es esto, que se t  rda ?*  
 K A S. Nay, see : shee will not vnderstand him ! Gull.  
 Noddy. P L I. What say you brother ? K A S. Asse, my  
 suster,  
 Goe kusse him, as the cunning man would ha' you,  
 75 I'll thrust a pinne i' your buttocks else. F A C. O, no sir.  
 S v R. *Sennora mia, mi persona muy indigna esta*  
*A llegar    tanta Hermosura.*

iv. iv. 49 tyres!] Tires, Q 50 her!] her. Q After 52 Enter  
 Surly. G 53 Svr.] SUB. F2 esto] esto Q 54 come!] come. Q  
 58 Hermosura] Hermosura Q 63 lumbre] l  mbre Q 64 Res-  
 plandor] esplandor G Valgame G: Valga me Q, Ff 66 him!] him:  
 Q 72 him!] him. Q 74 you,] you. Q 77 A llegar Schelling:  
 Alle gar Q, Ff: Allegar G Hermosura] Hermofura F2

F A C. Do's he not vse her brauely? K A S. Brauely, i-faith!

F A C. Nay, he will vse her better. K A S. Doe you thinke so?

S V R. *Sennora, si sera seruida, entremos.* 80

K A S. Where do's he carry her? F A C. Into the garden, sir;

Take you no thought: I must interpret for her.

S V B. Giue D O L the word. Come, my fierce child, aduance,

Wee'll to our quarrelling lesson againe. K A S. Agreed.

I loue a *Spanish Boy*, with all my heart. 85

S V B. Nay, and by this meanes, sir, you shall be brother To a great *Count*. K A S. I, I knew that, at first.

This match will aduance the house of the K A S T R I L S.

S V B. 'Pray god, your sister proue but pliant. K A S. Why, Her name is so: by her other husband. S V B. How! 90

K A S. The widdow P L I A N T. Knew you not that?

S V B. No faith, sir.

Yet, by erection of her *figure*, I gest it.

Come, let's goe practice. K A S. Yes, but doe you thinke, Doctor,

I e'er shall quarrell well? S V B. I warrant you.

### Act IIII. Scene v.

D O L, MAMMON, F A C E, S V B T L E.

F Or, after ALEXANDERS death—— M A M. Good lady—— *In her fit of talking.*

D O L. That P E R D I C C A S, and A N T I G O N V S were slaine,

iv. iv. 80 *entremos* Schelling: *entremus* Q, Ff *Exit with dame Pliant.* add G 81 *sir;* Sir, Q 82 *thought:* thought, Q 83 *After word.* *Aside to Face, who goes out.* G child, aduance] Child. Aduance Q 89 *god]* God Q, F2 90 *so:]* so, Q 93 *Doctor,]* Doctor. Q 94 *Exeunt.* add G iv. v. SCENE III. *Another Room in the same.* Enter Dol in her fit of raving, followed by Mammon. G S V B T L E.] S V B T L E: Ff The stage directions at ll. 1, 25, 33, 55, 62, 66, 77 are not in Q 1-23 Dol's speeches in roman in Q

*The two that stood, SELEVC', and PTOLOMEE—*

MAM. Madame. DOL. *Made vp the two legs, and the fourth Beast.*

5 *That was Gog-north, and Egypt-south : which after*  
*Was call'd Gog Iron-leg, and South Iron-leg—* MAM.  
 Lady—

DOL. *And then Gog-horned. So was Egypt, too.*  
*Then Egypt clay-leg, and Gog clay-leg—* MAM. Sweet  
 madame.

DOL. *And last Gog-dust, and Egypt-dust, which fall*  
 10 *In the last linke of the fourth chaine. And these*  
*Be starres in story, which none see, or looke at—*

MAM. What shall I doe? DOL. *For, as he sayes, except*  
*We call the Rabbines, and the heathen Greekes—*

MAM. Deare lady. DOL. *To come from Salem, and*  
*from Athens,*  
 15 *And teach the people of great Britaine—* FAC. What's  
 the matter, sir?

DOL. *To speake the tongue of EBER, and IAVAN—*

MAM. O,  
 Sh'is in her fit. DOL. *We shall know nothing—* FAC.  
 Death, sir,

*We are vn-done.* DOL. *Where, then, a learned Linguist*  
*Shall see the antient vs'd communion*

20 *Of vowells, and consonants—* FAC. My master will heare!

DOL. *A wisdom, which PYTHAGORAS held most*  
*high—*

MAM. Sweet honorable lady. DOL. *To comprise*  
*All sounds of voyces, in few markes of letters—*

FAC. Nay, you must neuer hope to lay her now.

*They  
 speake  
 together.*

DOL. And so we may arriue by FAC. How did you put her in-  
 Talmud skill, to't? MAM. Alas I talk'd

iv. v. 7-9 Egypt] Ægypt Q 9 -dust :] -Dust, Q 15 After  
 'Britaine' Enter Face hastily in his servant's dress. G 17 Sh'is] Sh's Fa  
 originally (corrected) 22 honorable] honourable Fa 25-33 Fa  
 prints in roman in one column, with Dol's speech first. Corrected to italic  
 in l. p. copy. The stage direction 'They speake together' loses all point  
 by being placed in the margin and appearing to refer to Face and Mam-  
 mon's speeches

And profane *greeke*, to raise the building vp  
Of H E L E N S house, against the *Ismelite*,  
King of *Thogarma*, and his *Habergions*  
Brimstony, blew, and fiery; and the force  
Of King A B A D D O N, and the Beast of *Cittim*:  
Which *Rabbi* D A V I D K I M C H I, O N K E L O S,  
And A B E N - E Z R A doe interpret *Rome*.  
Of a fift *Monarchy* I would erect,  
With the *Philosophers stone* (by chance) and shee  
Fals on the other *four*e, straight.  
F A C. Out of B R O V G H T O N!  
I told you so. 'Slid stop her mouth. M A M. Is't best?  
F A C. She'll neuer leaue else.  
If the old man heare her, 30  
We are but *faeces*, ashes. S V B.  
What's to doe there?  
F A C. O, we are lost. Now she heares him, she is quiet.

M A M. Where shall I hide me? S v B. How! What sight is here! *Vpon Subtles entry they disperse.*

Close deeds of darknesse, and that shunne the light!  
Bring him againe. Who is he? What, my sonne!  
O, I haue liu'd too long. M A M. Nay good, deare father,  
There was no'vnchast purpose. S v B. Not? and flee me,  
When I come in? M A M. That was my error. S v B.  
Error?

Guilt, guilt, my sonne. Giue it the right name. No maruaile,

If I found check in our *great worke* within, 40  
When such affaires as these were managing!

M A M. Why, haue you so? S v B. It has stood still this halfe houre:

And all the rest of our *lesse workes* gone back.

Where is the instrument of wickednesse,

My lewd false drudge? M A M. Nay, good sir, blame not him. 45

Beleeue me, 'twas against his will, or knowledge.

I saw her by chance. S v B. Will you commit more sinne,  
T'excuse a varlet? M A M. By my hope, 'tis true, sir.

IV. v. 25, 29 MAM. Q, F2: MAN. Fr 26 fift] fifth F2 27 With]  
Which Q stone om. F2 originally (corrected), F3 28 four[e,]  
four[e Q 29 Brimstony] Brimstoni F2 originally (corrected) 30  
ABADDON F2: ABADDON Fr 31 faeces F2: faeces Q, Fr 31  
SVB.] Sub. [within.] G 36 O.] O F2 originally (corrected) 41  
managing l] managing. Q 42 stood still] gone back Q 43 gone  
back] stand still Q



S v B. Nay, then I wonder lesse, if you, for whom  
 50 The blessing was prepar'd, would so tempt heauen :  
 And loose your fortunes. M A M. Why, sir ? S v B. This'll  
 retard

The *worke*, a month at least. M A M. Why, if it doe,  
 What remedie ? but thinke it not, good father :

Our purposes were honest. S v B. As they were,  
 So the reward will proue. How now ! Aye me.  
 A great crack and noise within. God, and all Saints be good to vs. What's that ?

F A C. O sir, we are defeated ! all the *workes*  
 Are flowne in *fumo* : euery glasse is burst.  
 Fornace, and all rent downe ! as if a bolt  
 60 Of thunder had beene driuen through the house.

Subtle falls downe as in a swoone. *Retorts, Receiuers, Pellicanes, Bolt-heads,*  
 All strooke in shiuers ! Helpe, good sir ! Alas,  
 Coldnesse, and death inuades him. Nay, sir M A M M O N,  
 Doe the faire offices of a man ! You stand,  
 As you were readier to depart, then he.

One knocks. Who's there ? My lord her brother is come. M A M. Ha,  
*Lungs ?*

F A C. His coach is at the dore. Auoid his sight,  
 For hee's as furious, as his sister is mad.

M A M. Alas ! F A C. My braine is quite vn-done with  
 the fume, sir,

70 I ne'er must hope to be mine owne man againe.

M A M. Is all lost, *Lungs ?* Will nothing be preseru'd,  
 Of all our cost ? F A C. Faith, very little, sir.

A peck of coales, or so, which is cold comfort, sir.

M A M. O my voluptuous mind ! I am iustly punish'd.

75 F A C. And so am I, sir. M A M. Cast from all my  
 hopes——

F A C. Nay, certainties, sir. M A M. By mine owne base  
 affections.

iv. v. 51 loose] lose F2 This'll retard] This will hinder Q After  
 56 Re-enter Face. G 57 defeated!] defeated: Q 58 fumo: euery]  
 fumo. Euery Q 59 downe!] downe: Q 62 strooke] struck F2  
 shiuers!] shiuers. Q sir!] Sir. Q 64 man!] man. Q 65 then]  
 than F2 68 sister is] sister's G 74 voluptuous] voluptuous FI

S v B. O, the curst fruits of vice, and lust ! M A M. Good father,  
 It was my sinne. Forgiue it. S v B. Hangs my rooffe  
 Ouer vs still, and will not fall, ô iustice,  
 Vpon vs, for this wicked man ! F A C. Nay, looke, sir, 80  
 You grieue him, now, with staying in his sight :  
 Good sir, the nobleman will come too, and take you,  
 And that may breed a *tragædie*. M A M. I'll goe.  
 F A C. I, and repent at home, sir. It may be,  
 For some good penance, you may ha' it, yet, 85  
 A hundred pound to the boxe at *Bet'lem*—— M A M. Yes.  
 F A C. For the restoring such as ha' their wits. M A M.  
 I'll do't.  
 F A C. Ile send one to you to receiue it. M A M. Doe.  
 Is no *proiection* left ? F A C. All flowne, or stinks, sir.  
 M A M. Will nought be sau'd, that's good for med'cine,  
 thinkst thou ? 90  
 F A C. I cannot tell, sir. There will be, perhaps,  
 Something, about the scraping of the sharden,  
 Will cure the itch : though not your itch of mind, sir.  
 It shall be sau'd for you, and sent home. Good sir,  
 This way : for feare the lord should meet you. S v B.  
 F A C E. 95  
 F A C. I. S v B. Is he gone ? F A C. Yes, and as heuily  
 As all the gold he hop'd for, were in his bloud.  
 Let vs be light, though. S v B. I, as balls, and bound  
 And hit our heads against the rooffe for ioy :  
 There's so much of our care now cast away. 100  
 F A C. Now to our *Don*. S v B. Yes, your yong widdow,  
 by this time  
 Is made a *Countesse*, F A C E : Sh'has beene in trauaile  
 Of a yong heire for you. F A C. Good, sir. S v B. Off with  
 your case,

*Subtle  
seemes  
come to  
himselfe.*

iv. v. 77 and] aod F2 82 nobleman] noble man Fr 83 *tragædie*] *Tragedy* Q 85 ha' it] ha't F2 86 *Bet'lem*——] *Bellem*. Q 87 as ha'] as——have G 95 way:] way, Q After 'you.' *Exit Mammon*. G SvB.] Sub. [*raising his head*.] G 97 in his] in 's G 98 SvB.] Sub. [*leaping up*.] G 99 ioy :] ioy. Q 103 yong] young F2

- And greet her kindly, as a bride-groome should,  
 105 After these common hazards. F A C. Very well, sir.  
 Will you goe fetch *Don D I E G O* off, the while ?  
 S v B. And fetch him ouer too, if you'll be pleas'd, sir :  
 Would D o L were in her place, to pick his pockets now.  
 F A C. Why, you can doe it as well, if you would set to't.  
 110 I pray you proue your vertue. S v B. For your sake, sir.

*Act III. Scene VI.*

S V R L Y, D A. P L I A N T, S V B T L E,  
 F A C E.

- L A d y, you see into what hands, you are falne ;  
 L M ongst what a nest of villaines ! and how neere  
 Your honor was t'haue catch'd a certaine clap  
 (Through your credulitie) had I but beene  
 5 So punctually forward, as place, time,  
 And other circumstance would ha' made a man :  
 For yo'are a handsome woman : would yo' were wise, too.  
 I am a gentleman, come here disguis'd,  
 Onely to find the knaueries of this *Citadell*,  
 10 And where I might haue wrong'd your honor, and haue not,  
 I claime some interest in your loue. You are,  
 They say, a widdow, rich : and I am a batcheler,  
 Worth nought : Your fortunes may make me a man,  
 As mine ha' preseru'd you a woman. Thinke vpon it,  
 15 And whether, I haue deseru'd you, or no. P L I. I will, sir.  
 S v R. And for these houshold-rogues, let me alone,  
 To treat with them. S v B. How doth my noble D I E G O ?  
 And my deare madame, *Countesse* ? Hath the *Count*  
 Beene courteous, lady ? liberall ? and open ?  
 20 *Donzell*, me thinkes you looke melancholike,

IV. v. 106 DIEGO off,] *Deigo* off Q 108 were] were, Q 110  
*Exeunt.* add G IV. vi. SCENE IV. | *Another Room in the same.* |  
*Enter Surly and Dame Pliant.* G 3 catch'd] catc'd F2 6 cir-  
 cumstance] circumstances F2 13 nought:] naught. Q 16 SVR.]  
 SVB. F1 17 After 'them.' *Enter Subtle.* G

After your *coitum*, and scuruy ! True-ly,  
I doe not like the dulnesse of your eye :  
It hath a heauy cast, 'tis *upsee Dutch*,  
And say's you are a lumpish whore-master.

Be lighter, I will make your pockets so.

S v r. Will you, *Don* bawd, and pick-purse ? How now ? *He falls to picking of them.*  
Reele you ?

Stand vp sir, you shall find since I am so heauy,  
I'll gi' you equall weight. S v b. Helpe, murder ! S v r.  
No, sir.

There's no such thing intended. A good cart,  
And a cleane whip shall ease you of that feare. 30  
I am the *Spanish Don*, that should be cossened,  
Doe you see ? cossened ? Where's your Captayne F A C E ?  
That parcell-broker, and whole-bawd, all raskall.

F A C. How, S v r L Y ! S v r. O, make your approach,  
good Captaine.

I'haue found, from whence your copper rings, and spoones 35  
Come, now, wherewith you cheate abroad in tauernes.

'Twas here, you learn'd t'anoint your boot with brimstone,  
Then rub mens gold on't, for a kind of touch,  
And say 'twas naught, when you had chang'd the colour,  
That you might ha't for nothing ? And this Doctor, 40

Your sooty, smoakie-bearded compeere, he  
Will close you so much gold, in a bolts-head,  
And, on a turne, conuay (i'the stead) another  
With *sublim'd Mercurie*, that shall burst i'the heate,  
And flye out all *in fumo* ? Then weepes M A M M O N : 45

Then swounes his worship. Or, he is the F A V S T V S,  
That casteth figures, and can coniure, cures  
Plague, piles, and poxe, by the *Ephemerides*,  
And holds intelligence with all the bawdes,  
And midwiues of three shires ? while you send in—— 50

iv. vi. 26 Svr.] *Sur.* [Throws open his cloak.] G After '-purse?'  
*strikes him down.* G 28 equall] æquall Q murder!] Murder. Q  
After 33 Enter Face in his uniform. G 37 anoint] annoint Q  
45 fumo ?] fumo. Q 46 After 'worship.' Face slips out. G 50  
shires ?] Shires. Q

Captaine, (what is he gone ?) dam'sells with child,  
 Wiues, that are barren, or, the waiting-maide  
 With the greene-sicknesse? Nay, sir, you must tarrie  
 Though he be scap't; and answere, by the eares, sir.

*Act III. Scene VII.*

FACE, KASTRIL, SVRLEY, SVBTLE,  
 DRUGGER, ANANIAS, DA.  
 PLIANT, DOL.

W<sup>H</sup>Hy, now's the time, if euer you will quarrell  
 Well (as they say) and be a true-borne child.  
 The Doctor, and your sister both are abus'd.

K A S. Where is he? which is he? he is a slaue  
 5 What ere he is, and the sonne of a whore. Are you  
 The man, sir, I would know? S V R. I should be loth, sir,  
 To confesse so much. K A S. Then you lie, i'your throate.

S V R. How?

F A C. A very errant rogue, sir, and a cheater,  
 Employd here, by another coniurer,  
 10 That dos not loue the Doctor, and would crosse him  
 If he knew how—— S V R. Sir, you are abus'd. K A S.  
 You lie:

And 'tis no matter. F A C. Well said, sir. He is  
 The impudent'st raskall—— S V R. You are indeed. Will  
 you heare me, sir?

F A C. By no meanes: Bid him be gone. K A S. Be  
 gone, sir, quickly.

15 S V R. This's strange! Lady, doe you informe your  
 brother.

F A C. There is not such a foyst, in all the towne,  
 The Doctor had him, presently: and findes, yet,  
 The *Spanish Count* will come, here. Beare vp, S V B T L E.

iv. vi. 53 -sicknesse?] -sicknesse. Q After '-sicknesse?' *seizes Subtle*  
*as he is retiring.* G iv. vii. *Re-enter Face with Kastril.* G, continu-  
 ing the scene 11 lie:] lie, Q 14 meanes:] meanes. Q

S v B. Yes, sir, he must appeare, within this houre.

F A c. And yet this rogue, would come, in a disguise, 20  
By the temptation of another spirit,  
To trouble our art, though he could not hurt it. K A s. I,  
I know—Away, you talke like a foolish mauther.

S v R. Sir, all is truth, she saies. F A c. Doe not beleue  
him, sir :

He is the lying'st Swabber ! Come your wayes, sir. 25

S v R. You are valiant, out of companie. K A s. Yes,  
how then, sir ?

F A c. Nay, here's an honest fellow too, that knowes him,  
And all his tricks. (Make good what I say, A B E L,  
This cheater would ha' cossen'd thee o'the widdow.)

He owes this honest D R v G G E R, here, seuen pound, 30  
He has had on him, in two-penny'orths of *tabacco*.

D R v. Yes sir. And h'has damn'd himselfe, three termes,  
to pay mee.

F A c. And what do's he owe for *lotium*? D R v. Thirtie  
shillings, sir :

And for sixe *syringes*. S v R. H Y D R A of villanie !

F A c. Nay, sir, you must quarrell him out o'the house.

K A s. I will. 35

Sir, if you get not out o' dores, you lie :

And you are a pimpe. S v R. Why, this is madnesse, sir,  
Not valure in you : I must laugh at this.

K A s. It is my humour : you are a Pimpe, and a Trig,  
And an A M A D I S *de Gaule*, or a *Don Q v i x o t e*. 40

D R v. Or a Knight o'the *curious cox-combe*. Doe you  
see ?

A N A. Peace to the houshold. K A s. Ile keepe peace,  
for no man.

A N A. Casting of dollers is concluded lawfull.

iv. vii. 19 houre] hower Q 23 After 'Away,' To his sister. G  
26 valant.] valiant Q After 26 Enter Drugger with a piece of damask. G  
28 (Make) Make Q ABEL,] Abel, Q : ABEL,) Ff 29 widdow.])  
Widdow. Q : widdow. Ff 32 h'has] he hath Q himselfe,] him-  
selfe Q 36 lie :] lie Q 38 valure] valor F3 39 humour]  
humor, Q After 41 Enter Ananias. G

K A S. Is he the Constable? S V B. Peace, A N A N I A S.  
F A C. No, sir.

45 K A S. Then you are an *Otter*, and a *Shad*, a *Whit*,  
A very *Tim*. S V R. You'll heare me, sir? K A S. I will  
not.

A N A. What is the motiue? S V B. Zeale, in the yong  
gentleman,

Against his *Spanish* slops—— A N A. They are profane,  
Leud, superstitious, and idolatrous breeches.

50 S V R. New raskals! K A S. Will you be gone, sir?

A N A. Auoid *Sathan*,

Thou art not of the light. That ruffe of pride,  
About thy neck, betrayes thee: 'and is the same  
With that, which the vncleane birds, in *seuenty-seuen*,  
Were seene to pranke it with, on diuers coasts.

55 Thou look'st like *Antichrist*, in that leud hat.

S V R. I must giue way. K A S. Be gone, sir. S V R. But  
Ile take

A course with you—— (A N A. Depart, proud *Spanish*  
fiend)

S V R. Captain, & Doctor—— A N A. Child of perdition.

K A S. Hence, sir.

Did I not quarrell brauely? F A C. Yes, indeed, sir.

60 K A S. Nay, and I giue my mind to't, I shall do't.

F A C. O, you must follow, sir, and threaten him tame.  
Hee'll turne againe else. K A S. I'll re-turne him, then.

F A C. D R V G G E R, this rogue preuented vs, for thee:  
We had determin'd, that thou shouldst ha' come,

65 In a *Spanish* sute, and ha' carried her so; and he,  
A brokerly slaue, goes, puts it on himselfe.

Hast' brought the damaske? D R V. Yes sir. F A C. Thou  
must borrow,

iv. vii. 47 motiue?] Motiue. Q: motiue! Ff 57 (ANA. . . fiend)  
corr. F1: (ANA. . . fiend. F1 originally: ANA. . . Fiend. Q: ANA. . .  
fiend. F2 58 Doctor——] Doctor. Q Exit Surly. add G 60  
and] an' F2 do't.] do't, Q After 62 Exit. | Subtle takes Ananias  
aside. G 64 We had F2: We had Q, F1: query, We, had 65  
he,] he Q, Ff 67 Hast' F2: Hast Q, F1

A *Spanish* suite. Hast thou no credit with the players?

D R V. Yes, sir, did you neuer see me play the foole?

F A C. I know not, N A B: thou shalt, if I can helpe it. 70

H I E R O N Y M O's old cloake, ruffe, and hat will serue,

Ile tell thee more, when thou bringst 'hem. A N A. Sir, I know

The *Spaniard* hates the *Brethren*, and hath spies

Vpon their actions: and that this was one

I make no scruple. But the holy *Synode*

Haue beene in prayer, and meditation, for it.

And 'tis reueal'd no lesse, to them, then me,

That casting of money is most lawfull. S V B. True.

But here, I cannot doe it; if the house

Should chance to be suspected, all would out,

80

And we be lock'd vp, in the tower, for euer,

To make gold there (for th' state) neuer come out:

And, then, are you defeated. A N A. I will tell

This to the *Elders*, and the weaker *Brethren*,

That the whole companie of the *Separation*

85

May ioyne in humble prayer againe. (S V B. And fasting.)

A N A. Yea, for some fitter place. The peace of mind

Rest with these walls. S V B. Thanks, courteous A N A N I A S.

F A C. What did he come for? S V B. About casting dollers,

Presently, out of hand. And so, I told him,

90

A *Spanish* minister came here to spie,

Against the faithfull—— F A C. I conceiue. Come

S V B T L E,

Thou art so downe vpon the least disaster!

How wouldst tho'ha' done, if I had not helpt thee out?

S V B. I thanke thee F A C E, for the angrie Boy, i-faith. 95

F A C. Who would ha' lookt, it should ha' beene that  
raskall?

S V R L Y? He had dy'd his beard, and all. Well, sir,

Here's damaske come, to make you a suit. S V B. Where's

D R V G G E R?

IV. vii. 70 NAB: thou] Nab. Thou Q 72 Stage direction not in Q  
Exit Drugger. add G 77 then] than F2 80 out.] out. Q 82  
there] there: Q out:] out. Q 88 After 'walls.' Exit. G 98 SVB.]

SVB, Q



- F A C. He is gone to borrow me a *Spanish* habite,  
 100 Ile be the *Count*, now. S v B. But where's the widdow?  
 F A C. Within, with my lords sister : Madame D o L  
 Is entertayning her. S v B. By your fauour, F A C E,  
 Now shee is honest, I will stand againe.  
 F A C. You will not offer it? S v B. Why? F A C. Stand  
 to your word,  
 105 Or——here comes D o L. She knowes—— S v B. Yo'are  
 tyrannous still.  
 F A C. Strict for my right. How now, D o L? Hast'  
 told her,  
 The *Spanish Count* will come? D o L. Yes, but another is  
 come,  
 You little look'd for! F A C. Who's that? D o L. Your  
 master :  
 The master of the house. S v B. How, D o L! F A C. Shee  
 lies.  
 110 This is some trick. Come, leave your quiblines, D O R O T H E E.  
 D o L. Looke out, and see. S v B. Art thou in earnest?  
 D o L. 'Slight,  
 Fortie o'the neighbours are about him, talking.  
 F A C. 'Tis he, by this good day. D o L. 'Twill proue ill  
 day,  
 For some on vs. F A C. We are vndone, and taken.  
 115 D o L. Lost, I'am afraid. S v B. You said he would not  
 come,  
 While there dyed one a weeke, within the liberties.  
 F A C. No : 'twas within the walls. S v B. Was't so?  
 Cry'you mercy :  
 I thought the liberties. What shall we doe now, F A C E?  
 F A C. Be silent : not a word, if he call, or knock.  
 120 I'll into mine old shape againe, and meet him,  
 Of I E R E M I E, the butler. I' the meane time,

IV. vii. 104 SVB. Q: SVR. Ff After 105 Enter Dol hastily. G  
 106 Hast' told] Hast thou told G 108 for I] for. Q 109 Dol.]  
 Dol? Q 111 After 'see.' Face goes to the window. G 'Slight.]  
 'Slight. F2 115 I'am Fr, F3: I am Q: I'm F2 119 silent:]  
 silent, Q

Doe you two pack vp all the goods, and purchase,  
 That we can carry i' the two trunks. I'll keepe him  
 Off for to day, if I cannot longer : and then  
 At night, Ile ship you both away to *Ratcliffe*, 125  
 Where wee'll meet to morrow, and there wee'll share.  
 Let M A M M O N's brasse, and pewter keepe the cellar :  
 Wee'll haue another time for that. But, D O L,  
 'Pray thee, goe heate a little water, quickly,  
 S V B T L E must shaue me. All my Captaines beard 130  
 Must off, to make mé appeare smooth I E R E M I E.  
 You'll do't ? S V B. Yes, Ile shaue you, as well as I can.  
 F A C. And not cut my throte, but trim me ? S V B. You  
 shall see, sir.

Act v. Scene I.

LOVE • WIT, NEIGHBOURS.

HAs there beene such resort, say you ? N E I. I. Daily,  
 sir.  
 N E I. 2. And nightly, too. N E I. 3. I, some as braue as  
 lords.  
 N E I. 4. Ladies, and gentlewomen. N E I. 5. Citizens  
 wiues.  
 N E I. 1. And knights. N E I. 6. In coches. N E I. 2.  
 Yes, & oyster-women.  
 N E I. 1. Beside other gallants. N E I. 3. Sailors wiues.  
 N E I. 4. *Tabacco*-men. 5  
 N E I. 5. Another *Pimlico* ! L O V. What should my  
 knaue aduance,  
 To draw this companie ? He hung out no banners  
 Of a strange Calfe, with fue legs, to be seene ?  
 Or a huge Lobster, with sixe clawes ? N E I. 6. No, sir.  
 N E I. 3. We had gone in then, sir. L O V. He has no guift 10  
 iv. vii. 126 there] then Q 129 'Pray thee] 'Pr'y thee Fz 133  
*Exeunt.* add G v. i. ACT V. SCENE I. | *Before Lovewit's door.* |  
*Enter Lovewit, with several of the neighbours.* G 6 *Pimlico* |  
*Pimlico.* Q 9 Lobster] Lobstar Q

Of teaching i' the nose, that ere I knew of !  
 You saw no Bills set vp, that promis'd cure  
 Of agues, or the tooth-ach ? N E I. 2. No such thing, sir.

L o v. Nor heard a drum strooke, for Babiouns, or Pup-  
 pets ?

15 N E I. 5. Neither, sir. L o v. What deuce should he  
 bring forth now !

I loue a teeming wit, as I loue my nourishment.  
 'Pray god he ha' not kept such open house,  
 That he hath sold my hangings, and my bedding :  
 I left him nothing else. If he haue eate 'hem,

20 A plague o'the moath, say I. Sure he has got  
 Some bawdy pictures, to call all this ging ;  
 The Frier, and the Nun ; or the new *Motion*  
 Of the Knights courser, couering the Parsons mare ;  
 The Boy of sixe yeere old, with the great thing :

25 Or 't may be, he has the Fleas that runne at tilt,  
 Vpon a table, or some Dog to daunce ?  
 When saw you him ? N E I. I. Who sir, I E R E M I E ?  
 N E I. 2. I E R E M I E butler ?

We saw him not this mon'th. L o v. How ! N E I. 4. Not  
 these 5. weeks, sir.

N E I. <1.> These six weeks, at the least. L o v. Yo'  
 amaze me, neighbours !

30 N E I. 5. Sure, if your worship know not where he is,  
 Hee's slipt away. N E I. 6. Pray god, he be not made  
 away !

*He  
 knocks.*

L o v. Ha ? It's no time to question, then. N E I. 6.  
 About

Some three weekes since, I heard a dolefull cry,  
 As I sate vp, a mending my wiues stockings.

35 L o v. This's strange ! that none will answer ! Didst  
 thou heare

v. i. 14 Babiouns] Babouns Q: Baboons F3 or] ot F2 17 god]  
 God Q (so 31) 28 mon'th] mont'h Q, Fr: month F2 29, 1  
 Ed. conj.: 6. F2. The '1' has dropped out after the '1' of 'NEI.'  
 31 away !] away. Q 32 Stage direction not in Q 34 wiues]  
 wives F2

A cry, saist thou? N E I. 6. Yes, sir, like vnto a man  
That had beene strangled an houre, and could not speake.

N E I. 2. I heard it too, iust this day three weekes, at  
two a clock

Next morning. L o v. These be miracles, or you make  
'hem so!

A man an houre strangled, and could not speake, 40  
And both you heard him cry? N E I. 3. Yes, downeward,  
sir.

L o v. Thou art a wise fellow: Giue me thy hand, I pray  
thee.

What trade art thou on? N E I. 3. A smith, and't please  
your worship.

L o v. A smith? Then, lend me thy helpe, to get this  
dore open.

N E I. 3. That I will presently, sir, but fetch my tooles—— 45

N E I. 1. Sir, best to knock againe, afore you breake it.

Act v. Scene II.

LOVE - WIT, FACE, NEIGHBOURS.

I Will. F A C. What meane you, sir? N E I. 1. 2. 4. O,  
here's I E R E M I E!

F A C. Good sir, come from the dore. L o v. Why!  
what's the matter?

F A C. Yet farder, you are too neere, yet. L o v. I'the  
name of wonder!

What meanes the fellow? F A C. The house, sir, has beene  
'visited.

L o v. What? with the plague? stand thou then farder.

F A C. No, sir,

I had it not. L o v. Who had it then? I left

v. i. 37, 40 houre] hower Q 42 hand, Q: hand Ff 43 thou]  
thou, Q and't] an't F2 45 Exit. add G 46 Sir, best] Sir.  
Best Q v. ii. Enter Face, in his butler's livery. G, continuing the  
scene 2 sir, come] Sir. Come Q Why? Why? Q 3, 5  
farder] farther F3 (so 15) 3 wonder!] wonder, Q

- None else, but thee, i'the house ! F A c. Yes, sir. My fellow,  
 The cat, that kept the buttry, had it on her  
 A weeke, before I spied it : but I got her  
 10 Conuay'd away, i'the night. And so I shut  
 The house vp for a month—— L o v. How ! F A c. Pur-  
 posing then, sir,  
 T'haue burnt rose-vinegar, triackle, and tarre,  
 And, ha' made it sweet, that you should ne'er ha' knowne it :  
 Because I knew the newes would but afflict you, sir.  
 15 L o v. Breath lesse, and farder off. Why, this is stranger !  
 The neighbours tell me all, here, that the dores  
 Haue still been open—— F A c. How, sir ! L o v. Gal-  
 lants, men, and women,  
 And of all sorts, tag-rag, beene seene to flock here  
 In threaues, these ten weekes, as to a second *Hogs-den*,  
 20 In dayes of *Pimlico*, and *Eye-bright* ! F A c. Sir,  
 Their wisdomes will not say so ! L o v. To day, they  
 speake  
 Of coaches, and gallants ; one in a *French-hood*,  
 Went in, they tell me : and another was seene  
 In a veluet gowne, at the windore ! diuerse more  
 25 Passe in and out ! F A c. They did passe through the dores  
 then,  
 Or walls, I assure their eye-sights, and their spectacles ;  
 For here, sir, are the keyes : and here haue beene,  
 In this my pocket, now, aboue twentie dayes !  
 And for before, I kept the fort alone, there.  
 30 But, that 'tis yet not deepe i'the after-noone,  
 I should beleue my neighbours had seene double  
 Through the black-pot, and made these apparitions !  
 For, on my faith, to your worship, for these three weekes,  
 And vpwards, the dore has not beene open'd. L o v.  
 Strange !

v. ii. 7 FAC.] FACE. FAC. F2 11 month——] month--Q sir,]  
 Sir. Q 17 open——] open. Q 20 -bright!] bright. Sir.] Sir. Q 24  
 windore.] windore. Q: window ! F3 25 out!] out. Q 27 keyes:]  
 keyes; Q 28 dayes!] dayes. Q 32 apparitions!] apparitions: Q

NEI. 1. Good faith, I thinke I saw a coach ! NEI. 2.  
 And I too, 35  
 I'd ha' beene sworne ! LOV. Doe you but thinke it now ?  
 And but one coach ? NEI. 4. We cannot tell, sir :  
 IEREMIE  
 Is a very honest fellow. FAC. Did you see me at all ?  
 NEI. 1. No. That we are sure on. NEI. 2. I'll be  
 sworne o' that.  
 LOV. Fine rogues, to haue your testimonies built on ! 40  
 NEI. 3. Is IEREMIE come ? NEI. 1. O, yes, you  
 may leaue your tooles,  
 We were deceiu'd, he sayes. NEI. 2. He'has had the  
 keyes :  
 And the dore has beene shut these three weekes. NEI. 3.  
 Like enough.  
 LOV. Peace, and get hence, you changelings. FAC.  
 SVRLY come !  
 And MAMMON made acquainted ? They'll tell all. 45  
 (How shall I beate them off ? What shall I doe ?)  
 Nothing's more wretched, then a guiltie conscience.

Act V. Scene III.

SVRLY, MAMMON, LOVE-WIT, FACE, NEIGH-  
 BOURS, KASTRIL, ANANIAS, TRI-  
 BVLTION, DAPPER,  
 SVBTLE.

NO, sir, he was a great physitian. This,  
 It was no bawdy-house : but a meere *Chancell*.  
 You knew the lord, and his sister. MAM. Nay, good  
 SVRLY—

v. ii. 36 I'd] I'll] Q, Fr: I'll F2 37 sir:] Sir. Q After  
 40 Re-enter third Neighbour, with his tools. G 41 NEI. 1.] MEI. 1. Q  
 originally 42 deceiu'd,] deceiu'd Q originally He'has] He has Q,  
 F2 keyes:] keyes, Q originally 44 After 'changelings.' Enter  
 Surly and Mammon. G 47 then] than F2 v. iii. G con-  
 tinues the scene. ANANIAS.] ANA. Q The stage directions at ll. 9,  
 33, 44, 63 are not in Q

S v R. The happy word, *be rich*—— M A M. Play not the tyranne——

5 S v R. Should be to day pronounc'd, to all your friends.  
And where be your andirons now? and your brasse pots?  
That should ha' beene golden flaggons, and great wedges?

M A M. Let me but breath. What! They ha' shut their dores,

*Mammon and Surly knock.* Me thinks! S v R. I, now, 'tis holy-day with them. M A M. Rogues,

10 Coseners, impostors, bawds. F A C. What meane you, sir?

M A M. To enter if we can. F A C. Another mans house?

Here is the owner, sir. Turne you to him,

And speake your businesse. M A M. Are you, sir, the owner?

L o v. Yes, sir. M A M. And are those knaues, within, your cheaters?

15 L o v. What knaues? what cheaters? M A M. S v B T L E, and his *Lungs*.

F A C. The gentleman is distracted, sir! No lungs,

Nor lights ha' beene seene here these three weekes, sir,

Within these dores, vpon my word! S v R. Your word,

Groome arrogant? F A C. Yes, sir, I am the house-keeper,

20 And know the keyes ha' not beene out o' my hands.

S v R. This's a new F A C E? F A C. You doe mistake the house, sir!

What signe was't at? S v R. You raskall! This is one

O' the confederacie. Come, let's get officers,

And force the dore. L o v. 'Pray you stay, gentlemen.

25 S v R. No, sir, wee'll come with warrant. M A M. I, and then,

We shall ha' your dores open. L o v. What meanes this?

F A C. I cannot tell, sir! N E I. I. These are two o'the gallants,

That we doe thinke we saw. F A C. Two o' the fooles?

v. iii. 8 breath] breathe F2 16 sir!] Sir. Q 18 word!] word. Q  
21 FACE?] Face! Q 23 officers, Fr: Officers! Q originally: Officers,  
corr. Q, F2 26 After 'open.' Exeunt Mam. and Surly. G

You talke as idly as they. Good faith, sir,  
I thinke the *Moone* has cras'd 'hem all ! (O me, 30  
The angrie Boy come too ? Hee'll make a noyse,  
And nere away till he haue betray'd vs all.)

K A S. What rogues, bawds, slaues, you'll open the dore *Kastrill*  
anone. *knocks.*

Punque, cocatrice, my suster. By this light  
I'll fetch the marshall to you. You are a whore, 35  
To keepe your castle—— F A C. Who would you speake  
with, sir ?

K A S. The bawdy Doctor, and the cosening Captaine,  
And P v s my suster. L o v. This is something, sure !

F A C. Vpon my trust, the dores were neuer open, sir.

K A S. I haue heard all their tricks, told me twice ouer, 40  
By the fat knight, and the leane gentleman.

L o v. Here comes another. F A C. A N A N I A S too ?  
And his *Pastor* ? T R I. The dores are shut against vs.

A N A. Come forth, you seed of sulphure, sonnes of fire, *They beat*  
Your stench, it is broke forth : abomination *too, at*  
Is in the house. K A S. I, my suster's there. A N A. The *the dore.*

place,

It is become a cage of vncleane birds.

K A S. Yes, I will fetch the scauenger, and the constable.

T R I. You shall doe well. A N A. Wee'll ioynce, to weede  
them out.

K A S. You will not come then ? punque, deuice, my  
suster ! 50

A N A. Call her not sister. Shee is a harlot, verily.

K A S. I'll raise the street. L o v. Good gentlemen, a word.

A N A. *Sathan*, auoid, and hinder not our zeale.

L o v. The world's turn'd *Bet'lem*. F A C. These are all  
broke loose,

v. iii. 30 Enter *Kastril*. G 33 you'll] you'il Q anone. Q :  
anone, F1 : anon, F2 36 castle——] Castle. Q 42 After  
'another.' Enter *Ananias* and *Tribulation*. G 44 sulphure] Vipers  
Q fire] *Belsai* Q 45 stench, it] wickednesse Q abomination]  
Abomination Q 46 I, my] My Q 48 Yes] I Q 51 Shee  
is] she's F2 53 *Sathan*] *Satan* F2 After 53 *Exeunt Ana. Trib.*  
and *Kast*. G



55 Out of S. KATHER'NES, where they vse to keepe,  
The better sort of mad-folkes. NEI. 1. All these persons  
We saw goe in, and out, here. NEI. 2. Yes, indeed, sir.  
NEI. 3. These were the parties. FAC. Peace, you  
drunkards. Sir,

I wonder at it! Please you, to giue me leaue

60 To touch the dore, I'll trie, an' the lock be chang'd.

LOV. It mazes me! FAC. Good faith, sir, I beleeeue,  
There's no such thing. 'Tis all *deceptio visus*.

*Dapper  
cries out  
within.*

Would I could get him away. DAP. Master Captayne,  
master Doctor.

LOV. Who's that? FAC. (Our clark within, that I forgot!) I know not, sir,

65 DAP. For gods sake, when wil her *Grace* be at leisure?

FAC. Ha!

Illusions, some spirit o'the aire: (his gag is melted,  
And now he sets out the throte.) DAP. I am almost  
stiffled—

(FAC. Would you were altogether.) LOV. 'Tis i'the  
house.

Ha! List. FAC. Beleeue it, sir, i'the aire! LOV. Peace,  
you—

70 DAP. Mine aunts *Grace* do's not vse me well. SVB.  
You foole,

Peace, you'll marre all. FAC. Or you will else, you rogue.

LOV. O, is it so? Then you conuerse with spirits!

Come sir. No more o' your tricks, good IEREMIE,  
The truth, the shortest way. FAC. Dismiss this rabble,  
sir.

75 What shall I doe? I am catch'd. LOV. Good neighbours,  
I thanke you all. You may depart. Come sir,  
You know that I am an indulgent master:

v. iii. 55 KATHER'NES] *Katherines* Q keepe,] keep F2 60 an']  
and Q 61 FAC.] *Face*. [Goes to the door.] G 63 After 'away.'  
*Aside*. G 64 forgot!]) forgot] Q 65 gods] Gods Q 67  
stiffled] stified Q, F3 69 aire!] ayre. Q 71 FAC.] *Face*. [*speaks*  
*through the key-hole, while Lovewit advances to the door unobserved.*] G  
72 spirits] spirits. Q 75 After 'catch'd.' *Aside*. G 76 After  
'depart.' *Exeunt Neighbours*. G

And therefore, conceale nothing. What's your med'cine,  
To draw so many seuerall sorts of wild-fowle ?

F A C. Sir, you were wont to affect mirth, and wit : 80  
(But here's no place to talke on't i' the street.)  
Giue me but leaue, to make the best of my fortune,  
And onely pardon me th'abuse of your house :  
It's all I begge. I'll helpe you to a widdow,  
In recompence, that you shall gi' me thanks for, 85  
Will make you seuen yeeres yonger, and a rich one.  
'Tis but your putting on a *Spanish* cloake,  
I haue her within. You need not feare the house,  
It was not visited. L o v. But by me, who came  
Sooner then you expected. F A C. It is true, sir. 90  
'Pray you forgiue me. L o v. Well : let's see your widdow.

Act v. Scene IIII.

S V B T L E, D A P P E R, F A C E, D O L.

H O W ! ha' you eaten your gag ? D A P. Yes faith, it  
crumbled

Away i' my mouth. S V B. You ha' spoil'd all then. D A P.  
No,

I hope my aunt of *Faery* will forgiue me.

S V B. Your aunt's a gracious lady : but in troth  
You were to blame. D A P. The fume did ouer-come me, 5  
And I did do't to stay my stomach. 'Pray you  
So satisfie her *Grace*. Here comes the Captaine.

F A C. How now ! Is his mouth downe ? S V B. I ! he  
has spoken !

F A C. (A poxe, I heard him, and you too.) Hee's vn-  
done, then.

(I haue beene faine to say, the house is haunted 10

v. iii. 81 (But . . . street.)] But . . . street. Q 90 then] than F2  
91 Exeunt. add G v. iv. SCENE II. | A Room in the same. | Enter  
Subtle, leading in Dapper, with his eyes bound as before. G 4 lady:]  
Lady, Q troth] truth, Q 7 After 'Grace.' Enter Face in his  
uniform. G 8 I!] I, Q 10-15 (I . . . it.)] I . . . it. Q

With spirits, to keepe churle back. S v B. And hast thou done it ?

F A C. Sure, for this night. S v B. Why, then triumph, and sing

Of F A C E so famous, the precious king

Of present wits. F A C. Did you not heare the coyle,

15 About the dore ? S v B. Yes, and I dwindled with it.)

F A C. Shew him his aunt, and let him be dispatch'd :

I'll send her to you. S v B. Well sir, your aunt her *Grace*, Will giue you audience presently, on my sute,

And the Captaines word, that you did not eate your gag,

20 In any contempt of her *Hignessee*. D A P. Not I, in troth, sir.

*Dol like  
the Queene  
of Faery.*

S v B. Here shee is come. Downe o' your knees, and wriggle :

Shee has a stately presence. Good. Yet neerer,

And bid, God saue you. D A P. Madame. S v B. And your aunt.

D A P. And my most gracious aunt, god saue your *Grace*.

25 D O L. Nephew, we thought to haue beene angrie with you :

But that sweet face of yours, hath turn'd the tide,

And made it flow with ioy, that eb'd of loue.

Arise, and touch our veluet gowne. S v B. The skirts,

And kisse 'hem. So. D O L. Let me now stroke that head,

30 *Much, nephew, shalt thou win ; much shalt thou spend ;*

*Much shalt thou giue away : much shalt thou lend.*

S v B. (I, much, indeed.) Why doe you not thanke her *Grace* ?

D A P. I cannot speake, for ioy. S v B. See, the kind wretch !

Your *Graces* kins-man right. D O L. Giue me the *Bird*.

35 Here is your *Fly* in a purse, about your neck, cosen,

v. iv. 13 famous.] famous some copies of Q 17 After 'you.' *Exit*  
Face. G 20 After 'Hignessee.' *Unbinds his eyes.* G After 20  
*Enter Dol like the Queene of Faery.* G 21 *Stage direction not in Q*  
22 After 'presence.' *Dapper kneels, and shuffles towards her.* G 23  
you] her Q 24 god] God Q 25 angrie] angry, Q 31 away :]  
away, Q 32 (I . . . indeed.)] I . . . indeede. Q

Weare it, and feed it, about this day seu'night,  
On your right wrist—— S v B. Open a veine, with a pinne,  
And let it suck but once a weeke : till then,  
You must not looke on't. D o L. No. And, kins-man,  
Beare your selfe worthy of the bloud you come on. 40

S v B. Her grace would ha' you eate no more *Wool-sack*  
pies,  
Nor *Dagger* frume'ty. D o L. Nor breake his fast,  
In *heauen*, and *hell*. S v B. Shee's with you euery where !  
Nor play with Costar-mongers, at *mum-chance*, *tray-trip*,  
*God make you rich*, (when as your aunt has done it :) but  
keepe 45

The gallant'st company, and the best games—— D A P.  
Yes, sir.

S v B. *Gleeke* and *primero* : and what you get, be true  
to vs.

D A P. By this hand, I will. S v B. You may bring's a  
thousand pound,  
Before to morrow night, (if but three thousand,  
Be stirring) an' you will. D A P. I sweare, I will then. 50

S v B. Your *Fly* will learne you all games. F A C. Ha'  
you done there?

S v B. Your grace will command him no more duties ?  
D o L. No :

But come, and see me often. I may chance  
To leaue him three or foure hundred chests of treasure,  
And some twelue thousand acres of *Faerie* land : 55  
If he game well, and comely, with good gamesters.

S v B. There's a kind aunt ! kisse her departing part.  
But you must sell your fortie marke a yeare, now :

D A P. I, sir, I meane. S v B. Or, gi't away : pox on't.

D A P. I'le gi't mine aunt. Ile goe and fetch the writings. 60

v. iv. 37 wrist——] wrist. Q 38 weeke: till] weeke. Till Q 42  
frume'ty] Frumenty Q 43 where!] where. Q 44 -trip, Q:  
-trip. Ff 46 games——] Games. Q 49 thousand,] thousand  
Q 50 an'] if Q 51 FAC] Fac. [within.] G 55 twelue]  
fuec Q 58 your Q, F2: you F1 now:] now. Q 59 away:  
pox] away. A poxe Q 60 DAP. F2: FAC. Q, F1 Exit. add G

S v B. 'Tis well, away. F A C. Where's S v B T L E ?

S v B. Here. What newes ?

F A C. D R V G G E R is at the doore, goe take his suite,  
And bid him fetch a Parson, presently :

Say, he shall marrie the widdow. Thou shalt spend

65 A hundred pound by th<sup>e</sup> service ! Now, queene D o L,  
Ha' you pack'd vp all ? D o L. Yes. F A C. And how doe  
you like

The lady P L Y A N T ? D o L. A good dull innocent.

S v B. Here's your H I E R O N I M O's cloake, and hat.

F A C. Giue mee 'hem.

S v B. And the ruffe too ? F A C. Yes, I'll come to you  
presently.

70 S v B. Now, he is gone about his proiect, D o L,  
I told you of, for the widow. D o L. 'Tis direct  
Against our articles. S v B. Well, wee'll fit him, wench.  
Hast thou gull'd her of her iewels, or her bracelets ?

D o L. No, but I will do't. S v B. Soone at night, my  
D o L L Y,

75 When we are shipt, and all our goods aboard,  
East-ward for *Ratcliffe* ; we will turne our course  
To *Brainford*, westward, if thou saist the word :  
And take our leaues of this ore-weaning raskall,  
This peremptorie F A C E. D o L. Content, I'am weary of  
him.

80 S v B. Tho'ha'st cause, when the slaue will runne a wiuing,  
D o L,  
Against the instrument, that was drawne betweene vs.

D o L. I'll plucke his bird as bare as I can. S v B. Yes,  
tell her,

She must by any meanes, addresse some present

To th' cunning man ; make him amends, for wronging

85 His art with her suspition ; send a ring ;

v. iv. 61 After 'away.' *Re-enter Face.* G 65 service!] service. Q  
After 'service!' *Exit Subtle.* G 66 FAC. om. F2 After 67  
*Re-enter Subtle.* G *Exit* add G 79 Content.] Content. Q 80  
Tho'ha'st] Thou'ha'st Q, F2 84 man:] man, Q amends.] amends  
Q 85 suspition ; . . . ring:] suspition, . . . Ring, Q

Or chaine of pearle ; shee will be tortur'd else  
Extremely in her sleepe, say : and ha' strange things  
Come to her. Wilt thou ? D O L. Yes. S V B. My fine  
flitter-mouse,

My bird o'the night ; wee'll tickle it at the *pigeons*,  
When we haue all, and may vn-lock the trunks, 90  
And say, this's mine, and thine, and thine, and mine—— *They*  
F A C. What now, a billing ? S V B. Yes, a little exalted *hisse.*

In the good passage of our stock-affaires.

F A C. D R V G G E R has brought his Parson, take him in,  
S V B T L E,

And send N A B back againe, to wash his face. 95

S V B. I will : and shaue himselfe ? F A C. If you can  
get him.

D O L. You are hot vpon it, F A C E, what ere it is !

F A C. A trick, that D O L shall spend ten pound a month  
by.

Is he gone ? S V B. The Chaplaine waits you i'the hall, sir.

F A C. I'll goe bestow him. D O L. Hee'll now marry her,  
instantly. 100

S V B. He cannot, yet, he is not readie. Deare D O L,  
Cosen her of all thou canst. To deceiue him  
Is no deceipt, but iustice, that would breake  
Such an inextricable tye as ours was.

D O L. Let me alone to fit him. F A C. Come, my ven-  
turers, 105

You ha' pack'd vp all ? Where be the trunks ? Bring forth.

S V B. Here. F A C. Let's see 'hem. Where's the money ?

S V B. Here,

In this. F A C. M A M M O N S ten pound : eight score be-  
fore.

The *Brethrens* money, this. D R V G G E R S, and D A P P E R S.

v. iv. 86 pearle ;] Pearle, Q 87 say :] say, Q 88 her. Wilt]  
her, wilt Q 91 *Stage direction not in Q* After 91 *Re-enter*  
*Face.* G 94 Parson,] Parson ; F2 95 NAB] him Q 96  
After 'himselfe?' *Exit.* G 97 is ] is. Q After 98 *Re-enter Subtle.* G  
100 After 'him.' *Exit.* G 103 iustice,] Iustice ; Q 105 After  
'him.' *Re-enter Face.* G venturers,] Venturers. Q: ventures, F3  
107 Let's] Let us W

110 What paper's that? D O L. The iewell of the waiting maides,

That stole it from her lady, to know certaine——

F A C. If shee should haue precedence of her mistris?

D O L. Yes.

F A C. What boxe is that? S v B. The fish-wiues rings, I thinke :

And th'ale-wiues single money. Is't not D O L?

115 D O L. Yes : and the whistle, that the saylors wife Brought you, to know, and her husband were with W A R D.

F A C. Wee'll wet it to morrow : and our siluer-beakers, And tauerne cups. Where be the *French* petti-coats, And girdles, and hangers? S v B. Here, i'the trunke,

120 And the bolts of lawne. F A C. Is D R V G G E R S damaske, there?

And the *tabacco*? S v B. Yes. F A C. Giue me the keyes.

D O L. Why you the keyes! S v B. No matter, D O L : because

We shall not open 'hem, before he comes.

F A C. 'Tis true, you shall not open them, indeed :

125 Nor haue 'hem forth. Doe you see? Not forth, D O L.

D O L. No!

F A C. No, my smock-rampant. The right is, my master Knowes all, has pardon'd me, and he will keepe 'hem.

Doctor, 'tis true (you looke) for all your figures :

I sent for him, indeed. Wherefore, good partners,

130 Both hee, and shee, be satisfied : for, here

Determines the *indenture tripartite*,

Twixt S v B T L E, D O L, and F A C E. All I can doe

Is to helpe you ouer the wall, o' the back-side ;

Or lend you a sheet, to saue your veluet gowne, D O L.

135 Here will be officers, presently ; bethinke you,

Of some course sodainely to scape the dock :

For thether you'll come else. Harke you, thunder.

*Some knock.*

v. iv. 112 mistris] mistresse Q 116 and] an' F2 121 *tabacco*] *Tabacco* Q 122 D O L:] *Dol*, Q 127 'hem. Q: 'hem, F1: 'hem; F2 128 figures:] Figures. Q 130 satisfied: for.] satisfied. For Q 137 *St.-dir. not in Q*

S v B. You are a precious fiend ! O F F. Open the dore.  
 F A C. D o L, I am sorry for thee i-faith. But hearst  
 thou ?  
 It shall goe hard, but I will place thee some-where : 140  
 Thou shalt ha' my letter to mistris A m o. D o L. Hang  
 you——  
 F A C. Or madame *Cæsarean*. D o L. Poxe vpon you,  
 rogue,  
 Would I had but time to beat thee. F A C. S v B T L E,  
 Let's know where you set vp next ; I'll send you  
 A customer, now and then, for old acquaintance : 145  
 What new course ha' you ? S v B. Rogue, I'll hang my  
 selfe :  
 That I may walke a greater diuell, then thou,  
 And haunt thee i'the flock-bed, and the buttery.

Act v. Scene v.

LOVE-WIT, OFFICERS, MAMMON, SVRLY,  
 FACE, KASTRIL, ANANIAS, TRI-  
 BVLTION, DRVGGER,  
 D A. P L I A N T.

W H a t doe you meane, my masters ? M A M. Open your  
 dore,  
 Cheaters, bawds, coniurers. O F F. Or wee'll breake it open.  
 L o v. What warrant haue you ? O F F. Warrant inough,  
 sir, doubt not :  
 If you'll not open it. L o v. Is there an officer, there ?  
 O F F. Yes, two, or three for fayling. L o v. Haue but  
 patience, 5  
 And I will open it straight. F A C. Sir, ha' you done ?

v. iv. 138 S v B ] S y B. F i OFF.] Offi. [without ] G 142 *Cæsarean*  
*Imperiall.* Q 143 Would] I would T. Keighley conj. 148  
*Exeunt.* add G v. v. SCENE III. | *An outer Room in the same.*  
*Enter Lovewit in the Spanish dress, with the Parson.* [Loud knocking  
 at the door.] G The stage directions at ll. 37, 58, 90, 115, 125, are not  
 in Q 1 MAM.] Mam. [without.] G 2, 3, 5 OFF.] Offi. [with-  
 out.] G 3 not:] not, Q 6 After 'straight.' Enter Face as  
 Builer. G



Is it a marriage? perfect? L o v. Yes, my braine.

F A C. Off with your ruffe, and cloake then, be your selfe, sir.

S v R. Downe with the dore. K A S. 'Slight, ding it open.

L o v. Hold.

10 Hold gentlemen, what meanes this violence?

M A M. Where is this Colliar? S v R. And my Captaine F A C E?

M A M. These day-Owles. S v R. That are birding in mens purses.

M A M. Madame *Suppository*. K A S. *Doxey*, my suster.

A N A. Locusts

Of the foule pit. T R I. Profane as B E L, and the *Dragon*.

15 A N A. Worse then the Grasse-hoppers, or the Lice of *Egypt*.

L o v. Good gentlemen, heare me. Are you officers, And cannot stay this violence? O F F. Keepe the peace.

L o v. Gentlemen, what is the matter? Whom doe you seeke?

M A M. The *Chymicall* cousoner. S v R. And the Cap-  
taine *Pandar*.

20 K A S. The *Nun* my suster. M A M. Madame *Rabbi*.

A N A. Scorpions,

And Caterpillers. L o v. Fewer at once, I pray you

O F F. One after another, gentlemen, I charge you,  
By vertue of my staffe—— A N A. They are the vessells  
Of pride, lust, and the cart. L o v. Good zeale, lie still,

25 A little while. T R I. Peace, Deacon A N A N I A S.

L o v. The house is mine here, and the dores are open :  
If there be any such persons, as you seeke for,  
Vse your authoritie, search on o' gods name.  
I am but newly come to towne, and finding

v. v. 7 braine. Ff: Braine? Q originally: Braine. corr. Q 8 then], then; F2 9 SVR.] Sur. [without.] G KAS.] Kas. [without.] G Lov.] Love. [opening the door.] G After 10 Mammon, Surly, Kastil, Ananias, Tribulation, and Officers rush in. G 13 suster] Suster Q: suster Ff 15 then] than F2 Egypt] Ægypt Q 22 OFF.] 2 Off. G 24 pride, lust, and the cart] shame, and of dishonour Q 28 gods] Gods Q

This tumult 'bout my dore (to tell you true) 30

It somewhat maz'd me ; till my man, here, (fearing

My more displeasure) told me <he> had done

Somewhat an insolent part, let out my house

(Belike, presuming on my knowne auersion

From any aire o'the towne, while there was sicknesse) 35

To a Doctor, and a Captaine : who, what they are,

Or where they be, he knowes not. M A M. Are they gone ? *They enter.*

L o v. You may goe in, and search, sir. Here, I find

The emptie walls, worse then I left 'hem, smok'd,

A few crack'd pots, and glasses, and a fornace, 40

The seeling fill'd with *poesies* of the candle :

And M A D A M E, with a *Dildo*, writ o' the walls.

Onely, one gentlewoman, I met here,

That is within, that said shee was a widdow——

K A S. I, that's my suster. I'll goe thumpe her. Where  
is shee ? 45

L o v. And should ha' marryed a *Spanish Count*, but he,

When he came to't, neglected her so grosly,

That I, a widdower, am gone through with her.

S v r. How ! Haue I lost her then ? L o v. Were you  
the *Don*, sir ?

Good faith, now, shee do's blame yo'extremely, and sayes 50

You swore, and told her, you had tane the paines,

To dye your beard, and vmbre o'er your face,

Borrowed a sute, and ruffe, all for her loue ;

And then did nothing. What an ouer-sight,

And want of putting forward, sir, was this ! 55

Well fare an old Hargubuzier, yet,

Could prime his poulder, and giue fire, and hit,

All in a twinckling. M A M. The whole nest are fled ! *Mammon comes forth.*

L o v. What sort of birds were they ? M A M. A kind of

Choughes,

v. v. 32 he *F2* 36 Captaine ] Captaine, *Q* 38 After 'sir.'  
*Mammon, Ana. and Trib. go in.* G 39 then] than *F2* 43  
Onely.] Onely *Q* 45 *Goes in.* add G 46 but he] buthe *Q*  
*originally* 56 Hargubuzier] Harquebuzier *F2* 57 poulder]  
Powder *F3* 59 Choughes] Coughes *F2*

60 Or theeuish Dawes, sir, that haue pickt my purse  
 Of eight-score, and ten pounds, within these fiue weekes,  
 Beside my first materialls; and my goods,  
 That lye i'the cellar: which I am glad they ha' left,  
 I may haue home yet. L o v. Thinke you so, sir? M A M. I.

65 L o v. By order of law, sir, but not otherwise.  
 M A M. Not mine owne stuffe? L o v. Sir, I can take no  
 knowledge,

That they are yours, but by publike meanes.  
 If you can bring certificate, that you were gull'd of 'hem,  
 Or any formall writ, out of a court,

70 That you did cosen your selfe: I will not hold them.

M A M. I'll rather loose 'hem. L o v. That you shall  
 not, sir,

By me, in troth. Vpon these termes they're yours.  
 What should they ha' beene, sir, turn'd into gold all?

M A M. No.

I cannot tell. It may be they should. What then?

75 L o v. What a great losse in hope haue you sustain'd?

M A M. Not I, the common-wealth has. F A C. I, he  
 would ha' built

The citie new; and made a ditch about it  
 Of siluer, should haue runne with creame from *Hogsden*:  
 That, euery sunday in *More*-fields, the younkers,

80 And tits, and tom-boyes should haue fed on, *gratis*.

M A M. I will goe mount a turnep-cart, and preach  
 The end o'the world, within these two months. S v R L y,  
 What! in a dreame? S v R. Must I needs cheat my selfe,  
 With that same foolish vice of honestie!

85 Come let vs goe, and harken out the rogues.

That F A C E I'll marke for mine, if ere I meet him.

F A C. If I can heare of him, sir, I'll bring you worc.  
 Vnto your lodging: for in troth, they were strangers  
 To me, I thought 'hem honest, as my selfe, sir.

v. v. 63 ha'] haue Q left, Q: left. Ff 66 knowledge.] knowledge.  
 F2 70 selfe:] selfe; Q 71 loose] lose F2 (so go) 72 they'  
 are] they, are Q originally 80 on,] on Q 82 world,] world Q  
 After 89 *Exeunt Mam. and Sur.* | *Re-enter Ananias and Tribulation.* G

TRI. 'Tis well, the *Saints* shall not loose all yet. Goe, *They come forth.*  
And get some carts—— LOV. For what, my zealous friends?

ANA. To beare away the portion of the righteous,  
Out of this den of theeues. LOV. What is that portion?

ANA. The goods, sometimes the Orphanes, that the *Brethren*  
Bought with their siluer pence. LOV. What, those i'the cellar, 95

The knight sir MAMMON claimes? ANA. I doe defie  
The wicked MAMMON, so doe all the *Brethren*,  
Thou prophane man. I aske thee, with what conscience  
Thou canst aduance that Idol, against vs,  
That haue the seale? Were not the shillings numbred, 100  
That made the pounds? Were not the pounds told out,  
Vpon the second day of the fourth weeke,  
In the eight month, vpon the table dormant,  
The yeere, of the last patience of the *Saints*,  
Sixe hundred and ten? LOV. Mine earnest vehement  
botcher, 105

And *Deacon* also, I cannot dispute with you,  
But, if you get you not away the sooner,  
I shall confute you with a cudgell. ANA. Sir.

TRI. Be patient ANANIAS. ANA. I am strong,  
And will stand vp, well girt, against an host, 110  
That threaten GAD in exile. LOV. I shall send you  
To *Amsterdam*, to your cellar. ANA. I will pray there,  
Against thy house: may dogs defile thy walls,  
And waspes, and hornets breed beneath thy roofe,  
This seat of false-hood, and this caue of cos'nage. 115

LOV. Another too? DRV. Not I sir, I am no *Brother*. *Drugger enters,*

LOV. Away you HARRY NICHOLAS, doe you  
talke? *and he beats him away.*

v. v. 94 *Brethren*] *Brethren*, F1 99 *Idol*] *Nemrod* Q 103  
eight] eighth F2 105 ten? F2: tenne. Q: ten. F1 108 you]  
you, Q 112 *Amsterdam*] *Amstredam* Q After 115 *Exeunt Ana.*  
and Trib. Enter *Drugger* G 117 *Stage directions in F1 at l. 118*

\*To the  
Parson.

F A C. No, this was A B E L D R V G G E R. \*Good sir, goe,  
And satisfie him; tell him, all is done :

120 He stay'd too long a washing of his face.

The Doctor, he shall heare of him at *Westchester* ;

And of the Captayne, tell him at *Yarmouth* : or

Some good port-towne else, lying for a winde.

If you get off the angrie Child, now, sir——

To his  
sister.

K A S. Come on, you yew, you haue match'd most  
sweetly, ha' you not ?

Did not I say, I would neuer ha' you tupt

But by a dub'd Boy, to make you a lady-*Tom* ?

'Slight, you are a mammet ! O, I could touse you, now.

Death, mun' you marry with a poxe ? L o v. You lie, Boy ;

130 As sound as you : and I am afore-hand with you. K A S.  
Anone ?

L o v. Come, will you quarrell ? I will feize you, sirrah.

Why doe you not buckle to your tooles ? K A S. Gods light !

This is a fine old Boy, as ere I saw !

L o v. What, doe you change your copy, now ? Proceed,

135 Here stands my doue : stoupe at her, if you dare.

K A S. 'Slight I must loue him ! I cannot choose, i-faith !

And I should be hang'd for't. Suster, I protest,

I honor thee, for this match. L o v. O, doe you so, sir ?

K A S. Yes, and thou canst take *tabacco*, and drinke, old  
Boy,

140 I'll giue her five hundred pound more, to her marriage,

Then her owne state. L o v. Fill a pipe-full, I E R E M I E.

F A C. Yes, but goe in, and take it, sir. L o v. We will.

I will be rul'd by thee in any thing, I E R E M I E.

K A S. 'Slight, thou art not hide-bound ! thou art a *Iouy*'  
Boy !

145 Come let's in, I pray thee, and take our whiffes.

v. v. 118 The asterisk in *Fi* is placed at the beginning of the line.  
122 *Yarmouth* :] *Yarmouth*, Q 123 *Exit* Parson. G 124 *get*]  
can get Q After 124 *Enter* *Kastril* dragging in his sister. G 130  
-hand with] -handwith Q 138 honor] honour Q 139 *tabacco*]  
*Tobacco* Q and] an' F2 141 Then] Than F2 144 *Iouy*']  
*Iouy* Q 145 I not in Q pray thee] pr'y thee F2

L o v. Whiffe in with your sister, brother Boy. That  
master

That had receiu'd such happinesse by a seruant,  
In such a widdow, and with so much wealth,  
Were very vngratefull, if he would not be  
A little indulgent to that seruants wit, 150  
And helpe his fortune, though with some small straine  
Of his owne candor. Therefore, gentlemen,  
And kind Spectators, if I haue out-strippt  
An old mans grauitie, or strict canon, thinke  
What a yong wife, and a good braine may doe : 155  
Stretch ages truth sometimes, and crack it too.  
Speake for thy selfe, knaue. F A C. So I will, sir. Gentle-  
men,

My part a little fell in this last *Scene*,  
Yet 'twas *decorum*. And though I am cleane  
Got off, from S V B T L E, S V R L Y, M A M M O N, D O L, 160  
Hot A N A N I A S, D A P P E R, D R V G G E R, all  
With whom I traded ; yet I put my selfe  
On you, that are my countrey : and this pelfe,  
Which I haue got, if you doe quit me, rests  
To feast you often, and inuite new ghests. 165

THE END.

v. v. 146 After 'Boy.' *Exeunt Kas. and Dame P. G* 152 After  
'candor.' [*advancing.*] G 157 After 'sir.' [*advancing to the front*  
*of the stage.*] G 165 ghests] Guests F3 *Exeunt.* add G

This Comoedie was first  
acted, in the yeere  
1610.

*By the Kings Maiesties*

SERVANTS.

The principall Comœdians were,

RIC. BURBADGE.	}	IOH. HEMINGS.
IOH. LOWIN.		WILL. OSTLER.
HEN. CONDEL.		IOH. VNDERWOOD.
ALEX. COOKE.		NIC. TOOLY.
ROB. ARMIN.		WILL. EGLESTON.

*With the allowance of the Master of REVELLS.*

*This page was added in F1. In F2 the statements about the date, the company, and the Master of the Revels were omitted, and the list of 'The principall Comœdians' was transferred to the back of the half-title, where it followed 'THE SCENE LONDON'.*

---

# CATILINE

---





## THE TEXT

The first edition of the tragedy of *Catiline* was not entered on the Stationers' Register. It was published by Walter Burre in 1611 with the title *Catiline his Conspiracy*. The printer is unknown. The collation, A to N in fours with three leaves of O, is in detail: A 1 recto, title-page; A 1 verso, blank; A 2, dedication to Lord Pembroke; A 3 recto, 'To the Reader in ordinary' and 'To the Reader extraordinary'; A 3 verso, a complimentary poem by Francis Beaumont and part of a similar poem by John Fletcher; A 4 recto, Fletcher's poem concluded, and a poem by Nathan Field; A 4 verso, 'The names of the Actors'; B to O 3 verso, the text of the play. The running title is '*CATÿLINE*'.

Five copies of the Quarto have been collated for the text of the present edition:

The British Museum copy, with shelf-mark 644.b.55 (marked A in the following list);

The Bodleian copy, with shelf-mark Malone 188 (6) (marked B);

The copy in the Cambridge University Library, with shelf-mark Syn. 7-61-12, inscribed at the bottom of the last page in a seventeenth-century hand 'for the much honorid my very good Lord the Earle of Bristow; these presentes' (marked C);

The copy in the Dyce Library (marked D);

Mr. T. J. Wise's copy (marked E).

In addition, Mr. C. K. Edmonds, who has collated the Devonshire and Bridgewater copies of the Quarto in the Huntington Library, has supplied variants in the inner forme of D. Jonson's proof-corrections may well have extended to other sheets of the Quarto, but the variants we have been able to trace are as follows:

Sig. A 4<sup>r</sup> Field's

poem, l. 10	eare B, C, D, E	Yeare A
Sig. B 1 <sup>r</sup> 1. 20	voice A, B, D	voice ! C, E
Sig. B 3 <sup>r</sup> 160	with debts A, B, D	with their debts C, E
167	be A, B, D	be, C, E
Sig. B 4 <sup>v</sup> 268	They had A, B, D, E	They'had C

Sig. C 3 <sup>r</sup>	411	you ! <i>D, E</i>	you. <i>A, B, C</i>
Sig. C 4 <sup>v</sup>	531-2	Can nothing great . . . Remaine so long ? <i>D, E</i>	<b>C</b> An nothing great . . . Remaine so long ? <i>A, B, C</i>
Sig. D 1 <sup>v</sup>	11. 2	hether <i>Devonshire</i>	hither <i>the rest</i>
Sig. D 3 <sup>v</sup>	145	yonr <i>Devonshire</i>	your <i>the rest</i>
	163	to <i>Devonshire</i>	too <i>the rest</i>
	165	dos <i>Devonshire</i>	do's <i>the rest</i>
Sig. D 4 <sup>r</sup>	170	so, imperious <i>Devonshire</i>	so imperious <i>the rest</i>
Sig. H 1 <sup>r</sup>	III. 658	him lost, <i>A</i>	him, lost : <i>B, C, D, E</i>
Sig. I 1 <sup>v</sup>	IV. 61	Stayer <i>C</i>	STAYER <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	64-5	Which may be happy, and auspicious still   To <i>Rome</i> , and hers. <i>C</i>	Which may be happy, and auspicious still   To <i>Rome</i> , and hers. <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	65	conscript <i>C</i>	Conscript <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	67	state <i>C</i>	State <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	68	night ; <i>C</i>	night, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	77	seem'd ; <i>C</i>	seem'd, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	81	effects ; Then <i>C</i>	effects, then <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	83	one ; <i>C</i>	one : <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	84	sithence <i>C</i>	yet since <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	86	loose <i>C</i>	loose, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	89	greater, . . . all, <i>C</i>	greater ; . . . all : <i>A, B, D, E</i>
Sig. I 2 <sup>r</sup>	105	wife <i>C</i>	Wife <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	120	Nature <i>C</i>	Nature, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	127	licentiousnesse ; <i>C</i>	licentiousnesse : <i>A, B, D, E</i>
Sig. I 3 <sup>v</sup>	201	state's <i>C</i>	State's <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	205	rust, <i>C</i>	rust ; <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	207	liu'st, <i>C</i>	liu'st : <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	209	Fathers <i>C</i>	Fathers, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	214	iawes . . . <i>Hetruria, C</i>	iawes, . . . <i>Hetruria ; A, B, D, E</i>
	216	walles, <i>C</i>	walles : <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	217	publique <i>C</i>	Publique <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	218	If <i>C</i>	If, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	222	meale <i>C</i>	meale, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	229	leauē : . . . liu'st, <i>C</i>	leauē ; . . . liu'st : <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	231	state <i>C</i>	State <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	235	night, can . . . dark- nesse <i>C</i>	Night can, . . . dark- nesse, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	236	house <i>C</i>	House <i>A, B, D, E</i>

Sig. I 4 <sup>r</sup>	237	Can . . . walles C	Can, . . . walles, A, B, D, E
	238	conspiracy, if C	conspiracy: If A, B, D, E
	241	told C	told, A, B, D, E
	257	And C	Where A, B, D, E
	261	thee; C	thee, A, B, D, E
	263	buisnesse C	businessse A, B, D, E
	267	met ? C	met. A, B, D, E
	269	thee; C	thee: A, B, D, E
Sig. L 1 <sup>r</sup>	596	I' ha' D, E	I ha' A, B, C
Sig. O 2 <sup>r</sup>	v. 602	by, a sword D, E	by' a sword A, B, C

The twenty-seven corrections in the inner forme of I show Jonson's characteristic vigilance. The four corrections in the outer forme of B show a second reading of the proof on B 4 verso where Jonson's final correction was a metrical apostrophe in the words 'They'had' in Act I, line 268. The type-correction of the large initial capital for the opening lines of the first chorus on C 4 verso is a signal instance of Jonson's exactness; the other choruses start with a similar capital. The catchword 'FvL.' on signature D 4 recto is without the stop in the Dyce and Wise copies; probably this is only a failure to print it.

The Folio text of 1616 was printed from a revised copy of the Quarto. There are few changes of reading, as if Jonson found little to correct in what he believed to be his best tragedy.<sup>1</sup> There are retouchings of single words, as in the demand of the blood-thirsty Cethegus, 'Swell mee my bowle yet fuller' for 'Crowne me my bowle' (I. 499), where Jonson dropped Virgil's 'Vina coronant'.<sup>2</sup> The most striking alteration is in Act III, line 729—'To betray headie husbands' for the more violent expression of the Quarto, 'To strangle head-strong Husbands'. But Jonson completely recast the punctuation in order to bring it into line with the system he adopted in the Folio; his minute and incessant changes are recorded in the critical apparatus except where

<sup>1</sup> So he tells Lord Pembroke in the dedication, line 11.

<sup>2</sup> We are reminded of the lyric in *Poetaster*, III. i. 8, 'Swell me a bowle with lustie wine'.

there is an obvious loss of a stop in the Quarto. He inserted freely the note of exclamation, the dash, and the bracket for parentheses; and he employed far more sparingly the inverted commas used at the beginning of a 'sentence' or aphorism.<sup>1</sup> The metrical apostrophe once more gave trouble to the printer.<sup>2</sup> We have inserted it on the authority of the Quarto in the following passages where it has disappeared in the Folio:

BESTIA,' AVTRONIVS (I. 156)  
 —thou' art (III. 214)<sup>3</sup>  
 we' intend (III. 555)  
 to' you (v. 43)  
 to' vs (v. 397)  
 the' immortall gods (v. 693).

The printer's difficulties are shown by his absurd substitution of a comma in the Quarto text of Act v, line 602, 'by, a sword', which was promptly corrected, and by his omission of a comma where the two stops coincided in 'No' in troth' (II. 75) and 'practise on me' or finde' (II. 248). In such passages as 'And that hath plac'd thee, CICERO, at the helme' (III. 62) and 'These things for mine owne glorie, and false greatnesse' (IV. 78), Jonson's manuscript probably had 'CICERO', at' and 'glorie', and', but, as Jonson himself passed the text for the press, we have left the responsibility with him. In such minutiae he here fell far below his rigid standard of correctness. It is something of a shock to find that we have had to make nearly fifty corrections, most of them, of course, extremely trivial.<sup>4</sup> There are hardly any serious blunders; the only noteworthy one is 'engines' for 'engineers' (III. 760), which was corrected by Gifford. It is as if Jonson, secure of the text as a whole

<sup>1</sup> See the introduction to the text of *Sejanus* in vol. iii, pp. 335-6.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., pp. 338-42.

<sup>3</sup> 'thou'rt' in *Q*; 'thou'art' in *F2*.

<sup>4</sup> The curious may track them out in the critical apparatus at I. 291, 297, 459, 527; II. 57, 75, 178, 248, 273, 285; III. 114, 148, 207, 216, 219, 342, 408, 413, 684, 759, 760, 862, 874; IV. 62, 325, 382, 504, 596, 727, 730, 732, 764, 806, 824, 833; V. 148, 214, 220, 327, 402, 413, 427, 451, 496, 498, 521, 571, 577, 578.

and feeling that it needed little revision, read his proofs too rapidly.

A second Quarto was published in 1635, two years before Jonson's death. It was printed by Nicholas Okes for John Spenser, who had acquired the copyright from Mistress Burre in 1630. Probably Jonson knew nothing about it. The collation is: A 1, blank; A 2 recto, the title-page; A 3 recto, 'To the Reader'; A 3 verso, Beaumont's poem, and part of Fletcher's; A 4 recto, Fletcher's poem continued, and Field's poem; A 4 verso, 'The names of the Actors'; B to M in fours, the text of the play. For this edition the first Quarto served as copy, not, as would certainly have been the case if Jonson had been consulted, the revised text of the Folio.

The 1635 Quarto is a grossly careless reprint, and we have not judged it necessary to encumber the critical apparatus with the misreadings, numbering well over a hundred, with which Okes corrupted the text. He omitted two lines;<sup>1</sup> he printed a line of Petreius's speech<sup>2</sup>—

The rest are a mixt kind, all sorts of furies—  
in the unmetrical form, 'The rest are but a mixt kinde, of all sorts of furies'; and he wrecked the passage where Cicero asks Lentulus in the Senate if he recognized the seal on his intercepted letter—

L E N. Yes, it is mine. C I C. Whose image is that, on it?

L E N. My grand-fathers. C I C. What, that renown'd good man,—<sup>3</sup>

by omitting 'Whose image is that, on it?' and substituting 'What, that renown'd good man?' which he printed at the end of both lines. When Catiline tells the conspirators of Marius' standard which he worshipped in a shrine built

Of purpose to it. Pledge then all your hands,  
To follow it, with vows of death, and ruine,  
Strooke silently, and home.—<sup>4</sup>

Okes printed nonsense by leaving out the words 'Pledge

<sup>1</sup> III. 627, v. 581.

<sup>2</sup> v. 44.

<sup>3</sup> v. 170-1.

<sup>4</sup> III. 569-71.

then all your hands, To follow it'. He constantly drops single words, usually monosyllables, to the detriment of the metre : thus, 'A small praise, and that wrung out by force'<sup>1</sup> should be 'A most small praise'. Misreadings which he foisted into the text include 'salvation' for 'salutation' (I. 201), 'feelee thirst' for 'fell thirst' (ibid., 492), 'unconstant' for 'constant' (II. 159), 'fall' for 'all' (III. 460), 'covenant' for 'conuent' (IV. 295), 'prodigallity' for 'prodigally' (ibid., 668). His worst blunder, because this was a deliberate tampering with the text, is at the point where Catiline sends Vargunteius to hold Cethegus back from an ill-advised attempt to fire Cicero's house at night.<sup>2</sup> The first Quarto reads :

CAT. Follow him, *Vargunteius*, . . .

. . . Intreat, and coniure him.

In all our names. LEN. By all our vowes, and friendships.

These words end the page on signature H recto. H verso begins with a scene heading,

SEMPRONIA, AVRELIA, FVLVIA, to them.

The formula 'To them' is a frequent stage direction in the Folio ; it marks the entrance of a new character or characters, and saves repeating the names of those already on the stage. But this being the only time Jonson used it in the Quarto, Okes did not know what to make of it. Finding it in roman lower-case, like the body of the text, he decided that it was wrongly taken over from the speech on the previous page ; so he printed

LEN. By all our vowes and friendships to them.—

ignoring the troublesome detail that the pronoun 'them' had nothing to refer to grammatically in the context.

The Folio of 1640 was printed from its predecessor of 1616. From time to time it revises the punctuation, though it frequently omits the metrical apostrophe. There are some careless misprints : for example, '*Circes*' for '*Circei*' (I.

<sup>1</sup> III. 6.

<sup>2</sup> III. 674 foll.

390); 'bend Upon occasion' for 'bend Vnto occasion' (III. 196); 'the old porter TITAN' for 'old potter' as a description of Prometheus (ibid., 542); and 'How dost thou heare this?' for 'beare this' (IV. 362). It makes one attempt at an emendation—

I could desire, grave *Fathers*, to be found  
for

I could desire, *Fathers*, to be found—  
treating 'desire' as a dissyllable through not understanding Jonson's pronunciation.<sup>1</sup>

In one respect the text of *Catiline* is unique. Two quarto editions were published at the Restoration. It was produced at the Theatre Royal on 18 December 1668, and Pepys, who saw it on the second day, described it as 'the least diverting' play he had ever seen. Hart played Catiline, Mohun Cethegus, Burt Cicero, Mrs. Corey Sempronius, and Nell Gwyn spoke a prologue 'Merrily' 'in an Amazonian habit'. It was published next year, 'Printed for A. C.', i.e. Andrew Crooke, 'and are to be sold by William Cademan at the Pope's Head in the Lower walk of the New-Exchange. 1669'. It was published in February, 'Price 1s', according to the entry in the *Term Catalogues*. Crooke had, with John Legatt, acquired the copyright of *Bartholomew Fair* and *The Staple of News* from Allot in 1637; he probably acquired the copyright of *The Devil is an Ass* in 1640.<sup>2</sup> The collation, A to M in fours, is in detail: A 1 blank; A 2 recto, title-page; A 2 verso, blank; A 3 recto, Nell Gwyn's prologue; A 3 verso, 'THE EPILOGVE, By the same'; A 4 recto, 'The Persons of the Play'; A 4 verso, 'The Principal Tragædians'; B to M, the text of the Play. On M 4 verso, after 'The End' is appended the list, taken from the 1616 Folio, of 'The principal Tragædians, when first Acted in the year 1611'. The interesting fact about this Quarto is that it aims at being a reprint of the 1616 Folio; it modernizes the spelling, but it often retains

<sup>1</sup> IV. 209.

<sup>2</sup> See S. G. Dunn in *The Times Literary Supplement*, 28 July 1921.



Jonson's peculiar punctuation, which was obsolete in 1669. There are some bad misprints. In i. 297-8 'Dare they looke day In the dull face?' is not improved by printing 'In the full face'. But there is one interesting attempt at an emendation: the alexandrine in Act v, line 427,

With money to corrupt the poore artificers  
is normalized to blank verse by omitting 'poore'. At two points in the play an omission has been stamped in after the text had been printed off: the letter *s* in 'gin's to move' (III. 761) and the words 'and he', which had dropped out at the end of Act iv, line 792.

The 1669 Quarto was reprinted in 1674 (1) with an identical title-page, (2) with the imprint:

Printed for *William Crook*, at the green *Dragon* without *Temple-bar*. 1674.

The *Term Catalogues* announce it as published in July. The actor list of the 1668 revival was omitted. The collation is A<sup>2</sup>, B-L<sup>4</sup>. All that this Quarto does is to add a new crop of misprints; one effort to correct a faulty reading may be quoted. In Act III, l. 454, 'And lay it to thy brest, how much the gods', the 1669 Quarto printed 'host' for 'how'; the printer of 1674, seeing that 'host' was nonsense, thought he had restored sense by printing 'haste'.

The Folio text of 1616 was reprinted by Dr. Lynn Harold Harris in *Yale Studies in English*, no. LIII, in 1916; the proof-reading is careless, especially in the matter of dropped words; the critical apparatus is inaccurate; and the existence of the third Quarto is unknown to the editor.

# CATILINE

his

# CONSPIRACY.

Written  
by  
BEN: IONSON.

———*Hic non Plebecula gaudet.  
Verum Equitis quoq, iam migravit ab aure voluptas,  
Omnis, ad incertos oculos, & gaudia vana.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed for *Walter Burre.*  
1611.

The title-page of the first Quarto, 1611.



# CATILINE HIS CONSPIRACY.

*A Tragedie.*

Acted in the yeere 1611. By the  
Kings MAIESTIES  
Seruants.

The Author B. I.

HORAT.

——— *Hic non plebecula gaudet:  
Verum equitis quoq̃, iam migravit ab aure voluptas  
Omnis, ad incertos oculos, & gaudia vana.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed by WILLIAM STANSBY.

---

M. D C. XVI.

The title-page of the 1616 Folio.



# CATILINE

HIS

## CONSPIRACY.

---

VVRITTEN

BY

BEN: IONSON.

And now Acted by his MAJESTIES: Servants  
with great Applause.

---

*His non Plebecula gaudet.  
Verum Equitis quoq, jam migravit ab aure voluptas  
Omnis, ad incertos oculos, & gaudia vana.*

---



LONDON:

Printed by N. Oakes, for I.S.  
1635.

The title-page of the second Quarto, 1635.



# CATILINE

## HIS

# CONSPIRACY.

A Tragedy.

First Acted in the yeare 1611. By the  
Kings MAIESTIES  
SERVANTS.

With the allowance of the Master  
of REVELLS.

The Author *B. f.*

---

HORAT.

——— *Hic non plebecula gaudet :*  
*Verum equis quoque jam ingravis ab auri voluptas*  
*Omnis, ad incertos oculos, & gaudia vana.*

---



---

LONDON,  
Printed by RICHARD BISHOP.

M. DC. XL.

Ecc 3

The title-page of the second Folio, 1640.





# CATILINE

HIS

CONSPIRACY.

A

Tragoëdie.

---

As it is now Acted by His  
*MAJESTIE'S* Servants ;  
at the Theatre *ROYAL*.

---

The Author *B. J.*

---

H O R A T.

-----*His non plebecula gaudet :*  
*Verum equitis quoq, jam migravit ab aure voluptas*  
*Omnis, ad incertos oculos, & gaudia vana.*

---

L O N D O N,

Printed for *A. C.* and are to be sold by *William*  
*Cademan* at the *Pope's Head* in the Lower  
walk of the *New-Exchange*. 1669.

The title-page of the third Quarto, 1669.



# CATILINE

HIS  
CONSPIRACY.

A  
Tragœdie.

---

As it is now Acted by His  
MAJESTY'S Servants;  
at the Theatre ROYAL.

---

The Author B. J.

---

HORAT.

——— *His non plebecula gaudet:  
Verum equitis quoq; jam migravit ab aure voluptas  
Omnis, ad incertos oculos, & gaudia vana.*

---

LONDON,

Printed for A. C. and are to be sold by *William  
Cademan* at the *Pope's Head* in the Lower  
walk of the *New-Exchange*. 1674

The title-page of the fourth Quarto, 1674.



TO THE GREAT EXAMPLE OF  
HONOR, AND VERTVE,  
THE MOST NOBLE

William,  
EARLE OF PEMBROKE,  
LORD CHAMBERLAINE, &c.

MY LORD,

*In so thicke, and darke an ignorance, as now almost  
couers the age, I craue leaue to stand neare your light :  
and, by that, to bee read. Posteritie may pay your  
benefit the honor, & thanks : when it shall know, that  
you dare, in these Iig-giuen times, to countenance a  
legitimate Poeme. I must call it so, against all noise  
of opinion : from whose crude, and ayrie reports, I  
appeale, to that great and singular faculty of iudge-  
ment in your Lordship, able to vindicate truth from  
error. It is the first (of this race) that euer I dedicated  
to any person, and had I not thought it the best, it  
should haue beene taught a lesse ambition. Now, it  
approcheth your censure cheerefully, and with the  
same assurance, that innocency would appeare before  
a magistrate.*

Your Lo. most faithfull  
honoror,  
BEN. IONSON.

DEDICATION. HONOR] HONOUR F2 PEMBROKE] PENBROOKE Q  
LORD CHAMBERLAINE not in Q 4 honor] honour F2 6 Poeme]  
Poëme Q 10 error] erreur F2 17 honoror,] Honoror. Q

## TO THE READER IN ORDINAIRIE.

*The Muses forbid, that I should restrayne your medling, whom I see alreadie busie with the Title, and tricking ouer the leaues : It is your owne. I departed with my right, when I let it first abroad. And, now, so secure an Interpreter I am of my chance, that neither praise, nor dispraise from you can affect mee. Though you commend the two first Actes, with the people, because they are the worst ; and dislike the Oration of Cicero, in regard you read some pieces of it, at Schoole, and understand them not yet ; I shall finde the way to forgiue you. Be anything you will be, at your owne charge. Would I had deseru'd but halfe so well of it in translation, as that ought to deserue of you in iudgment, if you haue any. I know you will pretend (whosoeuer you are) to haue that, and more. But all pretences are not iust claymes. The commendation of good things may fall within a many, their approbation but in a few ; for the most commend out of affection, selfe tickling, an easinesse, or imitation : but men iudge only out of knowledge. That is the trying faculty. And, to those works that will beare a Iudge, nothing is more dangerous then a foolish prayse. You will say I shall not haue yours, therefore ; but rather the contrary, all vexation of Censure. If I were not about such molestations now, I had great cause to think unworthily of my studies, or they had so of mee. But I leaue you to your exercise. Beginne.*

## To the Reader extraordinary.

You I would vnderstand to be the better Man, though Places in Court go otherwise : to you I submit my selfe, and worke. Farewell.

BEN: IONSON.

## The Persons of the Play.

### SYLLA'S GHOST.

CATILINE.	CICERO.
LENTVLVS.	ANTONIVS.
CETHEGVS.	CATO.
CVRIVS.	CATVLVS.
AVTRONIVS.	CRASSVS.
VARGVNTEIVS.	CAESAR.
LONGINVS.	QV. CICERO.
LECCA.	SYLLANVS.
FVLVIVS.	FLACCVS.
BESTIA.	POMTINIVS.
GABINIVS.	SANGA.
STATILIVS.	SENATORS.
CEPARIVS.	ALLOBROGES.
CORNELIVS.	PETREIVS.
VOLTVRTIVS.	SOVLDIERS.
AVRELIA.	PORTER.
FVLVIA.	LICTORS.
SEMPRONIA.	SERVANTS.
GALLA.	PAGES.

### CHORVS.

## THE SCENE

## ROME.

THE PERSONS OF THE PLAY] *The names of the Actors* Q CATILINE]  
 L. Sergius Catiline G LENTVLVS] Publius Lentulus G CETHEGVS]  
 Caius Cethegus G CVRIVS] Quintus Curius G LONGINVS] Lucius  
 Cassius Longinus G LECCA] Porcius Lecca G BESTIA] Lucius Bestia  
 G GABINIVS] Gabinius Cimber G CORNELIVS] Caius Cornelius G  
 AVRELIA] Aurelia Orestilla G ANTONIVS] Caius Antonius G SANGA]  
 Quintus Fabius Sanga G THE SCENE ROME *not in Q*: The  
 SCENE partly at Rome, and partly in Fesulæ. G After The Scene  
 F2 inserts the names of The principall Tragedians given in F1 at the  
 end of the Play.





## CATILINE.

## Act I.

SYLLA'S Ghost.

D O'st thou not feele me, *Rome* ? not yet ? Is night  
 So heauy on thee, and my weight so light ?  
 Can SYLLA'S Ghost arise within thy walls,  
 Lesse threatning, then an earth-quake, the quick falls  
 Of thee, and thine ? shake not the frightened heads 5  
 Of thy steepe towers ? or shrink to their first beds ?  
 Or, as their ruine the large *Tyber* fills,  
 Make that swell vp, and drowne thy seuen proud hills ?  
 What sleepe is this doth seize thee, so like death,  
 And is not it ? Wake, feele her, in my breath : 10  
 Behold, I come, sent from the *Stygian* sound,  
 As a dire vapor, that had cleft the ground,  
 T'ingender with the night, and blast the day ;  
 Or like a pestilence, that should display  
 Infection through the world : which, thus, I doe. *Discouers*  
 PLVTO be at thy councells ; and into *Catiline*  
 Thy darker bosome enter SYLLA's spirit : *in his*  
 All, that was mine, and bad, thy brest inherit. *study.*  
 Alas, how weake is that, for CATILINE !  
 Did I but say (vaine voice !) all that was mine ? 20  
 All, that the GRACCHI, CINNA, MARIVS would ;  
 What now, had I a body againe, I could,  
 Comming from hell ; what Fiends would wish should be ;  
 And HANNIBAL could not haue wish'd to see :  
 Thinke thou, and practice. Let the long-hid seeds 25

ACT I.] ACT I. SCENE I. | *A Room in Catiline's House.* | *The Ghost*  
*of Sylla rises.* G 1. 10 breath :] breath. Q 15 *Stage direction*  
*not in Q : The curtain draws, and Catiline is discovered in his study.* G  
 20 voice ! corr. Q, Ff : voice Q originally

- Of treason, in thee, now shoot forth in deeds,  
 Ranker then horror ; and thy former facts  
 Not fall in mention, but to vrge new acts :  
 Conscience of them prouoke thee on to more.
- 30 Be still thy incests, murders, rapes before  
 Thy sense ; thy forcing first a *Vestall* nunne ;  
 Thy parricide, late, on thine owne onely sonne,  
 After his mother ; to make emptie way  
 For thy last wicked nuptialls ; worse, then they,
- 35 That blaze that act of thy incestuous life,  
 Which got thee, at once, a daughter, and a wife.  
 I leaue the slaughters, that thou didst for me,  
 Of *Senators* ; for which, I hid for thee  
 Thy murder of thy brother, (being so brib'd)
- 40 And writ him in the list of my proscib'd  
 After thy fact, to saue thy little shame :  
 Thy incest, with thy sister, I not name.  
 These are too light. *Fate* will haue thee pursue  
 Deedes, after which, no mischief can be new ;
- 45 The ruine of thy countrey : thou wert built  
 For such a worke, and borne for no lesse guilt.  
 What though defeated once th'hast beene, and knowne, -  
 Tempt it againe : That is thy act, or none.  
 What all the seuerall ills, that visite earth,
- 50 (Brought forth by night, with a sinister birth)  
 Plagues, famine, fire could not reach vnto,  
 The sword, nor surfets ; let thy furie doe :  
 Make all past, present, future ill thine owne ;  
 And conquer all example, in thy one.
- 55 Nor let thy thought find any vacant time  
 To hate an old, but still a fresher crime  
 Drowne the remembrance : let not mischief cease,  
 But, while it is in punishing, encrease.  
 Conscience, and care die in thee ; and be free

1. 27 then] than *F2* (*et passim*) 32 thine] thy *F2* onely *Ff*  
 naturall *Q* 33 mother:] Mother, *Q* 35 blaze *Ff*: fame *Q*  
 37 slaughters.] *The comma faint or lost in F1* 46 guilt.] guilt: *Q*  
 51 fire] fire, *F2*

Not heau'n it selfe from thy impietie : 60  
 Let night grow blacker with thy plots ; and day,  
 At shewing but thy head forth, start away  
 From this halfe-spheare : and leaue *Romes* blinded walls  
 T'embrace lusts, hatreds, slaughters, funeralls,  
 And not recouer sight, till their owne flames 65  
 Doe light them to their ruines. All the names  
 Of thy confederates, too, be no lesse great  
 In hell, then here : that, when we would repeat  
 Our strengths in muster, we may name you all,  
 And *Furies*, vpon you, for *Furies*, call. 70  
 Whilst, what you doe, may strike them into feares,  
 Or make them grieue, and wish your mischiefe theirs.

C A T I L I N E.

IT is decree'd. Nor shall thy Fate, ô *Rome*,  
 Resist my vow. Though hills were set on hills,  
 And seas met seas, to guard thee ; I would through : 75  
 I, plough vp rocks, steepe as the *Alpes*, in dust ;  
 And laue the *Tyrrhene* waters, into clouds ;  
 But I would reach thy head, thy head, proud citie.  
 The ills, that I haue done, cannot be safe  
 But by attempting greater ; and I feele 80  
 A spirit, within me, chides my sluggish hands,  
 And sayes, they haue beene innocent too long.  
 Was I a man, bred great, as *Rome* her selfe ?  
 One, form'd for all her honors, all her glories ?  
 Equall to all her titles ? that could stand 85  
 Close vp, with A T L A S ; and sustaine her name  
 As strong, as he doth heau'n ? And, was I,  
 Of all her brood, mark'd out for the repulse  
 By her no voice, when I stood *Candidate*,  
 To be commander in the *Pontick* warre ? 90  
 I will, hereafter, call her step-dame, euer.  
 If shee can loose her nature, I can loose  
 My pietie ; and in her stony entrailes

Dig me a seate : where, I will liue, againe,  
 95 The labour of her wombe, and be a burden,  
 Weightier then all the prodigies, and monsters,  
 That shee hath teem'd with, since shee first knew MARS.

CATILINE, AVRELIA.

WHO's there? AVR. 'Tis I. CAT. AVRELIA?

AVR. Yes. CAT. Appeare,

And breake, like day, my beautie, to this circle :

100 Vpbraid thy *Phæbus*, that he is so long

In mounting to that point, which should giue thee

Thy proper splendor. Wherefore frownes my sweet ?

*He hisseth them.* HAUE I too long beene absent from these lips,

This cheeke, these eyes ? What is my trespass ? speake.

105 AVR. It seemes, you know, that can accuse your selfe.

CAT. I will redeeme it. AVR. Still, you say so. When?

CAT. When ORESTILLA, by her bearing well

These my retirements, and stolne times for thought,

Shall giue their effects leaue to call her Queene

110 Of all the world, in place of humbled *Rome*.

AVR. You court me, now. CAT. As I would alwayes, Loue,

By this *ambrosiack* kisse, and this of *nectar*,

Wouldst thou but heare as gladly, as I speake.

Could my AVRELIA thinke, I meant her lesse ;

115 When, wooing her, I first remou'd a wife,

And then a sonne, to make my bed, and house

Spatious, and fit t'embrace her ? These were deeds

Not t'haue begun with, but to end with more,

And greater : "He that, building, stayes at one

120 " Floore, or the second, hath erected none.

'Twas how to raise thee, I was meditating ;

To make some act of mine answere thy loue :

That loue, that, when my state was now quite sunke,

Came with thy wealth, and weigh'd it vp againe,

125 And made my'emergent-fortune once more looke

1. Before 98 CATILINE, AVRELIA.] *Enter Aurelia Orestilla.* G, continuing the scene 98 CAT.] AVR. Q 102 splendor] splendour Q  
 103 Stage direction not in Q 125 emergent-] emergent Q, F2

Aboue the maine ; which, now, shall hit the starres,  
 And stick my O R E S T I L L A, there, amongst 'hem,  
 If any tempest can but make the billow,  
 And any billow can but lift her greatnesse.  
 But, I must pray my loue, shee will put on  
 Like habites with my selfe. I haue to doe 130  
 With many men, and many natures. Some,  
 That must be blowne, and sooth'd ; as L E N T V L V S,  
 Whom I haue heau'd, with magnifying his bloud,  
 And a vaine dreame, out of the S Y B I L L's bookes, 135  
 That a third man, of that great family,  
 Whereof he is descended, the C O R N E L I I,  
 Should be a king in *Rome* : which I haue hir'd  
 The flatt'ring A V G V R E S to interpret him,  
 C I N N A, and S Y L L A dead. Then, bold C E T H E G V S, 140  
 Whose valour I haue turn'd into his poyson,  
 And prais'd so into daring, as he would  
 Goe on vpon the gods, kisse lightning, wrest  
 The engine from the C Y C L O P's, and giue fire  
 At face of a full cloud, and stand his ire : 145  
 When I would bid him moue. Others there are,  
 Whom enuy to the state drawes, and puts on,  
 For contumelies receiu'd, (and such are sure ones)  
 As C V R I V S, and the fore-nam'd L E N T V L V S,  
 Both which haue beene degraded, in the *Senate*, 150  
 And must haue their disgraces, still, new rub'd,  
 To make 'hem smart, and labour of reuenge.  
 Others, whom meere ambition fires, and dole  
 Of *prouinces* abroad, which they haue fain'd  
 To their crude hopes, and I as amply promis'd : 155  
 These, L E C C A, V A R G V N T E I V S, B E S T I A', A V T R O -  
 N I V S.

Some, whom their wants oppresse, as th'idle Captaynes  
 Of S Y L L A's troops : and diuers *Roman* Knights  
 (The profuse wasters of their patrimonies)

1. 127 'hem] 'em F3 (*et passim*)  
*Bestia'* Q: *BESTIA* Ff

145 ire:] ire, Q

156 *BESTIA'*]

- 160 So threatned with their debts as they will, now,  
Runne any desperate fortune, for a change.  
These, for a time, we must relieue, AVRELIA,  
And make our house the safe-guard : like, for those,  
That feare the law, or stand within her gripe,  
165 For any act past, or to come. Such will  
From their owne crimes, be factious, as from ours.  
Some more there be, slight ayrelings, will be wonne,  
With dogs, and horses ; or, perhaps, a whore ;  
Which must be had : and, if they venter liues,  
170 For vs, AVRELIA, we must hazard honors  
A little. Get thee store, and change of women,  
As I haue boyes ; and giue 'hem time, and place,  
And all conniuece : be thy selfe, too, courtly ;  
And entertayne, and feast, sit vp, and reuell ;  
175 Call all the great, the faire, and spirited *Dames*  
Of *Rome* about thee ; and beginne a fashion  
Of freedome, and community. Some will thanke thee,  
Though the sowre *Senate* frowne, whose heads must ake  
In feare, and feeling too. We must not spare  
180 Or cost, or modestie. It can but shew  
Like one of Ivn o's, or of Iov e's disguises,  
In either thee, or mee : and will as soone,  
When things succeed, be throwne by, or let fall,  
As is a vaile put off, a visor chang'd,  
Or the scene shifted, in our *theaters*——  
Who's that ? It is the voyce of LENTVLVS.  
AVR. Or of CETHEGVS. CAT. In, my faire  
AVRELIA,  
And thinke vpon these arts. They must not see,  
How farre you are trusted with these priuacies ;  
190 Though, on their shoulders, necks, and heads you rise.

A noyse  
without.

1. 160 their debts *corr. Q, Ff*: debts *Q originally* 163 the] their  
*Q* safe-guard : like *Ff*: saue-gard. Like *Q* 167 be, *corr. Q, Ff*:  
be *Q originally* 169 venter] venture *F3* 176 thee ;] thee, *Q*  
181 disguises,] disguises *Q* 183 fall,] fall ; *Q* 185 theaters——]  
*Theaters. Q* *Stage direction not in Q* 188 arts.] artes: *Q* 190 on *Ff*:  
by *Q* *Exit Aurelia.* add G Before 191 LENTVLVS . . . CATILINE.]  
*Enter Lentulus, in discourse with Cethegus. G, continuing the scene*

L E N T V L V S, C E T H E G V S,  
C A T I L I N E.

IT is, me thinks, a morning, full of fate !  
It riseth slowly, as her sullen carre  
Had all the weights of sleepe, and death hung at it !  
Shee is not rosy-finger'd, but swolne black !  
Her face is like a water, turn'd to bloud, 195  
And her sick head is bound about with clouds,  
As if shee threatned night, ere noone of day !  
It does not looke, as it would haue a haile,  
Or health, wish'd in it, as on other mornes.

C E T. Why, all the fitter, L E N T V L V S : our comming 200  
Is not for salutation, we haue business.

C A T. Said nobly, braue C E T H E G V S. Where's A v-  
T R O N I V S ?

C E T. Is he not come ? C A T. Not here. C E T. Nor  
V A R G V N T E I V S ?

C A T. Neither. C E T. A fire in their beds, and bosomes,  
That so will serue their sloth, rather then vertue. 205  
They are no *Romanes*, and at such high need  
As now. L E N. Both they, L O N G I N V S, L E C C A,  
C V R I V S,

F V L V I V S, G A B I N I V S, gaue me word, last night,  
By L V C I V S B E S T I A, they would all be here,  
And early. C E T. Yes ? As you, had I not call'd you. 210  
Come, we all sleepe, and are meere dormice ; flies,  
A little lesse then dead : more dulnesse hangs  
On vs, then on the morne. W'are spirit-bound,  
In ribs of ice ; our whole blouds are one stone ;  
And honor cannot thaw vs ; nor our wants : 215  
Though they burne, hot as feuers, to our states.

C A T. I muse they would be tardy, at an houre  
Of so great purpose. C E T. If the gods had call'd  
Them, to a purpose, they would iust haue come

1. 191 fate!] *Fate.* Q      193 it!] *it.* Q      194 black!] *blacke.* Q  
197 day!] *day.* Q      198-9 haile . . . health] *Hayle . . . Health* Q  
215 honor] *Honour* Q      wants:] *wants,* Q



- 220 With the same tortoyse speed ! that are thus slow  
 To such an action, which the gods will enuy :  
 As asking no lesse meanes, then all their powers  
 Conioyn'd, t'effect. I would haue seene *Rome* burn't,  
 By this time ; and her ashes in an vrne :
- 225 The kingdome of the *Senate*, rent a-sunder ;  
 And the degenerate, talking gowne runne frighted,  
 Out of the aire of *Italie*. C A T. Spirit of men !  
 Thou, heart of our great enterprise ! how much  
 I loue these voices in thee ! C E T. O, the dayes
- 230 Of S Y L L A's sway, when the free sword tooke leaue  
 To act all that it would ! C A T. And was familiar  
 With entrailles, as our *Augures* ! C E T. Sonnes kild fathers,  
 Brothers their brothers. C A T. And had price, and praise.  
 All hate had licence giuen it : all rage raines.
- 235 C E T. Slaughter bestrid the streets, and stretch'd him-  
 selfe  
 To seeme more huge ; whilst to his stayned thighes  
 The gore he drew flow'd vp : and carryed downe  
 Whole heaps of limmes, and bodies, through his arch.  
 No age was spar'd, no sexe. C A T. Nay, no degree.
- 240 C E T. Not infants, in the porch of life were free.  
 The sick, the old, that could but hope a day  
 Longer, by natures bountie, not let stay.  
 Virgins, and widdowes, matrons, pregnant wiues,  
 All dyed. C A T. 'Twas crime inough, that they had liues.
- 245 To strike but onely those, that could doe hurt,  
 Was dull, and poore. Some fell to make the number,  
 As some the prey. C E T. The rugged C H A R O N fainted,  
 And ask'd a nauy, rather then a boate,  
 To ferry ouer the sad world that came :
- 250 The mawes, and dens of beasts could not receiue  
 The bodies, that those soules were frighted from ;  
 And e'en the graues were fild with men, yet liuing,  
 Whose flight, and feare had mix'd them, with the dead  
 C A T. And this shall be againe, and more, and more,
1. 220 speed !] speed, Q 226 gowne] Gowne, Q 253 flight] fligh Fz

Now LENTVLVS, the third CORNELIVS, 255  
Is to stand vp in Rome. LEN. Nay, vrge not that  
Is so vncertaine. CAT. How! LEN. I meane, not  
clear'd.

And, therefore, not to be reflected on.

CAT. The SYBILL's leaues vncertaine? or the com-  
ments

Of our graue, deepe, diuining men not cleare? 260

LEN. All prophecies, you know, suffer the torture.

CAT. But this, already, hath confess'd, without.

And so beene weigh'd, examin'd, and compar'd,

As 't were malicious ignorance in him,

Would faint in the beliefe. LEN. Doe you beleeeue it? 265

CAT. Doe I loue LENTVLVS? or pray to see it?

LEN. The *Augures* all are constant, I am meant.

CAT. They'had lost their science else. LEN. They  
count from CINNA.

CAT. And SYLLA next, and so make you the third;

All that can say the sunne is ris'n, must thinke it. 270

LEN. Men marke me more, of late, as I come forth!

CAT. Why, what can they doe lesse? CINNA, and  
SYLLA

Are set, and gone: and we must turne our eyes

On him that is, and shines. Noble CETHEGVS,

But view him with me, here! He lookes, already, 275

As if he shooke a scepter, o're the *Senate*,

And the aw'd purple dropt their rods, and axes!

The statues melt againe; and houshold gods

In grones confesse the trauaile of the citie;

The very walls sweat bloud before the change; 280

And stones start out to ruine, ere it comes.

CET. But he, and we, and all are idle still.

LEN. I am your creature, SERGIVS: And what ere  
The great CORNELIAN name shall winne to be,

1. 259 leaues] leafes F2 268 They'had *corr.* Q, Ff: They had Q  
originally 271 forth!] forth. Q 275 here!] here: Q 277  
axes!] axes. Q 279 trauaile] travaux F2

- 285 It is not *Augury*, nor the SYBILS bookes,  
 But CATILINE that makes it. CAT. I am shaddow  
 To honor'd LENTVLVS, and CETHEGVVS here,  
 Who are the heires of MARS. CET. By MARS himselfe,  
 CATILINE is more my parent : for whose vertue  
 290 Earth cannot make a shaddow great enough,  
 Though enuy should come too. O, there they are.  
 Now we shall talke more, though we yet doe nothing.

AVTRONIVS, VARGVNTEIVS, LONGINVS,  
 CVRIVS, LECCA, BESTIA, FVLVIVS,  
 GABINIVS, &c.

To them.

HAile LVCIVS CATILINE. VAR. Haile noble  
 SERGIUS.

LON. Haile PVBLIVS LENTVL<sup>9</sup>. CVR. Haile the  
 third CORNELI<sup>9</sup>.

- 295 LEC. CAIVS CETHEGVVS haile. CET. Haile sloth,  
 and words,

In steed of men, and spirits. CAT. Nay, deare CAIVS—

CET. Are your eyes yet vnseel'd? Dare they looke day  
 In the dull face? CAT. Hee's zealous, for the'affaire,  
 And blames your tardy comming, gentlemen.

- 300 CET. Vnlesse, we had sold our selues to sleepe, and ease,  
 And would be our slaues slaues— CAT. Pray you for-  
 beare.

CET. The north is not so starke, and cold. CAT.  
 CETHEGVVS—

BES. We shall redeeme all; if your fire will let vs.

CAT. You are too full of lightning, noble CAIVS.

- 305 Boy, see all doores be shut, that none approach vs,  
 On this part of the house. Goe you, and bid

i. 291 After 'too.' Noise within. G they are] they're Q, Ff  
 Before 293 AVTRONIVS . . . &c.] Enter Autronius, Vargunteius, Longinus,  
 Curius, Lecca, Bestia, Fulvius, Gabinius, &c. and Servants. G, continuing  
 the scene To them not in Q 294 PVBLIVS] Publius Q: PVB:  
 FR: PUB. F2 296 CAIVS—] Caius; Q 297 CET.] GET. FR  
 vnseel'd Q: vnsee'd FR: vnsee'd F2 301 slaues—] slaues. Q  
 302 CETHEGVVS—] Cethegus. Q 306 After 'house.' Exit Servant. G

The Priest, he kill the slaue I mark'd last night ;  
And bring me of his blood, when I shall call him :  
Till then, wait all without. VAR. How is't, AVTRO-  
NIVS!

AVT. LONGINVS? LON. CVRIVS? CVR. 310  
LECCA? VAR. Feele you nothing?

LON. A strange, vn-wonted horror doth inuade me,  
I know not what it is! LEC. The day goes back, *A dark-  
nesse*  
Or else my senses! CVR. As at ATREVS feast! *comes ouer  
the place.*  
FVL. Darknesse growes more, and more! LEN. The  
*vestall* flame,

I thinke, be out. GAB. What grone was that? CET. *A grone of  
many peo-  
ple is heard  
vnder ground*  
Our phant'sies.  
Strike fire, out of our selues, and force a day.

AVR. Again it sounds! BES. As all the citie gaue it! *Another.*

CET. We feare what our selues faine. VAR. What *A fiery  
light*  
light is this? *appeares.*

CVR. Looke forth. LEN. It still growes greater!

LEC. From whence comes it?

LON. A bloody arme it is, that holds a pine 320

Lighted, about the *Capitoll*! and, now,

It waues vnto vs! CAT. Braue, and omenous!

Our enterprise is seal'd. CET. In spight of darkness,

That would discountenance it. Looke no more;

We loose time, and our selues. To what we came for, 325

Speake LVCIVS, we attend you. CAT. Noblest *Romanes*,

If you were lesse, or that your faith, and vertue

Did not hold good that title, with your blood,

I should not, now, vnprofitably spend

My selfe in words, or catch at empty hopes, 330

By ayrie wayes, for solide certainties.

But since in many, and the greatest dangers,

I still haue known you no lesse true, then valiant,

And that I tast, in you, the same affections,

1. 309 After 'without.' *Exeunt Servants.* G 313, 316, 318, 319  
Stage directions not in Q 321 *Capitoll* f] *Capitoll*: Q 322  
omenous] ominous F2 325 loose] lose F2 327 or] or, Q

- 335 To will, or nill, to thinke things good, or bad,  
 Alike with me : (which argues your firme friendship)  
 I dare the boldlier, with you, set on foot,  
 Or leade, vnto this great, and goodliest action.  
 What I haue thought of it afore, you all  
 340 Haue heard apart. I then express'd my zeale  
 Vnto the glorie ; now, the neede enflames me :  
 When I fore-thinke the hard conditions,  
 Our states must vnder-goe, except, in time,  
 We doe redeeme our selues to libertie,  
 345 And break the yron yoke, forg'd for our necks.  
 For, what lesse can we call it ? when we see  
 The common-wealth engross'd so by a few,  
 The giants of the state, that doe, by turnes,  
 Enioy her, and defile her ! All the earth,  
 350 Her Kings, and *Tetrarchs*, are their tributaries ;  
 People, and nations, pay them hourelly stipends :  
 The riches of the world flowes to their coffers,  
 And not, to *Romes*. While (but those few) the rest,  
 How euer great we are, honest, and valiant,  
 355 Are hearded with the vulgar ; and so kept,  
 As we were onely bred, to consume corne ;  
 Or weare out wooll ; to drinke the cities water ;  
 Vngrac'd, without authoritie, or marke ;  
 Trembling beneath their rods : to whom, (if all  
 360 Were well in *Rome*) we should come forth bright axes.  
 All places, honors, offices are theirs !  
 Or where they will conferre 'hem ! They leaue vs  
 The dangers, the repulses, iudgements, wants :  
 Which how long will you beare, most valiant spirits ?  
 365 Were we not better to fall, once, with vertue,  
 Then draw a wretched, and dishonor'd breath,  
 To loose with shame, when these mens pride will laugh ?  
 I call the faith of gods, and men to question,

1. 340 apart.] apart; Q: a part. F2 349 defile her!] defile  
 her. Q 356 corne:] corne, Q 357 out] our F2 wooll:] wooll, Q  
 359 rods:] rods, Q 361 theirs:] theirs; Q 362 'hem!] 'hem: Q  
 367 loose] lose Q 368 question.] question; Q

The power is in our hands ; our bodies able ;  
 Our mindes as strong ; o'th' contrary, in them, 370  
 All things growne aged, with their wealth, and yeeres :  
 There wants, but onely to beginne the businesse,  
 The issue is certaine. C E T. L O N. On, let vs goe on.  
 C V R. B E S. Goe on, braue S E R G I V S. C A T. It doth  
 strike my soule,  
 (And, who can scape the stroke, that hath a soule, 375  
 Or, but the smallest aire of man within him ?)  
 To see them swell with treasure ; which they powre  
 Out i' their riots, eating, drinking, building,  
 I, i' the sea ! planing of hills with valleyes ;  
 And raying vallisies aboue hills ! whilst we 380  
 Haue not, to giue our bodies necessaries.  
 They ha' their change of houses, mannors, lordships ;  
 We scarce a fire, or poore houshold *Lar* !  
 They buy rare *Atticke* statues, *Tyrian* hangings,  
*Ephesian* pictures, and *Corinthian* plate, 385  
*Attalicke* garments, and now, new-found gemmes,  
 Since P O M P E Y went for *Asia*, which they purchase  
 At price of *prouinces* ! The riuer *Phasis*  
 Cannot affoord 'hem fowle ; nor *Lucrine* lake  
 Oysters enow : *Circei*, too, is search'd 390  
 To please the witty gluttony of a meale !  
 Their ancient habitations they neglect,  
 And set vp new ; then, if the eccho like not  
 In such a roome, they pluck downe those, build newer,  
 Alter them too : and, by all frantick wayes, 395  
 Vexe their wild wealth, as they molest the people,  
 From whom they force it ! yet, they cannot tame,  
 Or ouer-come their riches ! Not, by making  
 Bathes, orchards, fish-pooles ! letting in of seas

1. 371 yeeres:] yeeres. Q 380 hills! Fr: Hilles, Q: hils; F2  
 383 poore] a poore F2 Lar !] Lar. Q 386 and now, new-found]  
 and, now new-found, Q 387 Asia.] Asia; Q 388 prouinces !]  
 Prouinces. Q 389 affoord] affoord Q 390 *Circei*] *Circes* F2  
 391 meale!] meale. Q 394 those,] those; Q 395 too:] too; Q  
 397 it !] it. Q 398 riches !] riches. Q 399 -pooles!] -pooles, Q

- 400 Here ! and, then there, forcing 'hem out againe,  
 With mountaynous heaps, for which the earth hath lost  
 Most of her ribs, as entrailes ! being now  
 Wounded no lesse for marble, then for gold.  
 We, all this while, like calme, benum'd Spectators,  
 405 Sit, till our seates doe cracke ; and doe not heare  
 The thundring ruines : whilst, at home, our wants,  
 Abroad, our debts doe vrge vs ; our states daily  
 Bending to bad, our hopes to worse : and, what  
 Is left, but to be crush'd ? Wake, wake braue friends,  
 410 And meet the libertie you oft haue wish'd for.  
 Behold, renowne, riches, and glory court you.  
 Fortune holds out these to you, as rewards.  
 Me thinkes (though I were dumbe) th'affaire it selfe,  
 The opportunity, your needs, and dangers,  
 415 With the braue spoile the warre brings, should inuite you.  
 Vse me your generall, or souldier : neither,  
 My minde, nor body shall be wanting to you.  
 And, being *Consul*, I not doubt t'effect,  
 All that you wish, if trust not flatter me,  
 420 And you'd not rather still be slaues, then free.  
 C E T. Free, free. L O N. 'Tis freedom. C V R. Freedom  
 we all stand for.  
 C A T. Why, these are noble voyces ! Nothing wants  
 then,  
 But that we take a solemne sacrament,  
 To strengthen our designe. C E T. And so to act it.  
 425 Differing hurts, where powers are so prepar'd.  
 A V T. Yet, ere we enter into open act,  
 (With fauour) 'twere no losse, if 't might be enquir'd,  
 What the condition of these armes would be ?  
 V A R. I, and the meanes, to carry vs through ? C A T.  
 How, friends !

1. 400 Here ! *Fi* : Here ; *Q* : Here, *F2* 401 heaps,] heapes ; *Q*  
 402 entrailes !] entrayles, *Q* 406 ruines :] ruines, *Q* 407 vs :]  
 vs, *Q* 411 you. *corr. Q*, *Ff* : you ! *Q* originally 413 selfe,  
*F2* : selfe *Q*, *Fr* 419 wish,] wish : *Q* 420 you'd not] you had *Q*  
 422 voyces !] voices. *Q* 425 so] most *Q* 429 through?] through. *Q*

Thinke you, that I would bid you, graspe the winde ? 430  
 Or call you to th'embracing of a cloud ?  
 Put your knowne valures on so deare a businesse,  
 And haue no other second then the danger,  
 Nor other gyrlond then the losse ? Become  
 Your owne assurances. And, for the meanes, 435  
 Consider, first, the starke securitie  
 The common wealth is in now ; the whole *Senate*  
 Sleepy, and dreaming no such violent blow ;  
 Their forces all abroad ; of which the greatest,  
 That might annoy vs most, is fardest off, 440  
 In *Asia*, vnder P O M P E Y : those, neare hand,  
 Commanded, by our friends ; one army' in *Spaine*,  
 By C N E V S P I S O ; th'other in *Mauritania*,  
 By N V C E R I N V S ; both which I haue firme,  
 And fast vnto our plot. My selfe, then, standing 445  
 Now to be *Consul* ; with my hop'd Colleague  
 C A I V S A N T O N I V S ; one, no lesse engag'd  
 By'his wants then we : and, whom I'haue power to melt,  
 And cast in any mould. Beside, some others  
 That will not yet be nam'd, (both sure, and great ones) 450  
 Who, when the time comes, shall declare themselues,  
 Strong, for our party : so, that no resistance  
 In nature can be thought. For our reward, then,  
 First, all our debts are paid ; dangers of law,  
 Actions, decrees, iudgements against vs quitted ; 455  
 The rich men, as in S Y L L A's times, proscrib'd,  
 And publication made of all their goods ;  
 That house is yours ; that land is his ; those waters,  
 Orchards, and walkes a third's ; he has that honor,  
 And he that office : Such a *prouince* falls 460  
 To V A R G V N T E I V S : this to' A V T R O N I V S : that  
 To bold C E T H E G V S : *Rome* to L E N T V L V S.  
 You share the world, her magistracies, priest-hoods,

1. 434 gyrlond] Garland F3 437 in] in, Q 447 ANTONIVS ;]  
 Antonius, Q 448 By'his] By's F3 459 he has] He' has Q: he'  
 has Ff 460 office.] Office. Q 462 LENTVLVS] Lentulus: Q



- Wealth, and felicitie amongst you, friends ;  
 465 And CATILINE your seruant. Would you, C V R I V S,  
 Reuenge the contumely stuck vpon you,  
 In being remoued from the *Senate* ? Now,  
 Now, is your time. Would P V B L I V S L E N T V L V S  
 Strike, for the like disgrace ? Now, is his time.  
 470 Would stout L O N G I N V S walke the streets of *Rome*,  
 Facing the *Prætor* ? Now, has he a time  
 To spurne, and tread the *fascæ*, into dirt,  
 Made of the vsurers, and the *Lictors* braines.  
 Is there a beautie, here in *Rome*, you loue ?  
 475 An enemie you would kill ? What head's not yours ?  
 Whose wife, which boy, whose daughter, of what race,  
 That th'husband, or glad parents shall not bring you,  
 And boasting of the office ? only, spare  
 Your selues, and you haue all the earth beside,  
 480 A field, to exercise your longings in.  
 I see you rais'd, and reade your forward mindes  
 High, in your faces. Bring the wine, and bloud  
 You haue prepar'd there. L O N. How ! C A T. I'haue  
 kill'd a slaue,  
 And of his bloud caus'd to be mixt with wine.  
 485 Fill euery man his bowle. There cannot be  
 A fitter drinke, to make this *sanction* in.  
 Here, I beginne the sacrament to all.  
 O, for a clap of thunder, now, as loud,  
 As to be heard through-out the vniuerse,  
 490 To tell the world the fact, and to applaud it.  
 Be firme, my hand ; not shed a drop : but powre  
 Fiercenesse into me, with it, and fell thirst  
 Of more, and more, till *Rome* be left as bloud-lesse,  
 As euer her feares made her, or the sword.  
 495 And, when I leaue to wish this to thee, step-dame,  
 Or stop, to effect it, with my powers fainting ;  
 So may my bloud be drawne, and so drunke vp

1. 482 in] i' Q  
 491 powre] poure Q

483 After 'there.' Enter Servants with a bowl. G  
 492 it.] it ; Q      493 more, till] more : Till Q

As is this slaues. L O N. And so be mine. L E N. And *They*  
mine. *drinke.*

A V T. And mine. V A R. And mine. C E T. Swell mee  
my bowle yet fuller.

Here, I doe drinke this, as I would doe C A T O's, 500

Or the new fellow C I C E R O's : with that vow

Which C A T I L I N E hath giuen. C V R. So doe I.

L E C. And I. B E S. And I. F V L. And I. G A B. And  
all of vs.

C A T. Why, now's the businesse safe, and each man  
strengthened.

Sirrah, what aile you ? P A G. Nothing. B E S. Somewhat *He spies*  
modest. *one of his*

C A T. Slaue, I will strike your soule out, with my foot, *boyes not*  
Let me but find you againe with such a face : *answere—*

You whelp—— B E S. Nay, L V C I V S. C A T. Are you  
coying it,

When I command you to be free, and generall

To all ? B E S. You'll be obseru'd. C A T. Arise, and shew 510

But any least auersion i' your looke

To him that bourds you next, and your throat opens.

Noble confederates, thus farre is perfect.

Only your suffrages I will expect,

At the assembly for the choosing *Consuls*, 515

And all the voyces you can make by friends

To my election. Then, let me worke out

Your fortunes, and mine owne. Meane while, all rest

Seal'd vp, and silent, as when rigid frosts

Haue bound vp brookes, and riuers, forc'd wild beasts 520

Vnto their caues, and birds into the woods,

Clownes to their houses, and the countrey sleeps :

That, when the sodaine thaw comes, we may breake

Vpon 'hem like a deluge, bearing downe

Halfe *Rome* before vs, and inuade the rest 525

With cryes, and noise able to wake the vrnes

1. 498, 505 *Stage directions not in Q* 499 Swell] Crowne Q  
508 whelp——] Whelpe. Q

Of those are dead, and make their ashes feare.  
 The horrors, that doe strike the world, should come  
 Loud, and vnlook'd for : till they strike, be dumbe.

530 C E T. Oraculous S E R G I V S ! L E N. God-like C A T I -  
 L I N E !

## C H O R V S.

C An nothing great, and at the height  
 Remaine so long ? but it's owne weight  
 Will ruine it ? Or, is't blinde chance,  
 That still desires new states t'aduançe,  
 535 And quit the old ? Else, why must *Rome*,  
 Be by it selfe, now, ouer-come ?  
 Hath shee not foes inow of those,  
 Whom shee hath made such, and enclose  
 Her round about ? Or, are they none,  
 540 Except shee first become her owne ?  
 O wretchednesse of greatest states,  
 To be obnoxious to these fates :  
 That cannot keepe, what they doe gaine ;  
 And what they raise so ill sustaine !  
 545 *Rome*, now, is Mistris of the whole  
 World, sea, and land, to either pole ;  
 And euen that fortune will destroy  
 The power that made it : shee doth ioy  
 So much in plentie, wealth, and ease,  
 550 As, now, th'excesse is her disease.  
 Shee builds in gold ; and, to the starres ;  
 As, if shee threatned heau'n with warres :  
 And seekes for hell, in quarries deepe,  
 Giuing the fiends, that there doe keepe,  
 555 A hope of day. Her women weare  
 The spoiles of nations, in an eare,

1. 527 feare. *Q*: feare, *Fr*: feare; *F2* 528-9 "Thee . . ." Loud *Q*  
 530 S E R G I V S ! . . . C A T I L I N E ! ] *Sergius*. . . *Catiline*. *Q* *Exeunt*. add G  
 531-2 C An nothing great . . . } *corr. Q, Ff*: Can nothing great . . . } *Q*  
 Remaine . . . } Remaine . . . }  
 originally 536 selfe, *F2*: selfe; *Q, Fr* 544 raise] raise, *F2*  
 sustaine ' ] sustaine *Q* 548 it: shee] it. Shee *Q*

Chang'd for the treasure of a shell ;  
 And, in their loose attires, doe swell  
 More light then sailes, when all windes play :  
 Yet, are the men more loose then they ! 560  
 More kemb'd, and bath'd, and rub'd, and trim'd,  
 More sleek'd, more soft, and slacker limm'd ;  
 As prostitute : so much, that kinde  
 May seeke it selfe there, and not finde.  
 They eate on beds of silke, and gold ; 565  
 At yuorie tables ; or, wood sold  
 Dearer then it : and, leauing plate,  
 Doe drinke in stone of higher rate.  
 They hunt all grounds ; and draw all seas ;  
 Foule euery brooke, and bush ; to please 570  
 Their wanton tasts : and, in request  
 Haue new, and rare things ; not the best !  
 Hence comes that wild, and vast expence,  
 That hath enforc'd *Romes* vertue, thence,  
 Which simple pouerty first made : 575  
 And, now, ambition doth inuade  
 Her state, with eating auarice,  
 Riot, and euery other vice.  
 Decrees are bought, and lawes are sold,  
 Honors, and offices for gold ; 580  
 The peoples voyces : and the free  
 Tongues, in the *Senate*, bribed bee.  
 Such ruine of her manners *Rome*  
 Doth suffer now, as shee's become  
 (Without the gods it soone gaine-say) 585  
 Both her owne spoiler, and owne prey.  
 So, *Asia*, 'art thou cru'llly euen  
 With vs, for all the blowes thee giuen ;  
 When we, whose vertue conquer'd thee,  
 Thus, by thy vices, ruin'd bee. 590

1. 557 shell:] shell! *Fa* 560 they!] they, *Q* 562 sleek'd]  
*sleek F3* 571 tasts] *Taste F3* 572 best!] best. *Q* 581  
 voyces:] voyces, *F2*

*Act II.*

FVLVIA, GALLA, SERVANT.

**T**Hose roomes doe smell extremely. Bring my glasse,  
And table hither. GALLA. GAL. Madame. FVL.  
Looke

Within, i' my blew cabinet, for the pearle  
I'had sent me last, and bring it. GAL. That from CLO-  
DIVS?

FVL. From CAIVS CAESAR. You're for CLO-  
DIVS, still.

5 Or CVRIVS. Sirrha, if QVINTVS CVRIVS come,  
I am not in fit moode; I keepe my chamber:  
Giue warning so, without. GAL. Is this it? madame.

FVL. Yes, helpe to hang it in mine care. GAL. Be-  
leeue me,

10 It is a rich one, madame. FVL. I hope so:  
It should not be worne there else. Make an end,  
And binde my haire vp. GAL. As 'twas yesterday?

FVL. No, nor the t'other day. When knew you me  
Appeare, two dayes together, in one dressing?

GAL. Will you ha't i'the globe, or spire? FVL. How  
15 thou wilt;

Any way, so thou wilt doe it, good impertinence.  
Thy company, if I slept not very well

A nights, would make me, an errant foole, with questions.

GAL. Alas, madame—— FVL. Nay, gentle halfe o'the  
dialogue, cease.

20 GAL. I doe it, indeed, but for your exercise,  
As your physitian bids me. FVL. How! Do's he bid you  
To anger me for exercise? GAL. Not to anger you,  
But stirre your bloud a little: There's difference

ACT II.] ACT II. SCENE I | *A Room in Fulvia's House.* | *Enter Fulvia,*  
*Galla, and Servant.* G 1 extremely.] extremely; Q 2 hither.]  
hither, corr. Q: hether, Q originally 6 After 'CVRIVS.' *Exit Galla.*  
G 8 After 'without.' *Exit Servant.* | *Re-enter Galla.* G 19  
Alas, madame——] Alas Madam. Q

Betweene luke-warme, and boyling, madame. FVL. LOVE!  
Shee meanes to cooke me, I thinke? Pray you, ha' done. 25

GAL. I meane to dresse you, madame. FVL. O, my  
I V N O,

Be friend to me! Offring at wit, too? Why, GALLA!  
Where hast thou been? GAL. Why? madam! FVL.

What hast thou done

With thy poore innocent selfe? GAL. Wherefore? sweet  
madame!

FVL. Thus to come forth, so sodainely, a wit-worme? 30

GAL. It pleases you to flout one. I did dreame  
Of lady SEMPRONIA—— FVL. O, the wonder is out.  
That did infect thee? Well, and how? GAL. Me thought,  
Shee did discourse the best—— FVL. That euer thou  
heard'st?

GAL. Yes. FVL. I' thy sleepe? Of what was her dis-  
course? 35

GAL. O'the *republike*, madame, and the state,  
And how shee was in debt, and where shee meant  
To raise fresh summes: Shee's a great states-woman!

FVL. Thou dream'st all this? GAL. No, but you know  
she is, madam,

And both a mistris of the *latine* tongue, 40  
And of the *greeke*. FVL. I, but I neuer dreamt it, GALLA,  
As thou hast done, and therefore you must pardon me.

GAL. Indeed, you mock me, madame. FVL. Indeed,  
no.

Forth, with your learned lady. Shee has a wit, too?

GAL. A very masculine one. FVL. A shee-Criticalk,  
GALLA? 45

And can compose, in verse, and make quick iests,  
Modest, or otherwise? GAL. Yes, madame. FVL. Shee  
can sing, too?

And play on instruments? GAL. Of all kindes, they say.

II. 29 Wherefore?] Wherefore, Q 30 sodainely] suddenly Fz  
32 SEMPRONIA——] Sempronio. Q 34 best——] best. Q 38  
-woman!] -woman. Q 39 dream'st] dreamt'st Q 41 dreamt]  
dreampt Q 44 Forth,] Forth Q lady.] Ladie: Q

- F v L. And doth dance rarely? G A L. Excellent! So well,
- 50 As a bald *Senator* made a iest, and said,  
'Twas better, then an honest woman need.
- F v L. Tut, shee may beare that. Few wise womens honesties
- Will doe their courtship hurt. G A L. Shee's liberall too, madame.
- F v L. What! of her money, or her honor, pray thee?
- 55 G A L. Of both, you know not which shee doth spare least.
- F v L. A comely commendation. G A L. Troth, 'tis pitty, Shee is in yeeres. F v L. Why, G A L L A? <G A L.> For it is.
- F v L. O, is that all? I thought thou'hadst had a reason.
- G A L. Why, so I haue. Shee has beene a fine lady.
- 60 And, yet, shee dresses her selfe (except you, madame)  
One o'the best in *Rome*: and paints, and hides  
Her decayes very well. F v L. They say, it is  
Rather a visor, then a face shee weares.
- G A L. They wrong her verily, madame, shee do's sleeke
- 65 With crums of bread, and milke, and lies a nights  
In as neat gloues——But shee is faine of late  
To seeke, more then shee's sought to (the fame is)  
And so spends that way. F v L. Thou know'st all! But,
- G A L L A,
- What say you to C A T I L I N E S lady, O R E S T I L L A?
- 70 There is the gallant! G A L. Shee do's well. Shee has  
Very good sutes, and very rich: but, then,  
Shee cannot put 'hem on. Shee knowes not how  
To weare a garment. You shall haue her all  
Iewels, and gold sometimes, so that her selfe
- 75 Appeares the least part of her selfe. No', in troth,  
As I liue, madame, you put 'hem all downe

ii. 49 Excellent!] Excellent. Q So Q: So, Ff 54 honor, pray  
thee] honour, pr'y thee F2 57 GAL. Q2, F2: GAI. Q: om. FI  
66 gloues——] gloues. Q 68 all!] all. Q 70 gallant!] Gallant. Q  
72 not] not, Q 75 No',] No' Q, Ff

With your meere strength of iudgement ! and doe draw,  
too,  
The world of *Rome* to follow you ! you attire  
Your selfe so diuersly ! and with that spirit !  
Still to the noblest humors ! They could make 80  
Loue to your dresse, although your face were away, they  
say.

F V L. And body too, and ha' the better match on't ?  
Say they not so too, G A L L A ? Now ! What newes  
Trauailes your count'nance with ? S E R. If 't please you,  
madame,  
The lady S E M P R O N I A is lighted at the gate ; 85  
G A L. C A S T O R, my dreame, my dreame. S E R. And  
comes to see you.

G A L. For V E N V S sake, good madame see her. F V L.  
Peace,  
The foole is wild, I thinke. G A L. And heare her talke,  
Sweet madame, of state-matters, and the *Senate*.

S E M P R O N I A, F V L V I A, G A L L A.

F V L V I A, good wench, how dost thou ? F V L. Well,  
S E M P R O N I A. 90

Whither are you thus early addrest ? S E M. To see  
A V R E L I A O R E S T I L L A. Shee sent for me.  
I came to call thee, with me, wilt thou goe ?

F V L. I cannot now, in troth, I haue some letters  
To write, and send away. S E M. Alas, I pittie thee. 95  
I ha' beene writing all this night (and am  
So very weary) vnto all the *tribes*,  
And *centuries*, for their voyces, to helpe C A T I L I N E,  
In his election. We shall make him *Consul*,  
I hope, amongst vs. C R A S S V S, I, and C A E S A R 100  
Will carry it for him. F V L. Do's he stand for't ?

II. 77 iudgement!] iudgement; Q 78 follow you!] follow you:  
Q: follow! F2 79 diuersly! . . . spirit!] diuersly, . . . spirit, Q  
80 humors!] humors. Q 83 After 'GALLA?' Re-enter Servant. G  
87 After 'her.' Exit Servant. G Before 90 SEMPRONIA . . . GALLA.]  
Enter Sempronia. G, continuing the scene 93 me,] mee; Q, F2



S E M. H'is the chiefe *Candidate*. F v L. Who stands beside ?

(Giue me some wine, and poulder for my teeth.

S E M. Here's a good pearle in troth ! F v L. A pretty one.

105 S E M. A very orient one ! ) There are competitors,  
C A I V S A N T O N I V S, P V B L I V S G A L B A, L V <sup>al</sup> I V S  
C A S S I V S L O N G I N V S, Q V I N T V S C O R N I F I C I V S,  
C A I V S L I C I N I V S, and that talker, C I C E R O. the  
But C A T I L I N E, and A N T O N I V S will be choser<sub>1</sub> .

110 For foure o' the other, L I C I N I V S, L O N G I N V S,  
G A L B A, and C O R N I F I C I V S will giue way. S I  
And C I C E R O they will not choose. F v L. No ? w<sub>1</sub> > ?

S E M. It will be cross'd, by the nobilitie.

G A L. (How shee do's vnderstand the common re<sub>1</sub>usi-  
nesse ! ) y.

115 S E M. Nor, were it fit. He is but a new fellow,  
An in-mate, here, in *Rome* (as C A T I L I N E calls him)  
And the *Patricians* should doe very ill,  
To let the *Consul*-ship be so defil'd  
As 't would be, if he obtain'd it ! A meere vpstart,

120 That has no pedigree, no house, no coate,  
No ensignes of a family ? F v L. He'has vertue.

S E M. Hang vertue, where there is no bloud : 'tis vice,  
And, in him, sawcinesse. Why should he presume  
To be more learned, or more eloquent,

125 Then the nobilitie ? or boast any qualitie  
Worthy a noble man, himselfe not noble ?

F v L. 'Twas vertue onely, at first, made all men noble.

S E M. I yeeld you, it might, at first, in *Romes* poore age ;  
When both her Kings, and *Consuls* held the plough,  
130 Or garden'd well : But, now, we ha' no need,  
To digge, or loose our sweat for't. We haue wealth,  
Fortune and ease, and then their stock, to spend on,

II. 103 (Giue] Giue Q 104 troth !] troth. Q 105 one !)]  
one. Q 110 o'] of Q 111 way.] way, Q 114 (How . . .  
businessse !)] How . . . busines! Q 119 it!] it? Q 121 He'has]  
He has F2 131 loose] lose F2

Of name, for vertue ; which will beare vs out  
 'Gainst all new commers : and can neuer faile vs,  
 While the succession stayes. And, we must glorifie, 135  
 A mushrome ? one of yesterday ? a fine speaker ?  
 'Cause he has suck'd at *Athens* ? and aduance him,  
 To our owne losse ? No, F V L V I A. There are they  
 Can speake *greeke* too, if need were. C A E S A R, and I,  
 Haue sate vpon him ; so hath C R A S S V S, too : 140  
 And others. We haue all decreed his rest,  
 For rising farder. G A L. Excellent rare lady !

F V L. S E M P R O N I A, you are beholden to my woman,  
 here.

Shee do's admire you. S E M. O good G A L L A, how dost  
 thou ?

G A L. The better, for your learned ladiship. 145

S E M. Is this grey poulder, a good dentifrice ?

F V L. You see I vse it. S E M. I haue one is whiter.

F V L. It may be so. S E M. Yet this smells well. G A L.  
 And clenches

Very well, madame, and resists the crudities.

S E M. F V L V I A, I pray thee, who comes to thee, now ? 150  
 Which of our great *Patricians* ? F V L. Faith, I keepe  
 No catalogue of 'hem. Sometimes I haue one,  
 Sometimes another, as the toy takes their blouds.

S E M. Thou hast them all. Faith, when was Q V I N T V S  
 C V R I V S,

Thy speciall seruant, here ? F V L. My speciall seruant ? 155

S E M. Yes, thy idolater, I call him. F V L. He may be  
 yours,

If you doe like him. S E M. How ! F V L. He comes, not,  
 here,

I haue forbid him, hence. S E M. V E N V S forbid !

F V L. Why ? S E M. Your so constant louer. F V L. So  
 much the rather.

II. 133 vertue ;] Vertue, Q 139 CAESAR,] Cæsar Q 140  
 too:] too; Q 145 your corr. Q: your Q originally 148 so] so,  
 F2 157 here,] here; F2

160 I would haue change. So would you too, I am sure.  
And now, you may haue him. S E M. Hee's fresh yet,  
F V L V I A :

Beware, how you doe tempt me. F V L. Faith, for me,  
He's somewhat too fresh, indeed. The salt is gone,  
That gaue him season. His good gifts are done.

165 He do's not yeeld the crop that he was wont.  
And, for the act, I can haue secret fellows,  
With backs worth ten of him, and shall please me  
(Now that the land is fled) a myriade better.

S E M. And those one may command. F V L. 'Tis true :  
these Lordings,

170 Your noble *Faunes*, they are so imperious, saucy,  
Rude, and as boistrous as *Centaures*, leaping  
A lady, at first sight. S E M. And must be borne  
Both with, and out, they thinke. F V L. Tut, Ile obserue  
None of 'hem all : nor humour 'hem a iot

175 Longer, then they come laden in the hand,  
And say, here's t'one, for th'tother. S E M. Do's C A E S A R  
giue well ?

F V L. They shall all giue, and pay well, that come here,  
If they will haue it : and that, iewells, pearle,  
Plate, or round summes, to buy these. I'am not taken

180 With a cob-swan, or a high-mounting bull,  
As foolish L E D A, and E V R O P A were,  
But the bright gold, with D A N A E. For such price,  
I would endure, a rough, harsh I V P I T E R,  
Or ten such thundring gamsters : and refraine

185 To laugh at 'hem, till they are gone, with my much suffring.

S E M. Th'art a most happy wench, that thus canst make  
Vse of thy youth, and freshnesse, in the season :  
And hast it, to make vse of. F V L. (Which is the happi-  
nesse.)

II. 163 too *corr.* Q, Ff: to Q *originally* 165 do's *corr.* Q, Ff:  
dos Q *originally* 169 true:] true, Q Lordings] Lordlings F2  
170 so imperious *corr.* Q, Ff: so, imperious Q *originally* 171 Cen-  
taures:] *Centaures*; Q 174 humour] humor Q 178 that, iewells]  
that, jewels F2: that iewells Q: that iewells F1 184 gamsters:]  
Gamsters; Q 188 it,] it Q

SEM. I am, now, faine to giue to them, and keepe  
Musique, and a continuall table, to inuite 'hem ; 190

FVL. (Yes, and they study your kitchin, more then you)

SEM. Eate myselfe out with vsury, and my lord, too,  
And all my officers, and friends beside,  
To procure moneyes, for the needfull charge  
I must be at, to haue 'hem : and, yet, scarce 195

Can I atchieue 'hem, so. FVL. Why, that's because  
You affect yong faces onely, and smooth chinnes,  
SEMPRONIA. If you'd loue beards, and bristles,  
(One with another, as others doe) or wrinkles——

Who's that? Looke GALLA. GAL. 'Tis the party,  
madame. 200

FVL. What party? Has he no name? GAL. 'Tis  
QVINTVS CVRIVS.

FVL. Did I not bid 'hem, say, I kept my chamber?

GAL. Why, so they doe. SEM. Ile leaue you, FVLVIA.

FVL. Nay, good SEMPRONIA, stay. SEM. In faith,  
I will not.

FVL. By IVNO, I would not see him. SEM. Ile not  
hinder you. 205

GAL. You know, he will not be kept out, madame.

SEM. No,

Nor shall not, carefull GALLA, by my meanes.

FVL. As I doe liue, SEMPRONIA—— SEM. What  
needs this?

FVL. Goe, say, I am a-sleepe, and ill at ease.

SEM. By CASTOR, no, I'll tell him, you are awake ; 210  
And very well. Stay GALLA ; Farewell FVLVIA :

I know my manners. Why doe you labour, thus,  
With action, against purpose? QVINTVS CVRIVS,  
Shee is, yfaith, here, and in disposition.

FVL. Spight, with your courtesie! How shall I be  
tortur'd! 215

11. 189-90 *G divides at 'music | And'* 191 (Yes . . . you)] Yes . . .  
you: *Q* 197 [yong] young *F2* 198 you'd *F2*: you'd *Q*, *Fr*  
200 *Knocking within.* add *G* 208 SEMPRONIA——] *Sempronia. Q*  
210 no,] no; *Q* 214 *Exit.* add *G* 215 courtesie!] courtesie. *Q*

CVRIVS, FVLVIA, GALLA.

W Here are you, faire one, that conceale your selfe,  
And keepe your beautie, within locks, and barres,  
here,

Like a fooles treasure? F v L. True, shee was a foole,  
When, first, shee shew'd it to a thiefe. C v R. How, pretty  
solenesse!

220 So harsh, and short? F v L. The fooles artillery, sir.

C v R. Then, take my gowne off, for th'encounter. F v L.  
Stay sir.

I am not in the moode. C v R. I'll put you into't.

F v L. Best put your selfe, i'your case againe, and keepe  
Your furious appetite warme, against you haue place for't.

225 C v R. What! doe you coy it? F v L. No sir. I'am not  
proud.

C v R. I would you were. You thinke, this state becomes  
you?

By H E R C V L E S, it do's not. Looke i'your glasse, now,  
And see, how sciruely that countenance shewes;

You would be loth to owne it. F v L. I shall not change it.

230 C v R. Faith, but you must; and slack this bended brow;  
And shoot lesse scorne: there is a fortune comming  
Towards you, Daintie, that will take thee, thus,  
And set thee aloft, to tread vpon the head

Of her owne statue, here, in *Rome*. F v L. I wonder,

235 Who let this promiser in! Did you, good diligence?

Giue him his bribe, againe. Or if you had none,

Pray you demand him, why he is so ventrous,

To presse, thus, to my chamber, being forbidden,

Both, by my selfe, and seruants? C v R. How! This's  
handsome!

240 And somewhat a new straine! F v L. 'Tis not strain'd, sir.

'Tis very naturall. C v R. I haue knowne it otherwise,

II. Before 216 CVRIVS . . . GALLA] *Enter Curius*. G, continuing the  
scene 216 selfe,] selfe; Q 219 solennesse] sullennesse F2  
221 th'encounter] the'encounter Q

Betweene the parties, though. F v L. For your fore-  
knowledge,

Thanke that, which made it. It will not be so,  
Hereafter, I assure you. C v R. No, my mistris?

F v L. No, though you bring the same materialls. C v R.  
Heare me,

245

You ouer-act when you should vnder-doe.

A little call your selfe againe, and thinke.

If you doe this to practise on me', or finde

At what forc'd distance you can hold your seruant ;

That't be an artificiall trick, to enflame,

250

And fire me more, fearing my loue may need it,

As, heretofore, you ha' done : why, proceede.

F v L. As I ha' done heretofore? C v R. Yes, when  
you'ld faine

Your husbands iealousie, your seruants watches,

Speake softly, and runne often to the dore,

255

Or to the windore, forme strange feares that were not ;

As if the pleasure were lesse acceptable,

That were secure. F v L. You are an impudent fellow.

C v R. And, when you might better haue done it, at the  
gate,

To take me in at the casement. F v L. I take you in? 260

C v R. Yes, you my lady. And, then, being a-bed with you,

To haue your well taught wayter, here, come running,

And cry, her lord, and hide me without cause,

Crush'd in a chest, or thrust vp in a chimney.

When he, tame crow, was winking at his farme ;

265

Or, had he beene here, and present, would haue kept

Both eyes, and beake seal'd vp, for sixe sesterces.

F v L. You haue a slanderous, beastly, vnwash'd tongue,  
I' your rude mouth, and sauouring your selfe,

Vn-manner'd lord. C v R. How now! F v L. It is your  
title, sir.

270

ii. 244 mistris] Mistresse Q (so 351) 245 No.] No Q 246  
ouer-act . . . vnder-doe] ouer act . . . vnderdoe Q 248 me'] me'  
Q, Ff 252 done:] done; Q 256 windore] Window F3  
267 seal'd] seel'd W

Who (since you ha' lost your owne good name, and know  
not

What to loose more) care not, whose honor you wound,  
Or fame, you poyson with it. You should goe,  
And vent your selfe, i' the region, where you liue,

275 Among the suburbe-brothels, bawdes, and brokers,  
Whither your broken fortunes haue design'd you.

C V R. Nay, then I must stop your fury, I see ; and pluck

*He offers  
to force  
her, and  
shee  
drawes  
her knife.*

The tragick visor off. Come, lady C Y P R I S,  
Know your owne vertues, quickly. Ile not be

Put to the wooing of you thus, a-fresh,

At euery turne, for all the V E N V S in you.

Yeeld, and be pliant ; or by P O L L V X—— How now ?

Will L A I S turne a L V C R E C E ? F V L. No, but by

C A S T O R,

Hold off your rauishers hands, I pierce your heart, else.

285 Ile not be put to kill my selfe, as shee did,

For you, sweet T A R Q V I N E. What ? doe you fall off ?

Nay, it becomes you graciously ! Put not vp.

You'll sooner draw your weapon on me, I thinke it,

Then on the *Senate*, who haue cast you forth

290 Disgracefully, to be the common tale

Of the whole citie ; base, infamous man !

For, were you other, you would there imploy

Your desperate dagger. C V R. F V L V I A, you doe know

The strengths you haue vpon me ; doe not vse

295 Your power too like a tyran : I can beare,

Almost vntill you breake me. F V L. I doe know, sir,

So do's the *Senate*, too, know, you can beare.

C V R. By all the gods, that *Senate* will smart deepe .

For your vpbraidings. I should be right sorry

300 To haue the meanes so to be veng'd on you,

(At least, the will) as I shall shortly on them.

But, goe you on still ; fare you well, deare lady :

11. 272 loose] lose *Fa* 273 fame,] fame' *Q*, *Fr*: fame *Fa* 278  
Stage direction not in *Q* 285 did, *F3*: did *Q*, *Ff* 291  
man !] Man : *Q* 295 tyran] Tyrant *F3* 298 that] the *Fa*

You could not still be faire'vnlesse you were proud.  
 You will repent these moodes, and ere 't be long, too.  
 I shall ha' you come about, againe. F v L. Doe you thinke  
 so ?

305

C v R. Yes, and I know so. F v L. By what augurie ?

C v R. By the faire entrailes of the matrons chests,  
 Gold, pearle, and iewells, here in *Rome*, which F v L v I A  
 Will then (but late) say that shee might haue shar'd :  
 And, grieuing, misse. F v L. Tut, all your promis'd moun-  
 taynes,

310

And seas, I am so stalely acquainted with——

C v R. But, when you see the vniuersall floud  
 Runne by your coffers ; that my lords, the *Senators*,  
 Are sold for slaues, their wiues for bond-women,  
 Their houses, and fine gardens giuen away, 315  
 And all their goods, vnder the speare, at out-cry,  
 And you haue none of this ; but are still F v L v I A,  
 Or perhaps lesse, while you are thinking of it :  
 You will aduise then, Coynesse. with your cushion,  
 And looke o' your fingers ; say, how you were wish'd ; 320  
 And so, he left you. F v L. Call him againe, G A L L A :  
 This is not vsuall ! something hangs on this  
 That I must winne out of him. C v R. How now, melt you ?

F v L. Come, you will laugh, now, at my easinesse !  
 But, 'tis no miracle : Doues, they say, will bill, 325  
 After their pecking, and their murmuring. C v R. Yes,  
 And then 'tis kindly. I would haue my loue  
 Angrie, sometimes, to sweeten off the rest  
 Of her behauiour. F v L. You doe see, I studie  
 How I may please you, then. But you thinke, C v R I V S, 330  
 'Tis couetise hath wrought me : if you loue me,  
 Change that vnkinde conceipt. C v R. By my lou'd soule,  
 I loue thee, like to it ; and 'tis my studie,  
 More then mine owne reuenge, to make thee happy.

II. 316 out-cry] out cry F1 321 After 'you.' Exit. G After  
 'GALLA' Exit Galla. G 322 vsuall!] vsuall, Q 323 After  
 'him.' Re-enter Curius. G 324 easinesse!] easinesse? Q 331  
 me:] me; Q



- 335 F v L. And 'tis that iust reuenge doth make me happy  
To heare you prosequute : and which, indeed,  
Hath wonne me, to you, more, then all the hope  
Of what can else be promis'd. I loue valour  
Better, then any lady loues her face,  
340 Or dressing : then my selfe do's. Let me grow  
Still, where I doe embrace. But, what good meanes  
Ha' you t'effect it ? Shall I know your proiect ?  
C v R. Thou shalt, if thou'lt be gracious. F v L. As I  
can be.  
C v R. And wilt thou kisse me, then ? F v L. As close  
as shells  
345 Of cockles meet. C v R. And print 'hem deepe ? F v L.  
Quite through  
Our subtile lips. C v R. And often ? F v L. I will sow  
'hem,  
Faster, then you can reape. What is your plot ?  
C v R. Why, now my F v L v i a lookes, like her bright  
name !  
And is her selfe ! F v L. Nay, answere me, your plot :  
350 I pray thee tell me, Q v i n t v s. C v R. I, these sounds  
Become a mistris. Here is harmonie !  
*She kisses  
and flat-  
ters him  
along still.* When you are harsh, I see, the way to bend you  
Is not with violence, but seruice. Cruell,  
A lady is a fire : gentle, a light.  
355 F v L. Will you not tell me, what I aske you ? C v R. All,  
That I can thinke, sweet loue, or my brest holds,  
Ile poure into thee. F v L. What is your designe, then ?  
C v R. Ile tell thee ; C A T I L I N E shall now be *Consull* :  
But, you will heare more, shortly. F v L. Nay, deare  
loue——  
360 C v R. Ile speake it, in thine armes, let vs goe in.  
Rome will be sack'd, her wealth will be our prize ;  
By publike ruine, priuate spirits must rise.

ii. 336 prosequute] prosecute F2 341 But,] But Q 348  
name !] name, Q 349 selfe !] selfe. Q 350 pray thee] pr'ythee  
F2 351 harmonie !] harmony. Q *Stage direction not in Q* 359  
loue——] Loue Q 360 armes,] armes ; Q 362 *Exeunt.* add G

CHORVS.

**G**reat father MARS, and greater IOVE,  
 By whose high auspice, *Rome* hath stood  
 So long; and, first, was built in blood 365  
 Of your great nephew, that then stroue  
 Not with his brother, but your rites:  
 Be present to her now, as then,  
 And let not proud, and factious men  
 Against your wills oppose their mights. 370  
 Our *Consuls*, now, are to be made;  
 O, put it in the publique voice  
 To make a free, and worthy choice:  
 Excluding such as would inuade  
 The common wealth. Let whom we name 375  
 Haue wisdom, fore-sight, fortitude,  
 Be more with faith, then face endu'd,  
 And studie conscience, aboue fame.  
 Such, as not seeke to get the start  
 In state, by power, parts, or bribes, 380  
 Ambition's bawdes: but moue the *tribes*  
 By vertue, modestie, desert.  
 Such, as to iustice will adhere,  
 What euer great one it offend:  
 And from the'embraced truth not bend 385  
 For enuy, hatred, gifts, or feare.  
 That, by their deeds, will make it knowne,  
 Whose dignitie they doe sustaine;  
 And life, state, glorie, all they gaine,  
 Count the republikes, not their owne. 390  
 Such the old BRVTI, DECII were,  
 The CIPRI, CVRTII, who did giue  
 Themselues for *Rome*: and would not liue,  
 As men, good, only for a yeere.  
 Such were the great CAMILLI, too; 395  
 The FABII, SCIPIO's; that still thought

No worke, at price inough, was bought,  
 That for their countrey they could doe.  
 And, to her honor, so did knit ;  
 400 As all their acts were vnderstood  
 The sinewes of the publique good :  
 And they themselues, one soule, with it.  
 These men were truely magistrates ;  
 These neither practis'd force, nor formes :  
 405 Nor did they leaue the helme, in stormes !  
 And such they are make happy states.

## Act III.

CICERO, CATO, CATVLVS, ANTONIVS,  
 CRASSVS, CÆSAR, CHORVS,  
 LICTORS.

Great honors are great burdens : but, on whom  
 They're cast with enuie, he doth beare two loades.  
 His cares must still be double to his ioyes,  
 In any dignitie ; where, if he erre,  
 5 He findes no pardon : and, for doing well  
 A most small praise, and that wrung out by force.  
 I speake this, *Romanes*, knowing what the weight  
 Of the high charge, you'haue trusted to me, is.  
 Not, that thereby I would with art decline  
 10 The good, or greatnesse of your benefit ;  
 For, I ascribe it to your singular grace,  
 And vow, to owe it to no title else,  
 Except the gods, that C I C E R O' is your *Consul*.  
 I haue no vrnes ; no dustie moniments ;  
 15 No broken images of ancestors,  
 Wanting an eare, or nose ; no forged tables

11. 405 stormes!] stormes: Q Act III] ACT III. SCENE I. | *The Field of Mars.* | Enter Cicero, Cato, Catulus, Antonius, Crassus, Cæsar, Chorus, Lictors, and People. G 1 honors] honours F2 4 erre, F2 : erre Q, Fr 6 out] out, Q 14 moniments] monuments F2

Of long descents ; to boast false honors from :  
 Or be my vnder-takers to your trust.  
 But a new man (as I am stil'd in *Rome*)  
 Whom you haue dignified ; and more, in whom 20  
 Yo'haue cut a way, and left it ope for vertue  
 Hereafter, to that place : which our great men  
 Held shut vp, with all ramparts, for themselues.  
 Nor haue but few of them, in time beene made  
 Your *Consuls*, so ; new men, before me, none : 25  
 At my first suite ; in my iust yeere ; preferd  
 To all competitors ; and some the noblest——

C R A. Now the vaine swels. C A E S. Vp glorie. C I C.

And to haue

Your loud consents, from your owne vtter'd voices ;  
 Not silent bookes : nor from the meaner *tribes*, 30  
 But first, and last, the vniuersall concourse !  
 This is my ioy, my gladnesse. But my care,  
 My industrie, and vigilance now must worke,  
 That still your counsell of me be approu'd ;  
 Both, by your selues, and those, to whom you haue, 35  
 With grudge, prefer'd me : two things I must labour,  
 That neither they vpbraid, nor you repent you.  
 For euery lapse of mine will, now, be call'd  
 Your error, if I make such. But, my hope is,  
 So to beare through, and out, the *Consul*-ship, 40  
 As spight shall ne're wound you, though it may me.  
 And, for my selfe, I haue prepar'd this strength,  
 To doe so well ; as, if there happen ill  
 Vnto me, it shall make the gods to blush :  
 And be their crime, not mine, that I am enui'd. 45

C A E S. O confidence ! more new, then is the man !

C I C. I know well, in what termes I doe receiue  
 The common wealth, how vexed, how perplex'd :

III. 17 descents ;] descents, Q 22 place:] place, Q 23 ram-  
 parts] rampires Q 25 *Consuls*.] *Consuls* Q 27 noblest——]  
 noblest. Q 31 concourse!] concourse. Q 34 counsell] coun-  
 sell Q 39 error.] error; Q 44 blush:] blush, Q 45 enui'd.]  
 enui'd ; Q

In which, there's not that mischiefe, or ill fate,  
 50 That good men feare not, wicked men expect not.

I know, beside, some turbulent practises  
 Alreadie on foot, and rumors of moe dangers——

C R A. Or you will make them, if there be none. C I C.

Last,

I know, 'twas this, which made the enuie, and pride  
 55 Of the great *Romane* bloud bate, and giue way  
 To my election. C A T. M A R C V S T V L L I V S, true ;  
 Our need made thee our *Consul*, and thy vertue.

C A E S. C A T O, you will vn-doe him, with your praise.

C A T O. C A E S A R will hurt himselfe, with his owne enuie.

60 C H O R. The voice of C A T O is the voice of *Rome*.

C A T O. The voice of *Rome* is the consent of heauen !  
 And that hath plac'd thee, C I C E R O, at the helme,  
 Where thou must render, now, thy selfe a man,  
 And master of thy art. Each petty hand  
 65 Can steere a ship becalm'd ; but he that will  
 Gouverne, and carry her to her ends, must know  
 His tides, his currents ; how to shift his sailes ;  
 What shee will beare in foule, what in faire weathers ;  
 Where her springs are, her leakes ; and how to stop 'hem ;  
 70 What sands, what shelues, what rocks doe threaten her ;  
 The forces, and the natures of all winds,  
 Gusts, stormes, and tempests ; when her keele ploughs hell,  
 And deck knocks heauen : then, to manage her,  
 Becomes the name, and office of a pilot.

75 C I C. Which I'll performe, with all the diligence,  
 And fortitude I haue ; not for my yeere,  
 But for my life ; except my life be lesse,  
 And that my yeere conclude it : if it must,  
 Your will, lou'd gods. This heart shall yet employ  
 80 A day, an houre is left me, so, for *Rome*,  
 As it shall spring a life, out of my death,  
 To shine, for euer glorious in my facts.

The vicious count their yeeres, vertuous their acts.

CHOR. Most noble *Consul* ! Let vs wait him home.

CAES. Most popular *Consul* he is growne, me thinks ! 85

CRA. How the rout cling to him ! CAES. And CATO  
leads 'hem !

CRA. You, his colleague, ANTONIVS, are not look't  
on.

ANT. Not I, nor doe I care. CAES. He enioyes rest,  
And ease, the while. Let th'others spirit toile,  
And wake it out, that was inspir'd for turmoile. 90

CATV. If all reports be true, yet, CAIVS CAESAR,  
The time hath need of such a watch, and spirit.

CAES. Reports ? Doe you beleeeue 'hem CATVLVS,  
Why, he do's make, and breed 'hem for the people ;  
T'endear his seruice to 'hem. Doe you not tast 95  
An art, that is so common ? Popular men,  
They must create strange monsters, and then quell 'hem ;  
To make their artes seeme something. Would you haue  
Such an HERCVLEAN actor in the scene,  
And not his HYDRA ? They must sweat no lesse 100  
To fit their properties, then t'expresse their parts.

CRA. Treasons, and guiltie men are made in states  
Too oft, to dignifie the magistrates.

CATV. Those states be wretched, that are forc'd to buy  
Their rulers fame, with their owne infamy. 105

CRA. We therefore, should prouide that ours doe not.

CAES. That will ANTONIVS make his care. ANT.  
I shall.

CAES. And watch the watcher. CATV. Here comes  
CATILINE.

How do's he brooke his late repulse ? CAES. I know not.  
But hardly sure. CAT<v>. LONGINVS, too, did  
stand ? 110

III. 83 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "The After 84 *Exeunt Cato, Cicero,*  
*Lictors, and People.* G 85 thinks!] thinks. Q 89 while.] while: Q  
102-5 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "CRA. . . "Too . . . "CATV. . . "Their . . .  
105 fame.] fame F2 106 therefore, should] therefore should, F2:  
*query, We, therefore, should 110, 114 CATV.] CATV. F2*

CAES. At first : but he gaue way vnto his friend.

CATV. Who's that come? LENTVLVS? CAES.  
Yes. He is againe

Taken into the *Senate*. ANT. And made *Prætor*.

CAT <v>. I know't. He had my suffrage, next the  
*Consuls*.

115 CAES. True, you were there, Prince of the *Senate*, then.

CATILINE, ANTONIVS, CATVLVS, CÆ-  
SAR, CRASSVS, LONGINVS,  
LENTVLVS.

HAile noblest *Romanes*. The most worthy *Consul*,  
I gratefully salute your honor. ANT. I could wish

It had beene happier, by your fellowship,  
Most noble SERGIVS, had it pleas'd the people.

120 CATI. It did not please the gods; who'instruct the  
people :

And their vnquestion'd pleasures must be seru'd.

They know what's fitter for vs, then our selues ;

And 'twere impietie, to thinke against them.

CATV. You beare it rightly, LVCIVS ; and, it glads  
me,

125 To find your thoughts so euen. CATI. I shall still  
Studie to make them such to *Rome*, and heauen.

(I would with-draw with you, a little, IVLIVS.

CAES. Ile come home to you : CRASSVS would not  
ha' you

To speake to him, 'fore QVINTVS CATVLVS.

130 CATI. I apprehend you.) No, when they shall iudge  
Honors conuenient for me, I shall haue 'hem,  
With a full hand : I know it. In meane time,  
They are no lesse part of the common-wealth,  
That doe obey, then those, that doe command.

III. 112 that] that's F2 114 *Consuls*] *Consuls*; Q, Ff Before  
116 CATILINE . . . LENTVLVS] Enter *Catiline*, *Longinus*, and *Lentulus*, G.  
continuing the scene 127, 130 (I . . . you.)] I . . . you. Q 131  
Honors] Honours F2

CATV. O, let me kisse your fore-head, LVCIVS. 135  
How are you wrong'd! CATI. By whom? CATV.

Publike report.

That giues you out, to stomack your repulse ;  
And brooke it deadly. CATI. Sir, shee brookes not me.  
Beleeue me rather, and your selfe, now, of me :

It is a kinde of slander, to trust rumour. 140

CATV. I know it. And I could be angrie with it.

CATI. So may not I. Where it concernes himselfe,  
Who's angrie at a slander, makes it true.

CATV. Most noble SERGIUS! This your temper  
melts me.

CRA. Will you doe office to the *Consul*, QVINTVS? 145

CAES. Which CATO, and the rout haue done the other?

CATV. I wait, when he will goe. Be still your selfe.  
He wants no state, or honors, that hath vertue.

CATI. Did I appeare so tame, as this man thinkes me?  
Look'd I so poore? so dead? So like that nothing, 150  
Which he calls vertuous? O my breast, breake quickly ;  
And shew my friends my in-parts, lest they thinke  
I haue betraid 'hem. (LON. Where's GABINVS?

LEN. Gone.

LON. And VARGVNTIVS? LEN. Slipt away ;  
all shrunk :

Now that he mist the *Consul*-ship.) CATI. I am 155

The scorne of bond-men ; who are next to beasts.  
What can I worse pronounce my selfe, that's fitter ?  
The owle of *Rome*, whom boyes, and girles will hout !

That were I set vp, for that wooden god,  
That keeps our gardens, could not fright the crows, 160  
Or the least bird from muting on my head.

(LON. 'Tis strange how he should misse it. LEN. Is't  
not stranger,

III. 138 Sir,] Sir : Q 146 Which] That Q 148 honors]  
honours F2 vertue. F2 : vertue, Q, FI Exeunt Catulus, Antonius,  
Cæsar, Crassus, Lictors, &c. G 153-5 (LON. . . -ship)] LON. . .  
-ship. Q 158 hout!] hout ; Q 161 muting] muting Q  
162-5 (LON. . . true.)] LON. . . true. Q



- The vpstart C I C E R O should carrie it so,  
 By all consents, from men so much his masters ?  
 165 L O N. 'Tis true.) C A T I. To what a shaddow, am I  
     melted !  
     (L O N. A N T O N I V S wan it but by some few voices.)  
     C A T I. Strooke through, like aire, and feele it not. My  
     wounds  
     Close faster, then they're made. (L E N. The whole de-  
     signe,  
     And enterprise is lost by't. All hands quit it,  
 170 Vpon his faile.) C A T I. I grow mad at my patience.  
     It is a visor that hath poison'd me.  
     Would it had burnt me vp, and I died inward :  
     My heart first turn'd to ashes. (L O N. Here's C E T H E -  
     G V S yet.)

C A T I L I N E, C E T H E G V S, L E N T V L V S,  
 L O N G I N V S, C A T O.

- 175 **R**Epulse vpon repulse ? An in-mate, *Consul* ?  
 That I could reach the axell, where the pinnes are,  
 Which bolt this frame ; that I might pull 'hem out,  
 And pluck all into *chaos*, with my selfe.  
     C E T. What, are we wishing now ? C A T I. Yes, my  
     C E T H E G V S.  
     Who would not fall with all the world about him ?  
 180 C E T. Not I, that would stand on it, when it falls ;  
     And force new nature out, to make another.  
     These wishings tast of woman, not of *Romane*.  
     Let vs seeke other armes. C A T I. What should we doe ?  
     C E T. Doe, and not wish ; something, that wishes take  
     not :  
 185 So sodaine, as the gods should not preuent,  
     Nor scarce haue time, to feare. C A T I. O noble C A I V S !

III. 166 (L O N. . . . voices.)] L O N. . . . voyces. Q 168-70 (L E N.  
 . . . faile.)] L E N. . . . fayle. Q 173 (L O N. . . . yet.)] L O N. . . . yet. Q  
 Before 174 C A T I L I N E . . . C A T O] Enter *Cethegus*. G, continuing the  
 scene 185 sodaine] sudden F2

C E T. It likes me better, that you are not *Consul*.  
 I would not goe through open dores, but breake 'hem ;  
 Swim to my ends, through bloud ; or build a bridge  
 Of carcasses ; make on, vpon the heads 190  
 Of men, strooke downe, like piles ; to reach the liues  
 Of those remaine, and stand : Then is't a prey,  
 When danger stops, and ruine makes the way.

C A T I. How thou dost vtter me, braue soule, that may not,  
 At all times, shew such as I am ; but bend 195  
 Vnto occasion ? L E N T V L V S, this man,  
 If all our fire were out, would fetch downe new,  
 Out of the hand of I O V E ; and riuert him  
 To *Caucasus*, should he but frowne : and let  
 His owne gaunt Eagle flie at him, to tire. 200

L E N. Peace, here comes C A T O. C A T I. Let him  
 come, and heare.

I will no more dissemble. Quit vs all ;  
 I, and my lou'd C E T H E G V S here, alone  
 Will vndertake this giants warre, and carrie it.

L E N. What needs this, L V C I V S ? L O N. S E R G I V S,  
 be more warie. 205

C A T I. Now, M A R C V S C A T O, our new *Consuls* spie,  
 What is your sowre austeritie sent t'explore ?

C A T O. Nothing in thee, licentious C A T I L I N E :  
 Halts, and racks cannot expresse from thee  
 More, then thy deeds. 'Tis onely iudgement waits thee. 210

C A T I. Whose ? C A T O's ? shall he iudge me ? C A T O.

No, the gods ;  
 Who, euer, follow those, they goe not with :  
 And *Senate* ; who, with fire, must purge sicke *Rome*  
 Of noisome citizens, whereof thou'art one.  
 Be gone, or else let me. 'Tis bane to draw 215  
 The same aire with thee. C E T. Strike him. L E N. Hold,  
 good C A I V S.

III. 191 strooke] strucke F2 196 Vnto] Upon F2 Before  
 205 Re-enter Cato. G 207 explore ? F2 : explore Q, F1 212  
*Gnomic pointing in Q*: "Who . . . 214 thou'art F2. thou'rt Q. thou  
 art F1 216 CAIVS. F2: Caius; Q: CAIVS; F1

CET. Fear'st thou not, CATO? CATO. Rash CETHE-  
GVS, no.

'Twere wrong with *Rome*, when CATILINE and thou  
Doe threat, if CATO fear'd. CATI. The fire you speake  
of,

220 If any flame of it approach my fortunes,  
Ile quench it, not with water, but with ruine.

CATO. You heare this, *Romanes*. CATI. Beare it to  
the *Consul*.

CET. I would haue sent away his soule, before him.  
You are too heauie, LENTVLVS, and remisse;

225 It is for you we labour, and the kingdome  
Promis'd you by the SYBILL'S. CATI. Which his  
*Prætor*-ship,

And some small flatterie of the *Senate* more,  
Will make him to forget. LEN. You wrong me, LVCIVS.

LON. He will not need these spurres. CET. The action  
needs 'hem.

230 These things, when they proceed not, they goe backward.

LEN. Let vs consult then. CET. Let vs, first, take  
armes.

They that denie vs iust things, now, will giue  
All that we aske; if once they see our swords.

CAT. Our obiects must be sought with wounds, not  
words.

### CICERO, FVLVIA.

235 **I**S there a heauen? and gods? and can it be  
They should so slowly heare, so slowly see!  
Hath I O V E no thunder? or is I O V E become  
Stupide as thou art? ô neere-wretched *Rome*,  
When both thy *Senate*, and thy gods doe sleepe,  
240 And neither thine, nor their owne states doe keepe!  
What will awake thee, heauen? what can excite

III. 217, 231 CET.] CET, Q 219 of, F2: of Q, Fr 220 flame]  
flames F2 222 Exit. add G 230 Gnostic pointing in Q: "These...  
234 Exit. add G Before 235 CICERO, FULVIA] SCENE II. | Cicero's  
House. | Enter Cicero and Fulvia. G

Thine anger, if this practice be too light ?  
 His former drifts partake of former times,  
 But this last plot was onely CATILINES.  
 O, that it were his last. But he, before 245  
 Hath safely done so much, hee'll still dare more.  
 Ambition, like a torrent, ne're lookes back ;  
 And is a swelling, and the last affection  
 A high minde can put off : being both a rebell  
 Vnto the soule, and reason, and enforceth 250  
 All lawes, all conscience, treades vpon religion,  
 And offereth violence to natures selfe.  
 But, here, is that transcends it ! A black purpose  
 To confound nature : and to ruine that,  
 Which neuer age, nor mankinde can repaire ! 255  
 Sit downe, good lady ; CICERO is lost  
 In this your fable : for, to thinke it true  
 Tempteth my reason. It so farre exceeds  
 All insolent fictions of the tragick *scene* !  
 The common-wealth, yet panting, vnder-neath 260  
 The stripes, and wounds of a late ciuill warre,  
 Gasping for life, and scarce restor'd to hope ;  
 To seeke t'oppresse her, with new crueltie,  
 And vtterly extinguish her long name,  
 With so prodigious, and vnheard-of fiercenesse ! 265  
 What sinke of monsters, wretches of lost minds,  
 Mad after change, and desp'rate in their states,  
 Wearied, and gall'd with their necessities,  
 (For all this I allow them) durst haue thought it ?  
 Would not the barbarous deeds haue beene beleeu'd, 270  
 Of MARIVS, and SYLLA, by our children,  
 Without this fact had rise forth greater, for them ?  
 All, that they did, was pietie, to this !  
 They, yet, but murdred kinsfolke, brothers, parents,  
 Rauish'd the virgins, and, perhaps, some matrons ; 275  
 They left the citie standing, and the temples :

III. 253 it ] it. Q      255 repaire ] repaire. Q      259 scene ]  
 Scene. Q      272 Without ] Without, Q      273 this ] this. Q

- The gods, and maiestie of *Rome* were safe yet !  
 These purpose to fire it, to dispoile them,  
 (Beyond the other euils) and lay wast  
 280 The farre-triumphed world : for, vnto whom  
*Rome* is too little, what can be enough ?  
 F v L. 'Tis true, my lord, I had the same discourse.  
 C i c. And, then, to take a horride sacrament  
 In humane bloud, for execution  
 285 Of this their dire designe ; which might be call'd  
 The height of wickednesse : but that, that was higher,  
 For which they did it ! F v L. I assure your lordship,  
 The extreme horror of it almost turn'd me  
 To aire, when first I heard it ; I was all  
 290 A vapor, when 'twas told me : and I long'd  
 To vent it any where. 'Twas such a secret,  
 I thought, it would haue burnt me vp. C i c. Good  
 F v L v i a,  
 Feare not your act ; and lesse repent you of it.  
 F v L. I doe not, my good lord. I know to whom  
 295 I haue vtter'd it. C i c. You haue discharg'd it, safely.  
 Should *Rome*, for whom you haue done the happy seruice,  
 Turne most ingrate ; yet were your vertue paid  
 In conscience of the fact : so much good deedes  
 Reward themselues. F v L. My lord, I did it not  
 300 To any other aime, but for it selfe.  
 To no ambition. C i c. You haue learn'd the difference  
 Of doing office to the publike weale,  
 And priuate friendship : and haue shewne it, lady.  
 Be still your selfe. I haue sent for Q v i n t v s C v r i v s,  
 305 And (for your vertuous sake) if I can winne him,  
 Yet, to the common-wealth ; he shall be safe too.  
 F v L. Ile vnder-take, my lord, he shall be won.  
 C i c. Pray you, ioyne with me, then : and helpe to  
 worke him.

III. 277 yet] yet. Q  
 290 me:] me; Q  
 friendship, Q

287 it] it. Q  
 291 where:] where; Q  
 307 shall] will Q

288 horror] horroure F2  
 303 friendship:]

CICERO, LICTOR, FVLVIA,  
CVRIVS.

**H**OW now? Is he come? LIC. He's here, my lord.

CIC. Go presently,

Pray my colleague ANTONIVS, I may speake with him, 310

About some present businesse of the state ;

And (as you goe) call on my brother QVINTVS,

And pray him, with the *Tribunes* to come to me.

Bid CVRIVS enter. FVLVIA, you will aide me ?

FVL. It is my dutie. CIC. O, my noble lord ! 315

I haue to chide you, yfaith. Giue me your hand.

Nay, be not troubled ; 't shall be gently, CVRIVS.

You looke vpon this lady ? What ! doe you ghesse

My businesse, yet ? Come, if you frowne, I thunder :

Therefore, put on your better lookes, and thoughts. 320

There's nought but faire, and good intended to you ;

And I would make those your complexion.

Would you, of whom the *Senate* had that hope,

As, on my knowledge, it was in their purpose,

Next sitting, to restore you : as they ha' done 325

The stupide, and vngratefull LENTVLVS

(Excuse me, that I name you thus, together,

For, yet, you are not such) would you, I say,

A person both of bloud and honor, stock't

In a long race of vertuous ancestors, 330

Embarke your selfe for such a hellish action,

With parricides, and traytors ; men turn'd *furies*,

Out of the wast, and ruine of their fortunes !

(For 'tis despaire, that is the mother of madnesse)

Such as want (that, which all conspirators, 335

But they, haue first) meere colour for their mischief ?

O, I must blush with you. Come, you shall not labour

To extenuate your guilt, but quit it cleane ;

III. Before 309 CICERO . . . CVRIVS] *Enter a Lictor.* G, continuing the  
scene 314 After 'enter.' *Exit Lictor.* G 315 After 'dutie.'

*Enter Curius.* G 326 LENTVLVS] *Lentulus ; Q* 332 traytors ;]

Traitors, Q 333 fortunes !] fortunes ; Q 338 To extenuate]

To extenuate F2

Bad men excuse their faults, good men will leaue 'hem.

340 He acts the third crime, that defends the first.

Here is a lady, that hath got the start,

In pietie, of vs all ; and, for whose vertue,

I could almost turne loue, againe : but that

TERENTIA would be iealous. What an honor

345 Hath shee atchieued to her selfe ! What voices,

Titles, and loud applauses will pursue her,

Through euery street ! What windores will be fill'd,

To shoot eyes at her ! What enuy, and grieve in matrons,

They are not shee ! when this her act shall seeme

350 Worthier a chariot, then if POMPEY came,

With Asia chain'd ! All this is, while shee liues.

But dead, her very name will be a statue !

Not wrought for time, but rooted in the minds

Of all posteritie : when brasse, and marble,

355 I, and the Capitol it selfe is dust !

FVL. Your honor thinks too highly of me. CIC. No :

I cannot thinke inough. And I would haue

Him emulate you. 'Tis no shame, to follow

The better precedent. Shee shewes you, CVRIVS,

360 What claime your countrey layes to you ; and what dutie

You owe to it : be not afraid, to breake

With murderers, and traytors, for the sauing

A life, so neere, and necessary to you,

As is your countries. Thinke but on her right.

365 No child can be too naturall to his parent.

Shee is our common mother, and doth challenge

The prime part of vs ; doe not stop, but giue it :

He, that is void of feare, may soone be iust.

And no religion binds men to be traitors.

370 FVL. My lord, he vnderstands it ; and will follow

Your sauing counsell : but his shame, yet, staves him.

III. 339-40 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "Bad . . . "He . . . 342  
 pietie,] piety, *Q*: pietie *F1*: piety *F2* 352 a om. *F2* statue !]  
 Statue, *Q* 354 posteritie:] posterity; *Q* 355 dust!] dust. *Q*  
 365 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "No . . . 368-9 *Gnomic pointing in*  
*Q*: "He . . . "And . . . 371 counsell: but] counsell. But *Q*

I know, that he is comming. C v R. Doe you know it ?  
 F v L. Yes, let me speake with you. C v R. O you  
 are—— F v L. What am I ?  
 C v R. Speake not so loud. F v L. I am, what you  
 should be,  
 Come, doe you thinke, I'd walke in any plot, 375  
 Where madame S E M P R O N I A should take place of me,  
 And F v L v I A come i'the *rere*, or o'the *by* ?  
 That I would be her second, in a businesse,  
 Though it might vantage me all the sunne sees ?  
 It was a silly phant'sie of yours. Apply 380  
 Your selfe to me, and the *Consul*, and be wise ;  
 Follow the fortune I ha' put you into :  
 You may be something this way, and with safetie.  
 C i c. Nay, I must tolerate no whisperings, lady.  
 F v L. Sir, you may heare. I tell him, in the way, 385  
 Wherein he was, how hazardous his course was.  
 C i c. How hazardous ? how certayne to all ruine.  
 Did he, or doe, yet, any of them imagine  
 The gods would sleepe, to such a *Stygian* practice,  
 Against that common-wealth, which they haue founded 390  
 With so much labour, and like care haue kept,  
 Now neere seuen hundred yeeres ? It is a madnesse,  
 Wherewith heauen blinds 'hem, when it would confound 'hem,  
 That they should thinke it. Come, my C v R i v s,  
 I see your nature's right ; you shall no more 395  
 Be mention'd with them : I will call you mine,  
 And trouble this good shame, no farder. Stand  
 Firme for your countrey ; and become a man  
 Honor'd, and lou'd. It were a noble life,  
 To be found dead, embracing her. Know you, 400  
 What thanks, what titles, what rewards the *Senate*  
 Will heape vpon you, certaine, for your seruice ?  
 Let not a desperate action more engage you,

III. 373 After 'you.' Takes him aside, G are——] -are. Q After  
 374 Lowering her voice. G 377 o'] on Q 380 silly] seely Q  
 398 your] you F2



Then safetie should : and wicked friendship force

405 What honestie, and vertue cannot worke.

F v L. He tells you right, sweet friend : 'Tis sauving counsaile.

C v R. Most noble *Consul*, I am yours, and hers ;

I mean my countries : you, haue form'd me new.

Inspiring me, with what I should be, truly.

410 And I intreat, my faith may not seeme cheaper

For springing out of penitence. C i c. Good C v R i v s,

It shall be dearer rather, and because

I'd make it such, heare, how I trust you more.

Keepe still your former face : and mixe againe

415 With these lost spirits. Runne all their mazes with 'hem :

For such are treasons. Find their windings out,

And subtle turnings, watch their snaky wayes,

Through brakes, and hedges, into woods of darkenesse,

Where they are faine to creepe vpon their brests

420 In paths ne're trod by men, but wolues, and panthers.

Learne, beside C A T I L I N E, L E N T V L V S, and those,

Whose names I haue ; what new ones they draw in ;

Who else are likely ; what those great ones are,

They doe not name ; what wayes they meane to take ;

425 And whither their hopes point : to warre, or ruine,

By some surprize. Explore all their intents,

And what you finde may profit the republique,

Acquaint me with it, either, by your selfe,

Or this your vertuous friend, on whom I lay

430 The care of vrging you. He see, that *Rome*

Shall proue a thankefull, and a bounteous mother :

Be secret as the night. C v R. And constant, sir.

C i c. I doe not doubt it. Though the time cut off

All vowes. The dignitie of truth is lost,

435 With much protesting. Who is there ! This way,

III. 404 should:] should; Q 408 you,] you' Q, Ff 413 I'd] I'd Q, Ff 414 face:] face; Q 415 'hem:] 'hem; Q 422 haue:] haue, Q 425 point: . . . warre.] point; . . . warre: Q 430 you.] you; Q 434 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: " The . . . 435 After 'therel' *Enter a Servant. G*

Lest you be seene, and met. And when you come,  
Be this your token, to this fellow. Light 'hem.

*He  
whispers  
with him*

O *Rome*, in what a sicknesse art thou fall'n !

How dangerous, and deadly ! when thy head  
Is drown'd in sleepe, and all thy body feu'ry !

440

No noise, no pulling, no vexation wakes thee,  
Thy *lethargie* is such : or if, by chance,  
Thou heau'st thy eye-lids vp, thou dost forget  
Sooner, then thou wert told, thy proper danger.

I did vn-reuerendly, to blame the gods,  
Who wake for thee, though thou snore to thy selfe.

445

Is it not strange, thou should'st be so diseas'd,  
And so secure ? But more, that the first symptomes  
Of such a maladie, should not rise out

From any worthy member, but a base

450

And common strumpet, worthlesse to be nam'd

A haire, or part of thee ? Thinke, thinke, hereafter,

What thy needes were, when thou must vse such meanes :

And lay it to thy brest, how much the gods

Vpbraid thy foule neglect of them ; by making

455

So vile a thing, the author of thy safetie.

They could haue wrought by nobler wayes : haue strooke

Thy foes with forked lightning ; or ramm'd thunder ;

Throwne hills vpon 'hem, in the act ; haue sent

Death, like a dampe, to all their families ;

460

Or caus'd their consciences to burst 'hem. But,

When they will shew thee what thou art, and make

A scornfull difference 'twixt their power, and thee,

They helpe thee by such aides, as geese, and harlots.

How now ? What answer ? Is he come ? L i c. Your

brother,

465

Will streight be here ; and your colleague A N T O N I V S

Said, coldly, he would follow me. C i c. I, that

Troubles me somewhat, and is worth my feare.

III. 437 Stage direction not in Q: Exit Servant with Curius and Ful-  
via. add G 457 strooke] strucke F2 After 464 Re-enter  
Lictor. G 467 After 'me.' Exit. G 468 feare.] feare ; Q'

- He is a man, 'gainst whom I must prouide,  
 470 That (as hee'll doe no' good) he doe no harme.  
 He, though he be not of the plot, will like it,  
 And wish it should proceed : for, vnto men,  
 Prest with their wants, all change is euer welcome.  
 I must with offices, and patience win him ;  
 475 Make him, by art, that which he is not borne,  
 A friend vnto the publique ; and bestow  
 The *prouince* on him ; which is by the *Senate*  
 Decreed to me : that benefit will bind him.  
 'Tis well, if some men will doe well, for price :  
 480 So few are vertuous, when the reward's away.  
 Nor must I be vnmindfull of my priuate ;  
 For which I haue call'd my brother, and the *tribunes*,  
 My kins-folke, and my clients to be neere me :  
 He that stands vp 'gainst traytors, and their ends,  
 485 Shall need a double guard, of law, and friends :  
 Especially, in such an enuious state,  
 That sooner will accuse the magistrate,  
 Then the delinquent ; and will rather grieve  
 The treason is not acted, then beleuee.

## CÆSAR, CATILINE.

- 490 **T**He night growes on ; and you are for your meeting :  
 Ile therefore end in few. Be resolute,  
 And put your enterprise in act : the more  
 Actions of depth, and danger are consider'd,  
 The lesse assuredly they are perform'd.  
 495 And thence it hapneth, that the brauest plots  
 (Not executed straight) haue beene discouer'd.  
 Say, you are constant, or another, a third,

III. 470 harme:] harme; Q 472 proceed:] proceede; Q 479  
 price:] price; Q 480 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "So . . . away ]  
 away" Q 483 me:] me; Q 484-9 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "He . .  
 "Shall . . . "Especially . . . "That . . . "Then . . . "The . . . 489 *Exit*  
 add G Before 490 'CÆSAR, CATILINE' ] SCENE III. | *A Room in Catiline's*  
*House* | *Enter Cæsar and Catiline* G 493-4 *Gnomic pointing in Q*,  
 which should have begun with The in l. 492 . . . "Actions . . . "The . .

Or more ; there may be yet one wretched spirit,  
 With whom the feare of punishment shall worke  
 'Boue all the thoughts of honor, and reuenge. 500  
 You are not, now, to thinke what's best to doe,  
 As in beginnings ; but, what must be done,  
 Being thus entred : and slip no aduantage  
 That may secure you. Let 'hem call it mischiefe ;  
 When it is past, and prosper'd, 'twill be vertue. 505  
 Th'are petty crimes are punish'd, great rewarded.  
 Nor must you thinke of perill ; since, attempts,  
 Begunne with danger, still doe end with glory :  
 And, when need spurres, despaire will be call'd wisdom.  
 Lesse ought the care of men, or fame to fright you ; 510  
 For they, that win, doe seldome receiue shame  
 Of victorie : how ere it be atchiu'd ;  
 And vengeance, least. For who, besieg'd with wants,  
 Would stop at death, or any thing beyond it ?  
 Come, there was neuer any great thing, yet, 515  
 Aspired, but by violence, or fraud :  
 And he that sticks (for folly of a conscience)  
 To reach it—— C A T. Is a good religious foole.

C A E S. A superstitious slaue, and will die beast.  
 Good night. You know what C R A S S V S thinkes, and I, 520  
 By this : Prepare you wings, as large as sayles,  
 To cut through ayre, and leaue no print behind you.  
 A serpent, ere he comes to be a dragon,  
 Do's eate a bat : and so must you a *Consul*,  
 That watches. What you doe, doe quickly S E R G I V S. 525  
 You shall not stir for me. C A T. Excuse me, lights there.

C A E S. By no meanes. C A T. Stay then. All good  
 thoughts to C A E S A R.  
 And like to C R A S S V S. C A E S. Mind but your friends  
 counsells.

III. 505-6 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "When . . . "Th'are . . . 507-9  
*Gnomic pointing in Q*: "Attempts . . . "Begunne . . . "And . . .  
 507 attempts,] attempts; F2 511-12 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "For  
 . . . "Of . . . 519 superstitious] superstitious F1 524 you] y ou  
 F1 528 *Exit*. add G

CATILINE, AVRELIA, LECCA.

OR, I will beare no mind. How now, AVRELIA?  
530 O Are your confederates come? the ladies? AVR. Yes.

CAT. And is SEMPRONIA there? AVR. She is.

CAT. That's well.

Shee ha's a sulphurous spirit, and will take  
Light at a sparke. Breake with them, gentle loue,  
About the drawing as many of their husbands,  
535 Into the plot, as can : if not, to rid 'hem.  
That'll be the easier practice, vnto some,  
Who haue beene tir'd with 'hem long. Sollicite  
Their aydes, for money : and their seruants helpe,  
In firing of the citie, at the time  
540 Shall be design'd. Promise 'hem states, and empires,  
And men, for louers, made of better clay,  
Then euer the old potter TITAN knew.  
Who's that? O, PORCIVS LECCA! are they met?  
LEC. They are all, here. CAT. Loue, you haue your  
instructions :  
545 Ile trust you with the stuffe you haue to worke on.  
You'll forme it? PORCIVS, fetch the siluer eagle  
I ga' you in charge. And pray 'hem, they will enter.

CATILINE, CETHEGVS, CVRIVS, LENTV-  
LVS, VARGVNTEIVS, LONGINVS,  
GABINIVS, CEPARIVS,  
AVTRONIVS, &c.

O, Friends, your faces glad me. This will be  
Our last, I hope, of consultation.  
550 CET. So, it had need. CVR. We loose occasion, daily.  
CAT. I, and our meanes : whereof one wounds me most,

III. Before 'CATILINE . . . LECCA' Enter *Aurelia*. G, continuing the  
scene 538 money:] money; Q 542 potter] porter F2 Before  
543 Enter *Lecca*. G 546 After 'it?' Exit *Aurelia*. G 547 Exit  
*Lecca*. add G Before 548 CATILINE . . . &c.] Enter *Cethegus*, *Curius*,  
*Lentulus*, *Vargunteius*, *Longinus*, *Gabinus*, *Ceparius*, *Autronius*, &c. G,  
continuing the scene 550 CET.] CAT. Q loose] lose F2

That was the fairest. P I S O is dead, in *Spaine*.

C E T. As we are, here. L O N. And, as it is thought, by enuy

Of P O M P E Y's followers. L E N. He too's comming backe,

Now, out of *Asia*. C A T. Therefore, what we'intend, 555  
We must be swift in. Take your seates, and heare.

I haue, already, sent S E P T I M I V S  
Into the *Picene* territorie; and I V L I V S,  
To raise force, for vs, in *Apulia*:

M A N L I V S at *Fesulæ*, is (by this time) vp, 560  
With the old needie troops, that follow'd S Y L L A:

And all doe but expect, when we will giue  
The blow at home. Behold this siluer eagle,

'Twas M A R I V S standard, in the *Cimbrian* warre,  
Fatall to *Rome*; and, as our augures tell me, 565

Shall still be so: for which one ominous cause,  
I'haue kept it safe, and done it sacred rites,

As to a god-head, in a chappell built  
Of purpose to it. Pledge then all your hands,

To follow it, with vowes of death, and ruine, 570  
Strooke silently, and home. So waters speake

When they runne deepest. Now's the time, this yeere,  
The twenti'th, from the firing of the *Capitol*,

As fatall too, to *Rome*, by all predictions:  
And, in which, honor'd L E N T V L V S must rise 575

A king, if he pursue it. C V R. If he doe not,  
He is not worthy the great destinie.

L E N. It is too great for me, but what the gods,  
And their great loues decree me, I must not

Seeme carelesse of. C A T. No, nor we enuious. 580  
We haue enough beside, all *Gallia*, *Belgia*,

*Greece*, *Spaine*, and *Africke*. C V R. I, and *Asia*, too,  
Now P O M P E Y is returning. C A T. Noblest *Romanes*,

III. 555 we'intend Q: we intend, Ff 561 SYLLA:] Sylla; Q  
563 After 'home.' Re-enter P. Lecca with the eagle. G 564 'Twas]  
Was Q 566 ominous] omenous Q 568 god-head.] Godhead;  
Q 574 predictions:] predictions; Q 575 honor'd] honour'd Fz

Me thinkes our lookes, are not so quicke and high,  
 585 As they were wont. C V R. No? whose is not? C A T.  
 We haue

No anger in our eyes, no storme, no lightning :  
 Our hate is spent, and fum'd away in vapor,  
 Before our hands be'at worke. I can accuse  
 Not any one, but all of slacknesse. C E T. Yes,  
 590 And be your selfe such, while you doe it. C A T. Ha?  
 'Tis sharply answer'd, C A I V S. C E T. Truly, truly.

L E N. Come, let vs each one know his part to doe,  
 And then be accus'd. Leaue these vntimely quarrells.  
 C V R. I would there were more *Romes* then one, to ruine.  
 595 C E T. More *Romes*? More worlds. C V R. Nay then,  
 more gods, and natures,

If they tooke part. L E N. When shall the time be, first?  
 C A T. I thinke the *Saturnalls*. C E T. 'Twill be too long.  
 C A T. They are not now farre off, 'tis not a month.  
 C E T. A weeke, a day, an houre is too farre off,  
 600 Now, were the fittest time. C A T. We ha' not laid  
 All things so safe, and readie. C E T. While we're laying,  
 We shall all lye; and grow to earth. Would I  
 Were nothing in it, if not now. These things  
 They should be done, e're thought. C A T. Nay, now your  
 reason

605 Forsakes you, C A I V S. Thinke, but what commodity  
 That time will minister; the cities custome  
 Of being, then, in mirth, and feast—— L E N. Loos'd  
 whole

In pleasure and securitie—— A V T. Each house  
 Resolu'd in freedome—— C V R. Euery slaue a master——  
 610 L O N. And they too no meane aides—— C V R. Made  
 from their hope

Of libertie—— L E N. Or hate vnto their lords.

V A R. 'Tis sure, there cannot be a time found out

III. 591 CAIVS ] Caius, Q      607 feast——] feast. Q      608 securitie  
 ——] securitie. Q      609 freedome——] . . . master——] freedome.  
 . . . master. Q      610 aides——] aides. Q      611 libertie——]  
 liberty. Q

More apt, and naturall. L E N. Nay, good C E T H E G V S,  
Why doe your passions, now, disturbe our hopes ?

C E T. Why doe your hopes delude your certainties ? 615

C A T. You must lend him his way. Thinke, for the  
order,

And processe of it. L O N. Yes. L E N. I like not fire :

'Twill too much wast my citie. C A T. Were it embers,

There will be wealth enough, rak't out of them,

To spring a new. It must be fire, or nothing. 620

L O N. What else should fright, or terrifie 'hem ? V A R.  
True.

In that confusion, must be the chiefe slaughter.

C V R. Then we shall kill 'hem brauest. C E P. And in  
heaps.

A V T. Strew sacrifices. C V R. Make the earth an altar.

L O N. And *Rome* the fire. L E C. 'Twill be a noble night. 625

V A R. And worth all S Y L L A's dayes. C V R. When  
husbands, wiues,

Grandsires, and nephewes, seruants, and their lords,

Virgins, and priests, the infant, and the nurse

Goe all to hell, together, in a fleet.

C A T. I would haue you, L O N G I N V S, and S T A T I -  
L I V S, 630

To take the charge o' the firing, which must be,

At a signe giuen with a trumpet, done

In twelue chiefe places of the citie, at once.

The flaxe, and sulphure, are already laid

In, at C E T H E G V S house. So are the weapons. 635

G A B I N I V S, you, with other force, shall stop

The pipes, and conduits : and kill those that come

For water. C V R. What shall I doe ? C A T. All will haue  
Employment, feare not : Ply the execution.

C V R. For that, trust me, and C E T H E G V S. C A T. I  
will be 640

At hand, with the armie, to meet those that scape.

III. 615 your certainties] our certainties F2 620 a new. Fr: a  
new: Q: anew F2 625 LON.] LON, Q 633 places] places, F2



- And LENTULVS, begirt you POMPEY's house,  
 To seize his sonnes aliue : for they are they  
 Must make our peace with him. All else cut off,  
 645 As TARQUINE did the poppy heads ; or mowers  
 A field of thistles ; or else, vp, as ploughes  
 Doe barren lands ; and strike together flints,  
 And clods ; th'vngratefull *Senate*, and the people :  
 Till no rage, gone before, or comming after,  
 650 May weigh with yours, though horror leapt her selfe  
 Into the scale ; but, in your violent acts,  
 The fall of torrents, and the noyse of tempests,  
 The boyling of *Charybdis*, the seas wildnesse,  
 The eating force of flames, and wings of winds,  
 655 Be all out-wrought, by your transcendent furies.  
 It had beene done, e're this, had I beene *Consul* ;  
 We'had had no stop, no let. LEN. How find you ANTONIVS ?  
 CAT. The'other ha's wonne him, lost : that CICERO  
 Was borne to be my opposition,  
 660 And stands in all our wayes. CVR. Remoue him first.  
 CET. May that, yet, be done sooner ? CAT. Would it  
 were done.  
 CVR. VAR. I'll do't. CET. It is my prouince ; none  
 vsurpe it.  
 LEN. What are your meanes ? CET. Enquire not. He  
 shall die.  
 Shall, was too slowly said. He's dying. That  
 665 Is, yet, too slow. He's dead. CAT. Braue, only *Romane*,  
 Whose soule might be the worlds soule, were that dying ;  
 Refuse not, yet, the aides of these your friends.  
 LEN. Here's VARGNTEIVS holds good quarter  
 with him.  
 CAT. And vnder the pretext of clientele,  
 670 And visitation, with the morning haile,  
 Will be admitted. CET. What is that to me ?

III. 651 scale:] scale: Q 658 him, lost *corr. Q. Ff*: him lost Q  
 originally 667 friends:] friends: Q 670 haile] *Hayle* Q

V A R. Yes, we may kill him in his bed, and safely.

C E T. Safe is your way, then; take it. Mine's mine  
owne.

C A T. Follow him, V A R G V N T E I V S, and perswade,  
The morning is the fittest time. L O N. The night 675  
Will turne all into tumult. L E N. And perhaps  
Misse of him too. C A T. Intreat, and coniure him,  
In all our names—— L E N. By all our vowes, and friend-  
ships.

S E M P R O N I A, A V R E L I A, F U L V I A. *To them.*

W Hat! is our counsell broke vp first? A V R. You say,  
Women are greatest talkers. S E M. We ha' done; 680  
And are now fit for action. L O N. Which is passion.  
There's your best actiuitie, lady. S E M. How  
Knowes your wise fatnesse that? L O N. Your mothers  
daughter

Did teach me, madame. C A T. Come S E M P R O N I A,  
leauie him :

He is a giber. And our present businesse 685  
Is of more serious consequence. A V R E L I A  
Tells me, you'haue done most masculinely within,  
And plaid the orator. S E M. But we must hasten  
To our designe as well, and execute :  
Not hang still, in the feuer of an accident. 690

C A T. You say well, lady. S E M. I doe like our plot  
Exceeding well, 'tis sure ; and we shall leauie  
Little to fortune, in it. C A T. Your banquet stayes.  
A V R E L I A, take her in. Where's F U L V I A ?

S E M. O, the two louers are coupling. C V R. In good  
faith, 695

Shee's very ill, with sitting vp. S E M. You'd haue her  
Laugh, and lye downe ? F V L. No, faith, S E M P R O N I A,

III. 673 *Exit.* add G 677 him,] him. Q 678 names——]  
names. Q *Exit Vargunteius.* add G Before 679 S E M P R O N I A . . .  
F U L V I A] *Enter Sempronia, Aurelia, and Fulvia.* G, continuing the scene.  
F U L V I A, to them. Q 680 After 'talkers.' *Whispers with Catiline while*  
*Fulvia takes Curius aside.* G 684 C A T.] C E T. Q, Ff 688 plaid]  
play F2 696 You'd] You'd Q, Ff 697 downe ?] downe. Q

- I am not well : I'll take my leaue, it drawes  
 Toward the morning. C V R I V S shall stay with you.  
 700 Madame, I pray you, pardon me, my health  
 I must respect. A V R. Fare-well, good F V L V I A.  
 C V R. Make hast, and bid him get his guards about him.  
 For V A R G V N T E I V S, and C O R N E L I V S  
 Haue vndertane it, should C E T H E G V S misse :  
 705 Their reason, that they thinke his open rashnesse  
 Will suffer easier discouerie,  
 Then their attempt, so vayed vnder friendship.  
 Ile bring you to your coach. Tell him, beside,  
 Of C A E S A R S comming forth, here. C A T. My sweet  
 madame,  
 710 Will you be gone ? F V L. I am, my lord, in truth,  
 In some indisposition. C A T. I doe wish  
 You had all your health, sweet lady : L E N T V L V S,  
 You'll doe her seruice. L E N. To her coach, and dutie.

## C A T I L I N E.

- 715 **W**Hat ministers men must, for practice, vse !  
 The rash, th' ambitious, needy, desperate,  
 Foolish, and wretched, eu'n the dregs of mankind,  
 To whores, and women ! still, it must be so.  
 Each haue their proper place ; and, in their roomes,  
 They are the best. Groomes fittest kindle fires,  
 720 Slaues carry burdens, butchers are for slaughters,  
 Apothecaries, butlers, cookes for poysons ;  
 As these for me : dull, stupide L E N T V L V S,  
 My stale, with whom I stalke ; the rash C E T H E G V S,  
 My executioner ; and fat L O N G I N V S,  
 725 S T A T I L I V S, C V R I V S, C E P A R I V S, C I M B E R,  
 My labourers, pioners, and incendiaries ;  
 With these domesticke traytors, bosome theeues,  
 Whom custome hath call'd wiues ; the readiest helps,

III. 698 well :] well ; Q 702 Stage direction not in Q 707  
 attempt.] attempt ; Q 713 Exeunt all but Catiline. G, continuing  
 the scene 725 C I M B E R,] C i m b e r. Q 726 labourers] laborers Q

To betray headie husbands ; rob the easie :  
 And lend the moneys, on returnes of lust. 730  
 Shall CATILINE not doe, now, with these aides,  
 So sought, so sorted, something shall be call'd  
 Their labour, but his profit ? and make CAESAR  
 Repent his ventring counsells, to a spirit,  
 So much his lord in mischief ? when all these, 735  
 Shall, like the brethren sprung of dragons teeth,  
 Ruine each other ; and he fall amongst 'hem :  
 With CRASSVS, POMPEY, or who else appeares,  
 But like, or neere a great one. May my braine  
 Resolute to water, and my bloud turne phlegme, 740  
 My hands drop off, vnworthy of my sword,  
 And that b(e)'inspired, of it selfe, to rip  
 My brest, for my lost entrails ; when I leaue  
 A soule, that will not serue : and who will, are  
 The same with slaues, such clay I dare not feare. 745  
 The cruelty, I meane to act, I wish  
 Should be call'd mine, and tarry in my name ;  
 Whil'st, after-ages doe toile out themselues,  
 In thinking for the like, but doe it lesse :  
 And, were the power of all the fiends let loose, 750  
 With fate to boot, it should be, still, example.  
 When, what the *Gaule*, or *Moore* could not effect,  
 Nor emulous *Carthage*, with their length of spight,  
 Shall be the worke of one, and that my night.

CICERO, FVLVIA, QVINTVS.

I Thanke your vigilance. Where's my brother, QVIN-  
 TVS ? 755  
 Call all my seruants vp. Tell noble CVRIVS,  
 And say it to your selfe, you are my sauers ;

III. 729 betray headie] strangle head-strong Q 733 labour]  
 labor Q 741 hands] hands, Q 744 serue: and] serue. And Q  
 748 Whil'st,] Whil'st Q themselues,] themselues Q 753 emulous]  
 æmulous Q 754 Exit. add G Before 755 CICERO . . . QVINTVS] SCENE  
 IV. | *A Room in Cicero's House.* | Enter Cicero, Fulvia, and Attendant. G  
 756 After 'vp.' Exit Attendant. G

But that's too little for you, you are *Romes* :

What could I, then, hope lesse? O brother! now,

760 The engine(r)s I told you of, are working;

The machine 'gin's to moue. Where are your weapons?

Arme all my house-hold presently. And charge

The porter, he let no man in, till day.

Q V I. Not clients, and your friends? C I C. They weare those names,

765 That come to murder me. Yet send for C A T O,

And Q V I N T V S C A T V L V S; those I dare trust:

And F L A C C V S, and P O M T I N I V S, the *Prætors*,

By the backe way. Q V I. Take care, good brother

M A R C V S,

Your feares be not form'd greater, then they should;

770 And make your friends grieue, while your enemies laugh.

C I C. 'Tis brothers counsell, and worth thanks. But doe

As I intreat you. I prouide, not feare.

Was C A E S A R there, say you? F V L. C V R I V S sayes, he met him,

Comming from thence. C I C. O, so. And, had you a counsell

775 Of ladies too? Who was your speaker, madame?

F V L. Shee that would be, had there beene fortie more;

S E M P R O N I A, who had both her *greeke*, and *figures*;

And, euer and anone, would ask vs, if

The witty *Consul* could haue mended that?

780 Or Orator C I C E R O could haue said it better?

C I C. Shee's my gentle enemy. Would C E T H E G V S

Had no more danger in him. But, my guards

Are you, great powers; and th'vnbatred strengths

Of a firme conscience, which shall arme each step

785 Tane for the state: and teach me slacke no pace

, For feare of malice. How now, brother? Q V I. C A T O,

III. 759 I.] I Q. Ff After 'lesse?' Enter *Quintus Cicero*. G 760  
 enginers G conj. : engines that W conj. 765 murder] murder F2  
 772 After 'you.' Exit *Quintus*. G 785 state:] State; Q 786  
 After 'malice.' Re-enter *Quintus*. G

And QVINTVS CATVLVS were comming to you,  
And CRASSVS with 'hem. I haue let 'hem in,  
By th' garden. CIC. What would CRASSVS haue?

QVI. I heare

Some whispering 'bout the gate; and making doubt, 790  
Whether it be not yet too early, or no?

But I doe thinke, they are your friends, and clients,  
Are fearefull to disturbe you. CIC. You will change  
To'another thought, anone. Ha' you giu'n the porter  
The charge, I will'd you? QVI. Yes. CIC. With-draw,  
and hearken. 795

VARGVNTEIVS, CORNELIVS, PORTER,  
CICERO, CATO, CATVLVS,  
CRASSVS.

THE dore's not open, yet. COR. You'were best to  
knocke.

VAR. Let them stand close, then: And, when we are in,  
Rush after vs. COR. But where's CETHEGVS? VAR.  
He

Has left it, since he might not do't his way.

POR. Who's there? VAR. A friend, or more. POR.  
I may not let 800

Any man in, till day. VAR. No? why? COR. Thy  
reason?

POR. I am commanded so. VAR. By whom? COR.  
I hope

We are not discover'd. VAR. 'Yes, by reuelation.

Pray thee, good slaue, who has commanded thee?

POR. He that may best, the *Consul*. VAR. We are his  
friends. 805

POR. All's one. COR. Best giue your name. VAR.  
Do'st thou heare, fellow?

III. 795 CIC. *om.* F2 *Exeunt.* add G Before 796 VARGVNTEIVS  
... CRASSVS.] SCENE V. | *The Street before Cicero's House.* | *Enter*  
*Vargunteius and Cornelius with armed men.* G 799 *Knocks.* add G  
800 POR.] POR. [*within.*] G: so for his other speeches. 804 Pray  
thee] Pr'y thee F2

I haue some instant businesse with the *Consul*.

*Cicero  
speakes to  
them from  
aboue.*

My name is V A R G V N T E I V S. C I C. True, he knowes it ;  
And for what friendly office you are sent.

C O R N E L I V S, too, is there ? V A R. We are betrayed.

C I C. And desperate C E T H E G V S, is he not ?

V A R. Speake you, he knowes my voyce. C I C. What  
say you to't ?

C O R. You are deceiu'd, sir. C I C. No, 'tis you are so ;  
Poore, misse-led men. Your states are yet worth pittie,

815 If you would heare, and change your sauage minds.

Leaue to be mad ; forsake your purposes

Of treason, rapine, murder, fire, and horror :

The common-wealth hath eyes, that wake as sharply

Ouer her life, as yours doe for her ruine.

820 Be not deceiu'd, to thinke her lenitie

Will be perpetuall ; or, if men be wanting,

The gods will be, to such a calling cause.

Consider your attempts, and while there's time,

Repent you of 'hem. It doth make me tremble

825 There should those spirits yet breath, that when they cannot

Liue honestly, would rather perish basely.

C A T O. You talke too much to 'hem, M A R C V S,  
they're lost.

Goe forth, and apprehend 'hem. C A T V. If you proue

This practice, what should let the common-wealth

830 To take due vengeance ? V A R. Let vs shift, away.

The darkenesse hath conceal'd vs, yet. Wee'll say

Some haue abus'd our names. C O R. Deny it all.

C A T O. Q V I N T V S, what guards ha' you ? Call the  
*Tribunes aide,*

And raise the citie. *Consul*, you are too mild,

835 The foulennesse of some facts takes thence all mercy :

*It thunders, and  
lightens  
violently  
on the  
sodaine.*

Report it to the *Senate*. Heare : The gods

Grow angrie with your patience. 'Tis their care,

III. 808 Stage direction not in Q : appears at the window above, with  
Cato, Catulus, and Crassus. G 814 misse-led] misled Q 827  
they're] they are F2 831 yet.] yet: Q 832 Exeunt below. add G  
835 Gnostic pointing in Q : " The . . . 836 Stage direction not in Q

And must be yours, that guiltie men escape not.  
As crimes doe grow, iustice should rouse it selfe.

CHORVS.

What is it, heauens, you prepare 840  
With so much swiftnesse, and so sodaine rising ?  
There are no sonnes of earth, that dare,  
Againe, rebellion ? or the gods surprising ?  
The world doth shake, and nature feares,  
Yet is the tumult, and the horror greater 845  
Within our minds, then in our eares :  
So much *Romes* faults (now growne her fate) doe threat  
her.  
The priests, and people runne about,  
Each order, age, and sexe amaz'd at other ;  
And, at the ports, all thronging out, 850  
As if their safety were to quit their mother :  
Yet finde they the same dangers there,  
From which they make such hast to be preserued ;  
For guiltie states doe euer beare  
The plagues about them, which they haue deserued. 855  
And, till those plagues doe get aboute  
The mountayne of our faults, and there doe sit ;  
Wee see 'hem not. Thus, still we loue  
The'euill we doe, vntill we suffer it.  
But, most, ambition, that neere vice 860  
To vertue, hath the fate of *Rome* prouoked ;  
And made, that now *Rome's* selfe<'s> no price,  
To free her from the death, wherewith shee's yoked.  
That restlesse ill, that still doth build  
Vpon successe ; and ends not in aspiring : 865  
But there begins. And ne're is fill'd,  
While ought remaines that seemes but worth desiring.

III. 837-9 *Gnomic pointing in Q* : " Tis . . . " And . . . " As . . . " 839  
*Exeunt above. G* 843 rebellion?] rebellion: *Q* 848 priests]  
*Priest F2* 857 mountayne] mountaines *F2* 859 The'euill]  
*The euill F2* 862 selfe's *G conj.*



- Wherein the thought, vnlike the eye,  
 To which things farre, seeme smaller then they are,  
 870 Deemes all contentment plac'd on high :  
 And thinkes there's nothing great, but what is farre.  
 O, that in time, *Rome* did not cast  
 Her errors vp, this fortune to preuent ;  
 T'haue seene her crimes, ere they were past :  
 875 And felt her faults, before her punishment.

*Diuers  
 Senators  
 passe by,  
 quaking,  
 and trem-  
 bling.*

## Act III.

## ALLOBROGES.

- CAN these men feare ? who are not onely ours,  
 But the worlds masters ? Then I see, the gods  
 Vpbraid our suffrings, or would humble them ;  
 By sending these affrights, while we are here :  
 5 That we might laugh at their ridiculous feare,  
 Whose names, we trembled at, beyond the *Alpes*.  
 Of all that passe, I doe not see a face  
 Worthy a man ; that dares looke vp, and stand  
 One thunder out : but downe-ward all, like beasts,  
 10 Running away from euery flash is made.  
 The falling world could not deserue such basenesse.  
 Are we employd here, by our miseries,  
 Like superstitious fooles (or rather slaues)  
 To plaine our griefs, wrongs, and oppressions,  
 15 To a meere clothed *Senate*, whom our folly  
 Hath made, and still intends to keepe our tyrannes ?  
 It is our base petitionarie breath  
 That blowes 'hem to this greatnesse ; which this pricke  
 Would soone let out, if we were bold, and wretched.  
 20 When they haue taken all we haue, our goods,

III. 874 crimes, ere] crimes 'ere Q, Ff: Jonson may have written crimes,  
 e're IV. Act IV] ACT IV. SCENE I. | *A Street at the foot of the*  
*Capitol.* | [*The storm continued.*] *Enter the Allobrogian Ambassadors.*  
*Diuers Senators . . . G Diuers . . . trembling. not in Q 1 Can]*  
*1 Am. Can G 8 man:] man, Q 9 out:] out; Q 18 Points*  
*to his sword. add G 20 haue,] haue ; Q*

Crop, lands, and houses, they will leaue vs this :  
A weapon, and an arme will still be found,  
Though naked left, and lower then the ground.

CATO, CATVLVS, CICERO, ALLOBROGES.

**D**Oe; vrge thine anger, still : good heauen, and iust.  
Tell guiltie men, what powers are about them. 25  
In such a confidence of wickednesse,  
'Twas time, they should know something fit to feare.

CATV. I neuer saw a morne more full of horror.

CATO. To CATILINE, and his : But, to iust men,  
Though heauen should speake, with all his wrath at once, 30  
That, with his breath, the hinges of the world  
Did cracke; we should stand vp right, and vnfeard.

CIC. Why, so we doe, good CATO. Who be these ?

CATV. Ambassadors, from the ALLOBROGES,  
I take 'hem, by their habits. ALL. I, these men 35  
Seeme of another race ; let's sue to these,  
There's hope of iustice, with their fortitude.

CIC. Friends of the *Senate*, and of *Rome*, to day  
We pray you to forbear vs : on the morrow  
What sute you haue, let vs, by FABIVS SANGA, 40  
(Whose patronage your state doth vse) but know it,  
And, on the *Consul's* word, you shall receiue  
Dispatch, or else an answer, worth your patience.

ALL. We could not hope for more, most worthy *Consul*.  
This magistrâte hath strooke an awe into me, 45  
And, by his sweetnesse, wonne a more regard  
Vnto his place, then all the boystrous moodes  
That ignorant greatnesse practiseth, to fill  
The large, vnfit authoritie it weares.  
How easie is a noble spirit discern'd 50  
From harsh, and sulphurous matter, that flies out

IV. Before 24 ALLOBROGES not in Q: Enter Cato, Catulus, and Cicero.  
G, continuing the scene 32 cracke,] cracke ; Q 35 ALL.] 1  
Am. G 36 these,] these Q 44 ALL.] 2 Am. G After 44  
Exeunt Cato, Catulus, and Cicero. G 46 regard] regard F2

In contumelies, makes a noyse, and stinkes !  
 May we find good, and great men : that know how  
 To stoupe to wants, and meete necessities,  
 55 And will not turne from any equall suites.  
 Such men, they doe not succour more the cause,  
 They vnder-take, with fauour, and successe ;  
 Then, by it, their owne iudgements they doe raise,  
 In turning iust mens needs, into their praise.

## THE SENATE.

60 **P**RÆE. Roome for the *Consuls*. Fathers, take your  
 places.

Here, in the house of IVPITER, the STAYER,  
 By edict from the *Consul*, MARCVS TVLLIVS,  
 You're met, a frequent *Senate*. Heare him speake.

CIC. *What may be happy, and auspicious still*

65 *To Rome, and hers*. Honor'd, and conscript Fathers,  
 If I were silent, and that all the dangers  
 Threatning the state, and you, were yet so hid  
 In night, or darkenesse thicker in their breasts,  
 That are the blacke contriuers ; so, that no

70 Beame of the light could pierce 'hem : yet the voyce  
 Of heau'n, this morning, hath spoke loud inough,  
 T'instruct you with a feeling of the horror ;  
 And wake you from a sleepe, as starke, as death.  
 I haue, of late, spoke often in this *Senate*,

75 Touching this argument, but still haue wanted  
 Either your eares, or faith : so'incredible  
 Their plots haue seem'd, or I so vaine, to make

iv. 52 stinkes !] stinkes. Q 53 men :] men, Q 54 stoupe]  
 stoupe F2 56-9 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "Such . . . "They . . .  
 "Then . . . "In . . . 57 fauour] fauor Q 59 *Exeunt*. add G  
 Before 60 THE SENATE.] SCENE II. [ *The Temple of Jupiter Stator*. ]  
*Enter Cicero, Antonius, Cato, Catulus, Cæsar, Crassus, and many other*  
*Senators, Prætor, Officers, &c.* G 61 STAYER corr. Q, Ff: Stayer  
 Q originally 62 TVLLIVS,] Tullius, Q: TVLLIVS. Ff: TULLIVS. F2  
 64-5 *The formula in roman type in Q originally, but corrected to italic.*  
 64 *What] Which* Q 65 Honor'd,] Honor'd Q conscript Q originally, Ff:  
 Conscript corr. Q 67 state Q originally, Ff: State corr. Q, F2  
 68 night, corr. Q, Ff: night ; Q originally 73 starke] dead Q  
 77 seem'd, corr. Q, Ff: seem'd ; Q originally

These things for mine owne glorie, and false greatnesse,  
 As hath beene giuen out. But be it so.  
 When they breake forth, and shall declare themselues, 80  
 By their too foule effects, then, then, the enuy  
 Of my iust cares will find another name.  
 For me, I am but one : and this poore life,  
 So lately aim'd at, not an houre yet since,  
 They cannot with more eagernessee pursue, 85  
 Then I with gladnessee would lay downe, and loose,  
 To buy *Romes* peace, if that would purchase it.  
 But when I see, they'd make it but the step  
 To more, and greater ; vnto yours, *Romes*, all :  
 I would with those preserue it, or then fall. 90

C A E S. I, I, let you alone, cunning artificer !  
 See, how his gorget 'peeress aboue his gowne ;  
 To tell the people, in what danger he was.  
 It was absurdly done of V A R G V N T E I V S,  
 To name himselfe, before he was got in. 95

C R A. It matters not, so they denie it all :  
 And can but carry the lye constantly.  
 Will C A T I L I N E be here ? C A E S. I'haue sent for him.

C R A. And ha' you bid him to be confident ?

C A E S. To that his owne necessitie will prompt him. 100

C R A. Seeme to beleue nothing at all, that C I C E R O  
 Relates vs. C A E S. It will mad him. C R A. O, and helpe  
 The other partie. Who is that ? his brother ?

What new intelligence ha's he brought him now ?

C A E S. Some cautions from his wife, how to behaue him.

C I C. Place some of them without, and some bring in.

Thanke their kind loues. It is a comfort yet,  
 That all depart not from their countries cause.

C A E S. How now, what meanes this muster ? Consul,  
 A N T O N I V S ?

*Quintus  
 Cicero  
 brings in  
 the Tri-  
 bunes, and  
 guards.*

iv. 79 so.] so: Q 81 effects, then corr. Q, Ff: effects; Then Q  
 originally 83 one: corr. Q, Ff: one; Q originally 84 yet  
 since corr. Q, Ff: sithence Q originally 86 loose, corr. Q, Ff: lose, F2:  
 loose Q originally 89 greater; . . . all: corr. Q, Ff: greater, . . . all, Q  
 originally 92 'peeress peeress Q 95 Aside to Crassus. add G 104  
 Stage direction not in Q 105 wife Q originally, Ff: Wife corr. Q

- 110 A N T. I doe not know, aske my colleague, hee'll tell you.  
 There is some reason in state, that I must yeeld to ;  
 And I haue promis'd him : Indeed he has bought it,  
 With giuing me the *Prouince*. C I C. I professe,  
 It grieues me, *Fathers*, that I am compell'd  
 115 To draw these armes, and aides for your defence ;  
 And, more, against a citizen of *Rome*,  
 Borne here amongst you, a *Patrician*,  
 A man, I must confesse, of no meane house,  
 Nor no small vertue, if he had employ'd  
 120 Those excellent gifts of fortune, and of nature,  
 Vnto the good, not ruine of the state.  
 But, being bred in's fathers needy fortunes,  
 Brought vp in's sisters prostitution,  
 Confirm'd in ciuill slaughter, entring first  
 125 The common-wealth, with murder of the gentrie ;  
 Since, both by studie, and custome, conuersant  
 With all licentiousnesse : what could be hop'd  
 In such a field of riot, but a course  
 Extreme pernicious ? Though, I must protest,  
 130 I found his mischiefs, sooner, with mine eyes,  
 Then with my thought ; and with these hands of mine,  
 Before they touch'd, at my suspicion.  
 C A E S. What are his mischiefs, *Consul* ? you declame  
 Against his manners, and corrupt your owne :  
 135 No wise man should, for hate of guiltie men,  
 Loose his owne innocence. C I C. The noble C A E S A R  
 Speakes god-like truth. But, when he heares, I can  
 Conuince him, by his manners, of his mischiefs,  
 He might be silent : and not cast away  
 140 His sentences in vaine, where they scarce looke  
 Toward his subiect. C A T O. Here he comes himselfe.  
 If he be worthy any good mans voyce,

Catiline  
 sits  
 downe,  
 and Cato  
 rises,  
 from him

iv. 120 nature, F1 : Nature, corr. Q, F2 : Nature Q originally  
 127 licentiousnesse : corr. Q, Ff : licentiousnesse ; Q originally 135-6  
 Gnostic pointing in Q : " No . . . " Loose 140 looke] looke. Q  
 141 CATO.] CAT. Q 142 worthy] wo thy Q Stage direction not in  
 Q rises.] rises F2

That good man sit downe by him : CATO will not.

CATV. If CATO leaue him, I'll not keepe aside.

CATI. What face is this, the *Senate* here puts on, 145  
Against me, *Fathers* ! Giue my modestie  
Leaue, to demand the cause of so much strangenesse.

CAES. It is reported here, you are the head  
To a strange faction, LVCIVS. CIC. I, and will  
Be prou'd against him. CATI. Let it be. Why, *Consul*, 150  
If in the common-wealth, there be two bodies,  
One leane, weake, rotten, and that hath a head ;  
The other strong, and healthfull, but hath none :  
If I doe giue it one, doe I offend ?

Restore your selues, vnto your temper, *Fathers* ; 155  
And, without perturbation, heare me speake.  
Remember who I am, and of what place,  
What petty fellow this is, that opposes ;  
One, that hath exercis'd his eloquence,  
Still to the bane of the nobilitie : 160

A boasting, insolent tongue-man. CATO. Peace, leud  
traytor,

Or wash thy mouth. He is an honest man  
And loues his country, would thou didst so, too.

CATI. CATO, you are too zealous for him. CATO.  
No ;

Thou art too impudent. CATV. CATILINE, be silent. 165

CATI. Nay then, I easily feare, my iust defence  
Will come too late, to so much preiudice.

(CAES. Will he sit downe ?) CATI. Yet, let the world  
forsake me,

My innocence must not. CATO. Thou innocent ?  
So are the *Furies*. CIC. Yes, and *Ate*, too. 170

Do'st thou not blush, pernicious CATILINE ?

Or, hath the palenesse of thy guilt drunke vp  
Thy blood, and drawne thy veines, as drie of that,

iv. 143 him:] him. Q 144 Rises. add G 148 reported] re-  
por ted Fr 150 CATI.] CAT. Q 156 speake.] speake: Q 163  
country,] Country ; Q 164 No ;] No, Q 168 (CAES. . . .  
downe ?)] CAES. . . . downe ? Q

- As is thy heart of truth, thy brest of vertue ?  
 175 Whither at length wilt thou abuse our patience ?  
 Still shall thy furie mocke vs ? To what licence  
 Dares thy vnbridled boldnesse runne it selfe ?  
 Doe all the nightly guards, kept on the palace,  
 The cities watches, with the peoples feares,  
 180 The concourse of all good men, this so strong  
 And fortified seate here of the *Senate*,  
 The present lookes vpon thee, strike thee nothing ?  
 Do'st thou not feele thy counsell all laid open ?  
 And see thy wild conspiracie bound in  
 185 With each mans knowledge ? which of all this order  
 Canst thou thinke ignorant (if they'll but vtter  
 Their conscience to the right) of what thou didst  
 Last night, what on the former, where thou wert,  
 Whom thou didst call together, what your plots were ?  
 190 O age, and manners ! This the *Consul* sees,  
 The *Senate* vnderstands, yet this man liues !  
 Liues ? I, and comes here into counsell with vs ;  
 Partakes the publike cares : and with his eye  
 Markes, and points out each man of vs to slaughter.  
 195 And we, good men, doe satisfie the state,  
 If we can shunne but this mans sword, and madnesse.  
 There was that vertue, once, in *Rome*, when good men  
 Would, with more sharpe coërcion, haue restrain'd  
 A wicked citizen, then the deadliest foe.  
 200 We haue that law still, CATILINE, for thee ;  
 An act as graue, as sharpe : The state's not wanting,  
 Nor the authoritie of this *Senate* ; we,  
 We, that are *Consuls*, onely faile our selues.  
 This twentie dayes, the edge of that decree  
 205 We haue let dull, and rust ; kept it shut vp,  
 As in a sheath, which drawne should take thy head.  
 Yet still thou liu'st : and liu'st not to lay by

iv. 201 state's *Q* originally, *F1*: State's *corr. Q*, *F2* 205 rust;  
*corr. Q*, *Ff*: rust, *Q* originally 207 liu'st: *corr. Q*, *Ff*: liu'st, *Q*  
 originally

Thy wicked confidence, but to confirme it.  
 I could desire, *Fathers*, to be found  
 Still mercifull, to seeme, in these maine perills 210  
 Grasping the state, a man remisse, and slacke ;  
 But then, I should condemne my selfe of sloth,  
 And trecherie. Their campe's in *Italie*,  
 Pitch'd in the iawes, here, of *Hetruria* ;  
 Their numbers daily increasing, and their generall 215  
 Within our walls : nay, in our counsell ! plotting  
 Hourely some fatall mischiefe to the publike.  
 If, CATILINE, I should command thee, now,  
 Here, to be taken, kill'd ; I make iust doubt,  
 Whether all good men would not thinke it done 220  
 Rather too late, then any man too cruell.

CATO. Except he were of the same meale, and batch.

CIC. But that, which ought to haue been done long since,  
 I will, and (for good reason) yet forbear.  
 Then will I take thee, when no man is found 225  
 So lost, so wicked, nay, so like thy selfe,  
 But shall professe, 'tis done of need, and right.  
 While there is one, that dares defend thee, liue ;  
 Thou shalt haue leaue ; but so, as now thou liu'st :  
 Watch'd at a hand, besieged, and opprest 230  
 From working least commotion to the state.  
 I haue those eyes, and eares, shall still keepe guard,  
 And spiall on thee, as they haue euer done,  
 And thou not feele it. What, then, canst thou hope ?  
 If neither night can, with her darknesse, hide, 235  
 Thy wicked meetings ; nor a priuate house

rv. 209 *Fathers*, F1 : *Fathers*, corr. Q : *Fathers* Q originally : grave  
*Fathers* F2 (cf. v. 490) 210 perills] perils, Q 214 iawes, corr. Q.  
 F1 : jawes, F2 : iawes Q originally *Hetruria* ; corr. Q, F1 : *Hetruria*, Q  
 originally 216 walls : Ff : wallles : corr. Q : wallles, Q originally nay, ...  
 Counsell! nay ... Councell, Q 217 Hourely] Howerly Q publike]  
 Publike corr. Q 218 If, corr. Q, Ff : If Q originally 222  
 meale, corr. Q, Ff : meale Q originally 229 leaue ; ... liu'st : corr.  
 Q, F1 : leave ; ... liv'st : F2 : leaue : ... liu'st, Q originally 231  
 state Q originally, F1 : State corr. Q, F2 235 night can, ... dark-  
 nesse, Ff : Night can, ... darknesse, corr. Q : night, can ... darknesse  
 Q originally 236 house] House corr. Q



- Can, in her walls, contayne the guiltie whispers  
 Of thy conspiracie : if all breake out,  
 All be discouered, change thy mind at last,  
 240 And loose thy thoughts of ruine, flame, and slaughter.  
 Remember, how I told, here, to the *Senate*,  
 That such a day, thy Lictor, C A I V S M A N L I V S,  
 Would be in armes. Was I deceiued, C A T I L I N E ?  
 Or in the fact, or in the time ? the houre ?  
 245 I told too, in this *Senate*, that thy purpose  
 Was, on the fifth (the kalends of *Nouember*)  
 T'haue slaughter'd this whole order : which my caution  
 Made many leaue the citie. Canst thou here  
 Denie, but this thy blacke designe was hindred,  
 250 That very day, by me ? thy selfe clos'd in  
 Within my strengths, so that thou could'st not moue  
 Against a publike reed ? when thou wert heard  
 To say, vpon the parting of the rest,  
 Thou would'st content thee, with the murder of vs,  
 255 That did remaine. Had'st thou not hope, beside,  
 By a surprize, by night, to take *Præneste* ?  
 Where when thou cam'st, did'st thou not find the place  
 Made good against thee, with my aides, my watches ?  
 My garrisons fortified it. Thou do'st nothing, S E R G I V S,  
 260 Thou canst endeaour nothing, nay not thinke,  
 But I both see, and heare it ; and am with thee,  
 By, and before, about, and in thee, too.  
 Call but to mind thy last nights businesse. Come,  
 Ile vse no circumstance : at L E C C A's house,  
 265 The shop, and mint of your conspiracie,  
 Among your sword-men, where so many associates  
 Both of thy mischief, and thy madnesse, met.

iv. 237 Can, . . . walles, *corr. Q, F1*: Can, . . . walls, *F2*: Can . . .  
 walles *Q originally* 238 conspiracie: if *Ff*: conspiracy: If *corr. Q*:  
 conspiracy, if *Q originally* 239 discouered] discover'd *F2* 240  
 loose] lose *F2* 241 told, *corr. Q, Ff*: told *Q originally* 243 CATI-  
 LINE?] *Catiline, Q* 244 houre] hower *Q* 246 fifth (the . . .  
*Nouember*)] fifth, the . . . *Nouember, Q* 250 me?] mee, *Q* 257  
 Where *corr. Q, Ff*: And *Q originally* 261 thee, *corr. Q, Ff*: thee;  
*Q originally* 263 businesse] buisnesse *Q originally* 267 met.  
*corr. Q, Ff*: met? *Q originally*

Dar'st thou denie this ? wherefore art thou silent ?  
 Speake, and this shall conuince thee : Here they are,  
 I see 'hem, in this *Senate*, that were with thee. 270  
 O, you immortall gods ! in what clime are we ?  
 What region doe we liue in ? in what ayre ?  
 What common-wealth, or state is this we haue ?  
 Here, here, amongst vs, our owne number, *Fathers*,  
 In this most holy counsell of the world, 275  
 They are, that seeke the spoyle of me, of you,  
 Of ours, of all ; what I can name 's too narrow :  
 Follow the sunne, and find not their ambition.  
 These I behold, being *Consul* ; nay, I aske  
 Their counsell of the state, as from good *Patriots* : 280  
 Whom it were fit the axe should hew in pieces,  
 I not so much as wound, yet, with my voyce.  
 Thou wast, last night, with *LECCA, CATILINE*,  
 Your shares, of *Italie*, you there diuided ;  
 Appointed who, and whither, each should goe ; 285  
 What men should stay behind, in *Rome*, were chosen ;  
 Your offices set downe ; the parts mark'd out,  
 And places of the citie, for the fire ;  
 Thy selfe (thou'affirm'd'st) wast readie to depart,  
 Onely, a little let there was, that stay'd thee, 290  
 That I yet liu'd. Vpon the word, stept forth  
 Three of thy crew, to rid thee of that care ;  
 Two vnder-tooke this morning, before day,  
 To kill me in my bed. All this I knew,  
 Your conuent scarce dismiss'd, arm'd all my seruants, 295  
 Call'd both my brother, and friends, shut out your clients,  
 You sent to visite me ; whose names I told  
 To some there, of good place, before they came.

CATO. Yes, I, and QVINTVS CATVLVS can affirme it.

CAES. He's lost, and gone. His spirits haue forsooke  
 him. 300

CIC. If this be so, why, CATILINE, do'st thou stay ?

- Goe, where thou mean'st. The ports are open ; forth.  
 The campe abroad wants thee, their chiefe, too long.  
 Lead with thee all thy troupes out. Purge the citie.
- 305 Draw drie that noysome, and pernicious sinke,  
 Which left, behind thee, would infect the world.  
 Thou wilt free me of all my feares, at once,  
 To see a wall betweene vs. Do'st thou stop  
 To doe that now, commanded ; which before,
- 310 Of thine owne choice, thou'rt prone to ? Goe. The *Consul*  
 Bids thee, an enemie, to depart the citie.  
 Whither, thou'lt aske ? to exile ? I not bid  
 Thee that. But aske my counsell, I perswade it.  
 What is there, here, in *Rome*, that can delight thee ?
- 315 Where not a soule, without thine owne foule knot,  
 But feares, and hates thee. What domesticke note  
 Of priuate filthinesse, but is burnt in  
 Into thy life ? What close, and secret shame,  
 But is growne one, with thy knowne infamy ?
- 320 What lust was euer absent from thine eyes ?  
 What leud fact from thy hands ? what wickednesse  
 From thy whole body ? where's that youth drawne in  
 Within thy nets, or catch'd vp with thy baits,  
 Before whose rage, thou hast not borne a sword,
- 325 And to whose lusts thou hast not held a torch ?  
 Thy latter nuptialls I let passe in silence ;  
 Where sinnes incredible, on sinnes, were heap't :  
 Which I not name, lest, in a ciuill state,  
 So monstrous facts should either appeare to be,
- 330 Or not to be reueng'd. Thy fortunes, too,  
 I glance not at, which hang but till next *Ides*.  
 I come to that, which is more knowne, more publike ;  
 The life, and safetie of vs all, by thee  
 Threatned, and sought. Stood'st thou not in the field,
- 335 When *LEPIDVS*, and *TULLVS* were our *Consuls*,  
 Vpon the day of choice, arm'd, and with forces,

To take their liues, and our chiefe citizens ?  
 When, not thy feare, nor conscience chang'd thy mind,  
 But the meere fortune of the common-wealth  
 With-stood thy actiue malice ? Speake but right. 340  
 How often hast thou made attempt on me ?  
 How many of thy assaults haue I declin'd  
 With shifting but my body (as wee'd say)  
 Wrested thy dagger from thy hand, how oft ?  
 How often hath it falne, or slip't by chance ? 345  
 Yet, can thy side not want it : which, how vow'd,  
 Or with what rites, 'tis sacred of thee, I know not,  
 That still thou mak'st it a necessitie,  
 To fixe it in the body of a *Consul*.  
 But let me loose this way, and speake to thee, 350  
 Not as one mou'd with hatred, which I ought,  
 But pittie, of which none is owing thee.

CAT. No more then vnto TANTALVS, or TITYVS.

CIC. Thou cam'st, e're-while, into this *Senate*. Who  
 Of such a frequency, so many friends, 355  
 And kindred thou hast here, saluted thee ?  
 Were not the seates made bare, vpon thy entrance ?  
 Riss' not the consular men ? and left their places,  
 So soone as thou sat'st downe ? and fled thy side,  
 Like to a plague, or ruine ? knowing, how oft 360  
 They had beene, by thee, mark'd out for the shambles ?  
 How dost thou beare this ? Surely, if my slaues  
 At home fear'd me, with halfe th'affright, and horror,  
 That, here, thy fellow-citizens doe thee,  
 I should soone quit my house, and thinke it need too. 365  
 Yet thou dar'st tarry here ? Goe forth, at last ;  
 Condemne thy selfe to flight, and solitude.  
 Discharge the common-wealth, of her deepe feare.  
 Goe ; into banishment, if thou wait'st the word.  
 Why do'st thou looke ? They all consent vnto it. 370  
 Do'st thou expect th'authoritie of their voyces,

iv. 337 citizens ?] Citizens ; Q 343 body] bodie, Q 350  
 loose] lose F2 360 ruine ?] ruine ; Q 362 beare] heare F2

- Whose silent wills condemne thee ? While they sit,  
 They approue it ; while they suffer it, they decree it ;  
 And while they're silent to it, they proclaime it.
- 375 Proue thou there honest, Ile endure the enuie.  
 But there's no thought, thou should'st be euer he,  
 Whom either shame should call from filthinesse,  
 Terror from danger, or discourse from furie.  
 Goe ; I intreat thee : yet, why doe I so ?
- 380 When I already know, they're sent afore,  
 That tarry for thee in armes, and doe expect thee  
 On the A V R E L I A N way. I know the day  
 Set downe, 'twixt thee, and M A N L I V S ; vnto whom  
 The siluer eagle too is sent, before :
- 385 Which I doe hope shall proue, to thee as banefull,  
 As thou conceiu'st it to the common-wealth.  
 But, may this wise, and sacred *Senate* say,  
 What mean'st thou M A R C V S T V L L I V S ? If thou  
 know'st  
 That C A T I L I N E be look'd for, to be chiefe
- 390 Of an intestine warre ; that he's the author  
 Of such a wickednesse ; the caller out  
 Of men of marke in mischief, to an action  
 Of so much horror ; Prince of such a treason ;  
 Why do'st thou send him forth ? why let him scape ?
- 395 This is, to giue him libertie, and power :  
 Rather, thou should'st lay hold vpon him, send him  
 To deseru'd death, and a iust punishment.  
 To these so holy voices, thus I answer.
- If I did thinke it timely, *Conscript Fathers*,
- 400 To punish him with death, I would not giue  
 The Fencer vse of one short houre, to breath ;  
 But when there are in this graue order, some,  
 Who, with soft censures, still doe nource his hopes ;  
 Some, that with not beleeuing, haue confirm'd
- 405 His designes more, and whose authoritie

iv. 380 they're] they're F2  
 is Q 401 houre] hower Q

382 On the Q: On th' Ff  
 403 nource] nourse F2

395 is,]

The weaker, as the worst men, too, haue follow'd :  
 I would now send him, where they all should see  
 Cleere, as the light, his heart shine ; where no man  
 Could be so wickedly, or fondly stupide,  
 But should cry out, he saw, touch'd, felt, and grasp't it. 410  
 Then, when he hath runne out himselfe ; led forth  
 His desp'rate partie with him ; blowne together  
 Aides of all kindes, both shipwrack'd mindes and fortunes :  
 Not onely the growne euill, that now is sprung,  
 And sprouted forth, would be pluck'd vp, and weeded ; 415  
 But the stocke, roote, and seed of all the mischiefes,  
 Choking the common-wealth. Where, should we take,  
 Of such a swarme of traytors, onely him,  
 Our cares, and feares might seeme a while relieu'd,  
 But the maine perill would bide still enclos'd 420  
 Deepe, in the veines, and bowells of the state.  
 As humane bodies, labouring with feuers,  
 While they are tost with heate, if they doe take  
 Cold water, seeme for that short space much eas'd,  
 But afterward, are ten times more afflicted. 425  
 Wherefore, I say, let all this wicked crew  
 Depart, diuide themselues from good men, gather  
 Their forces to one head ; as I said oft,  
 Let 'hem be seuer'd from vs with a wall ;  
 Let 'hem leaue off attempts, vpon the *Consul*, 430  
 In his owne house ; to circle in the *Prætor* ;  
 To girt the court with weapons ; to prepare  
 Fire, and balls, swords, torches, sulphure, brands :  
 In short, let it be writ in each mans fore-head  
 What thoughts he beares the publike. I here promise, 435  
*Fathers Conscript*, to you, and to my selfe,  
 That diligence in vs *Consuls*, for my honor'd  
 Colleague, abroad, and for my selfe, at home ;  
 So great authoritie in you ; so much  
 Vertue, in these, the gentlemen of *Rome* ; 440

iv. 410 out.] out Q      411 himselfe:] himselfe, Q      422 labouring]  
 laboring Q      437 honor'd] honour'd Q

- Whom I could scarce restraine to day, in zeale,  
 From seeking out the parricide, to slaughter ;  
 So much consent in all good men, and minds,  
 As, on the going out of this one CATILINE,  
 445 All shall be cleere, made plaine, oppress'd, reueng'd.  
 And, with this *omen*, goe, pernicious plague,  
 Out of the citie, to the wish'd destruction  
 Of thee, and those, that, to the ruine of her,  
 Haue tane that bloudie, and black sacrament.  
 450 Thou IVPITER, whom we doe call the STAYER,  
 Both of this citie, and this empire, wilt  
 (With the same auspice thou didst raise it first)  
 Drive from thy altars, and all other temples,  
 And buildings of this citie ; from our walls ;  
 455 Liues, states, and fortunes of our citizens ;  
 This fiend, this furie, with his complices.  
 And all the'offence of good men (these knowne traytors  
 Vnto their countrey, theeues of *Italie*,  
 Ioyn'd in so damn'd a league of mischief) thou  
 460 Wilt with perpetuall plagues, aliuie, and dead,  
 Punish for *Rome*, and saue her innocent head.

- CATI. If an oration, or high language, *Fathers*,  
 Could make me guiltie, here is one, hath done it :  
 H'has stroue to emulate this mornings thunder,  
 465 With his prodigious rhetoricke. But I hope,  
 This *Senate* is more graue, then to giue credit  
 Rashly to all he vomits, 'gainst a man  
 Of your owne order, a *Patrician* ;  
 And one, whose ancestors haue more deseru'd  
 470 Of *Rome*, then this mans eloquence could vtter,  
 Turn'd the best way : as still, it is the worst.

- CATO. His eloquence hath more deseru'd to day,  
 Speaking thy ill, then all thy ancestors  
 Did, in their good : and, that the state will find,  
 475 Which he hath sau'd. CATI. How, he? were I that  
 enemie,

That he would make me : I'd not wish the state  
More wretched, then to need his preseruatiōn.

What doe you make him, CATO, such a HERCVLES?  
AN ATLAS? A poore petty in-mate! CATO. Traytor.

CATI. He saue the state? A burgesse sonne of *Arpinum*. 480

The gods would rather twentie *Romes* should perish,  
Then haue that contumely stucke vpon 'hem,  
That he should share with them, in the preseruing  
A shed, or signe-post. CATO. Peace, thou prodigie.

CATI. They would be forc'd themselues, againe, and  
lost 485

In the first, rude, and indigested heape;  
Ere such a wretched name, as CICE RO,  
Should sound with theirs. CATV. Away, thou impudent  
head.

CATI. Doe you all backe him? are you silent too?

Well, I will leaue you, *Fathers*; I will goe. 490

But—— my fine daintie speaker—— C I C. What now, *He turnes sodainly on Cicero.*

*Furie?*

Wilt thou assault me here? (C H O. Helpe, aide the *Consul*.)

CATI. See, *Fathers*, laugh you not? who threatned  
him?

In vaine thou do'st conceiue, ambitious orator,  
Hope of so braue a death, as by this hand. 495

(CATO. Out, of the court, with the pernicious traytor.)

CATI. There is no tittle, that this flattering *Senate*,  
Nor honor, the base multitude can giue thee,  
Shall make thee worthy CATILINES anger. (CATO.

Stop,

Stop that portentous mouth.) CATI. Or, when it shall, 500  
Ile looke thee dead. CATO. Will none restraints the  
monster?

iv. 476 I'd F2: Il'd Q, Fr 480 burgesse] *Burgesse'* Q 485 forc'd]  
runne Q 491 *Stage direction not in Q* 492 (CHO. . . . *Consul*.)]  
CHO. . . . *Consul*. Q 496 (CATO. . . . traytor.)] CATO. . . . traytor. Q  
498 honor] honour Q 499-500 (CATO. . . . mouth.)] CATO. . . . mouth. Q



C A T V. Parricide. Q V I. Butcher, traytor, leaue the  
*Senate*.

C A T I. I'am gone, to banishment, to please you, *Fathers*.  
Thrust head-long forth! C A T O. Still, do'st thou mur-  
mure, monster?

505 C A T I. Since, I am thus put out, and made a—— C I C.  
What?

C A T V. Not guiltier then thou art. C A T I. I will not  
burne

Without my funerall pile. C A T O. What saies the fiend?

C A T I. I will haue matter, timber. C A T O. Sing out  
scrich-owle.

C A T I. It shall be in—— C A T V. Speake thy imper-  
fect thoughts.

510 C A T I. The common fire, rather then mine owne.  
For fall I will with all, ere fall alone.

C R A. H'is lost, there is no hope of him. C A E S. Vn-  
lesse

He presently take armes; and giue a blow,  
Before the *Consuls* forces can be leui'd.

515 C I C. What is your pleasure, *Fathers*, shall be done?

C A T V. See, that the common-wealth receiue no losse.

C A T O. Commit the care thereof vnto the *Consuls*.

C R A. 'Tis time. C A E S. And need. C I C. Thanks to  
this frequent *Senate*.

But what decree they, vnto C V R I V S,

520 And F V L V I A? C A T V. What the *Consul* shall thinke  
meete.

C I C. They must receiue reward, though't be not knowne;  
Lest when a state needs ministers, they ha' none.

C A T O. Yet, M A R C V S T V L L I V S, doe not I beleeeue,  
But C R A S S V S, and this C A E S A R here ring hollow.

525 C I C. And would appeare so, if that we durst proue 'hem.

C A T O. Why dare we not? What honest act is that,  
The *Roman Senate* should not dare, and doe?

iv. 504 forth!] forth? Q, Ff 511 Rushes out of the Senate. add  
G 518 After 'need.' Goes aside with Crassus. G

C I C. Not an vnprofitable, dangerous act,  
 To stirre too many serpents vp at once.  
 C A E S A R, and C R A S S V S, if they be ill men, 530  
 Are mightie ones ; and, we must so prouide,  
 That, while we take one head, from this foule *Hydra*,  
 There spring not twentie more. C A T O. I 'proue your  
 counsell.  
 C I C. They shall be watch'd, and look'd too. Till they  
 doe  
 Declare themselues, I will not put 'hem out 535  
 By any question. There they stand. Ile make  
 My selfe no enemies, nor the state no traytors.

C A T I L I N E, L E N T V L V S, C E T H E G V S, C V -  
 R I V S, G A B I N I V S, L O N G I N V S,  
 S T A T I L I V S.

FAlse to our selues ? All our designes discover'd  
 To this state-cat ? C E T. I, had I had my way,  
 He'had mew'd in flames, at home, not i' the *Senate* : 540  
 I'had sing'd his furies, by this time. C A T. Well, there's,  
 now,  
 No time of calling backe, or standing still.  
 Friends, be your selues ; keepe the same *Roman* hearts,  
 And readie minds, you'had yester-night. Prepare  
 To execute, what we resolu'd. And let not 545  
 Labour, or danger, or discoverie fright you.  
 Ile to the armie : you (the while) mature  
 Things, here, at home. Draw to you any aides,  
 That you thinke fit, of men of all conditions,  
 Or any fortunes, that may helpe a warre. 550  
 Ile bleede a life, or winne an empire for you.  
 Within these few dayes, looke to see my ensignes,  
 Here, at the walls : Be you but firme within.

IV. 537 *Exeunt* add G Before 538 CATILINE... STATILIVS.] SCENE  
 III. | *Catiline's House.* | *Enter Catiline, Lentulus, Cethegus, Curius,*  
*Gabinus, Longinus, and Statilius.* G 544 you'had] you had F2  
 546 Labour] Labor Q 550 Or] Of F2

- Meane time, to draw an enuy on the *Consul*,  
 555 And giue a lesse suspicion of our course,  
 Let it be giuen out, here in the citie,  
 That I am gone, an innocent man, to exile,  
 Into *Massilia*, willing to giue way  
 To fortune, and the times ; being vnable  
 560 To stand so great a faction, without troubling  
 The common-wealth : whose peace I rather seeke,  
 Then all the glory of contention,  
 Or the support of mine owne innocence.  
 Farewell the noble L E N T V L V S, L O N G I N V S,  
 565 C V R I V S, the rest ; and thou, my better Genius,  
 The braue C E T H E G V S : when we meete againe,  
 Wee'll sacrifice to libertie. C E T. And reuenge.  
 That we may praise oŭr hands once. L E N. O, you *Fates*,  
 Giue *Fortune* now her eyes, to see with whom  
 570 Shee goes along, that shee may ne're forsake him.  
 C V R. He needs not her, nor them. Goe but on, S E R-  
 G I V S.  
 A valiant man is his owne fate, and fortune.  
 L O N. The fate, and fortune of vs all goe with him.  
 G A B. S T A. And euer guard him. C A T. I am all your  
 creature.  
 575 L E N. Now friends, 'tis left with vs. I haue alreadie  
 Dealt, by V M B R E N V S, with the A L L O B R O G E S,  
 Here resiant in *Rome* ; whose state, I heare,  
 Is discontent with the great vsuries,  
 They are oppress'd with : and haue made complaints  
 580 Diuers, vnto the *Senate*, but all vaine.  
 These men, I'haue thought (both for their owne oppressions,  
 As also that, by nature, they'are a people  
 Warlike, and fierce, still watching after change,  
 And now, in present hatred with our state)  
 585 The fittest, and the easiest to be drawne

iv. 572 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "A . . .  
 all] all, F2 581 I'haue] I have F2  
 Q 582 they'are] they are F2  
 584 state)] State, Q

574 *Exit*. add G 580  
 thought (both] thought, both  
 583 Warlike] Warlick F2

To our societie, and to aide the warre.  
 The rather, for their seat; being next bordrers  
 On *Italie*; and that they'abound with horse:  
 Of which one want our campe doth onely labour.  
 And I haue found 'hem comming. They will meete 590  
 Soone, at *SEMPRONIA*'s house, where I would pray you  
 All to be present, to confirme 'hem more.  
 The sight of such spirits hurt not, nor the store.

GAB. I will not faile. STA. Nor I. CVR. Nor I.  
 CET. Would I

Had somewhat by my selfe, apart, to doe. 595  
 I ha' no Genius to these many counsells.  
 Let me kill all the *Senate*, for my share,  
 Ile doe it at next sitting. LEN. Worthy CAIVS,  
 Your presence will adde much. CET. I shall marre more.

CICERO, SANGA, ALLOBROGES.

THE state's beholden to you, FABIVS SANGA, 600  
 For this great care: And those ALLOBROGES  
 Are more then wretched, if they lend a listning  
 To such perswasion. SAN. They, most worthy *Consul*,  
 As men employ'd here, from a griued state,  
 Groning beneath a multitude of wrongs, 605  
 And being told, there was small hope of ease  
 To be expected, to their euills, from hence,  
 Were willing, at the first to giue an eare  
 To any thing, that sounded libertie:  
 But since, on better thoughts, and my vrg'd reasons, 610  
 They're come about, and wonne, to the true side.  
 The fortune of the common-wealth hath conquer'd.

CIC. What is that same VMBRENVS, was the agent?

SAN. One that hath had negotiation  
 In *Gallia* oft, and knowne vnto their state. 615

iv. 589 labour] labor Q 591 Soone,] Soone Q 596 I ha'  
 corr. Q: I'ha' Q originally, Ff 599 Excunt add G Before 600  
 CICERO . . . ALLOBROGES.] SCENE IV. | *The House of Brutus.* | Enter  
*Cicero and Sanga.* G (*For* 'Brutus' read 'Cicero') 600 to] unto F2

C I C. Are th'Ambassadors come with you? S A N. Yes.

C I C. Well, bring 'hem in, if they be firme, and honest,  
Neuer had men the meanes so to deserue

Of *Rome*, as they. A happy, wish'd occasion,

620 And thrust into my hands, for the discouery,

And manifest conuiction of these traytors.

*The Allobroges enter.* Be thank'd, ô I V P I T E R. My worthy lords,  
Confederates of the *Senate*, you are welcome.

I vnderstand by Q V I N T V S F A B I V S S A N G A,

625 Your carefull patron here, you haue beene lately

Sollicited against the common-wealth,

By one V M B R E N V S (take a seate, I pray you)

From P V B L I V S L E N T V L V S, to be associates

In their intended warre. I could aduise,

630 That men, whose fortunes are yet flourishing,

And are *Romes* friends, would not, without a cause,

Become her enemies; and mixe themselues

And their estates, with the lost hopes of C A T I L I N E,

Or L E N T V L V S, whose meere despaire doth arme 'hem :

635 That were to hazard certainties, for aire,

And vnder-goe all danger, for a voice.

Beleeue me, friends, loud tumults are not laid

With halfe the easinesse, that they are rais'd.

All may beginne a warre, but few can end it.

640 The *Senate* haue decreed, that my colleague

Shall leade their armie, against C A T I L I N E,

And haue declar'd both him, and M A N L I V S traytors.

M E T E L L V S C E L E R hath alreadie giuen

Part of their troops defeate. Honors are promis'd

645 To all, will quit 'hem; and rewards propos'd

Euen to slaues, that can detect their courses.

Here, in the citie, I haue by the *Prætors*,

And *Tribunes*, plac'd my guards, and watches so,

That not a foote can treade, a breath can whisper,

rv. 616 th'Ambassadors] the'Ambassadors Q 619 After 'they.'  
*Exit Sanga.* G 622 Stage direction not in Q, omitted in F2: Re-  
*enter Sanga with the Allobrogian Ambassadors.* G 637-9 Gnomie  
pointing in Q: "Loud . . ." "With . . ." "All . . ."

But I haue knowledge. And be sure, the *Senate*, 650  
 And people of *Rome*, of their accustom'd greatnesse,  
 Will sharply, and seuerely vindicate,  
 Not onely any fact, but any practice,  
 Or purpose, 'gainst the state. Therefore, my lords,  
 Consult of your owne wayes, and thinke which hand 655  
 Is best to take. You, now, are present suters  
 For some redresse of wrongs ; Ile vnder-take  
 Not onely that shall be assur'd you : but  
 What grace, or priuiledge else, *Senate*, or people,  
 Can cast vpon you, worthy such a seruice, 660  
 As you haue now the way, and meanes, to doe 'hem,  
 If but your wills consent, with my designs.

A L L. We couet nothing more, most worthy *Consul*.  
 And how so e're we haue beene tempted lately,  
 To a defection, that not makes vs guiltie : 665  
 We are not yet so wretched in our fortunes,  
 Nor in our wills so lost, as to abandon  
 A friendship, prodigally, of that price,  
 As is the *Senate*, and the people of *Romes*,  
 For hopes, that doe precipitate themselues. 670

C I C. You then are wise, and honest. Doe but this, then :  
 (When shall you speake with L E N T V L V S, and the rest ?

A L L. We are to meete anone, at B R V T V S house.

C I C. Who? D E C I V S B R V T V S? He is not in *Rome*.

S A N. O, but his wife S E M P R O N I A. C I C. You 675  
 instruct me,

Shee is a chiefe.) Well, faile not you to meete 'hem,  
 And to expresse the best affection  
 You can put on, to all that they intend.  
 Like it, applaud it, giue the common-wealth,  
 And *Senate* lost to 'hem. Promise any aides 680  
 By armes, or counsell. What they can desire,  
 I would haue you preuent. Onely, say this,  
 You'haue had dispatch, in priuate, by the *Consul*,

iv. 658 you :] you, Q 659 grace,] grace Q 661 'hem,] 'hem ;  
 Q 663 ALL.] 1 Am. G. So 673, 702, 706 670 precipitate]  
 præcipitate Q 672, 676 (When . . . chiefe.)] When . . . Chiefe. Q

- Of your affaires, and for the many feares  
 685 The state's now in, you are will'd by him, this euenig,  
 To depart *Rome* : which you, by all sought meanes,  
 Will doe, of reason to decline suspicion.  
 Now, for the more authoritie of the businesse  
 They'haue trusted to you, and to giue it credit  
 690 With your owne state, at home, you would desire  
 Their letters to your *Senate*, and your people,  
 Which shewne, you durst engage both li and honor,  
 The rest should euey way answeere their hopes.  
 Those had, pretend sodaine departure, you,  
 695 And, as you giue me notice, at what port  
 You will goe out, Ile ha' you intercepted,  
 And all the letters taken with you : So  
 As you shall be redeem'd in all opinions,  
 And they conuicted of their manifest treason.  
 700 Ill deedes are well turn'd backe, vpon their authors :  
 And 'gainst an iniurer, the reuenge is iust.  
 This must be done, now. ALL. Chearefully, and firmly.  
 We'are they, would rather hast to vndertake it,  
 Then stay, to say so. CIC. With that confidence, goe :  
 705 Make your selues happy, while you make *Rome* so.  
 By SANGA, let me haue notice from you. ALL. Yes.

SEMPRONIA, LENTVLVS, CETHEGVS, GA-  
 BINIVS, STATILIVS, LONGINVS, VOL-  
 TVRTIVS, ALLOBROGES.

WHen come these creatures, the Ambassadors ?  
 I would faine see 'hem. Are they any schollers ?  
 LEN. I think not, madame. SEM. Ha' they no *greeke* ?  
 LEN. No surely.

- 710 SEM. Fie, what doe I here, wayting on 'hem then ?  
 If they be nothing but meere states-men. LEN. Yes,

iv. 692 honor] honour F2      694 sodaine] sudden F2      departure,]  
 departure Q      700-1 Gnostic pointing in Q: " Ill . . . "And . . .  
 706 *Exeunt.* add G      Before 707 SEMPRONIA . . . ALLOBROGES.]  
 SCENE V. | A Room in Brutus' (Sempronia's) House. | Enter Sem-  
 pronia, and Lentulus. G

Your ladiship shall obserue their grauitie,  
And their reseruednesse, their many cautions,  
Fitting their persons. S E M. I doe wonder much,  
That states, and common-wealths employ not women, 715  
To be Ambassadors, sometimes ! we should  
Doe as good publike seruice, and could make  
As honorable spies (for so T H V C I D I D E S  
Calls all Ambassadors.) Are they come, C E T H E G V S ?

C E T. Doe you aske me ? Am I your scout, or baud ? 720

L E N. O, C A I V S, it is no such businesse. C E T. No ?  
What do's a woman at it then ? S E M. Good sir,  
There are of vs can be as exquisite traytors,  
As ere a male-conspirator of you all.

C E T. I, at smock treason, matron, I belecue you ; 725  
And if I were your husband ; but when I  
Trust to your cobweb-bosomes any other,  
Let me there die a flie, and feast you, spider.

L E N. You are too sowre, and harsh C E T H E G V S.

C E T. You  
Are kind, and courtly. I'd be torne in pieces, 730  
With wild H I P P O L Y T V S, nay proue the death,  
Euery limbe ouer, e're I'd trust a woman,  
With wind, could I retaine it. S E M. Sir. They'll be  
trusted

With as good secrets, yet, as you haue any :  
And carry 'hem too, as close, and as coniceal'd, 735  
As you shall for your heart. C E T. Ile not contend with you  
Either in tongue, or carriage, good C A L I P S O :

L O N. Th'ambassadors are come. C E T. Thanks to thee

M E R C V R Y,  
That so hast rescu'd me. L E N. How now, V O L T V R -  
T I V S ?

V O L. They doe desire some speech with you, in priuate. 740

iv. 719 After 'Ambassadors' Enter *Cethegus*. G 724 ere] e're F2  
727 cobweb- Q: cob-web- Ff other, F2: other Q, Fr 728 flie,]  
Flie; Q 730 I'd] I'd Q Fr 732 I'd Q: I'd Fr Before  
738 Enter *Lenulus*. G 739 After 'me.' Enter *Volturtius*, *Statilius*,  
and *Gabinus*, with the *Allobrogian Ambassadors*. G



L E N. O ! 'tis about the prophecie, belike,  
And promise of the S I B Y L L S. G A B. It may be.

S E M. Shun they, to treat with me, too? G A B. No,  
good lady,

You may partake : I haue told 'hem, who you are.

745 S E M. I should be loth to be left out, and here too.

C E T. Can these, or such, be any aides, to vs?  
Looke they, as they were built to shake the world,  
Or be a moment, to our enterprise?

A thousand, such as they are, could not make

750 One atome of our soules. They should be men  
Worth heauens feare, that looking vp, but thus,  
Would make I O V E stand vpon his guard, and draw  
Himselfe within his thonder; which, amaz'd,  
He should discharge in vaine, and they vn-hurt.

755 Or, if they were, like C A P A N E V S, at *Thebes*,  
They should hang dead, vpon the highest spires,  
And aske the second bolt, to be throwne downe.  
Why, L E N T V L V S, talke you so long? This time  
Had beene enough, t'haue scatter'd all the starres,  
760 T'haue quench'd the sunne, and moone, and made the world  
Despaire of day, or any light, but ours.

L E N. How doe you like this spirit? In such men,  
Mankind doth liue. They are such soules, as these,  
That moue the world. S E M. I, though he beare me hard,

765 I, yet, must doe him right. He is a spirit  
Of the right M A R T I A N breed. A L L. He is a M A R S!  
Would we had time to liue here, and admire him.

L E N. Well, I doe see you would preuent the *Consul*.  
And I commend your care: It was but reason,

770 To aske our letters, and we had prepar'd them.  
Goe in, and we will take an oath, and seale 'hem.  
You shall haue letters, too, to C A T I L I N E,  
To visite him i'the way, and to confirme

IV. 742 SIBYLLS.] *Sibylys*; Q After 'SIBYLLS.' *He takes them apart.* G  
748 moment.] moment Q 753 thonder] thunder F2 757 bolt]  
charge Q 764 SEM. F2: SEN. Q, FI 766 ALL.] I Am. G  
MARS !] *Mars.* Q

The association. This our friend, V O L T U R T I V S,  
 Shall goe along with you. Tell our great generall, 775  
 That we are readie here ; that L V C I V S B E S T I A  
 The *Tribune*, is provided of a speech,  
 To lay the enuie of the warre on C I C E R O ;  
 That all but long for his approach, and person :  
 And then, you are made free-men, as our selues. 780

C I C E R O, F L A C C V S, P O M T I N I V S,  
 S A N G A.

I Cannot feare the warre but to succeed well,  
 Both for the honor of the cause, and worth  
 Of him that doth command. For my colleague,  
 Being so ill affected with the gout,  
 Will not be able to be there in person ; 785  
 And then P E T R E I V S, his lieutenant, must  
 Of need take charge o'the armie : who is much  
 The better souldier, hauing beene a *Tribune*,  
*Prefect, Lieutenant, Prætor* in the warre,  
 These thirtie yeeres, so conuersant i'the armie, 790  
 As he knowes all the souldiers, by their names.

F L A. They'll fight then, brauely, with him. P o m. I,  
 and he

Will lead 'hem on, as brauely. C i c. They'haue a foe  
 Will aske their braueries, whose necessities  
 Will arme him like a furie. But, how euer, 795  
 I'le trust it to the manage, and the fortune  
 Of good P E T R E I V S, who's a worthy patriot :  
 M E T E L L V S C E L E R, with three legions, too,  
 Will stop their course, for *Gallia*. How now, F A B I V S ?

S A N. The traine hath taken. You must instantly 800  
 Dispose your guards vpon the *Miluian* bridge :  
 For, by that way, they meane to come. C i c. Then, thither  
 P O M T I N I V S, and F L A C C V S, I must pray you

iv. 778 on] upon F2 780 Exeunt. add G Before 781 C I C E R O  
 . . . S A N G A.] SCENE VI. | A Room in Cicero's House. | Enter Cicero,  
 Flaccus, and Pomtinus. G 782 honor] honour F2 797 patriot:]  
 Patriot. Q 799 After 'Gallia.' Enter Fabius Sanga. G

To lead that force you haue ; and seize them all :

- 805 Let not a person scape. Th'ambassadors  
Will yeeld themselues. If there be any tumult,  
Ile send you aide. I, in meane time will call  
LENTVLVS to me, GABINVS, and CETHEGVVS,  
STATILIVS, CEPARIVS, and all these,  
810 By seuerall messengers : who no doubt will come,  
Without sense, or suspicion. Prodigall men  
Feele not their owne stocke wasting. When I haue 'hem,  
Ile place those guards, vpon 'hem, that they start not.  
S A N. But what'll you doe with SEMPRONIA? C I C.

A states anger

- 815 Should not take knowledge eyther of fooles, or women.  
I do not know whether my ioy or care  
Ought to be greater ; that I haue discover'd  
So foule a treason : or must vndergoe  
The enuie of so many great mens fate.  
820 But, happen what there can, I will be iust,  
My fortune may forsake me, not my vertue :  
That shall goe with me, and before me, still,  
And glad me, doing well, though I heare ill.

P R A E T O R S, A L L O B R O G E S, V O L -  
T V R T I V S.

F L A. Stand, who goes there? A L L. We are th'  
A L L O B R O G E S,

- 825 And friends of Rome. P O M. If you be so, then yeeld.  
Your selues vnto the *Prætors*, who in name  
Of the whole *Senate*, and the people of *Rome*,  
Yet, till you cleare your selues, charge you of practise  
Against the State. V O L. Die friends, and be not taken.

iv. 806 tumult, F2 : tumult Q, Fr 807 After 'aide.' Exeunt  
Flaccus and Pomtinus. G 811-12 Gnomie pointing in Q: "Pro-  
digall . . . " Feele . . . 814-15 Gnomie pointing in Q: "A . . . " Should  
814 A states anger] "A State Q 823 Exeunt. add G  
Before 824 PRAETORS . . . VOLTURTIVS.] SCENE VII. | *The Mulvian Bridge*.  
| Enter Flaccus and Pomtinus, with Guards, on one side, and Voltur-  
tius with the Allobrogian Ambassadors on the other. G 824, 830  
ALL.] I Am. G 824 ALLOBROGES,] Allobroges, Q: ALLOBROGES Ff

FLA. What voyce is that? Downe with 'hem all.

ALL. We yeeld. 830

POM. What's he stands out? Kill him there. VOL.

Hold, hold, hold.

I yeeld vpon conditions. FLA. We giue none

To traytors, strike him downe. VOL. My name's VOL-

TVRTIVS,

I know POMTINIVS. POM. But he knowes not you,

While you stand out vpon these trayterous termes. 835

VOL. I'll yeeld vpon the safety of my life.

POM. If it be forfeited, we cannot saue it.

VOL. Promise to doe your best. I'am not so guilty,  
As many others, I can name; and will:

If you will grant me fauour. POM. All we can 840

Is to deliuer you to the *Consul*. Take him,

And thanke the gods, that thus haue saued *Rome*.

CHORVS.

NOW, do our eares, before our eyes,  
Like men in mists,

Discouer, who'd the state surprise, 845

And who resists?

And, as these clouds doe yeeld to light,

Now, do we see,

Our thoughts of things, how they did fight,

Which seem'd t'agree? 850

Of what strange pieces are we made,

Who nothing know;

But, as new ayres our eares inuade,

Still censure so?

That now doe hope, and now doe feare, 855

And now enuy;

And then doe hate, and then loue deare,

But know not, why:

IV. 833 [traytors,] traytors; F2 VOLTVRTIVS,] *Volturtius*: Q:  
VOLTVRTIVS FI: VOLTURTIVS, F2 838 I'am] I am F2 841  
*Consul*] *Consul Q*, Ff 842 *Exeunt*. add G

- Or, if we doe, it is so late,  
860 As our best mood,  
Though true, is then thought out of date,  
And emptie of good.  
How haue we chang'd, and come about  
In euery doome,  
865 Since wicked CATILINE went out,  
And quitted *Rome* ?  
One while, we thought him innocent ;  
And, then, w(e)'accus'd  
The *Consul*, for his malice spent ;  
870 And power abus'd.  
Since, that we heare, he is in armes,  
We thinke not so :  
Yet charge the *Consul*, with our harmes,  
That let him goe.  
875 So, in our censure of the state,  
We still doe wander ;  
And make the carefull magistrate  
The marke of slander.  
What age is this, where honest men,  
880 Plac'd at the helme,  
A sea of some foule mouth, or pen,  
Shall ouer-whelme ?  
And call their diligence, deceit ;  
Their vertue, vice ;  
885 Their watchfulnesse, but lying in wait ;  
And bloud, the price.  
O, let vs plucke this euill seede  
Out of our spirits ;  
And giue, to euery noble deede,  
890 The name it merits.  
Lest we seeme falne (if this endures)  
Into those times,  
To loue disease : and brooke the cures  
Worse, then the crimes.

Act v.

PETREIUS.

The  
Armie.

IT is my fortune, and my glorie, Souldiers,  
 This day, to lead you on ; the worthy *Consul*  
 Kept from the honor of it, by disease :  
 And I am proud, to haue so braue a cause  
 To exercise your armes in. We not, now, 5  
 Fight for how long, how broad, how great, and large  
 Th'extent, and bounds o'th' people of *Rome* shall be ;  
 But to retaine what our great ancestors,  
 With all their labours, counsells, arts, and actions,  
 For vs, were purchasing so many yeeres. 10  
 The quarrell is not, now, of fame, of tribute,  
 Or of wrongs, done vnto confederates,  
 For which, the armie of the people of *Rome*  
 Was wont to moue : but for your owne republique,  
 For the rais'd temples of th'immortall gods, 15  
 For all your fortunes, altars, and your fires,  
 For the deare soules of your lou'd wiues, and children,  
 Your parents tombes, your rites, lawes, libertie,  
 And, briefly, for the safety of the world :  
 Against such men, as onely by their crimes 20  
 Are knowne ; thrust out by riot, want, or rashnesse.  
 One sort, SYLLA's old troops, left here in *Fesulæ*,  
 Who sodainely made rich, in those dire times,  
 Are since, by their vn-bounded, vast expence,  
 Growne needy, and poore : and haue but left t'expect, 25  
 From CATILINE, new bills, and new proscriptions.  
 These men (they say) are valiant ; yet, I thinke 'hem  
 Not worth your pause : For either their old vertue  
 Is, in their sloth, and pleasures lost ; or, if  
 It tarry with 'hem, so ill match to yours, 30  
 As they are short in number, or in cause.

v. Act V] PETREIUS. THE ARMY. Q : ACT V. SCENE I. | *Etruria.*  
*The Country near Fesulæ.* | Enter Petreius, marching, at the head of  
 his army. G 11 of tribute] or tribute F2 25 poore:] poore, Q

- The second sort are of those (city-beasts,  
 Rather then citizens) who whilst they reach  
 After our fortunes, haue let flie their owne ;  
 35 These, whelm'd in wine, swell'd vp with meates, and  
     weakned  
 With hourelly whoredomes, neuer left the side  
 Of CATILINE, in *Rome* ; nor, here, are loos'd  
 From his embraces : such, as (trust me) neuer  
 In riding, or in vsing well their armes,  
 40 Watching, or other militarie labour,  
 Did exercise their youth ; but learn'd to loue,  
 Drinke, dance, and sing, make feasts, and be fine gamsters :  
 And these will wish more hurt to'you, then they bring you.  
 The rest are a mixt kind, all sorts of furies,  
 45 Adulterers, dicers, fencers, out-lawes, theeues,  
 The murderers of their parents, all the sinke,  
 And plague of *Italie*, met in one torrent,  
 To take, to day, from vs the punishment,  
 Due to their mischiefes, for so many yeeres.  
 50 And who, in such a cause, and 'gainst such fiends,  
 Would not now wish himselfe all arme, and weapon ?  
 To cut such poysons from the earth, and let  
 Their bloud out, to be drawne away in cloudes,  
 And pour'd, on some inhabitable place,  
 55 Where the hot sunne, and slime breeds nought but  
     monsters ?  
 Chiefly, when this sure ioy shall crowne our side,  
 That the least man, that falls vpon our partie  
 This day (as some must giue their happy names  
 To fate, and that eternall memorie  
 60 Of the best death, writ with it, for their countrey)  
 Shall walke at pleasure, in the tents of rest ;  
 And see farre off, beneath him, all their host  
 Tormented after life : and CATILINE, there,  
 Walking a wretched, and lesse ghost, then he.

Ile vrge no more : Moue forward, with your eagles, 65  
And trust the *Senates*, and *Romes* cause to heauen.

A R M. To thee, great father M A R S, and greater I O V E.

C Æ S A R, C R A S S V S.

I Euer look'd for this of L E N T V L V S,  
I When C A T I L I N E was gone. C R A. I gaue 'hem lost,  
Many dayes since. C A E S. But, wherefore did you beare 70  
Their letter to the *Consul*, that they sent you,  
To warne you from the citie? C R A. Did I know  
Whether he made it? It might come from him,  
For ought I could assure me : if they meant,  
I should be safe, among so many, they might 75  
Haue come, as well as writ. C A E S. There is no losse  
In being secure. I haue, of late, too, ply'd him  
Thicke, with intelligences, but they'haue beene  
Of things he knew before. C R A. A little serues  
To keepe a man vpright, on these state-bridges, 80  
Although the passage were more dangerous.  
Let vs now take the standing part. C A E S. We must,  
And be as zealous for't, as C A T O. Yet  
I would faine helpe these wretched men. C R A. You can-  
not.

Who would saue them, that haue betraid themselues? 85

C I C E R O, Q V I N T V S, C A T O.

I Will not be wrought to it, brother Q V I N T V S.  
I There's no mans priuate enmitie shall make  
Me violate the dignitie of another.  
If there were prooffe 'gainst C A E S A R, or who euer,  
To speake him guiltie, I would so declare him. 90  
But Q V I N T V S C A T V L V S, and P I S O both,  
Shall know, the *Consul* will not, for their grudge,

v. 67 *Exeunt.* G Before 68 CÆSAR, CRASSVS.] SCENE II. | *Rome.*  
A *Street near the Temple of Concord.* | *Enter Cæsar and Crassus.* G  
85 *Exeunt.* add G Before 86 CICERO . . . CATO] SCENE III. |  
*Cicero's House.* | *Enter Cicero, Q. Cicero, and Cato.* G



Haue any man accus'd, or named falsly.

Q V I. Not falsly : but if any circumstance,

- 95 By the ALLOBROGES, or from VOLTURTIVS,  
Would carry it. C I C. That shall not be sought by me.  
If it reueale it selfe, I would not spare  
You, brother, if it pointed at you, trust me.

C A T O. Good M A R C V S T V L L I V S (which is more,  
then great)

- 100 Thou had'st thy education, with the gods.

C I C. Send L E N T V L V S forth, and bring away the rest.  
This office, I am sorry, sir, to doe you.

#### T H E S E N A T E.

- W**hat may be happy still, and fortunate,  
To Rome, and to this Senate : Please you, *Fathers*,  
105 To breake these letters, and to view them round.  
If that be not found in them, which I feare,  
I, yet, intreate, at such a time, as this,  
My diligence be not contemn'd. Ha' you brought  
The weapons hither, from C E T H E G V S house ?  
110 P R A E. They are without. C I C. Be readie, with V O L -  
T V R T I V S,  
To bring him, when the *Senate* calls ; and see  
None of the rest, conferre together. *Fathers*,  
What doe you reade ? Is it yet worth your care,  
If not your feare, what you find practis'd there ?  
115 C A E S. It hath a face of horror ! C R A. I'am amaz'd !  
C A T O. Looke there. S Y L. Gods ! Can such men draw  
common aire ?  
C I C. Although the greatnesse of the mischiefe, *Fathers*,  
Hath often made my faith small, in this *Senate*,  
Yet, since my casting C A T I L I N E out (for now

v. 94 falsly :] falsly, Q 102 *Exeunt.* add G Before 103  
THE SENATE.] SCENE IV. | *The Temple of Concord.* | *Enter Lictors,*  
*Cicero (with letters), Cato, Q. Cicero, Cæsar, Crassus, Syllanus, and other*  
*Senators.* G 108 After 'contemn'd.' *Gives the letters to the Senate.* |  
*Enter (the Prætors) Flaccus and Pomtinus.* G 112 After 'together.'  
*Exeunt Prætors.* G 115 horror! . . . amaz'd!] horror. . . . amaz'd. Q

I doe not feare the enuy of the word, 120  
 Vnlesse the deed be rather to be fear'd,  
 That he went hence aliuie ; when those I meant  
 Should follow him, did not) I haue spent both dayes,  
 And nights, in watching, what their fury'and rage  
 Was bent on, that so staid, against my thought : 125  
 And that I might but take 'hem in that light,  
 Where, when you met their treason, with your eyes,  
 Your minds, at length, would thinke for your owne safetie.  
 And, now, 'tis done. There are their hands, and seales.  
 Their persons, too, are safe, thanks to the gods. 130  
 Bring in VOLTURTIVS, and the ALLOBROGES.  
 These be the men, were trusted with their letters.

VOL. *Fathers*, beleeeue me, I knew nothing : I  
 Was traauiling for *Gallia*, and am sorry——

CIC. Quake not, VOLTURTIVS, speake the truth,  
 and hope 135  
 Well of this *Senate*, on the *Consuls* word.

VOL. Then, I knew all. But truely'I was drawne in  
 But t'other day. CAES. Say, what thou know'st, and  
 feare not.

Thou hast the *Senates* faith, and *Consuls* word,  
 To fortifie thee. VOL. I was sent with letters—— *He an-*  
 And had a message too——from LENTVLVS—— *swers*  
 To CATILINE——that he should vse all aides—— *with feare*  
 Seruants, or others——and come with his armie, *and inter-*  
 Assoone, vnto the citie as he could—— *ruptions*  
 For they were readie, and but staid for him—— 145  
 To intercept those, that should flee the fire——  
 These men (the ALLOBROGES) did heare it too.

ALL. Yes, *Fathers*, and they tooke an oath, to vs,  
 Besides their letters, that we should be free ;  
 And vrg'd vs, for some present aide of horse. 150

CIC. Nay, here be other testimonies, *Fathers*, *The*  
 v. After 131 *Re-enter Prators, with Volturtius and the Allobrogian* *weapons*  
*Ambassadors. G* 137 *truely'I] The apostrophe clear in Q, faint or* *and armes*  
*missing in F1 : om. F2* 140, 151 *Stage directions not in Q* 148 *brought*  
 ALL.] 1 *Amb. G* vs.] vs. Q, F1 : us. F2 *forth.*

C E T H E G V S armourie. C R A. What, not all these?

C I C. Here's not the hundred part. Call in the Fencer,  
That we may know the armes to all these weapons.

155 Come, my braue sword-player, to what active vse,  
Was all this steele prouided? C E T. Had you ask'd  
In S Y L L A's dayes, it had beene to cut throats;  
But, now, it was to looke on, only: I lou'd  
To see good blades, and feele their edge, and points.

160 To put a helme vpon a blocke, and cleaue it,  
And, now and then, to stab an armour through.

C I C. Know you that paper? That will stab you through.  
Is it your hand? Hold, saue the pieces. Traytor,  
Hath thy guilt wak'd thy furie? C E T. I did write,  
165 I know not what; nor care not: That foole L E N T V L V S  
Did dictate, and I t'other foole, did signe it.

C I C. Bring in S T A T I L I V S: Do's he know his hand  
too?

And L E N T V L V S. Reach him that letter. S T A. I  
Confesse it all. C I C. Know you that seale yet, P V B-  
L I V S?

170 L E N. Yes, it is mine. C I C. Whose image is that,  
on it?

L E N. My grand-fathers. C I C. What, that renown'd  
good man,

That did so only'embrace his countrey', and lou'd  
His fellow citizens! Was not his picture,  
Though mute, of power to call thee from a fact,

175 So foule—— L E N. As what, impetuous C I C E R O?

C I C. As thou art, for I doe not know what's fouler.  
Looke vpon these. Doe not these faces argue

Thy guilt, and impudence? L E N. What are these to me?  
I know 'hem not. A L L. No P V B L I V S? we were with  
you,

v. After 154 *Enter Cethegus, guarded.* G 163 After 'hand?'  
*Cethegus tears the letters.* G 168 After 'LENTVLVS.' *Enter Statilius*  
*and P. Lentulus, guarded.* G 171 renown'd] renown'd F3 177  
After 'these.' *Points to the Allobrogian Ambassadors.* G 179 ALL.]  
Amb. G: so 181, 188, 196

At BRVTVS house. VOL. Last night. LEN. What did  
 you there? 180  
 Who sent for you? ALL. Your selfe did. We had letters  
 From you, CETHGVVS, this STATILVS here,  
 GABINIVS CIMBER, all, but from LONGINVS,  
 Who would not write, because he was to come  
 Shortly, in person, after vs (he said) 185  
 To take the charge o' the horse, which we should leuy.  
 CIC. And he is fled, to CATILINE, I heare.  
 LEN. Spies? spies? ALL. You told vs too, o' the  
 SIBYLLS bookes,  
 And how you were to be a king, this yeere,  
 The twentieth, from the burning of the *Capitoll*. 190  
 That three CORNELII were to raigne, in *Rome*,  
 Of which you were the last: and prais'd CETHGVVS,  
 And the great spirits, were with you, in the action.  
 CET. These are your honorable Ambassadors,  
 My soueraigne lord. CAT. Peace, that too bold CETH-  
 GVS. 195  
 ALL. Besides GABINIVS, your agent, nam'd  
 AVTRONIVS, SERVIUS SVLLA, VARGVNTIVS,  
 And diuers others. VOL. I had letters from you,  
 To CATILINE, and a message, which I haue told  
 Vnto the *Senate*, truely, word for word: 200  
 For which, I hope, they will be gracious to me.  
 I was drawne in, by that same wicked CIMBER,  
 And thought no hurt at all. CIC. VOLTVRTIVS, peace.  
 Where is thy visor, or thy voyce, now, LENTVLVS?  
 Art thou confounded? Wherefore speak'st thou not? 205  
 Is all so cleere, so plaine, so manifest,  
 That both thy eloquence, and impudence,  
 And thy ill nature, too, haue left thee, at once?  
 Take him aside. There's yet one more, GABINIVS,  
 The enginer of all. Shew him that paper, 210

v. 194 honorable] honourable F2 197 SVLLA] SVLLA F2 209  
 more.] more. Q 210 enginer] Engineer F3 After 'all.' *Gabinus*  
*Cimber is brought in.* G

If he doe know it? G A B. I know nothing. C I C. No?

G A B. No. Neither will I know. C A T. Impudent head!

Sticke it into his throate; were I the *Consul*,  
I'd make thee eate the mischiefe, thou hast vented.

215 G A B. Is there a law for't, C A T O? C A T. Do'st thou aske

After a law, that would'st haue broke all lawes,  
Of nature, manhood, conscience, and religion?

G A B. Yes, I may aske for't. C A T. No, pernicious  
C I M B E R.

Th'inquiring after good, do's not belong

220 Vnto a wicked person. G A B. I, but C A T O

Do's nothing, but by law. C R A. Take him aside.

There's prooffe enough, though he confesse not. G A B.  
Stay,

I will confesse. All's true, your spies haue told you.

Make much of 'hem. C E T. Yes, and reward 'hem well,

225 For feare you get no more such. See, they doe not

Die in a ditch, and stinke, now you ha' done with 'hem;

Or beg, o' the bridges, here in *Rome*, whose arches

Their actiue industrie hath sau'd. C I C. See, *Fathers*,

What mindes, and spirits these are, that, being conuicted

230 Of such a treason, and by such a cloud

Of witnesses, dare yet retayne their boldnesse?

What would their rage haue done, if they had conquer'd?

I thought, when I had thrust out C A T I L I N E,

Neither the state, nor I, should need t'haue fear'd

235 L E N T V L V S sleepe here, or L O N G I N V S fat,

Or this C E T H E G V S rashnesse; it was he,

I onely watch'd, while he was in our walls,

As one, that had the braine, the hand, the heart.

But now, we find the contrary! Where was there

240 A people grieu'd, or a state discontent,

v. 212 Neither . . . know] Nor I will not know Q Neither corr. FI,  
F2: Neyther FI originally head l] head? Q 214 I'd] Il'd  
Q, Ff 219-20 Gnomie pointing in Q: "Th'inquiring . . ." Vnto . . .  
220 I, Q: I Ff 239 But] Bnt Q contrary l] contrary. Q

Able to make, or helpe a warre 'gainst *Rome*,  
 But these, th'*ALLOBROGES*, and those they found ?  
 Whom had not the iust gods beene pleas'd to make  
 More friends vnto our safety, then their owne,  
 As it then seem'd, neglecting these mens offers, 245  
 Where had we beene ? or where the common-wealth ?  
 When their great Chiefe had beene call'd home ? this man,  
 Their absolute king (whose noble grand-father,  
 Arm'd in pursuit of the seditious *GRACCHVS*,  
 Tooke a braue wound, for deare defence of that, 250  
 Which he would spoile) had gather'd all his aides  
 Of ruffians, slaues, and other slaughter-men ?  
 Giuen vs vp for murder, to *CETHEGVVS* ?  
 The'other ranke of citizens, to *GABINIVS* ?  
 The citie, to be fir'd by *CASSIVS* ? 255  
 And *Italie*, nay the world, to be laid wast  
 By cursed *CATILINE*, and his complices ?  
 Lay but the thought of it, before you, *Fathers*,  
 Thinke but with me you saw this glorious citie,  
 The light of all the earth, tower of all nations, 260  
 Sodainely falling in one flame. Imagine,  
 You view'd your countrey buried with the heapes  
 Of slaughter'd citizens, that had no graue ;  
 This *LENTVLVS* here, raigning, (as he dreampt)  
 And those his purple *Senate* ; *CATILINE* come 265  
 With his fierce armie ; and the cryes of matrons,  
 The flight of children, and the rape of virgins,  
 Shriekes of the liuing, with the dying grones  
 On euery side t'inuade your sense ; vntill  
 The bloud of *Rome*, were mixed with her ashes ! 270  
 This was the spectacle these fiends intended  
 To please their malice. *CET. I.* and it would  
 Haue beene a braue one, *Consul*. But your part  
 Had not then beene so long, as now it is :

v. 247 home?] home; Q 252 ruffians] Ruffins Q -men?] -men; Q  
 253 CETHEGVVS?] *Cethegus*; Q 254 GABINIVS?] *Gabinus*; Q  
 255 CASSIVS?] *Cassius*; Q 257 complices?] complices. Q 270  
 ashes!] ashes. Q

- 275 I should haue quite defeated your oration ;  
 And slit that fine rhetoricall pipe of yours,  
 I' the first *Scene*. CAT. Insolent monster! CIC. *Fathers*,  
 Is it your pleasures, they shall be committed  
 Vnto some safe, but a free custodie,  
 280 Vntill the *Senate* can determine farder ?

SEN. It pleaseth well. CIC. Then, MARCVS CRASSVS,  
 Take you charge of GABINIUS: send him home  
 Vnto your house. You CAESAR, of STATILIUS.  
 CETHEGVS shall be sent to CORNIFICIUS;

- 285 And LENTVLVS, to PVBLIVS LENTVLVS SPINTHER,  
 Who now is *Ædile*. CAT. It were best, the *Prætors*  
 Carryed 'hem to their houses, and deliuered 'hem.

CIC. Let it be so. Take 'hem from hence. CAES.  
 But, first,

Let LENTVLVS put off his *Prætor*-ship.

- 290 LEN. I doe resigne it here vnto the *Senate*.  
 CAES. So, now, there's no offence done to religion.  
 CAT. CAESAR, 'twas piously, and timely vrg'd.  
 CIC. What doe you decree to th'ALLOBROGES?  
 That were the lights to this discovery ?

- 295 CRA. A free grant, from the state, of all their suites.  
 CAES. And a reward, out of the publike treasure.  
 CAT. I, and the title of honest men, to crowne 'hem.  
 CIC. What to VOLTVRTIVS? CAES. Life, and  
 fauour 's well.  
 VOL. I aske no more. CAT. Yes, yes, some money,  
 thou need'st it.

- 300 'Twill keepe thee honest: want made thee a knaue.

SYL. Let FLACCVS, and POMTINIUS, the *Prætors*,  
 Haue publike thanks, and QVINTVS FABIVS SANGA,  
 For their good seruice. CRA. They deserue it all.

- CAT. But what doe we decree vnto the *Consul*,  
 305 Whose vertue, counsell, watchfulnesse, and wisdom, Hath free'd the common-wealth, and without tumult,

v. 276 rhetorically] rhetorically F2      286 *Ædile*] *Ædile Q, Ff*  
 After 290 *Exeunt Prætors and Guards, with Lentulus, Cethegus, Statilius,*  
*and Gabinius. G*      298 fauour 's] fauor's Q

Slaughter, or bloud, or scarce raysing a force,  
Rescu'd vs all out of the iawes of fate ?

C R A. We owe our liues vnto him, and our fortunes.

C A E S. Our wiues, our children, parents, and our gods. 310

S Y L. We all are sau'd, by his fortitude.

C A T O. The common-wealth owes him a *ciuicke* gyrland.  
He is the onely father of his countrey.

C A E S. Let there be publike prayer, to all the gods,  
Made in that name, for him. C R A. And in these words. 315  
*For that he hath, by his vigilance, preseru'd*  
*Rome from the flame, the Senate from the sword,*  
*And all her citizens from massacre.*

C I C. How are my labours more than paid, graue *Fathers*,  
In these great titles, and decreed honors ! 320  
Such, as to me, first, of the ciuill robe,  
Of any man, since *Rome was Rome*, haue hap'ned ;  
And from this frequent *Senate* : which more glads me,  
That I now see, yo'haue sense of your owne safety.  
If those good dayes come no lesse gratefull to vs, 325  
Wherein we are preseru'd from some great danger,  
Then those, wherein we're borne, and brought to light,  
Because the gladnesse of our safetie is certaine,  
But the condition of our birth not so ;  
And that we are sau'd with pleasure, but are borne 330  
Without the sense of ioy : why should not, then,  
This day, to vs, and all posteritie  
Of ours, be had in equall fame, and honor,  
With that, when R O M V L V S first rear'd these walls,  
When so much more is sau'd, then he built ? 335

C A E S. It ought. C R A. Let it be added to our *Fasti*.

C I C. What tumult's that ? F L A. Here's one T A R -  
Q V I N I V S taken,  
Going to C A T I L I N E ; and sayes he was sent  
By M A R C V S C R A S S V S : whom he names, to be

v. 312 gyrland] garland F2 324 yo'haue] you' haue Q 327  
we're F2: w' are Q, F1 brought] brought, Q, Ff 333 honor]  
honour F2 336 Noise without. add G 337 After 'that?'  
Re-enter Flaccus. G



- 340 Guiltie of the conspiracy. C I C. Some lying varlet.  
 Take him away, to prison. C R A. Bring him in,  
 And let me see him. C I C. He is not worth it, C R A S S V S.  
 Keepe him vp close, and hungrie, till he tell,  
 By whose pernicious counsell, he durst slander  
 345 So great, and good a citizen. (C R A. By yours  
 I feare, 'twill proue.) S Y L. Some o' the traytors, sure,  
 To giue their action the more credit, bid him  
 Name you, or any man. C I C. I know my selfe,  
 By all the tracts, and courses of this businesse,  
 350 C R A S S V S is noble, iust, and loues his countrey.  
 F L A. Here is a libell too, accusing C A E S A R,  
 From L V C I V S V E C T I V S, and confirm'd by C V R I V S.  
 C I C. Away with all, throw it out o' the court.  
 C A E S. A tricke on me, too? C I C. It is some mens  
 malice.  
 355 I said to C V R I V S, I did not beleeeue him.  
 C A E S. Was not that C V R I V S your spie, that had  
 Reward decreed vnto him, the last *Senate*,  
 With F V L V I A, vpon your priuate motion?  
 C I C. Yes. C A E S. But, he has not that reward, yet?  
 C I C. No.  
 360 Let not this trouble you, C A E S A R, none beleeeues it.  
 C A E S. It shall not, if that he haue no reward.  
 But if he haue, sure I shall thinke my selfe  
 Very vntimely, and vnsafely honest,  
 Where such, as he is, may haue pay t'accuse me.  
 365 C I C. You shall haue no wrong done you, noble C A E S A R,  
 But all contentment. C A E S. *Consul*, I am silent.

*The  
 Armie.*

C A T I L I N E.

I Neuer yet knew, Souldiers, that, in fight,  
 Words added vertue vnto valiant men;  
 Or, that a generalls oration made

v. 345-6 (CRA. . . . proue.)] CRA. . . . proue. Q 353 throw it]  
 throw it Q 359 But,] But Q 366 *Exeunt.* add G Before  
 367 CATILINE. THE ARMIE. Q: SCENE V. | *The Country near Fesula.* |  
*Enter Catiline with his Army.* G

An armie fall, or stand : but how much prowesse 370  
 Habituell, or naturall each mans brest  
 Was owner of, so much in act it shew'd.  
 Whom neither glory'or danger can excite,  
 'Tis vaine t'attempt with speech : for the minds feare  
 Keepes all braue sounds from entring at that eare. 375  
 I, yet, would warne you some few things, my friends,  
 And giue you reason of my present counsailes.  
 You know, no lesse then I, what state, what point  
 Our affaires stand in ; and you all haue heard,  
 What a calamitous misery the sloth, 380  
 And sleepinesse of L E N T V L V S, hath pluck'd  
 Both on himselfe, and vs : how, whilst our aides  
 There, in the citie look'd for, are defeated,  
 Our entrance into *Gallia*, too, is stopt.  
 Two armies wait vs : one from *Rome*, the other 385  
 From the *Gaule-Prouinces*. And, where we are,  
 (Although I most desire it) the great want  
 Of corne, and victuall, forbids longer stay.  
 So that, of need, we must remoue, but whither  
 The sword must both direct, and cut the passage. 390  
 I onely, therefore, wish you, when you strike,  
 To haue your valours, and your soules, about you ;  
 And thinke, you carrie in your labouring hands  
 The things you seeke, glorie, and libertie,  
 Your countrie, which you want now, with the *Fates*, 395  
 That are to be instructed, by our swords.  
 If we can giue the blow, all will be safe to'vs.  
 We shall not want prouision, nor supplies.  
 The colonies, and free townes will lye open.  
 Where, if we yeeld to feare, expect no place, 400  
 Nor friend, to shelter those, whom their owne fortune,  
 And ill-vs'd armes haue left without protection.  
 You might haue liu'd in seruitude, or exile,

v. 373-5 *Gnomic pointing in* Q : " Whom . . . " 'Tis . . . " Keepest . . .  
 388 victuall] victuals F<sub>2</sub> 393 labouring] laboring Q 397 to'vs  
 Q : to vs F<sub>1</sub> : to us F<sub>2</sub> 402 ill-vs'd] ill vs'd Q, F<sub>1</sub> ill us'd F<sub>2</sub>

- Or safe at *Rome*, depending on the great ones ;  
 405 But that you thought those things vnfit for men.  
 And, in that thought, you then were valiant.  
 For no man euer yet chang'd peace for warre,  
 But he, that meant to conquer. Hold that purpose.  
 There's more necessitie, you should be such,  
 410 In fighting for your selues, then they for others.  
 Hee's base, that trusts his feet, whose hands are arm'd.  
 Me thinks, I see *Death*, and the *Furies*, waiting  
 What we will doe ; and all the heau'n at leisure  
 For the great spectacle. Draw, then, your swords :  
 415 And, if our destinie enuie our vertue  
 The honor of the day, yet let vs care  
 To sell our selues, at such a price, as may  
 Vn-doe the world, to buy vs ; and make *Fate*,  
 While shee tempts ours, feare her owne estate.

## THE SENATE.

- 420 S E N. What meanes this hastie calling of the *Senate* ?  
 S E N. We shall know, straight. Wait, till the *Consul*  
 speakes.

- P O M. *Fathers Conscript*, bethinke you of your safeties,  
 And what to doe, with these conspirators ;  
 Some of their clients, their free'd men, and slaues  
 425 'Ginne to make head : there is one of L E N T V L V S bawds  
 Runnes vp and downe the shops, through euery street,  
 With money to corrupt the poore artificers,  
 And needie tradesmen, to their aide. C E T H E G V S  
 Hath sent, too, to his seruants ; who are many,  
 430 Chosen, and exercis'd in bold attemptings,  
 That forth-with they should arme themselues, and proue  
 His rescue : All will be in instant vproare,  
 If you preuent it not, with present counsailes.

v. 411 *Gnomic pointing in Q* : " Hee's . . . 413 heau'n] Heauen'  
*Q* : heauen' *F1* : heaven' *F2* 418 world,] world *Q* 419 *Exeunt*,  
*marching*, add G Before 420 THE SENATE] SCENE VI. | *The Temple*  
*of Jupiter Siator*. | *Enter Lictors, Prætors, (Pomptinius and Flaccus),*  
*Cicero, Syllanus, Cæsar, Cato, Crassus, and other Senators.* G 427  
*money*] Money, *F3* corrupt *F2* : corrupt, *Q*, *F1*

We haue done what we can, to meet the furie,  
And will doe more. Be you good to your selues. 435

C I C. What is your pleasure, *Fathers*, shall be done ?

S Y L L A N V S, you are *Consul* next design'd.

Your sentence, of these men. S Y L. 'Tis short, and this.  
Since they haue sought to blot the name of *Rome*,  
Out of the world ; and raze this glorious empire 440  
With her owne hands, and armes, turn'd on her selfe :

I thinke it fit they die. And, could my breath

Now, execute 'hem, they should not enioy

An article of time, or eye of light,

Longer, to poyson this our common ayre. 445

S E N. I thinke so too. S E N. And I. S E N. And I.

S E N. And I.

C I C. Your sentence, C A I V S C A E S A R. C A E S. *Conscript Fathers*,

In great affaires, and doubtfull, it behooues

Men, that are ask'd their sentence, to be free

From either hate, or loue, anger, or pittie : 450

For, where the least of these doe hinder, there

The mind not easily discernes the truth.

I speake this to you, in the name of *Rome*,

For whom you stand ; and to the present cause :

That this foule fact of L E N T V L V S, and the rest, 455

Weigh not more with you, then your dignitie ;

And you be more indulgent to your passion,

Then to your honor. If there could be found

A paine, or punishment, equall to their crimes,

I would deuise, and helpe : but, if the greatnesse 460

Of what they ha' done, exceed all mans inuention,

I thinke it fit, to stay, where our lawes doe.

Poore pettie states may alter, vpon humour,

Where, if they offend with anger, few doe know it,

Because they are obscure ; their fame, and fortune 465

Is equall, and the same. But they, that are

v. 451 doe hinder] doehinder *Fr*  
466 same.] same : *Q*

463 humour] humor *Q*

- Head of the world, and liue in that seene height,  
 All mankind knowes their actions. So wee see,  
 The greater fortune hath the lesser licence.  
 They must nor fauour, hate, and least be angry :  
 For what with others is call'd anger, there,  
 Is crueltie, and pride. I know SYLLANVS,  
 Who spoke before me, a iust, valiant man,  
 A louer of the state, and one that would not,  
 In such a businesse, vse or grace, or hatred ;  
 I know, too, well, his manners, and modestie :  
 Nor doe I thinke his sentence cruell (for  
 'Gainst such delinquents, what can be too bloudie ?)  
 But that it is abhorring from our state ;  
 Since to a citizen of *Rome*, offending,  
 Our lawes giue exile, and not death. Why then  
 Decrees he that ? 'Twere vaine to thinke, for feare ;  
 When, by the diligence of so worthy a *Consul*,  
 All is made safe, and certaine. Is't for punishment ?  
 Why, death's the end of euills, and a rest,  
 Rather then torment : It dissolues all griefes.  
 And beyond that, is neither care, nor ioy.  
 You heare, my sentence would not haue 'hem die.  
 How then ? set free, and increase CATILINES armie ?  
 So will they, being but banish'd. No, graue *Fathers*,  
 I iudge 'hem, first, to haue their states confiscate,  
 Then, that their persons remaine prisoners  
 I'the free townes, farre off from *Rome*, and seuer'd :  
 Where they might neither haue relation,  
 Hereafter, to the *Senate*, or the people.  
 Or, if they had, those townes, then, to be mulcted,  
 As enemies to the state, that had their guard.  
 SEN. 'Tis good, and honorable, CAESAR hath vtterd.  
 CIC. *Fathers*, I see your faces, and your eyes  
 All bent on me, to note of these two censures,
- v. 470 fauour] fauor Q                      476 well,] well Q    and] and his Q  
 486 griefes.] griefes; F2                      493 seuer'd] seuerd' Q    496 then,]  
 then Q, Ff                      498 honorable] honourable Q    CAESAR] CAESAR,  
 Ff: *Cæsar*, Q

Which I incline to. Either of them are graue,  
 And answering the dignitie of the speakers,  
 The greatnesse of th'affaire, and both seuere.  
 One vrgeth death : and he may well remember  
 This state hath punish'd wicked citizens so. 505  
 The other bonds : and those perpetuall, which  
 He thinkes found out for the more singular plague.  
 Decree, which you shall please. You haue a *Consul*,  
 Not readier to obey, then to defend,  
 What euer you shall act, for the republique ; 510  
 And meet with willing shoulders any burden,  
 Or any fortune, with an euen face,  
 Though it were death : which to a valiant man  
 Can neuer happen foule, nor to a *Consul*  
 Be immature, or to a wise man wretched. 515

S Y L. *Fathers*, I spake, but as I thought : the needes  
 O'th' common-wealth requir'd. C A T. Excuse it not.

C I C. C A T O, speake you your sentence. C A T. This  
 it is.

You here dispute, on kinds of punishment,  
 And stand consulting, what you should decree 520  
 'Gainst those, of whom, you rather should beware.  
 This mischiefe is not like those common facts,  
 Which, when they are done, the lawes may prosecute.  
 But this, if you prouide not, ere it happen,  
 When it is happen'd, will not wait your iudgement. 525  
 Good C A I V S C A E S A R, here, hath very well,  
 And subtilly discours'd of life, and death,  
 As if he thought those things, a prettie fable,  
 That are deliuer'd vs of hell, and furies,  
 Or of the diuers way, that ill men goe 530  
 From good, to filthy, darke, and vgly places.  
 And therefore, he would haue these liue ; and long too ;  
 But farre from *Rome*, and in the small free townes,  
 Lest, here, they might haue rescue : As if men,

v. 501 incline] encline Q  
 F2 531 vgly] ougly Q

521 beware. Q: beware, Fx: beware;

- 535 Fit for such acts, were only in the citie,  
 And not throughout all *Italie* ? or, that boldnesse  
 Could not doe more, where it found least resistance ?  
 'Tis a vaine counsaile, if he thinke them dangerous.  
 Which, if he doe not, but that he alone,
- 540 In so great feare of all men, stand vn-frighted,  
 He giues me cause, and you, more to feare him.  
 I am plaine, *Fathers*. Here you looke about,  
 One at another, doubting what to doe ;  
 With faces, as you trusted to the gods,
- 545 That still haue sau'd you ; and they can do't : But,  
 They are not wishings, or base womanish prayers,  
 Can draw their aides ; but vigilance, counsell, action :  
 Which they will be ashamed to forsake.  
 'Tis sloth they hate, and cowardise. Here, you haue
- 550 The traytors in your houses, yet, you stand,  
 Fearing what to doe with 'hem ; Let 'hem loose,  
 And send 'hem hence with armes, too ; that your mercie  
 May turne your miserie, as soone as 't can.  
 O, but, they, are great men, and haue offended,
- 555 But, through ambition. We would spare their honor :  
 I, if themselves had spar'd it, or their fame,  
 Or modestie, or either god, or man :  
 Then I would spare 'hem. But, as things now stand,  
*Fathers*, to spare these men, were to commit
- 560 A greater wickednesse, then you would reuenge.  
 If there had beene but time, and place, for you,  
 To haue repair'd this fault, you should haue made it ;  
 It should haue beene your punishment, to'haue felt  
 Your tardie error : but necessitie,
- 565 Now, bids me say, let 'hem not liue an houre,  
 If you meane *Rome* should liue a day. I haue done.  
 S E N. C A T O hath spoken like an oracle.  
 C R A. Let it be so decreed. S E N. We are all fearefull.

v. 549 Here,] Here Q, F2  
 place Q 565 houre] hower Q  
 are all] all were Q

555 But,] But Q 561 place,]  
 567 oracle.] Oracle, Q 568

S Y L. And had beene base, had not his vertue rais'd vs.

S E N. Goe forth, most worthy *Consul*, wee'll assist you. 570

C A E S. I am not yet chang'd in my sentence, *Fathers*.

C A T. No matter. What be those? S E R. Letters, for

C A E S A R.

C A T. From whom? let 'hem be read, in open *Senate*;  
*Fathers*, they come from the conspirators.

I craue to haue 'hem read, for the republique. 575

C A E S. C A T O, reade you it. 'Tis a loue-letter,  
From your deare sister, to me: though you hate me,  
Doe not discouer it. C A T. Hold thee, drunkard. *Consul*,  
Goe forth, and confidently. C A E S. You'll repent

This rashnesse, C I C E R O. P R A E. C A E S A R shall re-  
pent it. 580

C I C. Hold friends. P R A E. Hee's scarce a friend vnto  
the publike.

C I C. No violence. C A E S A R, be safe. Leade on:  
Where are the publike executioners?

Bid 'hem wait on vs. On, to S P I N T H E R S house.

Bring L E N T U L V S forth. Here, you, the sad reuengers 585  
Of capitall crimes, against the publike, take  
This man vnto your iustice: strangle him.

L E N. Thou do'st well, *Consul*. 'Twas a cast at dice,  
In F O R T V N E S hand, not long since, that thy selfe  
Should'st haue heard these, or other words as fatall. 590

C I C. Leade on, to Q V I N T V S C O R N I F I C I V S house.

Bring forth C E T H E G V S. Take him to the due  
Death, that he hath deseru'd: and let it be  
Said, He was once. C E T. A beast, or, what is worse,  
A slaue, C E T H E G V S. Let that be the name 595  
For all that's base, hereafter: That would let  
This worme pronounce on him; and not haue trampled

v. 571 I am] I'am Q, Ff 572 After 'those?' Enter a Messenger with  
letters. G SER] SEN. F2 577 me.] me. Q, Ff 578 After 'it.'  
Aside to Cato. G drunkard] drunkard Q Consul, F2: Consul. Q:  
Consul. F1 580 The Prætors attempt to seize him. add G 582  
on:] on. F2 After 'on:' They rise. G 585 After 'forth.' He is  
brought out G 590 Exit Lentulus guarded. add G 592 After  
'CETHEGVS.' He is brought out. G



His body into——Ha ! Art thou not mou'd ?

C I C. Iustice is neuer angrie : Take him hence.

600 C E T. O, the whore FORTVNE ! and her bawds the  
*Fates !*

That put these tricks on men, which knew the way  
To death by'a sword. Strangle me, I may sleepe :  
I shall grow angrie with the gods, else. C I C. Leade  
To C A I V S C A E S A R, for S T A T I L I V S.

605 Bring him, and rude G A B I N I V S, out. Here, take 'hem  
To your cold hands, and let 'hem feele death from you.

G A B. I thānke you, you doe me a pleasure. S T A. And  
me too.

C A T. So, M A R C V S T V L L I V S, thou maist now  
stand vp,

And call it happy *Rome*, thou being *Consul*.

610 Great parent of thy countrie, goe, and let

The old men of the citie, ere they die,

Kisse thee ; the matrons dwell about thy necke ;

The youths, and maides, lay vp, 'gainst they are old,

What kind of man thou wert, to tell their nephewes,

615 When, such a yeere, they reade, within our *Fasti*,

Thy *Consul*-ship. Who's this ? P E T R E I V S ? C I C.

Welcome,

Welcome, renowned souldier. What's the newes ?

This face can bring no ill with't, vnto *Rome*.

How do's the worthy *Consul*, my colleague ?

620 P E T. As well as victorie can make him, sir.

He greets the *Fathers*, and to me hath trusted

The sad relation of the ciuill strife ;

For, in such warre, the conquest still is black.

C I C. Shall we with-draw into the house of *Concord* ?

625 C A T. No, happy *Consul*, here ; let all eares take

v. 599 *Gnomic pointing in Q* : " Iustice . . . 602 by'a] by, a Q  
originally 603 After 'else.' *Exit, guarded.* G 604 CAESAR] *Cæsars* Q  
605 After 'out.' *They are brought out.* G 606 you.] you: Q 607  
*Exeunt Gabinius and Statilius guarded.* G 613 maides, . . . old.]  
Maids . . . old Q 616 After 'Consul-ship.' *Enter Petreius.* G  
622 strife:] strife, Q 625 Consul, here] Consul. Here Fa

The benefit of this tale. If he had voyce,  
To spread vnto the poles, and strike it through  
The center, to the *Antipodes* ; It would aske it.

PET. The streights, and needs of CATILINE being such,  
As he must fight, with one of the two armies, 630  
That then had neere enclos'd him ; It pleas'd *Fate*,  
To make vs th'object of his desperate choise,  
Wherein the danger almost paiz'd the honor :  
And as he riss', the day grew black with him ;  
And *Fate* descended neerer to the earth, 635  
As if shee meant, to hide the name of things,  
Vnder her wings, and make the world her quarrie.  
At this we rous'd, lest one small minutes stay  
Had left it to be'enquir'd, what *Rome* was.  
And (as we ought) arm'd in the confidence 640  
Of our great cause, in forme of battaile, stood.  
Whilst CATILINE came on, not with the face  
Of any man, but of a publique ruine :  
His count'nance was a ciuill warre it selfe.  
And all his host had standing in their lookes, 645  
The palenesse of the death, that was to come.  
Yet cryed they out like vultures, and vrg'd on,  
As if they would precipitate our fates.  
Nor staid we longer for 'hem ; But himselfe  
Strooke the first stroke : And, with it, fled a life. 650  
Which cut, it seem'd, a narrow necke of land,  
Had broke betweene two mightie seas ; and either  
Flow'd into other ; for so did the slaughter :  
And whirl'd about, as when two violent tides  
Meet, and not yeeld. The *Furies* stood, on hills, 655  
Circling the place, and trembled to see men  
Doe more, then they : whilst pietie left the field,  
Grieu'd for that side, that, in so bad a cause,  
They knew not, what a crime their valour was.

v. 630 fight,] the comma faint or missing in *Fr* 633 paiz'd the  
honor] poiz'd the honour *Fz* 636 meant,] meant *Q* 648  
precipitate] præcipitate *Q* 655 hills,] hilles *Q*

- 660 The sunne stood still, and was, behind the cloud  
 The battaile made, seene sweating, to driue vp  
 His frighted horse, whom still the noyse droue backward.  
 And now had fierce E N Y O, like a flame,  
 Consum'd all it could reach, and then it selfe ;
- 665 Had not the fortune of the common-wealth  
 Come P A L L A S-like, to euery *Roman* thought.  
 Which C A T I L I N E seeing, and that now his troops  
 Couer'd that earth, they'had fought on, with their trunks,  
 Ambitious of great fame, to crowne his ill,
- 670 Collected all his furie, and ran in  
 (Arm'd with a glorie, high as his despaire)  
 Into our battaile, like a *Lybian* lyon,  
 Vpon his hunters, scornefull of our weapons,  
 Carelesse of wounds, plucking downe liues about him,
- 675 Till he had circled in himselfe with death :  
 Then he fell too, t'embrace it where it lay.  
 And as, in that rebellion 'gainst the gods,  
 M I N E R V A holding forth M E D V S A's head,  
 One of the gyant brethren felt himselfe
- 680 Grow marble at the killing sight, and now,  
 Almost made stone, began t'inquire, what flint,  
 What rocke it was, that crept through all his limmes,  
 And, ere he could thinke more, was that he fear'd ;  
 So C A T I L I N E, at the sight of *Rome* in vs,
- 685 Became his tombe : yet did his looke retayne  
 Some of his fiercenesse, and his hands still mou'd,  
 As if he labour'd, yet, to graspe the state,  
 With those rebellious parts. C A T. A braue bad death.  
 Had this beene honest now, and for his countrey,
- 690 As 'twas against it, who had ere fallen greater ?  
 C I C. Honor'd P E T R E I V S, *Rome*, not I, must thanke you.  
 How modestly has he spoken of himselfe !  
 C A T. He did the more. C I C. Thanks to the'immortall  
 gods,

*Romans*, I now am paid for all my labours,  
My watchings, and my dangers. Here conclude 695  
Your praises, triumphs, honors, and rewards,  
Decreed to me : only the memorie  
Of this glad day, if I may know it liue  
Within your thoughts, shall much affect my conscience,  
Which I must alwayes studie before fame. 700  
Though both be good, the latter yet is worst,  
And euer is ill got, without the first.

## THE END.

v. 701-2 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "Though . . . " And . . . 702  
*Excunt.* add G

This Tragoedie was first  
Acted, in the yeere  
1611.

*By the* KINGS *Maiesties*

SERVANTS.

The principall Tragœdians were,

RIC. BURBADGE.	}	{	IOH. HEMINGS.
ALEX. COOKE.			HEN. CONDEL.
IOH. LOWIN.			IOH. VNDERWOOD.
WIL. OSTLER.			NIC. TOOLY.
RIC. ROBINSON.			WIL. EGGLESTONE.

*With the allowance of the Master of* REVELLS.

*This page was added in F1. In F2 the statements about the date, the company, and the Master of the Revels were omitted, and the list of 'The principall Tragœdians' was transferred to the back of the dedication, where it followed 'The Persons of the Play'.*

## ADDITIONAL NOTES AND CORRECTIONS TO VOLUME IV

The Editor apologizes for the following misprints, most of which have been noted by Mr. George W. Whiting:

- p. 7, l. 13. *For too read two.*  
l. 18. *E (the Huntington quarto) reads humour.*  
p. 10, l. 5. *Omit E from the first column.*  
p. 12, column 1, l. 5. *For Ladie read Lady.*  
p. 13, column 2, l. 39. *For Roome read Roome. with a period.*  
p. 15, column 1, l. 20. *For choyse, read choyse without a comma.*  
column 1, l. 23. *For Beauty read Beauty. with a period.*  
p. 16, l. 37. V. x. 110-12: *prefix Sig. L 3 recto.*  
p. 115, l. 238 of the text. *For my read thy.*  
p. 191, column 1, l. 11. *For you'd read you'd.*  
p. 192, column 1, l. 13. *For doe; read doe:*  
p. 203, l. 2 of the text. *For splendour read splendor.*  
p. 254, l. 267 of the text. *For me read mee.*  
p. 294, Scene ii, l. 7. *For the surfet read and surfet.*  
p. 342, l. 29. *For in read is.*  
p. 355, l. 16 of the text. *For authors read pale authors.*  
p. 371, l. 499 of the text. *For long. read long,*  
p. 415, l. 666 of the text. *For choice read choise.*  
p. 439, l. 73 of the text. *For now read now,*  
p. 480, note on Act IV, l. 114. *For detestandâ read detestandâ fraude.*

### CYNTHIA'S REVELS

#### *Outer forme of C*

- p. 6, l. 23. Sig. C 1 recto. In 1. iii. 38 transpose the readings of *B*, *D* to the first column.  
p. 7, ll. 31, 32. The one reading of C 3 verso should have been given as a correction of the inner forme and printed on page 8 after line 10.  
pp. 6-8. There are four states in the outer forme of C: (1) *B*, which has two readings (1. iii. 25, 27) altered in all the other copies, (2) *D*, which, after correcting these two readings, retains most of the other original readings; (3) *E*, which retains the original reading at 1. iv. 73, 120, while correcting all the others; (4) *A*, *C*, which are correct throughout.

#### *Inner forme of D*

- p. 8, ll. 11, 12. Transpose the readings of *D* and *A*, *B*, *C*. Probably the printer originally set 'mouth. Hee's', was directed to alter the period to a comma, but failed to remove the capital 'H'.

#### *Outer forme of F*

- pp. 8-12. There are three states of the text: (1) the Dyce copy (*C*), as is shown by two readings 'Houres' for 'Houers' (iii. iv. 45) and

'*Cart:*' for '*Court:*' (III. v. 75); (2) the Huntington copy (*E*), which prints the colon after '*himselfe*' at III. iv. 19; (3) the British Museum, Bodleian, and Wise copies (*A*, *B*, *D*). The *C* readings should be transposed to the first column.

### *Inner forme of F*

pp. 12-16. Here again *C* represents one state and *A*, *B*, *D*, *E* another state. The correction of the signature E 2 (*C*) to F 2 (*A*, *B*, *D*, *E*) tells in favour of *A*, *B*, *D*, *E* being the second state, and, if so, the *C* readings should be transposed to the first column.

But, alike in the outer and the inner forme of *F*, these readjustments involve serious difficulty. They reveal a number of bad mis-corrections. To begin with there is a liberal sprinkling of wrong fount in the punctuation. The roman stops are wrongly corrected to italic in '*Presence:*' (III. ii. 31), '*Sparke?*' (l. 45), '*Fanne:*' (III. iv. 70), '*place:*' (l. 81), '*eares?*' (III. iii. 9), '*me?*' (l. 18), '*hearing:*' (l. 22), '*stir'd:*' (l. 24), '*friends?*' (III. iv. 2), '*So?*' (III. v. 40). Popular spellings are substituted for those which Jonson is likely to have used in '*deuided*' for '*diuided*' (III. iv. 47), '*howers*' for '*houres*' where the metre condemns the dissyllable (l. 92), '*coulored*' for '*coloured*' (III. v. 77), '*pursew*' and '*pursewd*' for '*pursue*' and '*pursude*' (III. iv. 106, v. 103). The re-spelling is intelligible, but what of the punctuation? As the printer originally used a wrong-fount capital '*T*' seven times on F 2 recto, it is clear that his stock of this letter failed when he was setting up the inner forme: he had it in use for another book. He corrected this defect, or Jonson made him correct it. But was he in a similar difficulty over his roman stops, taking them out of the text and not replacing them? He made other blunders when he had to correct a crowded line: in Act III, scene ii, lines 63-5—

my heart, he hates such barren shifts, yet to doe thee a pleasure—  
he corrected the comma after '*shifts*' to a semicolon and altered '*heart*' to '*hart*', taking out the *e* to justify the spacing; in Act III, scene 5, line 4—

Tis wel enterd sir. Stay, you come on too fast, your Pace is too—  
he corrected to '*Tis wel enter'd Sir*' and removed the comma after '*Stay*' to save space afterwards; in line 10—

hath sufficiently whited your face: then (stifling a sigh or two and—  
he at first corrected '*face*' to '*Face*' and took the '*and*' over to the next line; finding '*Face*' had lost its stop he inserted a pointless italic question-mark '*Face?then*' without adjusting the spacing; in lines 24-5 '*sweete Honor*, or by what other title you please to remember her, *me thinkes you are Melancholy*.' he was directed to make a parenthesis of the words '*or by . . . her*', so he put in the second bracket at the end and left out the first; in line 45 he altered '*pretie*' to '*prerty*', probably because he was directed to correct it to '*pretty*'—an error of foul case, as *i* and *r* are often confused:

compare 'teturne' and 'returne' in this very play (v. vii. 7). A few other errors may be attributed to derangement of the type: for example, 'insuspect' in Act III, scene ii, line 54. Of course, *A*, *B*, *D*, *E* make a number of true corrections: it is sufficient to note 'talke' for 'take' (III. iii. 28) and the Jonsonian 'then' for 'than' (III. v. 110). The printer could not plead that he was printing from bad or disordered copy: Jonson wrote a clear and beautiful hand, and we may be sure that he prepared his manuscript with special care.

### *Inner forme of G*

- p. 16. Probably *A*, *E* give the first state, and the imperfect reading 'He )' for 'Hedon)' in iv. ii. 10 is only an accidental disturbance of the type.

### *Outer forme of L*

There are only three variants, but they are more difficult to account for than any others in the play. *B*, *C*, *D* must have the first state of the stage direction in Act v, scene x, ll. 110-12; they were rearranged in *A*, *E* to correspond with the setting of the earlier stage direction at line 94. But *C* has 'Your wes' for 'Your Arrowes' in line 88, and 'Dotard' instead of 'dotard' in line 96. When 'Dotard' was capitalized, the type was deranged, and four letters dropped out of 'Arrowes'. this is the second state. The third state was to reset the stage direction in lines 110-12 in two lines and to restore 'Arrowes': this is found in *E*. Finally in *A* the initial of 'Dotard' was changed back to lower-case. A puzzling solution for a complicated problem.

## POETASTER

- p. 195, ll. 3, 4. The printer was Richard Bishop, who printed the whole of the first volume of the 1640 Folio and put his device on the title-page of *Poetaster*. The imprint 'LONDON, Printed by ROBERT YOUNG' is merely an acknowledgement of the copyright which he had acquired in 1630. (Dr. W. W. Greg.) Bishop's imprint appears in all the other plays printed in this volume and also on the general title-page. It was necessary to put his device on the title-page of *Poetaster*; in the other plays he puts only an ornament.

## SEJANUS

- p. 330. Dr. W. W. Greg (privately) and Professor H. de Vocht in his edition of the Quarto (Louvain, 1935) have pointed out that the title-page with the imprint 'by G. Ellde' is not a cancel, but a first state of the page. The printer took out the final *e* of his name and did not adjust the spacing; he left an ugly gap between the 'by' and the 'G.'. Possibly he meant to take out the second *l* as well, for he usually spelt his name 'Eld', but he omitted to do this.



## ADDITIONAL NOTE TO VOLUME V

- p. 148. To the three large-paper copies of the 1616 Folio which contain the reset quire Y y, two other copies may be added—the copy formerly at Britwell, now in America, and the Hoe-Huntington copy at Pasadena, described by Mr. George W. Whiting in *Modern Language Notes*, vol. xlviii, 1933, pages 537–8.

PRINTED IN  
GREAT BRITAIN  
AT THE  
UNIVERSITY PRESS  
OXFORD  
BY  
CHARLES BATEY  
PRINTER  
TO THE  
UNIVERSITY



